Allegorical Figure of Asia, Africa, America & Europe, connected with Emblematical Representations of Commerce, Navigation &c. &c. &c.

THE

WORLD:

OR, THE

Present State of the Universe.

BEING

A General and Complete Collection

OF

MODERN

VOYAGES AND TRAVELS.

SELECTED, ARRANGED, AND DIGESTED, FROM THE NARRATIVES OF THE LATEST AND MOST AUTHENTIC TRAVELLERS AND NAVIGATORS.

By CAVENDISH PELHAM, Esq.

EMBELLISHED WITH UPWARDS OF

ONE HUNDRED AND THIRTY

BEAUTIFUL ENGRAVINGS.

THE WORLD WAS ALL BEFORE THEM.

MILTON.

VOL. I.

London:

Printed by W. Stratford, Crown Court, Temple Bar; for

J. STRATFORD, No. 112, HOLBORN-HILL.

1806.

THE WORLD:

OR,

Modern State of the Universe.

A Copious and Complete Collection

OF

MODERN VOYAGES AND TRAVELS.

BY CAMBRIDGE FELTHAM, Esq.

VOL. I.

TO THE PUBLIC.

To expatiate on the utility or entertainment of a work which has immense regions for its object, and all animated nature for its speculation, would be manifestly unnecessary. Traversing the latitudes of space, or exploring the wonders of the Universe, improves and refines the understanding, expands the ideas, and confers a graceful ease and polish to the manners of mankind. By travelling we not only become accomplished, but even the intellectual faculties receive improvement; and the mind acquires wisdom, while the heart is humanized, and rendered susceptible of all the liberal emotions.

By the active spirit of discovery which has lately impelled the lovers of science to visit the remotest regions of the earth, many thousands have now cultivated a more intimate acquaintance with the Globe, and a greater extension of commerce; together with a more competent knowledge of their countries, manners, and pursuits. The success of voyagers has stimulated the emulation of travellers to explore the interior recesses of great continents, which could not be approached by former navigators. This class of intelligent adventurers was long wanting to visit the different tribes of men in their internal state and condition. From the efforts of many such enterprising travellers, we have derived much of the extensive knowledge we now possess of those countries.

A judicious Collection of Modern Voyages and Travels presents the earth to our astonished eyes, and displays the wonders of the deep. All the inhabitants of the various intermediate regions from the torrid to the frizid zone pass in review before us, and we distinctly behold them in their genuine characters of civilization, savage ignorance, superstition, or ferocity. It exhibits to our view the vegetative produce of the most distant climes, and enumerates the sanative and commercial uses of the innumerable plants which decorate the fertile bosom of the plain, or venerably crown the summit of the aspiring mountain.

If the advantages derived from actual travelling are so numerous and important, what may we not rationally expect from the narratives of those who have faithfully communicated to us the particulars of their adventures, the mutations of climate they have experienced in the variety of regions they have visited, and a genuine series of events so interesting to those who pursue essential knowledge? Do we not, without sustaining any part of the expences incurred by those arduous enterprizes, receive all the improvement, amusement, and refinement which they have purchased with infinite hazard, time and treasure.

The successive discoveries in the Pacific Ocean, and other parts of the Globe, have lately acquired such a certainty and consistency, that they are now regularly arranged and distributed in the habitable World; while the recent discoveries of Cook, Vancouver, La Perouse, and other navigators, tend to complete the delineation of the continental shores. The embassies to China, Tibet, and Ava, have furnished fresh and important materials,

materials; and the researches of the Asiatic Society, with other important communications, throw a radiance over Hindostan and the adjacent countries. The Travels of Park, Brown, and Barrow have greatly elucidated our imperfect knowledge of Africa; and Hearne and Mackenzie have nearly ascertained the northern boundaries of America. More important books of Travels, and other sources of geographical information have certainly appeared within these few years, than at any former period of literary history.

In this work the essence of innumerable volumes of Voyages and Travels will be carefully incorporated, with such valuable materials as we have assiduously procured from other unquestionable authorities. The almost infinite variety of publications, from which we have gathered much of our information, have all been recently ushered into the world; and the reader need not be informed, that

A Collection of Voyages and Travels

is rendered the more interesting and valuable, when its sources are from modern information. Candour must readily admit that the nearer such information approaches the present period, so much the nearer to perfection will our collection arrive than any similar productions which have preceded it.

Recent discoveries have shewn that upwards of two thirds of this Globe are covered with water; and these waters, whether oceans, seas, lakes, or rivers, are contained in hollow spaces. The grandest concavity of this globe is filled by the Pacific Ocean, occupying almost half its surface, from the eastern shores of New Holland to the western coast of America. This concavity receives but few rivers, the chief of which being the Amur from Tartary, and the Hoan Ho and Kiam Ku from China; while the principal rivers of America run towards the east. The next grand concavity is that of the Atlantic Ocean: a third is the Indian Ocean. Such are the most profound concavities of the Globe, while others are filled by less capacious seas, as the Mediterranean, the Baltic, and others of smaller extent, till they diminish to inland lakes. &c.

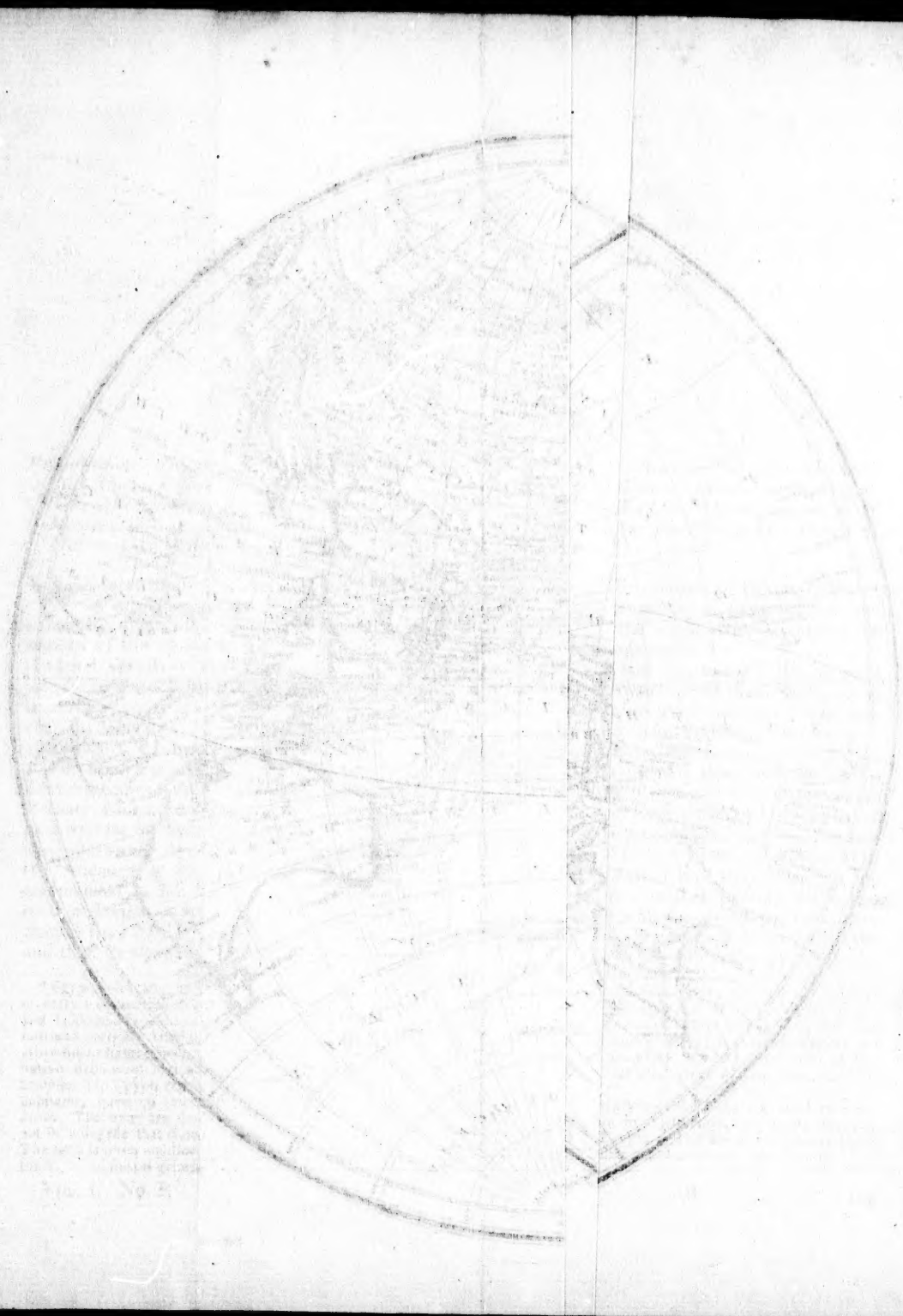
We cannot contemplate this wonderful subject without adopting the rhapsodical expression of the Psalmist —" O Lord how manifold are thy works, in wisdom hast thou made them all! The earth is full of thy riches; so is the great and wide sea also."

The emphatical effusions of the divine Milton sometimes involuntarily burst forth in pious ejaculations; as,

> *" These are thy glorious works, Parent of Good,*
> *" Almighty! Thine this universal Frame!*

And Thompson, in harmonious numbers, informs us, that, " Water, Earth and Air proclaim the Almighty's bounty."

Again, " A wise man looks upon himself as a citizen of the world!"



MAP
of the
WORLD

Including the most recent
Discoveries of the la
NAVIGATORS.

From an Original Drawing by
J. RUSSELL.
1806.

London, *Published as the Act directs July 5.1806, by J Stratford*

MAP

of the

ORLD

the most recent tracts and

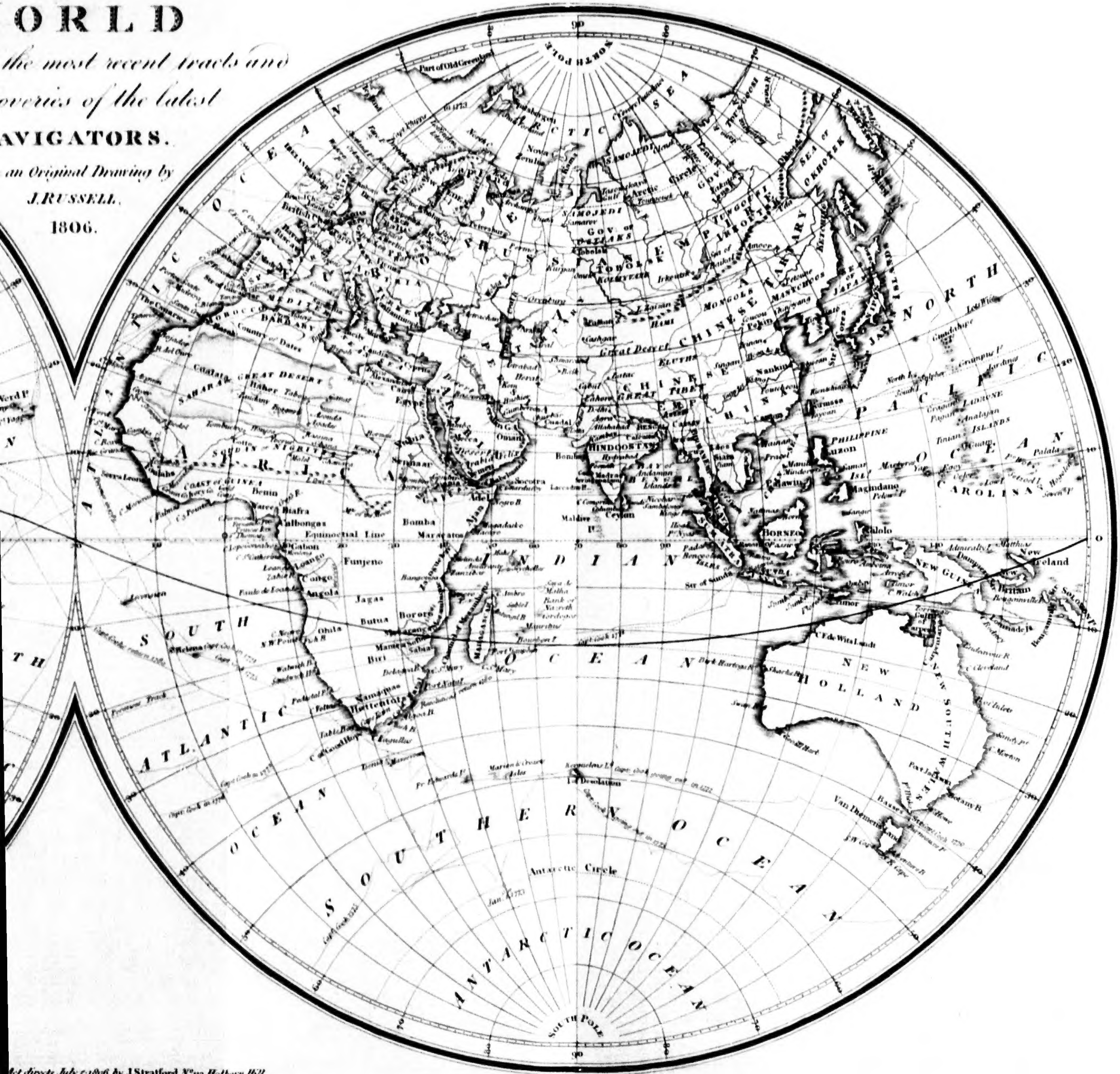
overies of the latest

AVIGATORS.

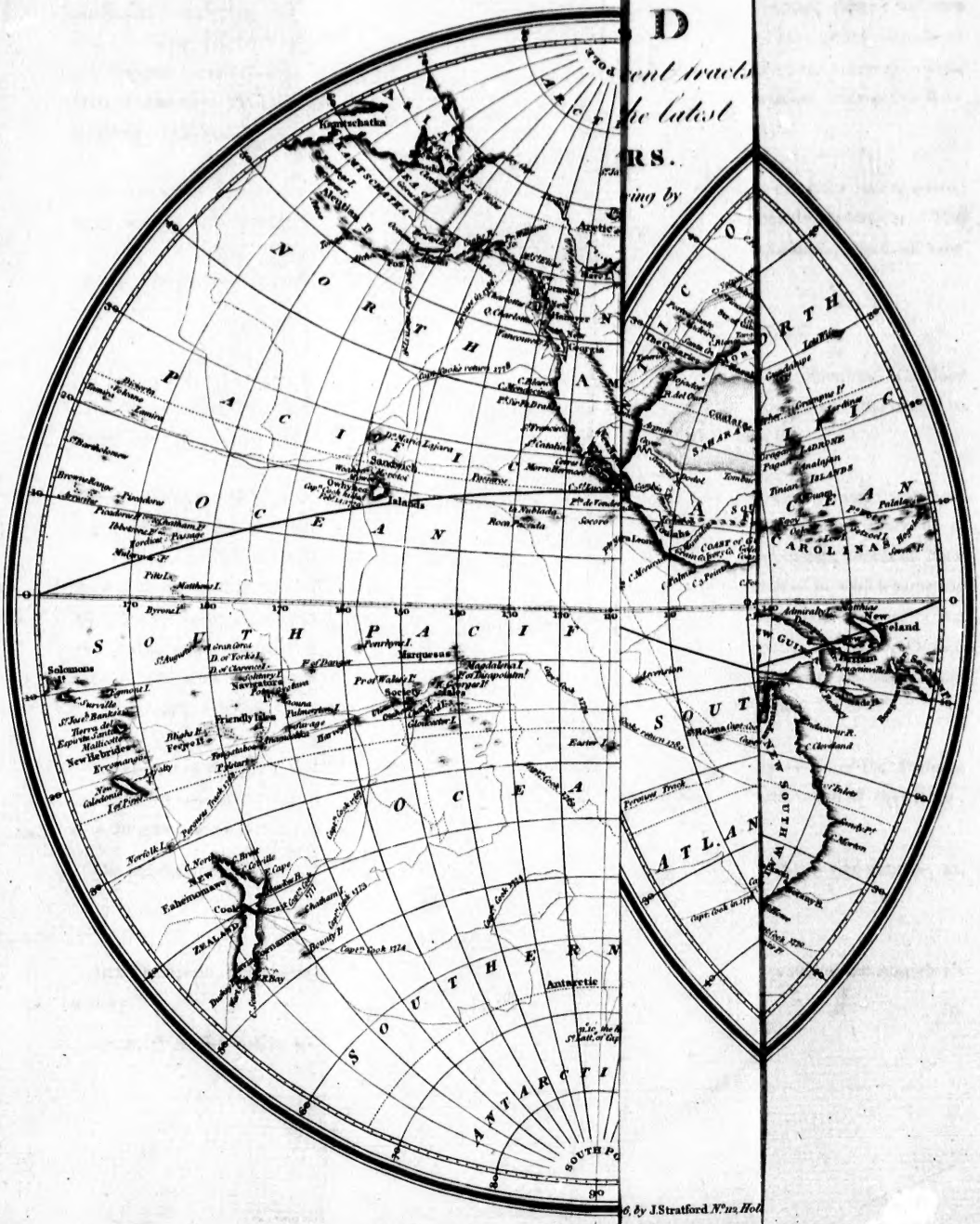
an Original Drawing by

J. RUSSELL.

1806.



Act directs July 5.1806, by J Stratford N° 112 Holborn Hill.



D

ent tracks

he latest

RS.

ing by

6, by J. Stratford N.° 112 Hol

TRAVELS

IN

UPPER AND LOWER EGYPT.

By C. S. SONNINI,

ENGINEER IN THE FRENCH NAVY, AND MEMBER OF SEVERAL SCIENTIFIC AND LITERARY SOCIETIES.

Translated and abridged from the French.

SECTION I.

Preparations—Departure from Toulon—Island of Corsica—Genoa—Dancers—Sail from Genoa—Cape Corso, Capraria—Turtle Doves and Quails—Anchor at Palermo—Manner and Customs there—Petrifactions and Antiques—Depravity of Taste in Building and Ornaments—City of Montreale—Singular Method of preserving dead Bodies—Vallette described—The Order of Malta—City of described.

WE are happy in presenting to our readers the substance of Sonnini's travels in Egypt*, a country once highly distinguished among the nations of the globe: The travels of Sonnini are rendered singularly valuable by his well-known attachment to veracity, the reputation he has universally acquired for his interesting remarks, and his elegant, artless, and entertaining descriptions.

The French government having appointed Mr. Tott inspector of the sea-ports of the Levant and Barbary, issued orders to equip a frigate at Toulon to carry him to the place of his destination. He was afterwards directed to embark on board the Atalanta, of 32 guns, and about 300 men, commanded by M. Durfort. She sailed from the road of Toulon on the 26th of April. The passengers were Mr. Tott and his suite, and a lady and three gentlemen from Versailles, who had obtained permission to embark for Palermo, Malta, and Syracuse: The society of these persons, and the politeness of the commander, rendered the voyage peculiarly agreeable.

As M. Sonnini had received intelligence from Marseilles, that the frigate then equipping at Toulon, would require time to be got completely ready, he undertook an excursion into Languedoc, accompanied by M. Tott's secretary. In the vicinity of Cette, and along the coast, they picked up a variety of volcanic matter and marine productions. They were astonished to find in the humid sea-weed, a very singular species of scarab.

He was induced to visit Ciotat, on the report of a vast quantity of coral said to be found in the subterranean cavities in that quarter, but he discovered that his information had been erroneous. He was informed, however, at Ciotat, that the following ceremony annually takes place at the

* Egypt, celebrated from the earliest ages of antiquity, and recently a distinguished scene of British valour, both by sea and land, seems to have been originally peopled from the northern parts of Arabia, or from Syria; the Egyptians and Abyssinians having been in all ages, wholly distinct from the native nations of Africa. Mr. Brown, a late intelligent traveller into Egypt, remarks, "that the Copts, originally inhabitants, have no resemblance of the negro features or form. The eyes are dark, and the hair often curled, but not in a degree that is occasionally seen among Europeans: The nose is often aquiline, and though the lips are sometimes thick, by no means generally so; and on the whole a strong resemblance may be traced between the form of visage in the modern Copts, and that presented in the ancient mummies, paintings, and statues. Their complexion, like that of the Arabs, is of a dusky brown; it is represented of the same colour in the paintings which I have seen in the tombs of Thebes." *See Pinkerton's Modern Geog.* ii. 730. *Trav.* 71.

To Moses, the law-giver of the Hebrews, mankind is indebted for the earliest, most authentic, and most interesting memoirs of ancient Egypt; and he knew the country much better than any traveller who has written since his time.

latter end of December. A considerable number of men armed with swords and pistols, go in pursuit of a little bird, called troglodyte by the ancients, (a name which it still retains in the natural history of birds, written by Guenau de Montbeillard*.) When they have discovered this bird, which is attended with little difficulty, care being taken to have one ready upon these occasions, they suspend it solemnly from the middle of a long pole, carried by two men on their shoulders, giving it the appearance of a heavy load. This winged curiosity is then formally weighed in a large pair of scales, and the remainder of the day is devoted to mirth and festivity. The name given to the troglodyte is not less whimsical, than the species of festival which it occasions. The appellation bestowed upon it by the inhabitants at La Ciotat, is, "the polecat, or father of the woodcock," merely from its plumage resembling that of the woodcock, which they ridiculously suppose to be engendered by the pole-cat.

They visited the baths of Balaruc, and the vineyards of Frontignan, which produce that spirituous and high-flavoured liquor, the excess of which sometimes conducts the drinker to the hot-bath. From thence our traveller proceeded, along one of the most delightful roads in France, to Montpelier. Having spent so much time in this agreeable ramble, it appeared necessary to return speedily to the coast of Provence, and they resolved to go thither by sea: they accordingly agreed for their passage with the master of a tartan then in the port of Cette; and the while they were waiting at the inn for the hour of departure, the master arrived, out of breath, to inform them, that the commandant was extremely offended at their conduct, in presuming to quit the port without his permission.

Though M. Sonnini might have refused obedience to so singular a request from the commandant, he and his companion waited upon M. Quérelle, officer of Invalids, and commandant of Cette, who on their arrival informed our traveller, that he was surprized at his neglect, in not having paid him a visit; and added, that he should certainly have invited him to partake of his soup, had he thought proper to have noticed him as he ought. Sonnini laconically replied, that as a stranger, a traveller, and an officer who did not belong to the army, he must implore forgiveness for his ignorance of the commandant's existence, assuring him that soup was not the object of his researches.

On the 26th of April, 1777, the Atalanta sailed from the port of Toulon; after which she was detained by contrary winds and stormy weather in the bay of Toulon till the 2d of May. On that day, a breeze from the north-west enabled the seamen to resume their voyage. On the 3d at day-break, the vessel came within sight of Corsica; and, as she approached, M. Sonnini surveyed the northern coasts of that island. Between cape Calvi and cape Corso, lofty mountains of a rocky and barren appearance presented themselves. Those near cape Calvi, under the shelter of which a spacious and safe harbour is formed, are extremely high, and their summits were then covered with snow. In the gulph between the capes Corso and Calvi, a small low island called *Isola Rossa, (Red Island)* protects a deep important haven against westerly winds.

Several porpoises, or blowers, now made their appearance, playing on the surface of the water; a too general presage of foul tempestuous weather. A storm soon arose, and it was found impossible to proceed to Corsica; a resolution was therefore formed of stopping at Genoa, where they arrived on the 4th of May at ten in the morning†.

* Motacilla troglodytes. *Lin. Syst. Nat.*

† Recollecting that the city of Genoa has lately been particularly described by several modern authors, M. Sonnini thought it became him to be silent on that subject; but he entertains his readers with the recital of a little occurrenee which furnishes a *trait* of national character. In the ballets of the opera, he says, two female dancers, both young and beautiful, enjoyed pre-eminent rank: though each was excellent in a particular line, their merits were differently rated by different beholders, one was said to have displayed in her motions, all the attitudes of grace; while the other was principally admired for her great exertion and activity. The latter, however, was immoderately applauded, but the former was regarded with the coldest indifference. Wishing to expose the depraved taste of the audience, and that merit only might be rewarded with their approbation, M. Sonnini and his friends, took different parts in the theatre. Resolving to avenge the insulted graces, they attended the opera-house, several evenings, dispersed in different parts of the house, and whenever their favourite actress appeared, received her with bursts of applause, in which they were joined by a few of the Genoese; and by means of perseverance, they succeeded in transferring the public favour from the lady who had hitherto enjoyed it, to her they now thought proper to approve. They afterwards gave an entertainment on board the Atalanta to both the ladies, when every expedient was practised to compensate the little reverse of reputation the slighted lady's talents might have received.

Pacchierotti,

Pacchierotti, whose merits are celebrated by Brydone*, was then at Genoa: his voice, as a singer, was full of sweetness, but his manner of playing spiritless, and destitute of animation. He appeared young and handsome, but his countenance wanted expression, dignity, and ease: he was better calculated to be heard than seen.

After a delay of ten days, by contrary winds, in the port of Genoa, the frigate set sail on the 19th of May, with a fresh gale. As Sonnini departed from the shores of Italy, the maritime alps, whitened with eternal snows, presented to the view an immense amphitheatre; together with lofty mountains near the gulph La Specia, replete with the finest marble: he also passed Gorgona, a small island, belonging to the duke of Tuscany, and another small island between cape Corso and Capraria, a barren spot belonging to the Genoese. The wind proving unfavourable on the 14th, the frigate passed between Corsica, and the isle of Elba, a dependency on Naples: this island has two good harbours, and some quarries of marble; and is particularly celebrated for its iron mines and magnets, which render its approach perceptible to navigators, from the variations that occur in the œconomy of the compass. The iron produced here is said to be equal to the best Swedish,

The coast between cape Corso and Bastia, consists of steep mountains, many of which are covered with snow. The city of Bastia is pleasantly situated on the declivity of a hill, and its harbour affords secure anchorage for small vessels. Near the island of Elba a barren rock appeared, denominated Monte Christo, which seems to have been detached from the island by one of those convulsions of nature which frequently happen in those seas. A ridge of rock, called Planosa, (or *Flat Island*) just makes its appearance above the water's edge, extending from Monte Christo to Elba, and is much resorted to by sea-calves and seals †.

A flock of petrels, termed birds of storm by Buffon, appeared in the afternoon, astern of the ship; and towards evening, the wind changing from south-east to south-west, blew violently; the sky was lowering and extremely dark; repeated flashes of lightning increased its horror, and the sea swelled tremendously. This gale of wind continued till the 15th, when the frigate was abreast of the mouths of Boniface, the strait between the islands of Corsica and Sardinia.

Stormy weather is generally expected in this part of the Mediterranean, the water being repelled in contrary directions by a vast extent of coast, with numerous ridges of rocks and quicksand, agitated by winds eternally variable. During the storm, the ship was visited by turtle-doves and quails, to shield themselves from the fury of the contending elements; but they were so fatigued and dismayed, by the tremendous fury of the storm, that they voluntarily suffered themselves to be taken by the hand. Not far from the frigate, shoals of porpoises furrowed the waters, while, on the other side, a tortoise pressed heavily upon the surface.

The vessel encountered another heavy gale on the 16th, and on the 17th passed within sight of Ustica, a dependency of Sicily: it was formerly known as a retreat to the pirates who infest these seas, but the king of Naples has since erected a small fort there, to terminate their piratical proceedings. Our traveller now beheld the lofty shore of Cape St. Vitto, in Sicily, and at ten the same evening anchored in the mouth of the harbour of Palermo; taking the earliest opportunity of dispatching an officer to compliment the viceroy of Sicily, and to adjust the formalities of a salute; a ceremonial which has often become the source of serious disputes, and disturbed the tranquillity of nations. It was methodically agreed, that the Atalanta should fire fifteen guns, and that an equal number should be returned by the citadel. The frigate accordingly fired that number of guns as a salute; but such was the state of the Sicilian artillery, that two hours elapsed before the cannoniers could raise together some pieces of ordnance, which laid half buried in the earth, to put them in a condition to serve as a wretched apology for guns. The barbary corsairs were so far from being strangers to this neglect of the Sicilians, that it was no uncommon thing for them to succeed in cutting their vessels out of this very harbour ‡.

The

* In his travels to Sicily and Malta.

† Oiseau de Tempete. *Buffon.*

‡ The harbour of Palermo, one of the safest in the Mediterranean, is defended by a circular fortress, but, as it has been already intimated, has no very formidable artillery. The city, suburbs, and circumjacent walks, present to the spectator an agreeable and variegated amphitheatre, terminated by a chain of lofty mountains. The streets are wide, commo-

The churches of Palermo, like most of those edifices in Italy, are magnificently decorated; and many of them are so overloaded with ornaments as to be offensive to good taste. The principal objects of admiration which decorate the interior of these structures, is the superb altar of St. Catharine's, constructed of the finest marble: in the cathedral, twenty-four columns of oriental granite, several tombs of porphyry, and an immense tabernacle of lapis-lazuli arrest the beholder's attention. By a singular accident, the marble of which the church is constructed, forms a broad festoon border round the altar*

The temple, which has been erected to Nature and the Sciences, is extremely ruinated; and the Museum is in a woeful state of decay: the collection of animals is chiefly composed of a few monsters, preserved in spirits of wine, and some worm-eaten skins which are literally dropping in pieces. The Jesuits are accused of having carried off the most valuable articles, when they were expelled the Neapolitan dominions. Some valuable petrifactions and antiques, are still to be inspected, of which Sir William Hamilton has favoured the world with drawings and descriptions. Fazello, who has written a history of Sicily, and other authors, make serious mention of giants who are supposed to have inhabited this island, and that their gigantic skeletons have been discovered in different parts of Sicily: but no remains establishing these circumstances being displayed in the museum at Palermo, and as M. Sonnini consulted the most intelligent persons on the subject, without discovering any authority for so singular a report, he concluded that these personages of extraordinary stature existed only in imagination.

The surrounding country is extremely pleasant: the Bageria, in particular, a canton extending nine miles from the city, is remarkable for the fertility of its soil, and the villas which embellish it. The avenues conducting the traveller to it are decorated with aloes, and Indian fig-trees. In this quarter, prince Palogoni has a singular country residence, strongly representing the folly and bad taste of the builder. The exterior, and avenues are debased by a prodigious number of clumsy stone statues, rudely hewn and huddled together, representing monsters, too montrous and disgusting to be ridiculous. The interior is ornamented in a style perfectly analogous. The walls of the apartments are plated with coloured glass, in imitation of marble; while looking glasses, reflecting images a thousand different ways, adorn the cielings. Here are indiscriminately displayed large crucifixes, pyramids of cups, saucers, coffee-pots, and chamber-pots, forming an assemblage grotesque in the extreme. The chapel is adorned with a group of naked angels of the most beautiful forms and brilliant colouring; and, in the midst of these, we behold a wooden figure, representing a dead man half devoured by worms, which is unfortunately so well executed as to appear extremely natural. The proprietor of this strange mansion has lately been obliged to deposit his wealth in the hands of trustees, the state fearing he would otherwise ruin himself by pursuing his ridiculous ideas His city palace is distinguished by similar decorations.

Near this assemblage of absurdities, the mansion of prince Vulguarnera is situated; the construction and furniture of which display inimitable taste. It affords an enchanting prospect, has an alluring garden, enriched with a fine piece of water, and an elegant theatre, where drammas are performed for the amusement of domestic circles, combining every addition dictated by genuine taste to improve the terrestrial paradise.

commodious, and well paved; and the city is ornamented with four beautiful gates.

In Sicily it would be thought highly indecent for a man in affluent circumstances to be seen walking; in consequence of which, carriages are multiplied beyond conception: a stranger may hire a handsome one for about six or seven shillings a-day. Swords are universally worn at Palermo by persons of the most humble conditions: the cobler, the hair-dresser, and every description of artisan, added to the usual garb of his profession, has his side armed with a long sword, his head enveloped in a huge peruke, and his nose saddled with a preposterous pair of spectacles.

M. Sonnini visited Madame Montague, the hostess whom Brydone has caricatured in one of the chapters of his Tour: that lady had heard something of his pleasantly at her expence, but never had been informed of the particulars. Sonnini read to her the passages wherein she had been noticed, and she in return proved the traveller was accurate in his representation of her loquacity, by recapitulating some anecdotes which passed between them on the subject of seeking for another lodging.

* A priest, having drawn aside four or five curtains, with a mysterious air, a wooden crucifix appeared, which the good man seriously affirmed had been begun by St. Nicholas, who, having fallen asleep while he was constructing it, was much astonished on his waking to find his work completed. Sonnini, however, declares, "that it was hardly worth while to call in the assistance of a miracle to complete so miserable a production."

From hence our traveller directed his course to Montreale, a small city on the summit of a steep mountain, which is ascended by a magnificent road, containing several streamlets for the refreshment of the thirsty traveller: and perfumed by aromatic odours, emanating from an adjacent forest of citron and orange trees. Montreale is famous for a large church, erected by William the Good, which is enriched with a grand altar of massy silver, admirably executed. In the vicinity of Palermo, a Capuchin convent excites the curiosity of strangers, the beautiful gardens of which are visited as a public promenade. Beneath the monastery is a large cave, divided into four galleries, into which the light is admitted by means of apertures at each extremity. Here are preserved the remains of all the Capuchins who have died in the convent, as well as of various other persons of rank and opulence. The bodies are rendered thus durable, by being gradually dried before a slow fire, which reduces the flesh, without much apparent injury to the skin; they are then clothed in the Capuchin habit, and placed upright along the sides of the vault; the head, arms, and feet remaining perfectly naked. Such is the exhibition of dead friars in the Capuchin convent near Palermo.

But quitting this dreary abode, let us view the fertile soil of Sicily, and its exuberant productions, warmed, as M. Sonnini observes, "By the heat of a genial sky, and subterranean fires." Every species of culture is here successfully employed, and vegetables are produced in great abundance*. The harvest of Sicily, in ancient times, acquired that island the name of the Granary of Rome; and at all seasons of the year it now exhibits a luxuriancy of vegetation. The pastures are covered with numerous herds of fine oxen; game of every kind is extremely plentiful, and the sea is equally liberal of her fish; tunnies were sold at Palermo, while M. Sonnini resided there, at five farthings a pound. A coral fishery near the coast of Sicily employs a considerable number of boats.

The Atalanta sailed from the harbour of Palermo, soon after midnight on the 22d of May. A breeze from the east wafted her upon St. Vitto, a lofty promontory. The coast from Palermo to this cape is steep, and intersected by fine cultivated vallies, which form a pleasing contrast to the sterility of the neighbouring rocks; the water is so deep along the coast, that vessels may approach it without danger. The navigators then passed between Maretimo and Pavoyanna, two small islands, appropriated by the king of Naples for the banishment of his state prisoners. In steering towards Malta, a long extent of the low Sicilian coast presented itself between cape Marsella and cape Passero, and gave a distant view of a chain of lofty mountains, parallel to the coast. The weather was fine, the sky serene and clear, and the vessel glided gently over the smooth surface of the water, which was hardly dimpled with the moderate breeze; while the passengers gazed rapturously on the spontaneous productions of nature, most agreeably diversified by the labour and attention of the husbandman.

On the morning of the 25th, the frigate approached Pantalaria, a fertile island, and pretty well inhabited. It has but a single spring of water; but, on the top of its highest mountain, a lake of considerable extent appears, supposed to be the crater of an extinguished volcano. The seas which surround this island are, however, formidable to mariners, especially in winter, experience having taught them that ships seldom pass it without encountering a violent gale of wind. In the evening some swallows made their appearance; and in the afternoon of the 26th the frigate entered the harbour of Malta, which our author pronounces "one of the largest and most beautiful in the universe." The entrance is narrow, and defended on each side by a strong castle. The fortifications which defend the port and the city are truly excellent: it is a well-known fact, that the united forces of the Ottoman empire failed in their attack of this impregnable rampart.

Valette is a well-built city, the houses of which, like those of the oriental nations, have flat roofs; and the streets are paved with a substance resembling stone, though of a soft consistency when taken from the quarry, but hardens by exposure to the air: the whiteness of this production is so extreme, especially when it reflects the rays of a burning sun, that it is thought very injurious to the eyes. The palace of the grand master is spacious, beautiful, and simple. The order of Malta have a public library, which is rapidly augmenting. Several curiosities of natural history are exhibited in the library; among which we behold a petrified bone of considerable size. It was long supposed to be a piece of petrified wood, but the bony texture was easily discernible, and M. Sonnini convinced several persons of their

 error,

* In the archbishop of Palermo's gardens, several banana plants, were seen in the open ground.

error, proving it was a fragment of the *femur* of a large quadruped, a drawing of which he sent to Buffon *.

The old city, or *Cetta Vecchia*, is about three miles from the new city, and is embellished with a fine cathedral, decorated with the valuable marbles known by the appellation of *green and yellow antique:* the interior is completely lined with crimson damask, trimmed with a broad border of gold lace. The churches of Malta are indeed more simple and beautiful, and in a better taste than those of Genoa and Palermo. From the turrets of the cathedral the smoke of Mount Etna may be perceived, though at the distance of about two hundred miles. In the vicinity of this church a small grotto is to be seen, in which a good statue of St. Paul is erected; that apostle being highly venerated by the Maltese, who suppose him to have delivered that island from serpents, with which it was before infested. This grotto was formed by scooping from a certain spot a species of soft and calcareous white earth, known at Malta by the name of St. Paul's earth. Tables are made of it, on which is impressed the image of the apostle with a serpent in his hand. This earth has also the reputation of being a specific against fevers, and highly efficacious in many other diseases; but the learned deny that it has any other property than that of furnishing a gentle sudorific †

The industry of the farmers of Malta cannot be sufficiently admired for having diffused fertility over such a mass of sterility, the best part of which was only covered with a few inches of earth. To reduce a soil, so apparently ungrateful to vegetation, they have excavated and beat the rock to pieces; with the hardest parts of which they have constructed a wall round the field, to prevent the rain from carrying away the vegetative earth. A part of the rock is reduced by hard labour into small particles; with this they mix a thin stratum of mould, some of which they procure from Sicily. This mixture is found extremely prolific, producing alimentary plants, figs, oranges, and fruit. The oranges produced in Malta are universally admired for the richness of their red pulp, and their delicious flavour. But the innumerable walls, to enclose their subdivided possessions, afford but a cheerless and fatiguing prospect to the beholder; culture cannot assume a truly smiling aspect when so feebly seconded by nature.

The large garden of St. Antonio, belonging to the grand-master, about a mile and a half from the city, is mentioned by Sonnini as a surprising effort of Maltese industry. It certainly contained a great variety of beautiful flowers; but the walks were rendered uneasy to the feet, and unpleasant to the eye, by being uniformly covered with fragments of white stone. Messrs. Durfort, Tott, Sonnini, and their particular friends, were entertained by the grand-master, at his country palace: only the two gentlemen first named were admitted to the master's table, as they enjoyed the rank of colonels; the other gentlemen sat at a different board, the honours of which were performed by a gentleman

* A rich cabinet was seen by M. Sonnini, in the possession of M. Barbaroux, which contained some curious petrifactions, medals, beautiful shells, a large figured pearl, and a crystal medallion, by Michael Angelo. Walking is no degradation at Malta, as it is in the noisy city of Palermo. The Grand Master only possesses a coach and six horses and that is seldom engaged in any other manner than in conveying him to his country seat. The knights, and principal inhabitants have a chaise drawn by a single mule, carefully led by a servant to prevent any accident to annoy foot passengers. M. Sonnini speaks highly of the members of the order, declaring they are remarkable for the great amenity of their manners, and the abundance of their civilities.

† The Maltese also affirm that a continual miracle is performed by St. Paul; as the man in the grotto appears to suffer no diminution, whatever quantity may be taken from it. For this assertion there is apparently some foundation, but a speedy reproduction may probably be caused by the humidity of the grotto, and the earth's want of consistency; cavities however are in many places observable, where pieces have been detached from the mass by the application of sharp instruments. A white lichen grows over the interior surface of the vault of St. Paul's grotto.

In the environs of the old city large caverns are in many places to be seen, divided into such numerous ramifications as to form a labyrinth, where an inconsiderate person might lose himself and perish: they were formerly places of sepulture, and now retain the name of *catacombs*. Stone coffins are placed in them on each side, one above another. Some of these habitations of stone, are considerably broader than others, and present an excavation for two heads, significantly intimating that they were probably intended for husband and wife. These catacombs perhaps served for a retreat for the Maltese, when their island experienced the frequent ravages of war. Malta is situated almost centrally between Africa and Sicily, in the Mediterranean sea, being about twelve miles in breadth, and twenty-one in length.

It is little more than a rock, almost bare, consisting of a white calcareous kind of stone, of a loose texture which does not absolutely repel cultivation. No vestige of a volcano is to be found on Malta, nor even any vitriable substances; excepting talc, gypse, and clay, every thing is calcareous; and the clay, which is thinly scattered, is mixed with calcareous matter.

of the palace; which was a pleasing circumstance to those among them, who wished to be relieved from the oppressive ceremony of the first table. After dinner, however, all restraint was banished, and the grand-master mingled with the company.

As the territory of Malta cannot produce sufficient aliment for the inhabitants, the greatest part of the corn, cattle, and other necessaries of life are imported from Sicily, which may properly be denominated the granary of the Maltese. The communication with that island is remarkably expeditious; the vessels for transporting provisions are ingeniously constructed, and generally navigated by excellent mariners. The alabaster of Malta varies in colour, but always exhibits a mixture of yellow, grey, and black. Sonnini saw some beautiful tables, and large corner buffets of it in the grand-master's palace.

The coasts of Malta furnish fish in abundance, among which the accola, or white tunny, is greatly esteemed: it is smaller than the common tunny; but the flesh is whiter, and has a more delicate flavour. Coral, and a variety of shell-fish, are also found on those coasts, as the spiny oster, the whelks, &c. The paper nautilus is sometimes met with, but so rarely, as to be deemed a curiosity.

SECTION II.

Maltese Gallies—Rise and Decline of the Maltese Order—The Vessel visited by a Variety of Birds—Alexandria, Description of—New City of—The French Consul assassinated—Cleopatra's Needles—Cleopatra's Baths—Pompey's Pillar—Lizards, Jackalls—the Jerboa.

WHILE the Atalanta remained at Malta, which did not exceed twelve days, the wind was strong and changeable, the sea much agitated, and it rained incessantly; which appeared very extraordinary to the inhabitants, as they seldom have any rain in the island at this season. A tremendous thunder-clap accompanied this deluge, which greatly heightened the consternation, as such a circumstance has hardly ever been known there in summer, though Sonnini observes, Thunder is "very frequent, and very violent in winter."

This stormy weather brought back the gallies of the order into the harbour, which were saluted by the Atalanta with fifteen guns, for which the general returned four. In the gallies an incredible number of persons were on board; the general's alone containing about eight hundred. Their decorations were superb, embellished with sculpture and gilding: their enormous sails, striped with blue and white, with a large red cross of Malta in the centre, formed together a most magnificent spectacle; but they were not well equipped either for fighting or foul weather. The order continued this appearance of ancient splendour, to display at least that the brotherhood is illustrious.

When the hospitable brotherhood of St. John of Jerusalem, exchanged that modest title for that of *knights*, they became rather a military than a religious association. A series of wars against the Mahometans, often accompanied with brilliant military exploits, trained them to habits of intrepidity. Though compelled to abandon Rhodes, they made so gallant a defence as to entitle them to everlasting honours: at Malta they braved the fury and valour of Soliman, and fixed the boundary of the Ottoman career. This martial ardour, accustomed to strict discipline, and austerity of manners, for a long time prevailed; but, as the indolence of the Mussulmen increased, the rigid institutions of the order became relaxed. The struggle between the Knights and Turks now dwindled into a phantom, of which some pitiful expeditions of corsairs presented the shadow: the cruises of the gallies were only excursions of pleasure to the delightful ports of Sicily. To enter into further particulars respecting this order, would be a departure from that necessary brevity, which our duty impels us to regard.

It has been asserted that the Maltese language is an injudicious compound of Arabic and Italian; but Antonio Vassali*, a learned Maltese, asserts that

* Vocabulary of the Maltese language, by Antonio de Vassali, printed at Rome in 1796.

that the Maltese is as elegant and copious as any of the living languages.

The wind being favourable, the Atalanta left Malta on the 7th of June, and set sail for the island of Candia*.

The frigate made a short stop at Paleo-Castro, on cape Solomon, the eastern-most point of the isle of Candia, inhabited only by a few shepherds, who, struck with amazement at the sight of a ship of war and a felucca, fled with their flocks to the interior of the island, yielding to the navigators a coast which they had abandoned. Little time was now required to waft them to Alexandria, and a few days conducted them to the low, sandy, and desert shores of Egypt. These shores present nothing attractive to commerce or curiosity, but they afford tremendous risks to navigators: hardly appearing above the level of the sea, they are not perceptible at a distance; and should the wind blow towards the land, it is next to an impossibility to preserve the vessel. To make the land of Alexandria is also attended with much difficulty and danger: the first indication of it, on the western side is Abousir, called by Europeans, *The towers of the Arabs*; two eminences, on each of which a tower presents itself, discernible at the distance of twelve miles; one of these structures appears to be round, the other square.

The coast of Egypt eastward of Alexandria is very different from that of the west: it is higher, and more irregular, and exhibits some traces of cultivation; date-trees, and human habitations are often seen: When the vessel is within sight of Pompey's Pillar, it is in the exact direction of Alexandria: but great circumspection is required in approaching these shores, as currents sometimes involve the ships, and impel them towards the desert with irresistible rapidity.

Two ports, almost equally spacious, present themselves to the choice of those who propose to cast anchor close to Alexandria: the name of the western is the Old Harbour, its entrance being by a narrow channel between two shallows; but its interior is a deep bason, where good anchorage and shelter is found in the worst of weather. The other, which is to the east, and called New Harbour, is separated from the former by a narrow peninsula: its depth of water is not very considerable, and is not only encumbered with rocks and shelves, but is completely exposed to the north wind. At the entrance of this harbour a shelf exists, called the Diamond, which it is necessary to steer very close to, in order to escape the shallows on the other side. The Diamond, and the adjacent rocks, are probably some of the remains of the ancient Pharos; thus modern vessels are sometimes wrecked, on the fragments of the noblest edifice that ever was reared for their preservation. European vessels enter the New Harbour only; the old is preserved to accommodate the ships of the disciples of Mahomet †.

Sonnini declines giving a circumstantial description of this renowned city of Alexander, of

* M. Tott had purchased a felucca to enable him to examine the coasts that the frigate could not approach; which was productive of much embarrassment, as the felucca could not keep up with the ship. On the 12th the navigators passed the island of Cerigo, the ancient Cythera, where Mythology informs us Venus landed, when she sprang from the foam of the sea: they also observed at a small distance, four sterile uninhabited rocks, and on the 14th the Atalanta anchored in the bay of Suda, in the isle of Candia. The day after her departure from Malta, a bird of prey perched upon her sail yards. It appeared to be a male sparrow-hawk, though denominated a corsair by the sailors, from its cruizing in the sea in search of quails and other birds of passage; on the same day a grey sparrow, and a yellow wagtail alighted on the rigging; but unable to endure the fatigue of a long flight, they willingly suffered themselves to be caught. M. Sonnini conducted them into the great cabin, and, after tenderly caressing them, indulged them with their liberty: fearing, however, to venture on a boundless sea, they speedily returned at the window from which they had a few minutes before escaped. They afterwards remained contentedly in the ship, and amused the crew with their warbling, and feats of activity, till they approached the coast of Candia, when they ceased to be any longer passengers in the Atalanta, confiding in their wings for present and future safety; retiring perhaps to animate enchanting groves.

† Though such is the genuine character of this port, it is generally crowded with vessels; here the riches of Asia and Africa are freighted for the ports of Europe, and here are imported the productions of European arts and manufactures. A geographical position of such importance could not escape the genius of Alexander. He saw, amidst the rapidity of his conquests, that here he might erect the theatre of mutual communication of all nations. A city, planned by the command of an Alexander, and superintended by a Dinocrates, must certainly have been originally magnificent. The kings of Egypt farther embellished the new capital, under one of the Ptolomies: Cnidus constructed a Pharos which was denominated one of the wonders of the world: Ptolomy Philadelphus founded an immense library; and it became the centre of science, commerce, and riches; and the useful arts were also cultivated with success; but, on the introduction of luxury, elegant refinement degenerated into licentiousness, the morals of the people were corrupted, and Alexandria fell a victim to the follies of its own inhabitants.

which

ALEXANDRIA.

which it is impossible to view the remains without emotions of the most poignant regret. Monuments that once appeared to defy the ravages of time, are now mutilated and mingled with the common dust: the devouring flames, directed by ferocity, have consumed the library of the Ptolomies: the antient Pharos lies buried in the sea, leaving no indication of its once admired situation; and Alexandria itself now occupies only an inconsiderable part of the ground of the antient city, where a few scattered fragments are only to be discovered.

The population of Alexandria is estimated by Savary at about six thousand *, consisting of Turks, Arabians, Syrians, Cophts, Jews, and Christians. Strangers from all the eastern countries, attracted principally by commerce, occasionally reside there. This motley assemblage, frequently jealous of each other, affords a singular view of the manners, customs, and habits of the respective nations.

The new city of Alexandria is erected principally on the brink of the sea. Its houses, like those of the Levent, are flat-roofed; and apertures supply the place of windows, with wooden lattices of different forms, so closely placed as almost to exclude the light. The streets are narrow, awkwardly disposed, and destitute of pavement. The town is enclosed by a wall, erected by the Arabs; but the existing city forms only a part of the interior of it, presenting to the view, only scattered wrecks, and piles of rubbish. The wall is extremely thick, and flanked with a hundred towers †. Exclusive of the fragments of antient monuments, some of the work consists of stony masses of small fossile sparry concretions, strongly cemented together. Where repairs are made, common stones are in some places introduced.

The Arabic language is usually spoken in Alexandria, and most of the other parts of Egypt; but such of the inhabitants as have commercial intercourse with Europeans, speak Italian, and Moresco, or Lingua Franca, an injudicious compound of Arabic, Spanish, and Italian.

Cruel and revengeful in their dispositions, the Egyptians are not easily induced to forgive an injury or insult, having a violent propensity to the effusion of blood on too many occasions. Though they conceal their animosity for a time, till a convenient opportunity presents itself, their malice is terrible. When an European has injured or offended them, they sometimes revenge themselves by exercising cruelties on another European, without considering or enquiring whether he was a relation, friend, or countryman of the person who was the original offender ‡.

An accumulation of rubbish, sand, and dust, constitutes an appropriate abode to the present Alexandrians, whose degeneracy serves to aug-

* They were estimated by Mr. Brown at twenty-thousand in 1793.

† Pocock accords with Sonnini in the account of the walls of Alexandria: He says, "It was in the year 600 of the Hegira, answering to the year 1212 of the Christian æra, that one of the successors of Saladin, who had just taken Egypt out of the hands of the Caliphs of the race of Fatima, ordered the walls of modern Alexandria to be reared: he employed in this work, which is two French leagues in circumference, the wreck of the ancient city. The walls, and the hundred towers which flank them, are composed of fragments of marble and broken columns, confounded with common stones. *Rich. Pococke's Tr.* 1,493.

‡ Not long before M. Sonnini's arrival, the French consul had been assassinated at Alexandria, from the prevalence of this vindictive spirit. A French hair-dresser, enjoying the diversion of shooting in the environs of the town, a quarrel arose between him and an Arab, in consequence of which, the French frisseur fired his piece on the Arab, and killed him on the spot. The fury of the Alexandrians was, in some degree appeased, by the murderer's being hanged in the public square; but the brother of the Arab who was killed, solemnly bound himself by oath, to take the life of the first European he should meet. Attending to this circumstance, the Europeans in that city confined themselves within doors for three whole months, hoping the vengeance of the Arab would have subsided in that time; and then ventured to appear again in the streets, when not a man of them was molested in the course of eight days. Encouraged by this forbearance, the French consul thought he might also venture to take the air, and repaired with a janissary of his guard to amuse himself on the banks of the canal. The vindictive Arab, who was always armed, happening to be in the same quarter, approached the consul, who entertained no disagreeable apprehensions, and brought him to the ground by a shot fired through his back. Instead of taking vengeance of the assassin, the janissary ran off with the utmost speed, and the unfortunate consul expired a few hours after. The French merchants instantly dispatched a quick-sailing boat to Constantinople, to demand exemplary justice: orders indeed were returned to inflict due punishment on the assassin, but those orders were shamefully evaded, and the Arab did not even quit the limits of the city. Events of this kind are too common in this country to excite astonishment.

Citizen *Volney* has given this anecdote in his "Travels through Egypt and Syria:" his account does not *entirely* agree with that of M. Sonnini, though we are induced to believe the latter has made no mistake, as he had his intelligence from those who beheld what passed.

ment the desolation: prostrate columns, mutilated statues, entablatures, and fragments of all denominations, are promiscuously strewed over the environs of the city, exhibiting a hideous theatre of the most horrible destruction. Afflicted at the sight of this fallen grandeur and magnificence, the generous traveller sighs over the immense ruins, and burns with indignation against a barbarous race, who have wantonly destroyed so many stately monuments, which time, the most remorseless of devourers would hitherto have spared.

Towards the eastern extremity of the crescent, formed by the new port, two obelisks were to be seen, denominated *Cleopatra's Needles*, though not supposed to have been erected by that celebrated queen: one of them retains its original upright position, the other has deserted his base, and is almost buried in the sand. To her likewise have been ascribed the excavations, named *Cleopatra's Baths*, and the construction of the canal, conveying the waters of the Nile to the cisterns of Alexandria*. They are each cut out of a single block of granite, and surrounded with hieroglyphics, which remain distinct on the obelisk that is standing, except on the eastern side, where they are no longer visible. The palace of the Egyptian kings was at no considerable distance from these obelisks, of which superb vestiges are still discernible. The ruins now supply an abundance of granite and marble, to be employed in the construction of the houses of the citizens. Medals, and many other curiosities, are discovered by digging on the side of this palace. From those ruins was extracted the fossile grinding tooth of enormous size, shewn to Sonnini. It passed for the tooth of a giant among the Alexandrians, though they have since been fully satisfied of its having been the tooth of an elephant.

Passing from the southern gate of the city, a superb column rears it majestic head, triumphant over ignorance, time, and superstition, and bears the indiscriminate names of Pompey's Pillar †, and Pompey's Column. It is composed of three pieces of the most beautiful red granite, forming the pedestal, the shaft, and the capital ‡. Savary and others affirm its height to be one hundred and fourteen feet, but Paul Lucas, who declares he measured it accurately, says the height does not exceed ninety-four feet. The whole of the column is equivalent in weight to one million one hundred and ten thousand pounds avoirdupois.

The ground on which the pillar is erected, unable to support so vast a burthen, gave way, and exposed part of the sustaining pivot: it is a granite block, six feet square, on which rests a pedestal of much larger dimensions than itself, which evidently proves the exact perpendicularity of the whole.

Southward of this pillar a deep and spacious valley appears, containing many fragments of ancient structures. Among these, on a level with the sand, are seen thick solid walls, disposed in the form of the letter T.

In early times the city of Alexandria was not, as it is at present, surrounded by a steril waste; it was refreshed and fertilized by the lake Mareotis, and two large canals; one from Upper Egypt, and the other from a branch of the Nile, called the Bolbitic. Under the dominion of the Arabians these necessary works were supported in tolerable repair; but the rage of the Turks for destruction, have banished these salutary canals and reservoirs which gave fertility to the country. The rapacity and barbarity of the Ottomans, have also dried up the sources of knowledge that excited the mental energy of the inhabitants.

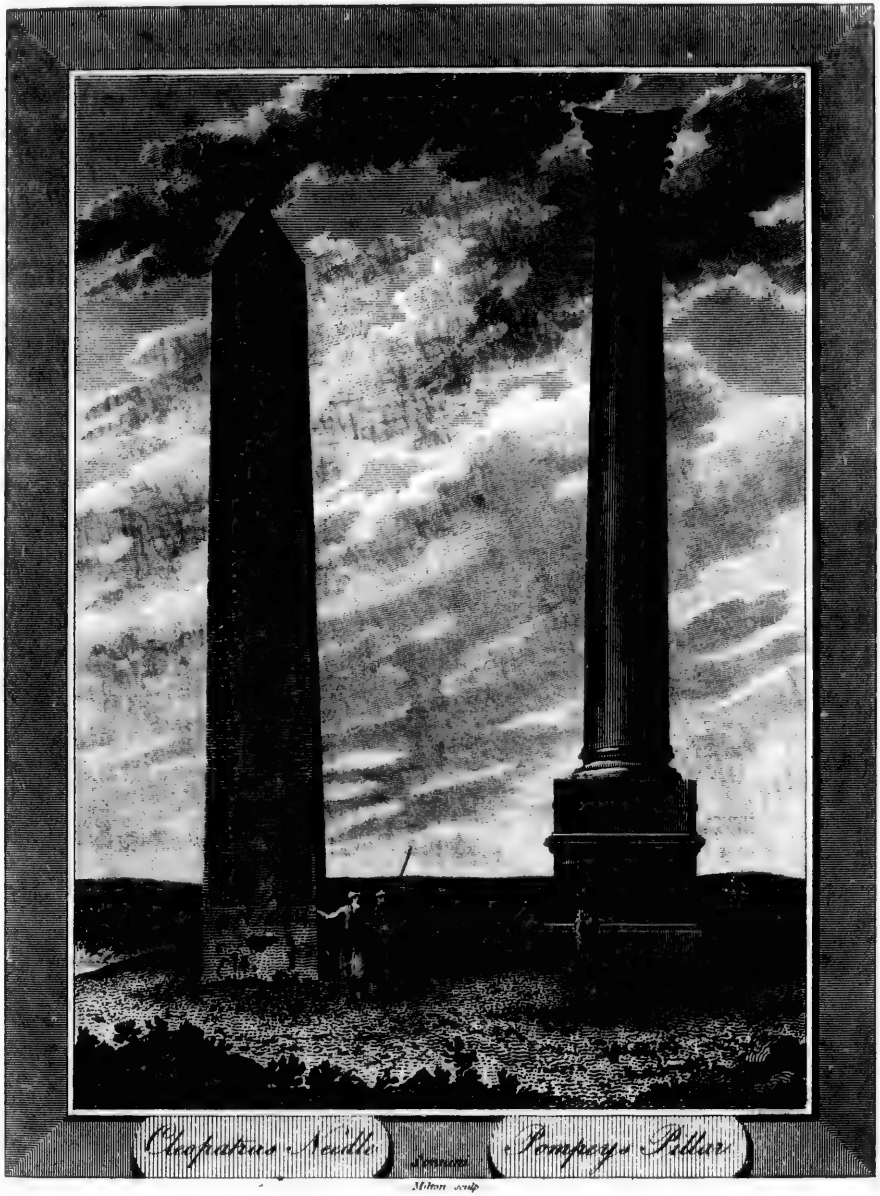
The canal of Lower Egypt now only remains, and that in a very ruinous state. Little more than a century ago it was navigable by boats, which conveyed merchandize to Rosetta, without encountering the dangers of the sea, or the sand-banks in the mouths of the river Nile; but the banks are daily becoming more ruinous; no longer a sufficient quantity of water remains to

* On this occasion Sonnini thus abruptly abandons the thread of his narrative, to emblazon the virtues of that Egyptian princess, with very amorous colouring:—"While the names of those who reared most of the astonishing edifices of ancient Egypt, is absolutely unknown, posterity carefully preserves the memory of a woman, rendered illustrious by her magnificence, her genius, her heroic character, and her incomparable beauty; of the woman, whose charms triumphed over the greatest of the Romans; of the woman, finally, whom we can reproach only with the sallies of a passion, not easily restrained in an ardent soul, and under a burning sky; at which the graces disdain not to smile, and which nature does not disavow."

† Dr. White, in his Egyptiaca, 1801. 4to. inclines to think that the famous column, ascribed to Pompey, ornamented a space opposite to the Serapium or Temple of Serapis, in which was the great public library; and escaped antient notice by its connection with that grand edifice.

‡ Savary confirms the opinion of Dr. Pocock respecting the height of this column.

float


Cleopatras Needle
Pompeys Pillar

float even a boat; and a dingy ill-flavoured water with difficulty arrives at the cisterns, which are themselves in a most deplorable state. The culture of this district extended much farther, and might easily have been increased by the Alexandrians; but if they were too indolent to preserve the only water they could drink, it is not matter of surprize that they would be very anxious to procure the other necessaries of life. The verdure and coolness of the shade on the banks of the canal, had attracted a multitude of small birds: Fig-peckers and larks are birds of passage, and here make a temporary halt to enable themselves to endure the fatigue of a long voyage, in their road to the Delta; but many of them were ensnared to furnish food for the voluptuous.

The sparrows, on the contrary, more habituated to the society of man, seldom emigrate; and their flesh is not alluring to the Alexandrians, though they partake of the food and habitations of which they are the uninvited guests. They inhabit the districts of Egypt, Nubia, and Abyssinia; but are not to be found along the western coast of Africa. Their absence from the latter, is perhaps occasioned by want of proper food. Sparrows never fix a residence in places where wheat, and its kindred grains, are not cultivated.

At a short distance from the canal of Alexandria the traveller is shewn the catacombs, a series of long galleries hewn out of a rock. They are supposed to have been the quarries which furnished the stone for the construction of Alexandria; and having contributed to supply habitations for men while they were living, became their abode after their death: much labour was not however required to enforce obedience in the stone to the plan of the mason, it being very soft and calcareous. Sensible of its being destitute of hardness and durability, the ancient Egyptians gave it wonderful solidity by a peculiar species of mortar. Many of these subterraneous alleys are in a ruinous state; but in those which our author entered, there were three coffis on each side, piled on each other. At the extremity of some of the galleries, separate apartments are to be seen, with coffins, which were probably the sepultures of particular families. The Arabs declare that these catacombs have a subterranean communication with the pyramids of Memphis: it is certain, however, that they extend as far as the sea at the bottom of the Old Harbour; and the three caverns, cut in the rock on the coast, known by the name of Cleopatra's Baths, seem to be a continuation of them.

At the entrance of the catacombs, M. Sonnini says he has seen several cameleons*; and these dreary regions are the common retreats of Jackalls, which are numerous. These animals, in large companies, visit the abodes of man. Their cries, which resemble the lamentations of infants, create much disturbance during the night; and they devour cadeverous substances. They are indeed so cruel and ferocious, that they are objects of apprehension to the human race.

In these caverns a very extraordinary animal is found, to which has indiscriminately been applied the names of hare, rabbit, field-mouse, rat, &c. Its real Arabic name is the Jerboa; its size is nearly that of a rat; the head large and broad in proportion to the body, and flat at the top; of a clear pale red, with a blackish shade; the upper jaw projecting beyond the lower, and each furnished with two incisive teeth only; the snout is short, broad, and obtuse, and strong hairs on each side form long whiskers; the nose is naked, white, and cartilaginous; the eyes large and prominent, with the iris brown; the ears are long and large, and scantily covered with short hair; the body broader behind than before, covered with pale silky hair. The fore-feet are short and white: the hinder legs are clothed with long hair of a faint red and white: the tail is pretty long, and rather larger in circumference than a goose-quill, but is quadrangular, terminating in a tuft of long silky hair, half black, and half grey: the female has eight teats; the male is somewhat smaller than the female, and the tints of his fleece are not so deep.

These animals are frequently seen among the sands and rubbish in the environs of Alexandria; they live in societies, and dig their habitations in the ground; their nails and teeth being their only

* Marvellous stories have been propagated of this species of lizard, which are disgraceful to the science of natural history. The changing of the animal's colour must not be ascribed to the objects presented to it, but its internal affections, that enlarge or diminish the tints which marble its delicate skin. It is absurdly affirmed that he lives wholly upon air; but flies and insects are its common and natural food. To satisfy himself on this subject, Sonnini prevented some cameleons from catching any insects, without excluding them from the open air. They existed indeed for twenty days, but greatly dwindled in substance, they lost their agility and vivid colours; and their skin appeared wrinkled, and adhered close to the bone.

tools employed upon the occasion. The slightest noise alarms them to seek for shelter in their holes; the Arabs sometimes, however, catch them alive by stopping up all the avenues of the colony except one, through which they force them out: Their flesh, though not esteemed a delicacy, is eaten by the Egyptians; M. Sonnini shut six of these animals in a large iron wire cage; but they gnawed away, during the first night, the upright and cross sticks of their prison, which was afterwards lined with tin. They lived on wheat, rice, and fruit, and were highly pleased with basking in the sun: they had much agility in their motion but were very docile and gentle. They readily suffered themselves to be stroked, but never discovered either joy, gratitude, or fear. Their gentleness appeared the effect of indifference, approaching to stupidity.

While Sonnini remained at Alexandria, he lodged at the French factory, a large quadrangular building at the bottom of the New Harbour: it forms a square inclosing a large court-yard, with warehouses round it under arcades: these arcades are supported by columns, extracted from the fragments of pillars found among the ruins of the ancient city. In the court, a statue of white stone represents a woman with a child by her side, the drapery of which has considerable merit. Some Arabs found it buried in the ruins, and sold it to a French interpreter, who intended to transmit it to his own country, but happening to die soon after, the statue had received many blemishes by being thrown about among the bales of merchandize. The apartments appropriated to the residence of the merchants, are over the warehouses, and very lofty. A single gate of great solidity, defends this structure. It is farther strengthened in tumultuous emergencies, by packages of goods piled upon each other; and when they have reason to apprehend the populace will break in, the inhabitants of the factory are enabled to slide down from their windows in the night, and seek an asylum in some vessel *.

Hearing mention made of a curious monument in a mosque, in the environs of Alexandria, M. Sonnini procured an opportunity of examining it at his leisure. The mosque itself is very ancient, having been erected by one of the Caliphs, and the walls are encrusted with different coloured marbles, and adorned with some elegant pieces of Mosaic. The tomb, which had been the principal object of Sonnini's curiosity, is one of the most beautiful pieces of antiquity preserved in Egypt, and is used by the Mahometans as a kind of reservoir for performing the ablutions of their religion: it is very large, and nearly forms an oblong rectangle. It consists of a single piece of superb black marble, spotted green, red, yellow, &c. and is covered with a profusion of hieroglyphics on both sides. It was formerly impossible to procure admission into this mosque, which naturally accounts for the silence of travellers respecting so great a curiosity. On the pavement of the mosque, Sonnini perceived a Greek inscription in Roman characters, nearly obliterated; but the word CONSTANTINON was easily distinguished. A duke of Braganza was the first European who visited this mosque. Happening accidently to approach it, he ventured to step in: some children having observed him, surrounded him with clamorous outcries; but he silenced them by throwing some money amongst them, and quietly made his retreat. After this large sums were offered in vain by Europeans, for permission to visit the mosque, but after some time, a Shech, who had the care of it, admitted any person who would pay a chequin: in consequence of this toleration, some Englishman having been seen there by the populace, the Shech was reprimanded by the commandant of Alexandria, and ordered to admit no Christian of any country. But Sonnini's visit was so prudently and privately conducted, that no clamour arose upon his having enjoyed such a privilege.

The Venetians and the English have also commercial establishments at Alexandria; the former pursuing the line of traffic which was adopted by their predecessors: the English, on the contrary, struck out new paths, and seemed to aim at possessing exclusively the commerce of India through the red sea.

The commerce of Alexandria is principally a commerce of deposit, for the convenience of con-

* Sonnini had once an opportunity of witnessing the extreme terror excited in the minds of the French belonging to the factory, from the bare idea of an Alexandrian riot: a person happened to say, that an Egyptian was slain by a native of Europe, the gates of the factory were instantly shut, bales of goods ordered to be moved, in readiness to sustain the expected shock, and all the persons in the factory were preparing to escape to the harbour, by dropping from the windows; when they had the happiness to be informed that it was one Mahometan who had killed another.

veyance

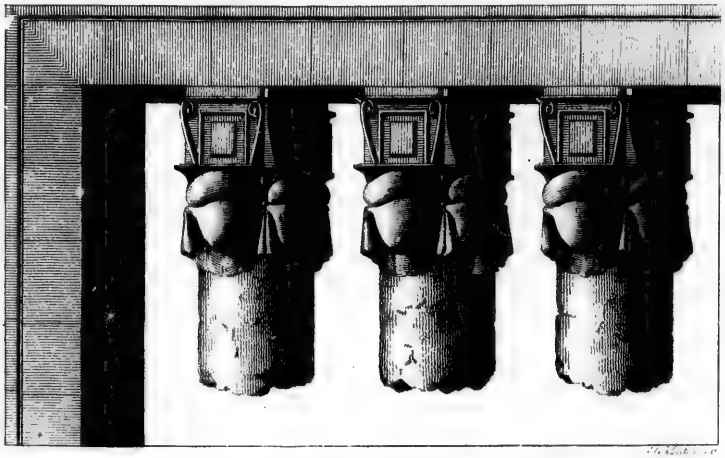
is very ancient,
e Caliphs, and
erent coloured
elegant pieces
had been the
sity, is one of
quity preserved
hometans as a
the ablutions
ge, and nearly
sists of a single
tted green, red,
a profusion of
as formerly in-
o this mosque,
ilence of travel-
. On the pave-
ceived a Greek
nearly obliterat-
was easily dis-
a was the first
e. Happening
ured to step in:
im, surrounded
out he silenced
amongst them,
fter this large
peans, for per-
fter some time,
admitted any
in consequence
an having been
Shech was re-
of Alexandria,
n of any coun-
prudently and
nour arose upon
ge.

have also com-
ria; the former
was adopted by
n the contrary,
ned to aim at
erce of India

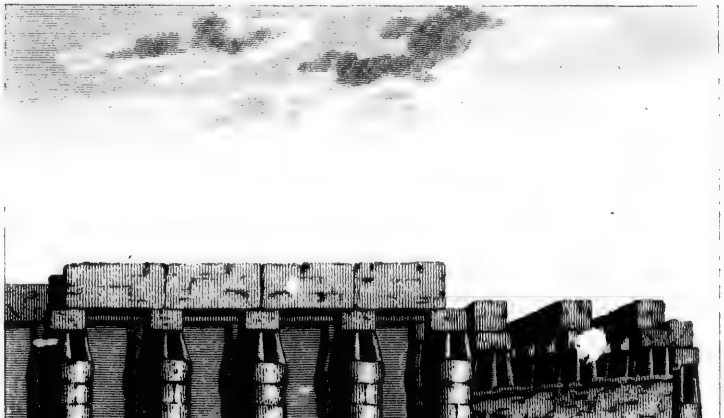
is principally a
venience of con-

d, in readiness to
sons in the factory
by dropping from
es to be informed
d another.

veyance



Capitals of the Colonnade of the Temple of Dendera.



Colonnade of Thebes.

Specimens of EGYPTIAN *Architecture.*

Sonnini.

veyance from thence to other places. Merchandize is transported by water-carriage to Cairo, whence, after supplying that populous city, it is dispersed over Arabia, Upper Egypt, and Abyssinia. Little barks are employed in carrying goods to and from Alexandria to Rosetta, the first city of Egypt on the Nile. They are substantial boats, handsomely constructed, without decks, and drawing little water; having two or three masts, according to their magnitude, with large triangular sails: their burthen is usually from five to six tons. Though their voyage to Rosetta hardly exceeds thirty-six miles, and they can stop in their passage at Aboukir, great danger attends the navigation; a violent gale sometimes occasioning the vessel to fill and sink. During the increase of the Nile these accidents are not so frequent; but when the river has retreated into its bed; it is so extremely shallow at the mouth that the Egyptian mariners never approach it without trembling.

Among a variety of salt-water fishes on the coast of Alexandria, are a species of thornback, known by the name of the sea-crab, the flesh of which is hard and unpalatable; the sea-cat, which is a little better; the palamides, a sort of small tunny; the gar fish, the sur-mullet, and the pointed fish they call the eel, which frisk about in calm-weather in shoals innumerable on the surface of the water. Here is also found a fish, which occupied a distinguished place upon the tables of the Romans, denominated the wolk from its voracity. Sonnini had a drawing made of one of these fishes, which was two feet and a half in length; its body was of a dark blue, shaded with grey; its head was blueish, and the gills were irregularly spotted with red. By the seamen of Provence this fish is denominated the Carousse.

SECTION III.

Journey from Alexandria—The Mules turned loose—Prefer Travelling by Night—Ruins of Heraclea—Aboukir—Tomb of a Mahometan—Rosetta, Description of—Oxen, Cows, Calves—Horses, &c.—The inhuman Treatment of Dogs, Cats, &c.—The Tahose, Turtle-Doves—Wild Ducks.

TO travel by land from Alexandria to Rosetta, a kind of desert must be crossed; M. Sonnini, M. Tott, the traveller Savary, and a numerous suite, left Alexandria July the 12th, at seven in the evening. These foreigners, clad in the French fashion, by some means offended the inhabitants, who insulted them in their passage through the city, and saluted them with a shower of stones, accompanied with abusive language. Another misfortune attended them as they were passing on the road; the ass, commissioned to carry their provisions, indignantly shook off his panniers, to ease himself of the unpleasant weight, and bottles, plates, pies, &c. were literally demolished. The scattered fragments being carefully collected, the author committed them to the care of a horse of a milder disposition, and the journey was resumed. The travellers were then overtaken by the night, which proved extremely dark: they proceeded, however, till they had nearly accomplished half their journey when they halted to refresh themselves. Having rested a short time from their fatigue, they were preparing to set out again, when an uproar and dispute arose concerning the mules, which had been turned loose, and could not be found or distinguished without some difficulty. The muleteers proceeded to blows, the Janizaries attacked the contending parties, and an hour at least was consumed in witnessing this scene of confusion. M. Sonnini, with the assistance of a servant, had taken better care to secure the respective animals, and the party were all mounted, highly amused at their temporary distress. Hence a lesson might be conveyed, that in travelling, as well as in military expeditions, regularity and order are indispensable. At length, however, the tumult ceased, the signal was given for departure, and about six o'clock the next morning they arrived at Rosetta.

The journey from Alexandria to Rosetta is usually performed by night, to avoid the inconveni-

ence of a parching sun; but Sonnini, having been long accustomed to hot climates, was capable of supporting the most ardent power of the solar rays. This is considered as a journey of twelve hours, and mules may be moderately hired by the travellers, but no carriages can be procured. The paces of the mules are pleasant, and occasion very little fatigue to the rider; and they are so well acquainted with the road, that it is unnecessary to guide them either by night or by day, though no beaten track could be distinguished over the sand *.

Leaving Maadie, an open plain commences: the land is very low, and a vast bay is formed by the sea from Aboukir; the water would cover a great extent of country, were not solid dikes constructed to keep it off. Even with this precaution, stormy weather sometimes occasions those dikes to overflow, and inundate the vicinity of Aboukir. The route continues along the sea-shore, where beautiful shells are found of every species, and the traveller is enlivened by the visits of the sea-lark, the curlew, and the piper, while the feet of the mules are laved by the agitated waves †.

The prospect now instantly changes, and no longer exhibits a scene rendered hideous by sterility; nature diffuses her gifts with equal variety and profusion. The eye, no longer tortured with a burning atmosphere, reposes itself deliciously on a horizon presenting refreshing images, and smiling with the gayest aspect. Rosetta is a handsome populous city, built in the modern style, if it does not consist of the most exquisite edifices, they are such as cannot excite disgust. On the eastern side it is watered by the majestic Nile, which gently conveys the wealth of many nations to distant regions, and fertilizes the circumjacent country; on the north, the city is rendered delightful by the neighbouring aromatic groves, and odoriferous hedges. Chance appears to have the arrangement of every thing: no studied regularity of disposition offends the eye of taste or nature; the boughs of the orange and citron tree are frequently interwoven; and the pomegranate accompanies the anona: flowers exhale their perfumes at all seasons of the year; and esculent vegetables flourish beneath the balmy shade. Fragrant bowers, intersected by chrystal streamlets, kindly diffuse the aliment of vegetables. To enrich these scenes, the turtle-doves, emblems of fidelity and truth, breathe the soft accents of inoffensive cooing.

The Delta, a plain on the opposite side of the river, has no boundary but the horizon: issuing from the bosom of the waters, it preserves its original freshness and fertility. Orchards and groups of trees, promiscuously scattered, cloathed in perpetual verdure, with numerous flocks and herds, give additional *traits* to the enchanting prospect.

Rosetta has deservedly acquired the appellation of the Garden of Egypt. The stranger there may repose in perfect security, and traverse the surrounding scenes, free from impunity, or incurring the displeasure of the natives. "In the course of these delightful excursions," says Sonnini, "the husbandman or the gardener will invite him into his cottage, and entertain him with coffee: inhabiting a soil fertile and smiling, whose freshness and luxuriance temper the ardour of the climate, the manners of the Turks in Rosetta are softened, and their character has lost its asperity."

* The route is not, strictly speaking, a desert; for half the way, on one side, a town and a few straggling houses are to be seen, and some different traces indicate that other habitations are not very remote. The gusts of wind from the south, so intolerable in the vast plains which surround Egypt, are not expected on this road; but great danger is to be apprehended from plunderers. The Bedouin robbers are very prompt collectors of unprotected booty. On quitting Alexandria, the coast is to the east north-east, along the base of a promontory stretching towards the north; at the extremity of which stands Aboukir, a town erected on the ruins of Canopus. At the distance of about eighteen miles, a remnant of the Canopic branch of the Nile presents itself, which is only a salt-water marsh, having no longer any communication with the Nile, except when that river is at its greatest height, and is generally fordable on horse-back. The mouth of this ancient branch of the Nile is much straitened by a bar of sand. A large square building stands on the eastern bank, which may probably be denominated an inn, though hardly any thing can be found in it but a well of disgusting water. This place is named Maadie, *the passage*; and is the site of the ancient Heraclea *(as we are informed by Dr. Shaw;)* but the house is modern, constructed of white stones, though a large block of granite, and a fragment of grey marble appear in the formation of the gate. About a mile and a half further, some walls and ruins are discernible upon the coast, which are probably the traces of Heraclea.

† At the tomb of a holy Mahometan, near the margin of the sea, an Arab who resides there, furnishes tea, coffee, and brackish water, to gratify the thirsty traveller. Admonished by a small brick tower, he then quits the coast, to proceed to Rosetta, through a plain of shifting sand; passing several other towers of different dimensions, in the same direction, serving as guides into a moving plain. These also afford shelter to passengers, as oratories, or places of prayer for the Mahometans.

many nations to
he circumjacent
is rendered de-
natic groves, and
pears to have the
udied regularity
taste or nature;
ron tree are fre-
sgranate accom-
their perfumes
ulent vegetables
ade. Fragrant
reamlets, kindly
To enrich these
of fidelity and
offensive cooing.
osite side of the
horizon: issuing
it preserves its
Orchards and
attered, cloathed
erous flocks and
the enchanting

d the appellation
e stranger there
and traverse the
mpunity, or in-
tives. "In the
ns," says Sonnini,
r will invite him
im with coffee:
ng, whose fresh-
rdour of the cli-
in Rosetta are
lost its asperity."

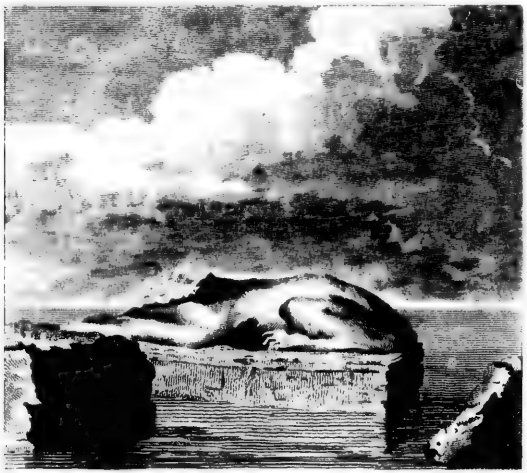
denominated an inn,
it but a well of dis-
naalie, *the passage;*
we are informed by
constructed of white
, and a fragment of
the gate. About a
ruins are discernible
traces of Heraclea,
, near the margin of
rnishes tea, coffee,
sty traveller. Ad-
then quits the coast,
in of shifting sand;
t dimensions, in the
noving plain. These
atories, or places of

Every

TENT of the BEDOUINS.

Sennan.

J.W. Warren sc.



Part of the Ruins of Canopus.

FIG. 2.

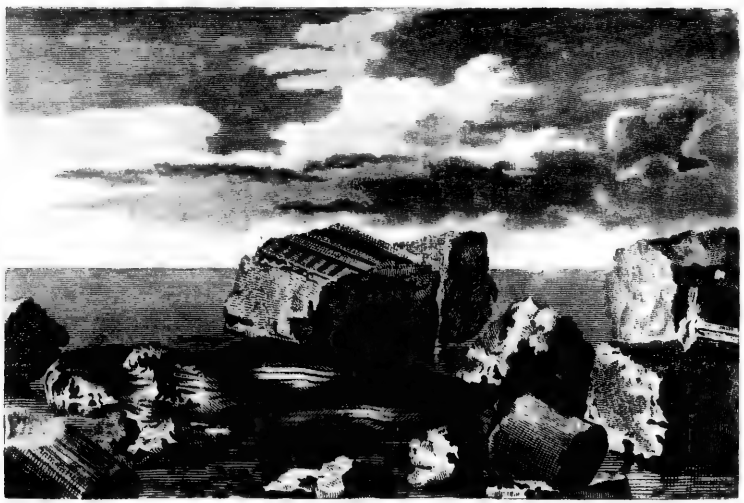


FIG. 1.

A fluted Statue at Aboukir.

Specimens of EGYPTIAN *Sculpture.*

Sonnini.

TENT *of the* BEDOUINS.

Sonnini.

I. W. Warren sc.

Every article of consumption is to be found in Rosetta, and travellers generally reside with the merchants of their respective nations. Rosetta is indeed, the emporium of trade between Cairo and Alexandria. It possesses some branches of commerce which are peculiar to itself; such as spun cotton dyed red, linen, dyes for silk, &c. Rice is exported from thence, but not in such considerable quantities as from Damietta.

The ox is the most valuable animal in Egypt, and renders more important services to man than any other domestic animal. It is well known in what estimation oxen were held in ancient Egypt: they furnished deities to that superstitious people, and their worship was universally diffused. Apis was the principal of this herd of Gods, and had his altars, his priests, and his oracles. No heifer was permitted to be slain; and to eat their flesh incurred the punishment of sacrilege*. The priesthood supported this doctrine. Funeral obsequies were frequently performed in honour of oxen, and the priesthood defended that enthusiasm in favour of animals so useful to a people, whose laws had frequently an allusion to some agricultural labours.

Egyptian oxen are still handsome, but probably they may have degenerated for want of due attention: they are of a dun colour, and their horns are small and short. Their flesh†, as might be expected of animals of hot regions, is less succulent and nutricious than that of France. The veal of Egypt is flabby, insipid, and very seldom eaten; a prohibition being still in force against it, and the Cophts follow their example from habit. The cows of Egypt sometimes produce twins at a birth, but this degree of fecundity, though perhaps less rare than in Europe, is by no means considered as an ordinary occurrence.

As the Egyptians have not the art of giving motion to their mills and hydraulic machines, by the proper application of wind and water, the strength of the ox is exercised for that purpose; every rice-mill requires forty or fifty of these animals, which greatly enhances the price of them; they are sometimes sold for so high a price as ten guineas each, at Damietta and Rosetta, where machinery of that kind is so abundant. These animals when harnessed have their head at liberty, as the yoke is so peculiarly constructed, that the business is effected by the exertion of the shoulders. To this method of yoking has been ascribed the thickness of their withers, which, in that particular greatly exceed those of others: it is possible, however, that it is only a natural swell, in which case the animal may be considered as a species approaching the bison.

Domestic animals of all kinds are no where more familiarized than in Egypt, and other eastern countries. The horse, though high-spirited, is as gentle as the lamb: the buffalo, while he displays a ferocity of countenance, is as obedient as the ox, and quietly submits to the will of his rider or leader. This gentleness of character does not proceed from indolence, but the judicious conduct of the men of the country, who profit by their usefulness, and by their peculiar mode of treatment ensure the docility of their animals. These parts of the east have always been inhabited by wandering nations, now called Bedouin Arabs, who, possessing only their flocks, have no other care than to preserve them; they associate with themselves, and are so frequently travelling with them from place to place, that they require neither fold nor shackler. The dromedary, after having pastured at liberty the whole day, at night repairs to his master's tent, lying down before it, while it shelters the Bedouin and his family, his mare, a few goats, and some sheep‡.

In Rosetta, and its environs, multitudes of animals

* By the Hindoo law, at this day, the murder of a man or a calf, is the only crime which the Hindoos punish with death. *Mackintosh's Tr.* i. 312.

† M. Maillet, in his description of Egypt, speaking of the Egyptian oxen, says, "they are animals of such exquisite beauty, that the pencil is incapable of representing it."—M. Sonnini, however, says, "I never yet met with any one ox which struck me either for its form or colours!"—*Maillet*, adopts the same kind of language in speaking of their quality, "Their flesh," says he, "is admirable; it does not yield in quality to that of the oxen of Hungary, nor to any other whatever; nay, it has this farther excellence, that of being extremely nutricious."

On this assertion, M. Sonnini adds the following remark, —"This meat, nevertheless, is far from having the flavour of the beef which we eat in France. The assertion of Maillet, false in the fact, is likewise so in the principle. In truth, it contradicts a general observation which every traveller has it in his power to ascertain, namely, that the flesh of the animals of very hot regions has neither the succulence nor the flavour of that of animals of the same species, fed in cold or temperate climates." *Sonnini's Tr.* I. 236.

‡ Among the animals domesticated by the Egyptians, is the ichneumon, or mangouste, anciently an object of worship, and held sacred by the people. Buffon was the first who accurately described the mangouste, and dissipated many errors concerning the natural history of it. Sonnini examined the animal in its natural state, and relates many particulars concerning

animals are accumulated, seemingly designed by nature for the peculiar service of men. Dogs have been respected in all ages, by savage as well as civilized nations, excepting the Mahometans; who, by an absurd prejudice, founded on an absurd religion, consider them as unclean beasts, and dare not presume to touch them, under the penalty of becoming unclean themselves. How contradictory to the practice of the ancient Egyptians, who so highly venerated the dog, that they rendered him peculiar honours, as being the most faithful and intelligent of animals!*

It is astonishing, that in supporting a life of misery, these dogs should not be exposed to the effects of the hydrophobia†. "But this malady," says M. Sonnini, "rare in the northern parts of Turkey, is still more so in the southern provinces of that empire, and is totally unknown under the burning sky of Egypt."

The Egyptian dogs are a species of large greyhounds, which would be extremely beautiful if they were treated with less severity; but they lose the elegance of their form by encountering a variety of difficulties to support existence. The Bedouins, in all respects less superstitious than the Turks, have a breed of tall greyhounds to protect their tents; and their affection for their protectors is so great, that a man could hardly destroy one of these animals without forfeiting his own life.

Though they entertain so unjust an aversion to dogs, the Mussulmen have a great partiality for cats. Mahomet greatly respected them. It is related of him, that being called away on sudden and important business, he cut off the sleeve of his robe rather than disturb one of those animals that lay asleep on it. Hence a cat is beheld with pleasure in a mosque as the favourite of the prophet, and as the enemy of many noxious creatures; but if a dog should pollute any of their temples by entering them, he incurs instant death. Among the ancient Egyptians cats were highly venerated, and when any one of them died in a house, his death was solemnly lamented by the owner, who shaved his eye-brows as a token of his mourning. If a cat was accidentally killed, the aggressor was punished with death; and the animals, when dead, were embalmed in the sacred temples, and from thence conveyed solemnly to Bubastis, now called Basta, in Lower Egypt, to be interred‡.

Sonnini

---

cerning them. The mangouste might easily be domesticated, but the Egyptians at present never rear them, nor have they any certain information that their ancestors ever did: the domesticated ones mentioned by Bellonius and Prosper Alpinus, were probably a few preserved from motives of curiosity; for, though they destroy rats and mice, they over-balance their services by their avidity in destroying poultry, and feasting on their eggs. From their fondness of eggs, they frequently employ themselves in scratching up the sands, to discover those of the crocodile, and thus preventing the excessive propagation of that destructive creature; not by passing through its throat, and devouring its entrails, as many ancient and modern writers have erroneously stated. If mangoustes have been seen to spring furiously on little crocodiles (*an antipathy to the crocodile is, however, a real innate instinct in an animal of a totally different species, the thirse, or tortoise, of the Nile*) when set before them, it was the effect of their appetite for reptiles in general, and not from their being commissioned by a particular law of nature to devour those amphibious animals. In Upper-Egypt, where crocodiles are numerous, mangoustes are seldom to be seen; but in Lower Egypt, where crocodiles are hardly known, the mangoustes are abundantly plentiful, the soil being more humid and shaded, supplying them more liberally with their proper prey than the Upper Country.

* It is therefore astonishing, that few cities in the world contain so many dogs in proportion as those of Egypt; or at least manifest such apparent signs of their partiality to those emblems of fidelity, by permitting them to range in the streets. But, with all this appearance of tenderness and mercy, the poor animals exist only on the food which chance procures them at the doors of houses, or which they scramble for among the receptacles of offal; always exposed to the blows of inhuman passengers, and sometimes liable to be butchered by the ferocious mob, they endeavour to render their best services to their ungrateful persecutors: they frequently pass the most unfrequented streets, anxious to avoid the possibility of contaminating them by touching their cloaths; the Mussulman being at the same time equally careful to keep his garments out of the way. From their natural propensity to be beneficial to mankind, they are the terror of the depredators by night, spontaneously guarding the quays, the boats, and the interior of cities. It is singular, that these dogs never remove from the districts where they first drew their breath; united into distinct tribes, they are acquainted with their limits, and should any one venture beyond his boundary, he would be attacked by the whole cohort whose quarters he had invaded.

† M. Le Cointra, who resided in Egypt, declares, that "in this country the hydrophobia never appeared; and that at Aleppo, where there is a prodigious multitude of dogs of different species roving about, abandoned to themselves, and without a master; that there, where those animals perish in great numbers, for want of water and food, and by the heat of the climate, the hydrophobia never was seen." *Memoir on the Means of curing the Hydrophobia, by M. de Matheis, inserted in the Bibliothe Physico Econom.* A. D. 1784. p 216.

‡ The honours conferred on these animals were not merely the effects of the ignorance or caprice of the people: they were invented by the priests to procure respect for objects necessary to be preserved, as destroyers of rats and mice, which were abundant in that country, and destructive to the grain. Cats are encouraged in all the houses of Egypt; in those of the opulent they are indulged in the most superb apart-

Sonnini derived much pleasure and information from his various excursions in the environs of Rosetta, where the plains were decorated with a variety of plants, and the groves frequented by birds of the most beautiful plumage, whose melodious notes delighted every passenger. The date-trees being very numerous in that country, birds of various denominations perch on their long foliage, while others hop from branch to branch in the thick hedges of the inclosures. With the assistance of a fowling-piece, the author brought many of these aerial beings to the ground. One of these, the *houhou* of Egypt, Sonnini sent a description of to Buffon; and it appears in his work under that denomination.

The hahou, or Egyptian cuckoo, has short wings, though they are long in proportion to the body; they can neither soar, nor cross a small extent of space by a single flight, for if they cannot discover a bush or shrub to perch upon, they must inevitably fall to the ground; they are perfectly tame, and are not much alarmed by the approach of men: so far from being rapid in their motions, they can only exert themselves to a sufficient degree to enable them to catch the insects, on which they principally subsist. The houhou, though classed in the same genus with the cuckoo, is totally dissimilar in its habits to that bird: they usually go in pairs, which appear to be strongly attached to each other: they hatch their eggs and rear their young, with the same affectionate kindness which is displayed among the feathered inhabitants of European groves.

The lapwing is a common bird in Lower-Egypt; birds of this species, when winter commences, flock from colder climates to a warmer region, where they can procure a more plentiful supply of nourishment: the Nile, on its subsiding, leaving multitudes of insects for their support. These migrating lapwings are fat, tender, and well-tasted, but those which have not improved themselves by travelling, are said to possess no alluring qualities.

Turtle-doves are found here also in great abundance; but of these the birds of passage are preferred by the epicure, to those of the country. The former arrive in Egypt in autumn, and are numerous from the sea up to Cairo: they are of the common species, and very different from the native doves of the country. They abound in the interior of cities, as well as in the fields and gardens; but they are far from being shy, though they are more frequently heard than seen, as they delight in hiding themselves among the thick branches of the orange tree.

The *turtle-dove of Egypt* is extremely beautiful; the upper part of the head and neck is of a light lint grey; the back and upper part of the wings are of the same colour, but display a more vivid tint; a half collar, black and narrow, appears on the upper part of the neck; the throat and interior coverts of the tail are white: the feathers of the tail are of a light ash-colour, terminating with white; the iris of the eye is orange-coloured, the beak ashen; the tarsus and the toes are of a rose colour.

Turtle-doves, of whatever kind, are, however, spared by the Egyptians, who never eat them, but rather consider it as a breach of hospitality to destroy a harmless race, many of which visit their country in perfect confidence, and add to the general harmony of the grove. Even the farmer, who sees his fields plundered by whole flocks, suffers them to multiply in tranquillity; but this condescension was not imitated by Europeans. "On my first journey," says Sonnini, "I had the pleasure of seeing there *(at Cairo)* at the end of the month of August, a pair of ring-necked turtle-doves build their nest, on the shelf of a window in the consul's house. Habituated to the protection of men, and having nothing besides to dread from the intemperature of the atmosphere, these gentle birds employed very little art in this work; it was nothing but a few straws negligently laid across. The female deposited there on the night of the 28th an egg, which would probably have been followed by another. I took the utmost precaution that she should not be disturbed, but all was in vain; the nest, the eggs, were carried off, and with them the fruits of the love of that species of bird which best knows the feelings of it, and the satisfaction

apartments, and partake of the indolence and state of their luxurious masters. "What difference does it make," says Sonnini, "in the case of idolatrous religions, whether you worship a man or a cat, a woman or an onion? are they not all at an equal distance from the deity? Since men will be superstitious, is it not best that they should be usefully so? Happy the nations whose superstition tends towards the improvement of agriculture, and the furtherance of general good!"

I should have enjoyed in watching their progress, and in observing them during the period of incubation. A Turk, an Egyptian, would have had respect to these affecting operations of nature; an European annihilated them."

The little owl shot by Sonnini in visiting a ruinous castle, was rather different in its plumage from the owls in Europe, but that difference did not absolutely constitute a distinct species.

Various sorts of wild ducks arrive annually in Lower Egypt, and assemble in the lakes near Rosetta and Damietta. An exclusive privilege of taking them is granted by government, and great quantities are sold in the markets; the ceremony of cutting their throats must, however, be first performed, as the Mahometans feed upon no animal which has not been bled.

The thrush arrives in this country about the same season, and remains there till the month of March; but while the wild-ducks flock to enliven the collections of distant waters, the thrush continues among human habitations, or seeks the balmy groves.

In the neighbourhood of Rosetta, beautiful little winged animals of different forms and colours are seen, fluttering amidst the shrubs, and eclipsing by their brilliancy the flowers which every where abound. Among these the dragon-fly exhibits a body of the finest purple; its wings are orange-coloured at the bottom, having also a spot of the same colour near the extremity. Another beautiful insect, less innocent than the dragon-fly, is a wasp, ten lines long; the front of the head is a beautiful yellow, and it has two large black eyes; with three spots, resembling eyes, triangularly placed on the crown of the head. The rings of the belly are elegantly variegated, with shining black, yellow, and gold colour. A hopping insect called the cricket (*grillus*) is also frequently seen, the colours of which are judiciously distributed; its length is fourteen lines, and its greatest breadth about three; the crown of the head is marked with a line composed of black and yellow; the large eyes are black and white; a small eye in the middle of the head is of an orange colour; the rest of the head is of a greenish grey; its wings are grey, tinged with yellow and blue, and its claws are black.

SECTION IV.

Inhabitants of Rosetta—Their Manners and Customs—Smoaking Tobacco, and drinking Coffee much practised—Their Aversion to what is termed taking a Walk—Amusements at Coffee-Houses—An Egyptian Story—Pantomimic Courtship—Egyptian Ladies delight in large black Eyes and Eye-brows—and Red Nails.

ROSETTA has not, like Alexandria, any immediate communication with the sea, it does not therefore swarm with such a multitude of foreigners and adventurers, a circumstance of some importance to those who delight in a tranquil life. An European, however, is not secure from insults in Rosetta, but they are not expected to be so numerous, or of such magnitude as those which he may have to encounter at Alexandria, or with which he may be persecuted at Grand Cairo. The turk is usually contented by applying the epithet of *infidel* to an European; but the terms of *christian* and *dog* are so truly synonimous in Egypt, that they are often indiscriminately used, even when no insult is intended. Should an European appear in a populous quarter of the town without a turkish habit, he would probably be saluted with hisses or sneers, and pursued with repeated shouts of Nouzrani! Nouzrani! The Jews also, though stationary inhabitants, are more intolerably treated than the Christians; but they patiently endure insults and revilings, if they are permitted to enjoy their insatiable thirst of gold. Habited in the oriental style, they are compelled to wear a head-dress, and to be shod in a peculiar manner; but they are chiefly distinguished by tufts of hair, which they must suffer to grow near the ear, on both sides of the face.

The merchants are principally Turks or Syrians, though a few of them come from the coast of Barbary; the degenerate descendants of the ancient Egyptians, called Copts, are numerous at Rosetta. Some Arabs also are resident in that

hat city; the first of which is one of the Mameluucs, who is honoured with the title of Agra*.

When the opulent and indolent Turk has satiated himself with the sweet warbling of the birds, and the balsamic breezes, undulating in the garden, he repairs to the coffee-house, a kind of smoaking rendezvous, where only coffee is to be had, and a lighted coal, to preserve the delicious weed in a continued state of fumigation. Mats are spread for the company; and these places of resort are frequented by persons of all nations, who reside in Egypt:—a few words pass occasionally, but nothing like a conversation occurs. The turk is cold and taciturn, regarding every other nation with disdain; and the African, though not equally fond of silence, chooses to follow his example. Dancing girls, buffoons, and extempore declaimers attend these places, to offer their services: a professed story-teller, also tenders his oratorical narratives, hoping to obtain a reward for his tiresome and insipid compositions. Some of these, however, are borrowed from Arabian writers, and are entitled to some praise.

A stranger in Rosetta† can hardly pass through a single street, without being invited to come into some house to drink coffee. This act of politeness is become so habitual, that it is frequently used by those who have not any coffee to give, and who would be much embarrassed if the invitation was accepted. The coffee used here, which is brought from Arabia, is excellent, and forty beans are allowed by connoisseurs for every cup.

Though the inhabitants of Rosetta are less barbarous than those of other parts of Egypt, they are equally addicted to revenge and perfidy, and harbour as much aversion to Europeans. They abandon themselves to the most detestable vices; but let an impenetrable curtain drop over scenes so shocking, and let us pass into the retreat‡ where beauty, deprived of homage and sensibility, withers

* Smoaking tobacco, and drinking coffee, are much practised here, and in every part of Turkey: the pipe is perpetually in the mouth, at home, or abroad, on foot, or on horseback, and the tobacco-pouch is a constant attendant at the girdle; the tubes of the pipes, which are of an immoderate length, are formed of odoriferous wood. Sonnini brought home one made of the jasmine-tree, which is extremely beautiful in that country, the length of which is about six feet: the pipes of more common use are covered with silk, and ornamented with threads of gold. The poorer class, to whom smoaking seems a necessary employment, make use of simple tubes of reed. The perfume of aloes, used with the tobacco, renders it perfectly mild, and the smoke inoffensive.

The tobacco of Egypt is of so mild a quality as not to provoke spitting, which is thought very indecent in that country. Some of the orientalists as are not required to labour, usually enjoy the coolness of their orchards, the perfume of their delicious gardens, or the prospect of a tranquil stream; but never walk, except when urged by business, or strongly stipulated by pleasure. They delight in the exercise of riding, but have no relish for what the Europeans call *taking a walk*. It exhorts a smile from them to behold any of the natives of those regions walking backwards and forwards in the open air, and repeatedly pursuing, and retreading the same monotonous steps:—Going forwards and backwards, without any apparent object, they consider as the height of folly, unless prescribed by a physician, for the cure of some particular disorder. The African Negroes, and the South American savages entertain the same idea of this practice; their vacant minds are never occupied by meditation, and consequently require no relief from a too intense application.

† The country in the neighbourhood of Rosetta is particularly beautiful. Mr. Browne speaks of it in the following terms:—"The eye is not indeed gratified with the romantic views, flowing lines, the mixture of plain and mountain, nor that universal verdure that is to be observed on the banks of the Rhine or the Danube. But his taste is poor who would reduce all kinds of picturesque beauty to one criterion. To me, after being wearied with the sandy dryness of the barren districts to the west, the vegetable soil of Rosetta, filled with every production necessary for the sustenance, or flattering to the luxury of man; the rice-fields covering the superficies with verdure, the orange groves exhaling aromatic odours, the date-trees formed into an umbrageous roof over the head:—shall I say the mosques and tombs, which, though wholly incompatible with the rules of architecture: yet grave and simple in the structure, are adapted to fill the mind with pleasing ideas; and, above all, the unruffled weight of the waters of the majestic Nile, reluctantly descending to the sea, where its own vast tide, after pervading and fertilizing so long a tract, is to be lost in the general mass;—these objects filled me with ideas, which, if not great or sublime, were certainly among the most soothing and tranquil that have ever affected my mind." *Brown's Trav. in Egypt.*

‡ While M. Sonnini resided at Cairo, he accidentally surprised a young Frenchman, behind a lattice in the consul's house, making a variety of signs, apparently to a lady who resided on the opposite side of the canal at Cairo, and who answered by significant motions, though at the distance of above twenty yards. Sonnini being permitted to behold this curious conversation, soon became an adept in the art, which he at first saw with astonishment. The young man soon after being required to leave Cairo, took his last farewel of the lady: and Sonnini, being properly instructed, presented himself at the window, in the station of his absent instructor, and informed her, in the same pantomimic language, that he was his countryman, and came to offer her the same homage. This proposal created some difficulties at first, which were removed by the energetic persuasion of her new lover, who grow weary of addressing his vows through the cross-bars of a window-blind, to a person whose beauty was imaginary. She promised to appear on the terrace towards the evening: Sonnini, true to the hour appointed, saw a woman elegantly dressed, but her face was concealed by a veil, a circumstance which excited his vexation more than even the lattice of his window. He earnestly intreated her to remove the impertinent covering, and a black female who attended her, enforced her entreaties and exhortations to the same effect: but

withers and languishes under the power of a suspicious barbarian, tormented by his jealousy, and profaned by his polluted touch.

The wives of the Mamelukes and principal personages of Egypt are not Egyptian women, but natives of other eastern countries, particularly of Greece, where beauty is a regular and valuable article of commerce. They seldom appear abroad, and when they are granted that indulgence, a veil or mask conceals their faces, and preserves their natural charms from the ardent rays of the sun, as well as the ill effects of a saline air. The charms of these ladies are only preserved for the tyrant who holds them in captivity. No other man can enter the place where they are, or contrive to behold their faces: inevitable death awaits the stranger who should dare to attempt the former, or speak a word to them on meeting them out of the house. The ladies, however, are sometimes inclined to break some of the links of their galling chain, and they have been known to have made the first advances: but such intrigues are attended with the utmost danger; nor can their assignations be regarded, without conscious fear of the most tragic consequences.

This class of women frequently visit each other, and are not very delicate or decent in their conversation. Without education or principle, and in the full enjoyment of idleness and abundance, every thing contributes to present sensual considerations; the tyranny of their husbands, the vivacity of their affections, and the benignity of the climate, all contribute to direct voluptuous ideas to their imaginations: among other frolics, they sometimes amuse themselves in changing clothes, and in mutually assuming each other's dress; a species of amusement sometimes introductory of others less innocent.

Not satisfied with their natural charms they endeavour to heighten their beauty by the assistance of art. But the women of the lower order are destitute of that delicate colouring, with which the complexions of the superior class of women are animated: they have, like the men of the same country, a tawney skin, and wear the tatters of extreme poverty; few of them have any other cloathing than a species of large tunic with wide sleeves, serving at once for a gown and a shift, open on both sides from the arm-pit to the knee: the women, as before observed, seldom concern themselves so long as their faces are not exposed to public view.

Though the opulent and idle women possess so many natural charms, they are no strangers to the arts of the toilette. The most remarkable *traits* of oriental beauty, are large black eyes; and in Egypt every method is taken to render them larger and blacker. Females of every description, tinge their eye-brows and eye-lashes with black lead, called Alquifoux: the more opulent Egyptians employ the fumes of amber, or some other odoriferous substance for that purpose. With this they cover the eye-brows and eye-lids, and the eye-lashes are blackened with it, by means of a small reed or quill.

Another fashion, equally prevalent among Egyptian ladies, requires the hands and nails to be dyed red: and so universal is this custom, that should any person neglect, or refuse to adopt it, she would be accused of unpardonable indecorum; though it rather blemishes than decorates a beautiful hand; a dingy layer of an orange-coloured drug has an unpleasing effect on the whiteness of the palm. The present ladies of Egypt sometimes refine on the general practice. The soles of the feet, when not hardened by too much walking, is covered plentifully with the same colouring. They also paint their fingers, in a partial manner; and the men apply the hema to their beards, and anoint their heads with it, to strengthen the organs, and prevent the hair and beard from falling off. A remarkable singularity is, that the perfume which

but their united efforts were for some time useless: this was too great a favour to be immediately granted; as these ladies possess so singular a kind of modesty, or delicacy, that many of them would rather exhibit their whole naked persons, than uncover their faces. On the following day the solicitations of the European were eagerly renewed, when the officious negro-slave, guessing the feelings of her mistress, snatched away the veil, and discovered a beautiful young woman over whose countenance shame had diffused a very vivid colouring. From that moment their interviews were frequent and familiar. Sonnini was invited to the house, with solemn assurances of safety; and the lady further informed him, that her husband, an old Turkish merchant, would speedily undertake a long journey, when he might conveniently pass over to her house, and be privately admitted at the back door. But the serious consequences which might probably attend this compliance, presented a barrier which all her obliging advances, and assurances of safety could not prevail on him to surmount. Several evenings passed away in a contest between his prudence and a tender passion, in which the former was found the most invincible. At length, however, their interviews were observed by some vigilant Mahometans; and a musquet was discharged from some of the neighbouring terraces, the ball of which whizzed close to one of our traveller's ears, congratulating him on his discretion in abandoning the assignation at the lady's house.

the

the flowers of the henna exhales, ceases to be agreeable when any person smells to it very close.

The taste of men in the eastern countries is extremely different from that of Europeans, with respect to their women. Extreme corpulence, among them, is the greatest perfection of beauty: the ladies are therefore desirous to acquire some degree of superiority in this particular. It is but justice to add, that among all the nations of the earth, there are no women who pay a more rigid attention to cleanliness than these orientals, and no women upon earth can be more successful in their endeavours*.

SECT. V.

Natron—Journey to Aboukir—Ancient City of Canopis—Mutilated Remains—Sonnini visits the Governor, who receives him with great Solemnity—Tower of Canopus—Mosque of Abou Maandour—Remarkable Lizards.

IN Rosetta there are magazines of natron, and manufactures in which it is employed. This is a mineral alkali, found near the centre of a desert in Egypt, anciently known by the name of the desert of Nitria. It is not often found pure, being frequently united with earthy matter, marine salt, Glauber's salt, and a small portion of vitriolic tartar.

The natron has the same properties as the saltwort, but in a higher degree: it is much used at Rosetta, in bleaching thread and cloth. One hundred pounds of common natron, with about seventy pounds of lime, are used in bleaching two hundred pounds of thread. The trade in natron is important. At Venice, this alkali, mixed with grey-stone, forms the excellent brown glasses of Murano. Natron is also used in dying, in preparing leather, in whitening linen, as leaven in pastry, in preserving meat, and in mixing with snuff, to give it a higher degree of pungency.

While Sonnini was in the neighbourhood of Rosetta, he visited the ruins of the ancient city of Canopus, now known by the name of *Aboukir*. Having passed through the sandy plain, westward of the city, he proceeded towards lake Maadie. On the road he passed through a little camp of Bedouin Arabs, of whom he purchased some unpleasant water; and crossing the lake in a wretched ferry boat, he quitted the road of Alexandria, and kept along the coast, till he arrived at Aboukir. It is now only a village, defended by a castle, erected upon the point of a cape, which projects into the sea. Beyond the cape, some shoals inclose a small harbour, at the front of the castle, where French frigates usually anchor when they cruise in these latitudes. Merchant ships also frequently seek an asylum there, when forced by tempestuous weather to quit the new and dangerous port of Alexandria†.

Our travellers repaired to the house of a Jew, named Mallum Yousef, at that time agent to the French consul-general in Egypt, by whom they were accommodated with pleasant and convenient apartments, in a very spacious house. The travellers had brought their own bread, as none is to be procured at Aboukir; and a frugal repast was provided by the Jew and his son, the wife performing the culinary part. Here Sonnini saw a pair of red partridges, and was informed that those birds frequently visited Aboukir, and were taken alive without much difficulty.

Having finished their repast, the travellers remounted the mules to visit their vestiges of the adjacent city of Canopis; which cover a large extent of ground, and still present many objects of admiration to the spectator: but, though much more estimable relics might be discovered under the surface, such researches are forbidden by an ignorant and superstitious multitude, who confine the idea of riches to gold alone, and cannot be induced to suppose that foreigners travel for any other purpose than that of hoping to discover some hidden

* M. Sonnini is next extremely particular in giving an account of female circumcision, which is more interesting to the anatomical, than the general reader.

† It was in this quarter that the glorious victory over the fleet of the French republic was obtained, by the intrepidity of Nelson.

pecuniary treasures, and not merely to explore the monuments of art or antiquity*.

On the morning after the arrival of our Europeans at Aboukir, Sonnini went to visit the governor, who professed the occupation of a barber. Apprized of his intention by the Jew, he received him in his best apparel, and with all the solemnity of a vizier, his head covered with a white shawl, and bearing a fan of feathers in his hand. After offering him his best services, he assured him that it was with regret he informed him that he was unable to present him with coffee, as the coffee-house was unfortunately shut up. He declared he was on the most intimate and friendly terms with the landlord, for he was not only his governor, but his barber. On Sonnini's withdrawing, the governor affected the same pomposity that he assumed on his ceremoneous entrance.

The castle of Aboukir is a place of no importance: a ditch, and a few small pieces of cannon, defend the fort. A light-house, poorly illuminated, gave no additional splendour to the place. Most of the male inhabitants of Aboukir are either fishermen or sailors: the place seems uninhabited during the day, the doors of the houses being shut.

On his return to Rosetta, Sonnini resolved to make an excursion, to take a more perfect view of the Boghass, or mouth of the Nile, so remarkable for shipwrecks and danger. He was accompanied in this expedition by the French consul, his drogman, and a French merchant, mounted upon asses. Stopping near an old castle, almost demolished, they found some Bedouin Arabs were encamped there: their tents were small and comfortless, and denoted the wretchedness of the persons they were intended to shelter. The women among these people did not conceal their faces, like the other nations who are settled in Egypt. Youth had rendered the youngest of them agreeable and blooming, and they seemed inclinable to be obliging †.

The Nile having lately overflowed, the grounds near the sea were slippery, miry, and intersected with ditches. Approaching the formidable sand-bank, or bar in the mouth of the river, against which the sea was breaking with violence; the masts of germes, which had been wrecked some days before, appeared in view; and some sailors were employed in disposing of the bodies of their friends or shipmates, which the agitated waters had cast upon the shore.

The following day our traveller went about three miles to the south of Rosetta, to see the tower of Canopus, from the mistaken supposition that the city of Rosetta occupied the place of ancient Canopus. This tower is of modern construction, though in a ruinous state: it contains an opening to a subterraneous passage, which is said to extend to Alexandria. From the top of the tower, a general view of the country is to be seen on every side. To the east, coolness and fertility

* Several pillars of the finest granite were perceived among the ruins, but they were mutilated and scattered upon the ground; their shafts, though extremely large, were fluted; and their capitals were of the most exquisite workmanship. Many avenues of subterraneous galleries, filled up with rubbish, are still to be perceived. Every article that presents itself, announces the former existence of most magnificent edifices. The natives of Aboukir called these majestic ruins, "The city of Pharaoh."

The sea has gained considerably on this part, as distant ruins are seen in the midst of the waves: near these antique remains, numerous blocks of granite are perceived, and a colossal statue of a woman, fluted its whole length; this is much mutilated, injured, and thrown from its pedestal: a large sphinx, also mutilated, appears near its side, the pedestal of which is richly covered with hieroglyphics. Such are the remains of the once celebrated Canopus, a city founded by the Greeks; where the magnificent temple of Serapis once stood, and where strangers, attracted by the luxurious pleasures of the city, as well as veneration for the God, flocked in great abundance. The surrounding country, on which nature had luxuriantly bestowed her favours, and the general affluence of the inhabitants, concurred to render it the most charming retreat, and the most enchanting residence: but luxury, pride, licentiousness, and a shameful depravity of manners arrived to such a height, as to ensure its destruction, and the downfal and desolation of Canopus consequently ensued. Like many other once flourishing cities, it has fallen a sacrifice to the vices of the people, and is now become a heap of ruins: instead of opulent and civilized inhabitants, a few ignorant barbarians are scattered on the almost deserted soil. The Nile no longer deigns to fertilize the land with its moisture; and desert tracts are substituted for verdant plains: Canopus no longer exists, but in the remembrance of a few individuals.

† Our traveller, and his companions were surrounded by these women, who petitioned for presents, and two or three parats were given them. The old women, perceiving that the travellers were more liberal to the young ones than to them, employed them as their solicitors, and were pleased to see the success of their application; especially when the young girls received from them some tender glances. While the merchant and his attendants were thus engaged in sprightly conversation with the young Arabs, Sonnini was encompassed by a group of old women, whose dark shrivelled faces were rendered additionally horrible by means of punctures traced upon their chins. With much difficulty, however, he at length escaped from the hideous and importunate circle.

display

t, mounted upon
astle, almost de-
buin Arabs were
small and com-
dness of the per-
er. The women
ceal their faces,
ettled in Egypt.
t of them agree-
emed inclinable

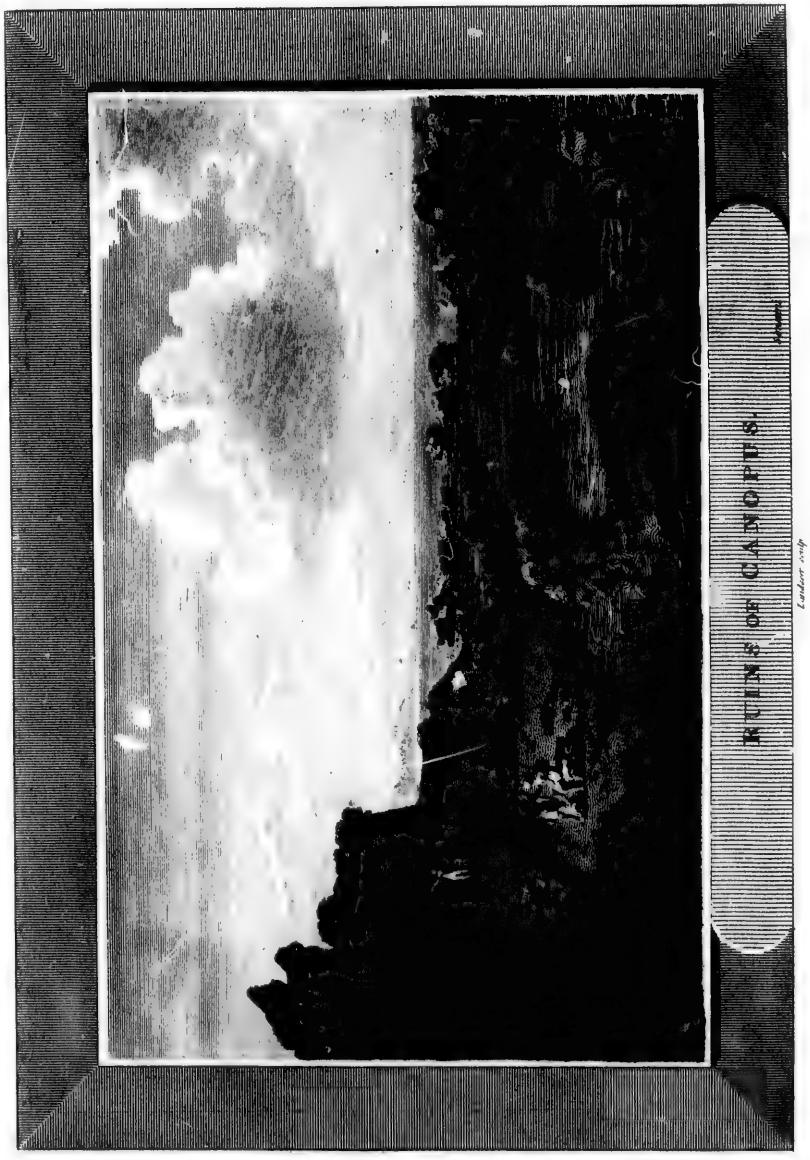
wed, the grounds
, and intersected
formidable sand-
he river, against
th violence; the
n wrecked some
and some sailors
he bodies of their
agitated waters

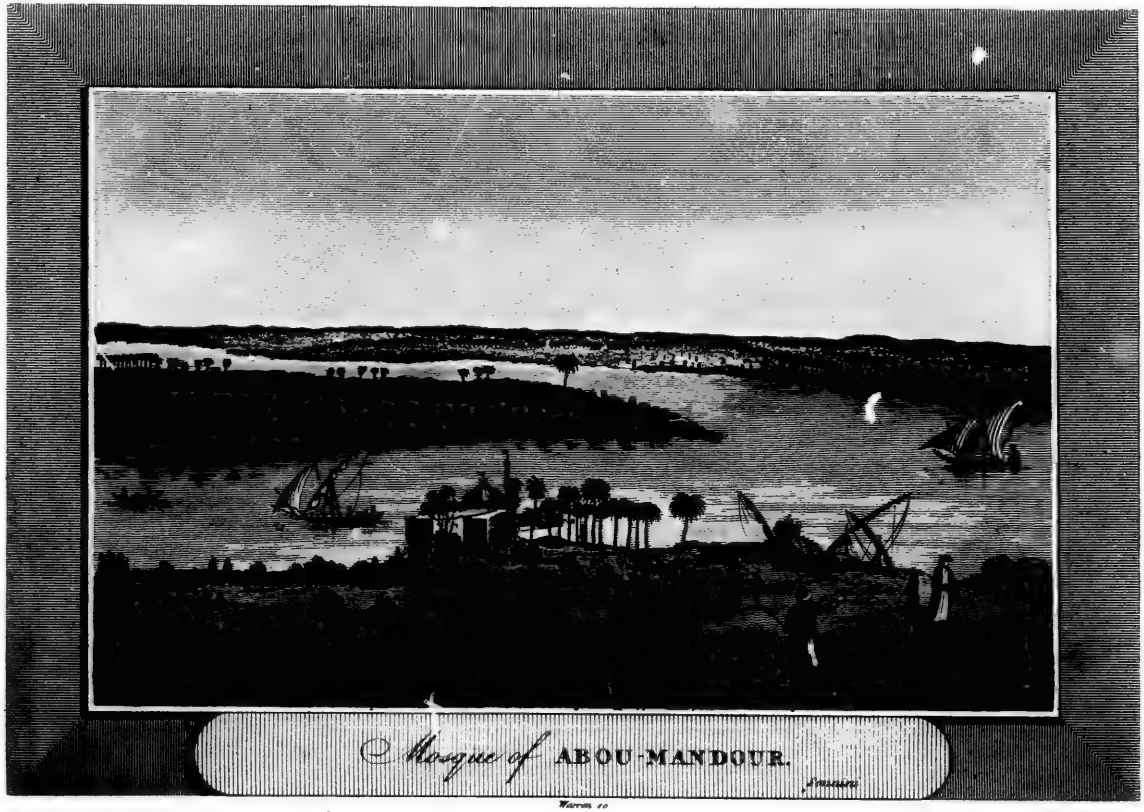
went about three
see the tower of
position that the
place of ancient
ern construction,
tains an opening
ch is said to ex-
top of the tower,
s to be seen on
ness and fertility

nsure its destruction,
pus consequently en-
g cities, it has fallen
and is now become a
vilized inhabitants, a
on the alm
gns to fertili
s are substi
s, but in the reme

were surrounded by
nts, and two or three
hen, perceiving that
young ones than to
s, and were pleased
especially when the
der glances. While
s engaged in spright-
e, Sonnini was en-
hose dark shrivelled
e by means of punc-
nuch difficult
eous and importuna

display





Mosque of ABOU-MANDOUR.

Vol. II.

Mungo Park in the Wilderness

display their treasures over the beautiful carpet of the Delta; to the north the sea, the source of wealth and misfortune, rolls its briny waves; and towards the west, sterility has fixed its everlasting abode in the Lybian deserts.

On the brink of the Nile, near the base of the tower, stands the mosque of Abou-Mandour, *(father of light)* a Mahometan saint, held in universal esteem for preserving Rosetta from being overwhelmed with sands: the saint's assistance is also frequently implored by the women, to enable them to become mothers; for which purpose they perform a nine days' devotion in the Schech. No mariners ever pass before the mosque without making an offering to the Schech, in order to procure the favour of the saint.

A turk who lived in the reign of Ali Bey, in digging near the situation of the tower, discovered some beautiful granite pillars, which were conveyed to Rosetta to be used in the construction of some buildings. Ali, informed of this discovery, pretended to believe that he had found gold there, and fined him so considerable a sum as to render him incapable to proceed in building, and perfectly cured him of making antiquarian researches. Some of these pillars remained a long time on the shores of the Nile, opposite the French house at Rosetta. They were supposed to have belonged to the ancient city of Metelis.

Opposite the mosque of Abou-Mandour, on the eastern bank of the Nile, stand a few houses, denominated Maadie, their situation facing the usual passage to the Delta. Beyond Maadie the village of Boussurath presents itself, formerly inhabited by robbers and pirates, till they were exterminated by Mehemet Bey. At a little distance from the mosque, on the western shore, stands Dgeddie, a considerable village, celebrated for the quantity and excellence of the grapes which its neighbourhood produces: though wine is not made in any part of Egypt, grapes are much cultivated; the leaves of the vine are also used to envelope balls of hashed meat, a dish much esteemed in Egypt; for this purpose the leaves, when young, are sold for a higher price than the grapes*.

Returning to Rosetta, M. Sonnini found a letter from the Jew drogman at Aboukir, informing him that the garrison had opposed the embarkation of the pyramid he had purchased. With much difficulty, indeed, he procured an order from the governor, that the pyramid should be allowed to depart. It was afterwards suggested, that this piece of antiquity was full of gold, on which occasion a long contest ensued; but when the Aga was convinced that the pyramid was merely a stone, he ordered it to be carried to Sonnini's temporary residence, demanding only a small present. On Sonnini's departure from Egypt, he was unable to take this curiosity with him, he therefore committed it to the care of the French consul at Rosetta.

An opinion prevails throughout Egypt, that Europeans have no other object in view in exploring the remains of antiquity, than to discover and procure the hidden treasures they contain. A Turk, who resided at Rosetta, had a very beautiful piece of granite, ornamented with hieroglyphics, at the door of his warehouse: M. Sonnini offered a valuable consideration for this granite, but the Turk would not pay the least attention to his proposal, alledging that his granite was full of gold. The man being poor, our traveller asked him why he did not break the stone, to procure the riches he seemed to have so much occasion for? the man replied, that such a step would be equally dangerous and wicked, *for his stone was a talisman.*

* Sonnini, while his draughtsman was taking a landscape of the surrounding scenery, passed his time in exploring the desert, a sandy region, the dust of which is so very fine, that the smallest insect leaves its track. Lizards are very common in this desert; they are of a small species, the largest not exceeding seven inches in length, and the medium size four or five. The upper part of the head is of a greenish yellow, speckled with blackish spots, the eyes are large, and the tongue is forked: the upper part of the body is variegated with green and yellow, and covered with small scales of various forms; they have five toes on every foot, those on the two hinder are longer than those of the fore-feet, and all are armed with nails. The tail, which is round, terminates in a point. To the beautiful scaly robe, these little reptiles add sprightliness and agility in their motions. Sonnini also saw a little serpent, shining with the most beautiful colours, but it crept suddenly into a hole, and concealed itself.

SECTION

SECTION VI.

The Banana Tree—Custard Apple—Atlé—Buffalo—Water of the Nile—Climate—Inattention to Cleanliness—Diseases—Burial of the Dead—Disorders of the Eyes—Serpent Eaters—The Eel of the Nile—Nightingales—Falcons—Wild Beasts—The Thaleb—Sheep—Goats.

THE fruit of the Banana tree, which is a native of America, embellishes the gardens of Rosetta with its yellow hue during the three winter months; and the environs of Damietta are adorned with a profusion of the same annual exhibition. A few of these prospects may also be seen in Cairo, but they are not to be met with farther south; even at Cairo, the tree is so scarce, that a basket of its fruit, which is much admired for the agreeable acidity of its flavour, is considered as a very estimable present. Another fruit, from the same parent soil, is here called the sweet-sop, or custard apple, and is highly grateful to the taste and smell. It is covered with small papillary elevations, resembling those of a fir-cone; and, when ripe, displays the united colours of green and yellow. Its Arabic name is *keshta* (cream) from the whiteness of its soft pulp, which abounds with oblong kernels.

The common mallow is cultivated in these orchards, and is considered as a proper vegetable to boil with meat. The meluchia resembles the marsh-mallow, and affords a mucilage on boiling; its flowers are yellow, mixed with red; and the plant deserves cultivation merely as an ornament, without considering its great nutritive qualities.

The atlé *(tamarix orientalis)* seems peculiar to Egypt, and is to be found near every village. It attains the height and size of an oak, and is the only large tree in Egypt that furnishes timber or wood for fuel.

It is common to see a female buffalo tied by all her four legs, under the shade of an atlé, near a peasant's hut; she affords her keeper a quantity of good milk, which is manufactured into all kinds of butter and cheese. The buffalo was originally brought from Persia, though it is now more numerous than the ox, and equally domesticated; but it still retains a remnant of ferocity, like all half-civilized animals. The Egyptian buffaloes, however, are not so fierce as those of other countries, though they sometimes manifest a degree of wildness by indulging in occasional freaks. The sight of any thing red, which is said to enrage them elsewhere, makes no impression upon them in Egypt; many of the inhabitants, exclusive of the decoration of a red turban, wear a shawl of that colour about the neck and breast, without attracting the notice of these Egyptian animals.

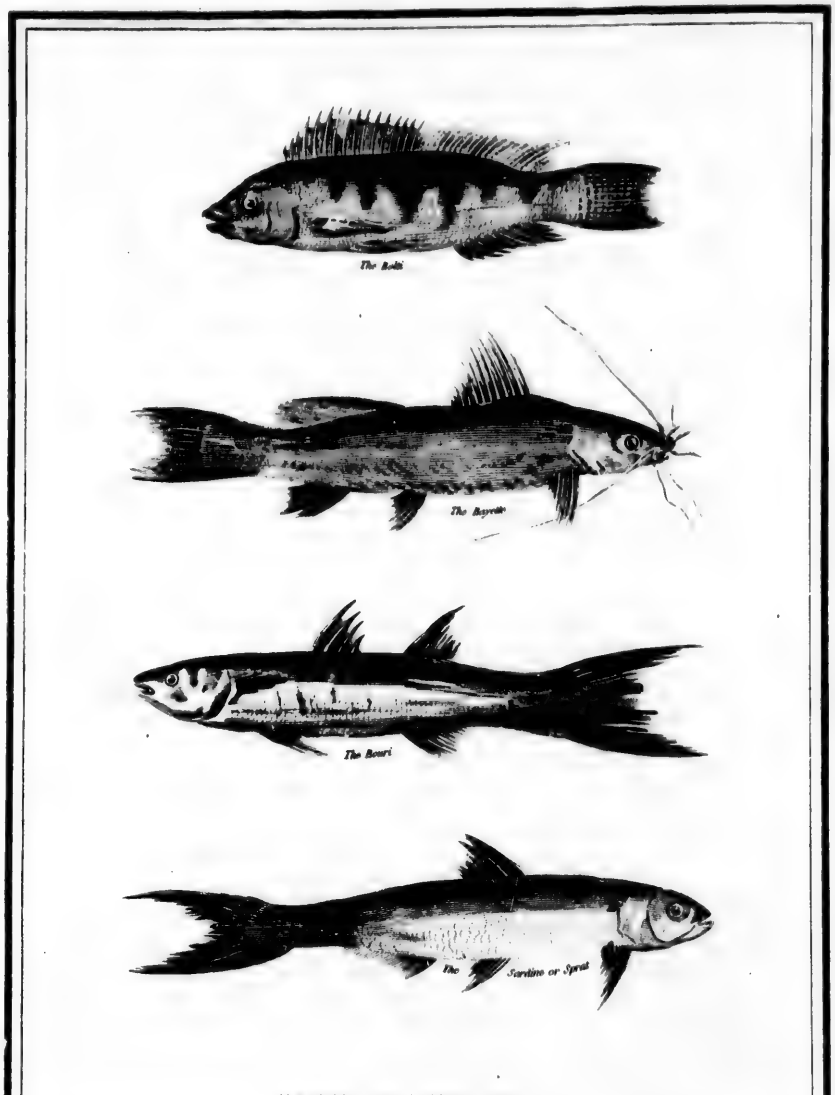
The buffaloes of Egypt are of a blackish colour all over, except the tufts of hair on the forehead, and at the end of the tail, which are a yellowish white. They are neither yoked to the plough, nor employed in any other kind of labour. The females are reared to produce milk, the males to be slaughtered and eaten. The flesh is red, dry, and tough, and emits an unpleasant musky smell; but the Egyptians, coinciding with the opinion of one of their ancient physicians, pronounce it the most wholesome aliment next to the sheep. The hides of buffaloes form a considerable branch of commerce, and various articles are manufactered from their horns, which are striated transversely.

The buffalo delights so much in water, that he will sometimes continue in the Nile for the whole day; he swims with ease, and crosses that river with facility, however rapid its stream. The peasants frequently venture to cross the water on his back, but in that case they must hold firmly by the horns, for as the animal sinks deep into that element, the current would otherwise wash off its rider. The female seldom produces more than one calf at a time, though the exaggerations of credulity have multiplied them to three or four.

To the water of the Nile * miracles of fecundity have

* The comparative course of the Nile may be estimated at about two thousand British miles, thus nearly rivalling the longest Asiatic rivers. *Pink. Mod. Geog.*

The mouths of the Nile are thus particularized by Savary, in his travels through Egypt in 1777, 1778.—At Pelusium is situated the mouth of the Nile, which took its name from the city. Proceeding westward along the sea-shore, the traveller arrives at the Tanitic mouth, so called from a considerable city called Tanis, built on an island of the lake. The ruins of this city are said to be still remaining; but M. Savary



FISH OF THE NILE.

Sonnini

Milton sc.

have been ascribed by the Egyptians; to become mothers, they affirm, women need only to drink of that river, and bathe* in it; and the sailors of Provence are so fully convinced of its prolific virtues, that when they touch at Egypt in their voyages to the Levant, they never omit filling a cask with it, to convey to their wives, as introductory to a numerous progeny. Many ancient and modern authors have, indeed, extolled the qualities of the water of the Nile; but the author of the Philosophic Researches concerning the Egyptians and Chinese, presumes to arraign the water of that river, the only beverage of that kind to be found in a country destitute of springs, except a nauseous kind of beer. He quotes Granger, Pocock, and Hasselquitz, and from their testimony discovers a multitude of diseases floating down the Nile †.

The climate of Egypt has been pronounced the source of many dangerous maladies, and especially the cause of the plague. So lately as 1773, a physician at Paris affirmed, that Egypt was the birth-place of the plague ‡. Dr. Samoilovitz, a Russian physician, asserted, about the same time, that the plague prevailed habitually in Asia, and more particularly in Egypt. The world was not undeceived on this subject, till Volney and Savary published accounts of their travels; and perhaps the mistaken notion may not yet be sufficiently exploded. It is certain, however, that the plague never originates in Egypt, but is conveyed thither from other countries. Sonnini is of opinion, that the climate rather resists than provokes the plague, as it did not make its appearance during the twelve years he travelled in that country, though no precautions were taken to guard against it. In 1780, a Turkish man of war, having the plague on board, anchored at Alexandria, when a man dropped down dead, who had been standing near a chest when it was opened; yet the crew walked about the city without exciting any alarm.

It is, indeed, matter of surprize, that the plague so seldom happens in Egypt, as the inhabitants neglect the slightest precautions against it; works contributing to the fertility of the soil, or the salubrity of the air, are demolished from mere caprice, and marshes are permitted to occupy the place of lakes; canals are inconsiderately filled up, and stagnant water is permitted to remain and disseminate a fetid effluvia, and to co-operate with the stench of dead carcases to infect the air.

No epidemical diseases prevail in Egypt, where foreigners are never attacked by those violent and inflammatory fevers so fatal in our West-India islands; nor are they tormented with those tedious intermittants, which are the harbingers of dropsy, and a variety of obstructions. "All the reasoning in the world," says Sonnini, "can be of no weight when opposed to facts; and let a man add dissertation to dissertation, as Mr. Pauw has done, to prove that Egypt contains the seeds of an infinite number of diseases, experience, the most clear of all demonstrations, will attest the purity and salubrity of its air §."

Greatly

vary had no opportunity of searching for them. After the Tanitic comes the Mendesian mouth, so named from the ancient city of Mendes, where Jupiter was worshipped in the form of a goat, with many shockingly indecent ceremonies. Next is the Phatmetic mouth, which leads to Damietta, and here commences the modern Delta the coast of which, passing the Sebennitic mouth at Cape Bourlos, ends at the Bolbitic mouth, which leads to Rosetta. The Canopic mouth may be traced at Aboukir, farther to the west; and these are the seven mouths of the Nile, the theme of the ancient poets.

* Voyages de Paul Lucas II. 83.

† M. Sonnini, and his companions, during the whole of his residence in Egypt, drank this water, at every season, even when the inundation had rendered it thick, reddish, and disgusting to the eye; but no inconvenience was experienced from its use; and Europeans who have incessantly drank that water in Egypt for several years, ascribe to the use of it their enjoyment of perfect health. The inundation of the river begins at the summer solstice, and the Copts even pretend to fix the hour of the first signs of its rise,

which are distinguished by a peculiar dew, known by the name of the *drop*.

The Egyptians have a method of purifying the Nile water, by putting bruised sweet almonds in a jar, and rubbing the edge of the jar with the same fruit. But though many idle tales have been propagated respecting the evils and maladies resulting from the drinking of Nile water, they are now deemed obsolete, even in Egypt; and Sonnini himself says, "I have seen the water of the Nile drawn and drank *at all times*, and *at all hours*, without any one seeming to apprehend the least danger from its use."

‡ Expériences pour parvenir à determiner la Nature de Venin pestilential, &c. by Mauduit, M. D. Journal de Physique, August 1773.

§ With respect to the burial of the dead, the practice of the ancient Egyptians, is, in some instances, imitated by their modern successors. With the art of embalming, indeed, they are now unacquainted; but the care with which they arrange the bodies of their deceased relatives, is, at least, a shadow of the ancient practice, as well as the effect of Mahometan precepts: immediately after the death of an

Greatly as they venerate the dead, the orientals would think themselves highly censurable for injuring the health of the living; their cemeteries are therefore large, solitary, separate enclosures, without the limits of any town or habitation, and the bodies are buried deeply in the earth; a delicate precaution, the source of which may be traced to the nicest feelings. The corpse is conveyed to the place of interment on a bier, covered with a cloth of any colour; a turban being placed on the head, which is carried foremost, to distinguish it from that of a christian. It is preceded by priests, reciting passages from the Koran, and followed by female mourners hired for the purpose. The Franks who died at Rosetta, were conveyed to Alexandria, and buried in the convent of St. George. A clergyman, an interpreter, and a Janissary attended; the procession was made by land, and the funerals were very expensive.

From this subject our traveller naturally turned his thoughts to the diseases which most commonly lead to death in Egypt; among these may be noticed putrid and inflammatory disorders, dysenteries, hernias, and particularly cutaneous diseases; which would be more prevalent, were they not checked by the frequent use of the bath. The leprosy, and that horrible complaint, the elephantiasis, sometimes make their appearance; but they are not thought very contagious, as individuals labouring under them are seldom seen. The venereal disease, which often produces the most terrible effects, is widely diffused in Egypt.

But ophthalmia, or inflammation of the eyes, is certainly the most prevalent of all disorders. Hasselquitz * informs us, that, "the vapours that exhale from the stagnant waters are the chief cause of these diseases of the eyes;" but the ancient Egyptians, who paid the utmost attention to their canals, were equally subject to this disease. It may perhaps be attributed to the excessive heat, the air being impregnated with nitrous particles, and the burning dust diffused through the air by the winds. Sonnini declares, he could not expose himself to the wind for an instant in the middle of the day at Cairo, without experiencing a very painful inflammation in the eyes; the pain often continued for several days, and he could not get rid of it without the application of cooling lotions. "Egypt," says Sonnini, "is the country of the one-eyed and blind."

Among the causes of blindness being so common at Cairo, and all large towns, we may mention the frequent watering of the streets and apartments: to temper the heat, a great quantity of water is sprinkled over them several times a-day; the ground being greatly heated, sends up, after these waterings, nitrous and fiery exhalations, which are offensive to the eyes. When Sonnini had once been cured of the ophthalmia, his eyes remained weak for some time after, and whenever the ground was watered, he felt pain in his eyes, and lost his sight for a few moments, if he looked down †.

The Turks who were present, seemed perfectly con-

Egyptian, the corpse is thoroughly washed, and shaved, and every aperture closely stopped with cotton; odoriferous waters are then poured over it, and the perfumes of Arabia are imbibed into all the pores. After a profusion of these attentions, the body is committed to the earth; and a small pillar of stone, terminated by a turban, is erected over the spot where the head reposes. The friends of the deceased, especially the women, repair every Friday to the melancholy spot, with devout enthusiasm, to renew their affectionate ejaculations. This manifestation of regard to the dead, is a sacred duty among all eastern nations, and ever punctually fulfilled.

* Travels in the Levant, French Translation, Part II. 117.

† The people anciently called Psylli, who supposed themselves possessed of the power of fascinating, commanding, and eating serpents, and of curing their bites, are still existing in Egypt. They are called *Saadis*, from the name of their founder, a saint highly venerated by the Egyptian Mussulmen. Saint Saadi was the nephew of a wealthy man in Syria, who sent him one-day into the wilderness to procure a bundle of sticks; when the young man had collected sufficient fuel to form a faggot, he was at a loss for a band to tie it up; but, after some consideration, he came to a resolution of knotting several serpents together to form a band, and with this living cord he carefully bound up his sticks. The uncle, charmed with the ingenuity of his nephew, said to him,—"Go about your business, for you know more than I do, and are adequate to the task of making your way in the world."—Taking the hint, the ingenious youth travelled over several countries, charming serpents by his supernatural skill, till he acquired a great number of disciples, to many of whom he communicated his art. His tomb, in the neighbourhood of Damascus, is full of serpents and other venomous creatures, among which any person may lie down and repose in perfect safety.

Such is the superstitious origin ascribed to this extraordinary sect, each individual of which ventures boldly to affirm, that he inherits the skill and properties of the founder. His festival is annually celebrated; each of the sect, during the procession, walking with a live serpent in his hand, which he gnaws, bites, and swallows as he passes, accompanied with the most horrid grimaces and contortions. M. Sonnini, however,

convinced of the reality of the religious frenzy; and, whether reality or imposture, the transports of madness could not have been better expressed; nor could a human being be exhibited in a more terrific situation. In Egypt the Saadis are very much respected, but among the Turks, who reside in the other parts of the Ottoman empire, they are absolutely held in derision.

Sonnini had an opportunity of conversing with a priest of this sect, who was apparently a man of candour, and who informed him, that, though several individuals of his fraternity had considerable power over the reptiles, he acknowledged that he himself was afraid of them: he also declared that they always kept serpents in their houses, having first extracted their teeth, to be ready when they were wanted. To cure a person who has been bitten, the Saadi mumbles a few words over the wound, scarifies the part with a razor, and, having first filled his mouth with lemon-juice, repeatedly sucks out the blood. These persons have also the reputation of curing *the serpent's breath*, a name given to inflammatory pustules sometimes acquired by persons sleeping in the open air, which they suppose to have been occasioned by the pestilential breath of a serpent.

Towards the end of December, the winter was particularly severe: the winds raged with impetuosity; and the Nile, lately confined within its banks, was frequently inflated by its violence: rain and thunder contributed their aid to support the solemnity of the storm. The agitation of the sea permitted hardly a vessel to quit the port: of two that ventured out, one was lost in the boghall, the other foundered at sea, and the whole of their crews perished. Amidst this tumult of nature, a groupe of porpoises sported in the mouth of the Nile, that formidable and frequent seat of death and danger.

At this season of the year, the eel of the Nile, which was regarded as sacred by the ancient Egyptians, is one of the most common fish: it probably was stamped by the priests with the seal of divinity, to prevent its becoming general food: some noxious effects were indeed supposed to have been produced from its use: Hence Mr. Pauw has termed it, *The pernicious eel of the Nile**. But it is now eaten without scruple by the Egyptians and Europeans: the Turks, however, reject it, imagining the eel engenders with the serpent. These fish are large and cheap, and Sonnini says, "They are as delicate eating as the eels in Europe;" though he admits, that they have some slight differences from European eels, and may constitute a distinct species, or at least a variety.

M. Sonnini bought a turtle which had been caught at the entrance of the Nile, by a bait fastened to a large hook. It was three feet and a half in length, and its greatest breadth two feet. The spot where it was taken belongs equally to the sea or the river; but the fishermen unanimously pronounced it a sea turtle, and said it was excellent food. Sonnini was entirely of their opinion when he had tasted it, after it had been dressed in its shell, in the West-India fashion.

The assertion that nightingales are not to be found in Africa is found to be erroneous, as they certainly pass the winter season in Lower Egypt. They make choice of the closest covert, and places not far distant from the water: Sonnini says he has met with several in different parts of the Delta; where they do not, however, display their art, or pour forth that melodious voice which furnishes the orchards and forests with delightful music; a hoarse sound, and a rattling in the throat, being substituted for their rapturous strains, and brilliant modulations. It has been often asserted, that the haunts to which nightingales retire in winter are unknown: but such ideas can no longer be entertained: they distribute themselves through Syria, and other Asiatic districts: many of them assemble among the willows, and olive-trees of Judea; and

however, could not see this festival, it being only celebrated in the summer, and it was winter when that gentleman was at Rosetta; but his curiosity being excited by the subject, he prevailed on one of the sect to indulge him with the exhibition of his art in his own apartment.

The priest brought in his bosom a large serpent, of a dusky green and copper colour, which he was continually handling; and, after having recited a prayer, presented it to the Saadi, who seized it with an anxious hand; the teeth of the reptile had been extracted, but it was very lively; and on its entwining itself round his arm, his countenance changed, his eyes rolled, and he uttered the most piercing cries; he then bit the serpent in the head, and tore off a morsel, which he instantly chewed and swallowed. On this his agitation became convulsive, his mouth foamed, and his countenance assumed the features of insanity, while he occasionally devoured fresh pieces of the animal. Three men endeavoured to hold him, but in vain; he dragged them round the room with violence. At length the priest took the serpent from him; but his convulsions and insanity did not immediately forsake him, he bit his hands, and his fury continued. The priest then clasped him in his arms, put his hand gently on his back, raised him from the ground, and recited some prayers, when his agitations gradually subsided, and he sunk into a state of complete lassitude.

* *Recherches Philos.* I. 154.

Sonnin

Sonnini has not only seen them in Egypt, but also in the islands of the Archipelago, in the winter season.

Many birds of prey, attracted by the smaller animals of the feathered race, visited the Delta at this season. One of these, which our traveller supposes to be of the falcon genus, has a very crooked beak, with a thick membrane covering its base, in which the nostrils are situated: the wings are somewhat longer than the tail; the legs are short, and almost covered with feathers on the fore-part, the talons sharp and crooked. Its whole length is eleven inches and a half, and the wings ten inches and a half. These falcons are often seen hovering over fields of rice-stubble, and along the banks of the Nile. They fly singly, and often keep stationary, supporting themselves on a particular spot with their eyes fixed to the ground; but when they discover any of the creatures they are accustomed to devour, they dart upon them with great rapidity.

Little owls, generally seen in pairs, frequently appear; they are not easily intimidated: the report of a musket near them will only drive them from one tree to another. Flocks of water fowls attend on the banks of the river. Among them is the patient and melancholy heron. The most generally diffused of all these aquatic birds is the spur-winged plover, which seems to merit the epithet of *polite*; its head and neck continually moving, as if in the act of making hasty bows. Hoopoes employ themselves perpetually on sandy spots, scratching industriously with their feet in pursuit of innumerable insects.

The Delta, forming an island, has been freed from wild beasts, and the cultivated plains of Rosetta are seldom disturbed by them. The thaleb, an animal resembling the Jackall, is frequently detected committing depredations on the poultry. Buffon, in his Supplement to the Natural History, gives him the name of chacal-adive; and the Egyptians call him the *father of Husseim* *. This is doubtless the animal which has been called the fox of Egypt, many of his features bearing a strong resemblance to those of the fox. His hair is of a bright fawn colour, and he has a beautiful tail, striped transversely with black and grey; and his movements and countenance indicate artifice and cunning: he travels slily by day, taking care to conceal himself near houses, to watch an opportunity of seizing poultry, or their eggs, which he carries off with great dexterity. He is much occupied in hunting birds, a practice in which he discovers great agility and cunning. He would be thought one of the most amiable of quadrupeds, were not some of his talents devoted too much to knavery †.

Rats and mice would over-run the land of Egypt, had they not so many enemies to encounter: the cat, the thaleb, the ichneumon, the stork, the vulture, &c. all prey upon them. To pass from noxious animals to those of singular utility, the sheep and goat are worthy of attention. The wool of the former constitutes a very important article of commerce, and their flesh is esteemed delicious: that of the ox is scarce, and that of the buffalo not very desirable.

The hair of the goat is short, and of a bright reddish colour; it has a slender body, small horns, and remarkably long ears. The flesh of those of Lower Egypt is thought very indifferent food. Ancient physicians prohibited goat-flesh in the Delta, though they permitted it in the Thebais; it might probably be thought unwholesome food in humid regions. The goats are large, and furnish abundance of milk; the people being supplied with that article by driving them through the streets, as milk is sometimes procured in London from cows and asses in their perambulations. Like the sheep, the goat brings forth twice a year: the goats have two, three, and sometimes four kids at a time.

* In Egypt the Jackall is called the father of Soliman, but Sonnini could never learn the origin of this extraordinary name. It is usual, however, among the Egyptians, when a person attracts their notice by any particular circumstance or feature, to give him the name of the father of such circumstance or feature. M. Sonnini himself, who sported a remarkably large nose, was frequently called *the father of the Nose*; and one of his companions, having very large whiskers, was called throughout the journey, *father of the Whiskers*. These jocular appellations are common in Africa. An European clerk at Cape Verde, who had lost an arm, was called by the Negroes, the *father of the Arm*.

† While Sonnini was one day meditating in a garden, a thaleb, hearing no noise, rushed suddenly out of the hedge near his feet: the animal, thus suddenly surprised, was for some moments motionless, and great perplexity was depicted on his countenance. Our traveller did not move, wishing to observe the animal's motions with the greatest attention. After the thaleb had alternately taken a few steps on one side, and on the other, seemingly too confused to decide upon any mode of retreating, and still turning his eyes on Sonnini, he slowly retired, alternately setting down his feet with singular precaution, placing his tail horizontally, that it might not drag upon the ground, or rustle among the plants, till he had removed himself from the presence of his supposed enemy. The fragments of a bird of prey, on which this gentleman had been feasting, were soon after found, on the other side of the hedge.

SECT.

SECTION VII.

Departure from Rosetta—Bedouins—Ceremony of an Agreement—Suspicions entertained of Sonnini—Jew Interpreter—Antelopes—Tomb of a Mussulman—Camp of Bedouins—Camels—Dromedaries—Camels resent Cruelty and Injustice—Troop of Bedouin Robbers—Inhabitants—Damonhour—Depravity of Manners—Desert of Lybia—Hares—Tigers—Lakes—Natron—Robbed.

SONNINI had remained two months at Rosetta, waiting for a termination of the disputes which had taken place between the Beys; but as the disturbances increased, the villages were making war on each other, and he declined all thoughts of penetrating Upper Egypt, which was filled with undisciplined soldiers, and a relentless banditti. Weary of a state of inactivity he, however, resolved to visit the lakes of Natron in the Lybian desert. Having obtained letters of protection from Ishmael Bey, he assumed the name of *Yousef*, (Joseph) and the character of a physician; a profession highly esteemed among all oriental nations: he also adorned himself with a red turban, and an oriental habit; and as his three companions were dressed in the Mameluke uniform, he was frequently taken for a *kiaschef*.

In the morning of the 29th of December, our traveller departed from Rosetta, mounted like his attendants, upon mules; a camel having been procured for the conveyance of their baggage; and they were attended by a janissary to Aboukir. They crossed the lake Maadie in a commodious boat. A little beyond the ancient mouth of the Nile, they met with a small encampment of the Bedouins, who offered them water, and pressingly invited them to pass the night within their tents. Sonnini engaged some of the Arabs to escort the camel, while he and his companions went on before, on their mules, and arrived at Aboukir about eight in the evening. They alighted at the house of the Jew interpreter, by whom they were very hospitably received. When the landlord was informed of the object of the intended journey, he exclaimed against the rashness of the enterprise, and represented it as dangerous in the extreme; and, when intreated to procure camels for the purpose of traversing the desert, he declared he would have nothing to do in such a business, not choosing to be an accomplice in effecting his destruction.

Enraged at having his plan of operation opposed, our author sternly replied, that no remonstrance should make him alter his resolution; the Jew therefore instantly gave up the point. Sonnini sent for a chief of Bedouin Arabs, who was encamped at a small distance from Aboukir, and an agreement was speedily concluded between the parties: the Arab was to provide a horse and four camels, to accompany the travellers for four palacas* a-day, without his being obliged to furnish sustenance either for the animals or the master. A notary was sent for, who drew up the agreement, in Arabic, which was signed and attested by every one present, as witnesses: the parties sitting on the ground in a circle. When the contract was regularly signed, each person, stretching out his hand, addressed a short prayer to God and the Prophet, and then took hold of his beard or chin, with his right hand†.

During these punctilios, the people of Aboukir, who had raised many difficulties respecting the pyramid on his first visit, assembled together, on hearing of Sonnini's return, and demanded restitution for the immense riches of which he had deprived them; as he was then hiring camels to carry off additional property from them. The tumult became general; the barber governor claimed his share of the ingots of gold our traveller had taken, and of those which he was preparing to carry away. Horrid imprecations were uttered against the Franks in general, and Sonnini in particular; the Jew trembled with terror; the janissary endeavoured to sooth the populace by a conciliatory speech. Though Sonnini and his friends pretended to treat the accusation with a contemptuous smile, they were apprehensive it might lead to more serious consequences. To remove suspicions, however, he kept the mules belonging to Rosetta, and hoping the tumult might subside during their absence, resolved to traverse the range of coast, which lies between Aboukir and Alexandria.

* A silver coin of Hungary worth about four shillings and seven pence.

† Though much ceremony attended the execution of this agreement, the Egyptians, have not, like some Europeans, imposed the duty of a *stamp* to render it perfectly legal.

At a small distance westward, they passed through the village of *Kafr Dsjami*, (or castle of the mosque). Between this little place and Alexandria, nothing but spacious houses were to be seen, standing singly, and inhabited by cultivators. They are constructed on modern principles, and surrounded by walls; fragments of granite, and other remains of ancient edifices, having been united in these buildings, which are denominated castles by the possessors. Enquiry was made in vain by our author, where the castle of the *Cæsars* was situated, which was mentioned by Danville, in his ancient geography: but no information could be procured. This castle was perhaps a dependency of the Taposiris, mentioned by Strabo; where Anthony repaired, to barter his glory for the charms of the beautiful and voluptuous Cleopatra.

When Sonnini returned to Aboukir, the disturbances rose to a greater height than before his departure: some impudent calumniators affirmed, that they had frequently seen him arrive in the neighbourhood by night, load his beasts with a quantity of gold, and instantly depart. This fabrication enflamed the fury of the people to such a degree, that they came to a resolution first to permit him to load his camels with the riches, and then to murder him and his associates, that they might recover their stolen treasure. On the following morning the Bedouins brought the camels, when they were immediately surrounded by the crowd; but seeing that Sonnini was not afraid of them, and observing that the camels took away nothing but men, and the panniers which the travellers had brought with them, they permitted them quietly to depart, bestowing only a few harsh menaces, which were totally disregarded.

Having taken leave of the Jew, who still insisted on the propriety of his remonstrances, he again requested he would relinquish his design. Our author again thanked him for his anxiety, the janissary resumed his road to Rosetta, and the travellers directed their course to the South-east, where they crossed a sandy and uninhabited plain, and observed a numerous herd of antelopes: here they found the tomb of a mussulman saint, which is visited by the pious travellers of Egypt, for the purpose of devotion. Our author entered this solemn abode without ceremony, with his Bedouin sheik named Hussein. Here he perceived a piece of elegant white marble, on which a Greek inscription was engraved; and expressing a wish to become possessed of it, Hussein took the liberty of taking it from its place, and sold it to him. This inscription signified, "Eutoltus, Governor of the Nineteenth, in honour of the Egyptian Jupiter. This has at its foundation ten cubits, its perpendicular elevation is forty cubits, the height of its sides is a hundred cubits. In honour of *Alexander*, of his *army*, and of the Egyptian *Jupiter*." Sonnini expresses a doubt with regard to the precise meaning of this last paragraph, and asks the following question—"Is this Alexander Severus, or Alexander the Great?" And immediately adds, "The investigation of this question, and of two others, which I put to myself on reading the inscription over again, would form the subject of an important dissertation, which my present occupations will not allow me to undertake."

It seems, however, that neither this curiosity, nor the pyramid of Aboukir, was ever conveyed to France. At five in the afternoon the travellers arrived at Hussein's camp, after a journey of about seven leagues from Aboukir. The schech's own tent was prepared for Sonnini's reception, and every animal driven out of it except one young ox; it having been previously spread with carpets, manufactured by the women; and a few faggots, covered with the same kind of carpets, answered the purpose of cushions. Hussein's tent was distinguished from the rest by a large plume of black ostrich feathers, placed on the summit.

All the tents of the Bedouins are formed alike, and only differ in the size. Arabs of the most itinerant occupations have the smallest, as they are more conveniently removed from place to place; they are low, of much greater length than breadth, and entirely open on one side: as north winds frequently prevail in this country, the south-end is generally left open: they are constructed of a stuff fabricated from camel's hair, and the Bedouins usually encamp in places destitute of trees*.

Sometimes

* The camp was situated about a hundred paces from the canal of Alexandria; the water which was conducted through the lands by the labour of the Bedouins, diffused fertility over an extensive tract, which furnished pasture for horses, camels, sheep, and oxen. All the camels of Egypt are of the dromedary species, having only one bunch on the back: of these there are two kinds; one, more particularly denominated the *camel*, is the most common, the largest, the strongest, and most usually employed in carrying burthens: the other, which is smaller and swifter, is called the *dromedary* by Europeans

Sometimes the dromedaries, when they experience excessive severity from their riders, stop short, and attempt to bite them, remonstrating against their conduct in the accents of rage. On these occasions the rider must instantly alight, or he would infallibly be torn to pieces: nor must he attempt to strike the creature, as that would irritate his fury; patience and soothing language, accompanied with a gentle patting with the hand, is one of the best methods of appeasing him. The pace of the dromedary is a very long trot, at which time he carries his head high, and his tail erect. The rider, in thus crossing the deserts, travels from fifty to eighty leagues a-day: Sonnini saw a Bedouin at Cairo, who had travelled from that city to Mecca in five days, though the distance is greater than four hundred leagues. This mode of travelling is fatiguing to an European, from the motion of the animal, and the rays of a scorching sun; but if he does not wish to proceed hastily, or if he accompanies a caravan, a litter may be fixed on a camel of burden, in which he is more at ease, and may even take his repose*.

The Hebrews are not permitted to eat the flesh of the camel, but the Arabs and the Egyptians consider it as a wholesome and delicious food, though it is not eaten by Jews and Christians: the Levitical law forbids it to the former, and the latter seldom desire it, declaring it to be very hard and dry. The number of camels kept by the present inhabitants of Egypt, are bred and sold to them by the Arabs. Camel's hair is an important article of commerce; of which also the tents and carpets of the Arabs are composed. The milk of the females is a salutary aliment. The dung of these animals mixed with chopped straw, and dried in the sun, is used for fuel, where wood is difficult to be procured. From the same substance sal ammoniac is obtained.

Sonnini had hardly been an hour at Houssein's camp, when a general alarm was spread, by the sight of a hostile troop of Bedouins. Every individual was in motion; the women shrieked, the men had recourse to their arms, and promiscuously on foot and horseback, set out in pursuit of these robbers. In this confusion, our traveller, and his companions, remained with the aged men and the women to guard the camp. Tranquillity being speedily restored, a live sheep was brought to Sonnini, to be killed for the entertainment of him and his friends in the evening; but it having been observed that he was desirous of sparing the poor animal's life, Houssein's wives presented them with delicious milk and cakes, and urged them continually to feast on the innocent but simple banquet.

The manners of these inhabitants are pure and simple: the Bedouin women are not afraid to exhibit their faces uncovered, or to converse with that natural ease and gaiety which is the general companion of virtue. When young, they are not destitute of beauty, though they are of a tawny hue; but European eyes are not instantly familiarized to the indelible black compartments, impressed on the lower part of their faces with a needle and black dye †. The men among the Bedouins are generally handsome: passing a simple, uniform life, they suffer no injuries from excess, and frequently attain longevity. There is, however, an inferior race

ropeans. A third species is well known among the Bedouins, that are shorter and rounder, and their hair which is thicker and longer, is of a sallow colour, inclining to brown. When nature covered the soil of these burning regions with deserts, she gave man the camel to traverse them; an animal calculated to endure the extremes of hunger, thirst, and labour.

Added to these excellent qualities, the animal possesses a great degree of intellect and instinct, and is so susceptible of injustice or barbarous treatment, that should any one strike him without a cause, he will never forget the insult, and is sure to embrace the earliest opportunity of gratifying his vengeance; and in their paroxysms of rage, some of these animals have been known to seize a man with their teeth, throw him furiously on the ground, and trample on him. But having once gratified their resentment, they no longer retain any rancour against the person who has injured them.

* It has been asserted that camels, horses, asses, and mules, have an aversion to each other; it is certain, however, that all these animals, especially in Turkey and Egypt, live and travel together: an ass is always placed at the head of a file of camels, as the leader, the first camel being fastened to the ass, and regularly following his steps. Though it has already been observed that camels must not be beaten improperly, the camel-drivers have a stick, and the riders a leathern thong, which they use as occasion may require. Some are said to urge them on by singing and whistling; but it may not be improper to observe that the Bedouins never practice whistling, it being a species of wind-music which they detest.

† This ornament is common to many African nations; the Maltese make similar impressions on different parts of their bodies. French sailors get themselves marked at Malta by men professing the art of tracing devotional figures on the arms and hands. One of Sonnini's attendants, when he was at Malta, had the representation of a crucifix marked on his arm, extending from the wrist to the elbow. His master knew nothing of this circumstance til' they arrived at Cairo, when it was too late to dismiss him, which he would otherwise have done, a crucifix being rather a dangerous symbol in a country where Mahometan bigotry is carried to the highest pitch.

of

of Bedouins, always wandering, who drag through a wretched life of misery and plunder, whose figures are a libel upon the human character, and have not a single trait of the beauty of the original stock.

Sonnini continued the whole night in Hussein's tent, in company with the young ox, but the myriads of fleas which tormented him, prevented his taking any rest. Attracted by the animals and the fires in the tent, the ground and the carpets were covered with them; but the Bedouins had been so long habituated to such company, that they were not discomposed by their hunger and activity.

After expressing our acknowledgments to the hospitable Arabs, by presenting a few trifling presents, the travellers set out for the desert on the first of January, 1778, and proceeded in a south-easterly direction along the canal of Alexandria. Some small tracts were cultivated, but the rest of that part of the country was literally a plain of sand. The opposite bank presented a more cheerful appearance, being pleasantly enlivened by a long line of villages. M. Sonnini going forward on horseback, arrived at the village of Bersick before his companions, near which a party of Bedouins of the same tribe with Hussein were encamped. The Sheick, without knowing who he was, conducted him to his tent; and, being informed he was a Frenchman, he was surrounded by a crowd of Bedouins, who gazed at him, and examined him. The women were equally desirous of seeing him, but they accompanied their curiosity with presents. At length the arrival of his party liberated him from his friendly, though troublesome, companions.

The parties then proceeded over fertile fields to the separate villages, which bear collectively the denomination of Sentaw. Here he presented a letter from Ishmael Bey to the Sheich of the village, who knew the impression of the seal, though he was incapable of perusing its contents. Continuing their journey, they crossed the plains which were covered with beans in full bloom, and perfumed the air with their aromatic scent. This plant, which was an abomination to the ancient Egyptians, is now cultivated in vast fields, and constitutes one of the most common articles of food for the sheep and beasts of burden.

Towards the evening the travellers arrived at Guebil, a village seated on the western bank of the canal of Alexandria, and, like all the others which Sonnini had seen, built of mud. A very fine figure was said to be contained in a mosque here, but, on being permitted to see and examine it, nothing more than half a lion's head was seen enclosed in the wall of the temple. Opposite Guebil they crossed the canal of Alexander, without wetting their feet, and entered the province of Bahire; proceeding through fields, they reached Damonhour by ten in the morning.

Sonnini received a letter from M. Forneti, informing him that the roads were said to be very unsafe, and entreating him to abandon his design; these and other alarming reports had also reached Damonhour before our traveller's arrival; nor could the people be prevailed on to give credit to the idle tales respecting the motives of his journey, imagining that he had the power by magic to attract treasures to the surface of the earth, however deep they might be buried. These rumours made a considerable impression on the mind of Sheich Hussein, who now also began to start difficulties respecting the continuation of the journey; and seemed no longer inclined to fulfil the conditions of his agreement so ceremoniously executed at Aboukir. Sonnini, unwilling to let the Sheich suppose that he was necessary to him, immediately dismissed him; the Arab, however, quickly repented, and solicited to be re-engaged. Our author, after making a few observations, renewed the former agreement, and Hussein's conduct was less exceptionable in future.

The city of Damonhour is large, but indifferently built, as most of the houses are constructed of earth or bad bricks. It is the residence of the Bey and his Kiaschef; the former was with the army, and the latter was in pursuit of some Bedouins, who were pillaging in the neighbourhood. Damonhour is rendered important by its trade in cotton, as it employs the greater part of the inhabitants, who are remarkable for their depravity of manners; a great number of courtezans infest the place, who signify their profession by their uncovered faces, and their indelicate behaviour. They assemble near the principal coffee-houses, by the side of which they have little tents, whither they retire with their captives. "Among these girls," says M. Sonnini, "were some very pretty ones; and all of them knew how to employ the same means of seduction as are practised in our great cities." The only

piece of antiquity discovered at Damanhour, was a small bronze idol, pierced with holes.

Sonnini and his party left that city on the 4th, and proceeded on their journey towards the desert. Directing their course southward, they reached the village of Graguess, within sight of which appears the tomb of a Mahometan saint. From Graguess they proceeded to Dentshall, a name which signifies a *departed jar*; a story is related by the peasants of this place, that their ancestors having found on this spot, a jar filled with gold, deferred the division of the treasure till the following day; but neither gold nor jar was then to be found: from this circumstance, whether true or false, the village derived its name. Passing two other villages, one of which was in ruins, the travellers proceeded south by east, and arrived at Nagrasch in the evening.

On their arrival, the inhabitants precipitately shut their doors, supposing them either to be the kiachef's people, or Bedouins come to plunder them. At length, however, they were admitted; but as the inhabitants were continually in fear of an attack from some other villages with whom they were at war, all ideas of repose were banished, and hardly an hour passed without imaginary alarms from the terror and timidity of the women.

At eight in the morning they resumed their journey, when, perceiving three Bedouins, Sonnini gallopped towards them; but Hussein requested him not to molest them, as they were his friends, though he acknowledged they were robbers. A Mameluke officer now appeared, who, supposing Sonnini to be a Turk, saluted him with *salam alicum*, and turned his horse aside to make way for him. They soon arrived at Biban, a town in which a Kiachef resides, where every Monday a market is held for camels and other cattle. Proceeding to Honeze, they intended to have reposed there during the night, but the inhabitants being of a different opinion, retreated, and every door was shut; the travellers, with their most earnest solicitations, accompanied with menaces, could only procure a little shelter.

The districts through which our travellers had passed, were rendered by their fertility an object of choice to the man desirous of abundance, while they were an interesting spectacle to the contemplative beholder; but the village of Honeze marked the line of separation between the most brilliant vegetation, and the most horrible sterility*.

Hares are numerous in the Egyptian deserts: exposed only to the pursuit of carnivorous beasts and birds of prey, they are secure from their most cruel enemy. They are sometimes hunted, indeed, in the neighbourhood of Cairo, by sporting Europeans; but they have no other inducement to be afraid of man, as their flesh is prohibited to the Mussulmen and Jews, and the Copts refrain from it by choice. The climate occasions a difference in the fur of Egyptian hares, as they are nearly grey. They are smaller than those of Europe, and less palatable; and this difference of taste has perhaps occasioned them to be considered unwholesome, and caused their flesh to be rejected as an article of food.

Our travellers having directed their course southwest all the day, they halted in the evening, and passed the night in the desert. After midnight a copious dew wetted them so thoroughly, that they suffered greatly from the cold; at five they re-commenced their march; and as soon as the mist was dispersed, herds of oxen and wild antelopes were seen on every side, exhibiting moving scenes, which made the desert less terrific. Sonnini imagines, from his different observations on the wild oxen of Egypt, that they are a particular species, nearly allied to the Zebu, if not the same.

Antelopes appear in numerous herds, and are as shy as the wild oxen; they are unequalled for lightness and celerity, and their eyes are considered

* In the morning of the 6th of January they entered on the immense desert of Lybia, the abode of dearth and drought; where no path appears to guide the traveller's steps; where the impressions of footsteps are erased almost as soon as made, and men are sometimes swallowed up in the waves of sand, agitated by the impetuous winds. Sonnini and his associates imperceptibly ascended for about eight or nine miles, over a thick bed of moving sand. They next arrived on plains, covered with small stones, and as they gradually found more elevated lands, the sand was less abundant in proportion, and at length was lost on the summit of the hills, where the stratum became solid, and interspersed with coloured pebbles. All the substances which now appeared were only the appendages to a scene of horror.

In these wild and rugged places, not a tree or plant is to be seen; in the less elevated parts a few meagre shrubs make their solitary appearance, and sometimes unite in places more favoured, forming pitiful brakes, where hares find scanty food and covert, and where other wild animals may make a momentary stay when they cannot reach a more comfortable retreat.

sidered in the east as the standard of perfection: their legs are long, slender, and tendinous, and so brittle, that it is generally necessary to cripple them before they can be taken. The Arabs on horseback, however, overtake these swift-footed animals, and throw a stick at them, by which their legs are generally broken or entangled.

But the most dangerous enemy of this elegant animal is the tiger, under which general name is comprehended the panther, the leopard, the ounce, &c. The whole genus being known in Egypt by the Arabic name *mémoura*. These animals, roaming over the burning sands, ferocious with hunger, and parched with the thirst of blood, surprize the wild oxen and the innocent and timid antelopes.

Ostriches are plentiful in the deserts, the hunting of which calls forth all the address of the Arab, and the rapidity of his horse. With greyhounds the chase is sometimes sooner concluded: the Arabs frequently watch behind the bushes, to catch an opportunity of firing at those that may happen to approach: their flesh is not eaten, but their fat is used in cookery, and plumes are made of their feathers: their eggs are eaten, one of which is thought a sufficient meal for any man; and when suspended from the roof, the mosques and churches in Egypt are usually ornamented with them.

Some wild boars inhabit this desert, but they are generally solitary, though they sometimes assemble in herds near the lakes of Natron. Our travellers saw two of them during their excursion, and unsuccessfully shot at one of them. As these animals are held in abhorrence by the Egyptians, Sonnini could not procure one; but he supposes it to be the same with that described by Buffon, under the name of the African wild-boar. The travellers had now arrived at the summit of a chain of hills, extending to the north north-west; at three or four leagues distance was another chain, parallel to the first; forming between them a deep valley, the sides of which are first perpendicular and steep rocks, and then gentle declivities of fine loose sand. In the bottom of this valley the lakes of Natron appear, but their extent cannot possibly be ascertained, as they vary according to the seasons. When there is most water they are united, and form one of greater length than breadth, which occupies a space of several leagues; at other times they are merely ponds of a very moderate extent *.

Near the lake stands a small house on the declivity of a hill, where the Copts say a saint was born, whom they name Maximus or Maximinus of the Roman legends. Sonnini and his companions having traversed the borders of the lakes, they continued their course south-west, and arrived at a Coptic convent called *Zadi el Baramou*, where a few monks reside; its appearance was horrible and forbidding. Not a tree or a shrub was planted in its vicinity, nor any apparent entrance provided for the admittance of human beings.

The company pausing at some distance, Hussein advanced before to ask admission: Sonnini was behind him, and the rest at a greater distance. Instantly a troop of Bedouins issued from behind the walls, which being observed by Sonnini, he gallopped back and re-joined his companions, who had also discovered their danger, and were drawn up in a close body. M. Sonnini, leaping off his horse, exhorted his companions to defend themselves. But they were only six in number, and from the two Egyptians little could be expected; the draughtsman was hardly capable of firing a gun. The Arabs, amounting to about a hundred, came gallopping towards them; but suddenly stopping when at the distance of a hundred paces, desired the travellers not to fire. Sonnini commanded them to keep their distance, but after remaining some time, in seeming consultation, they separated into four bands, three of which immediately stationed themselves on the flanks, and in the rear of the travellers. This manœuvre disconcerted the courageous few, as it would have been the height of insanity to attempt resistance. Sonnini threw down his gun in vexation, and the banditti robbed him and his followers of all their property. They left Sonnini his under vest and his breeches, but stripped his companions to their shirts: he was, however, cruelly deprived of his turban, which caused his naked head to be exposed to the insufferable heat of the sun. About twenty more Arabs then advanced from a concealed retreat, to claim their respective shares of

* On the retreat of the waters of the lakes, a sediment is left that soon becomes hardened and crystallized by the sun: this is the Natron, which is disengaged from the ground with iron instruments; it is chiefly collected in August, but is found in small quantities throughout the year; it is afterwards conveyed on the Nile to Cairo and Rosetta. About twelve hundred and fifty tons are annually collected. The water of the lakes is exceedingly diuretic.

the

the booty: but some considerable altercations happened among them before they could divide the spoil to their general satisfaction.

After contemplating this disastrous scene, our traveller proceeded towards the monastery, in search of Hussein who had repaired thither: he was followed by the captain of the robbers, who without ceremony conducted him back into the midst of his troops. Sonnini now naturally concluded, that the banditti had resolved either to take away the rest of his clothes, or prevent a discovery of their felony by murdering him; but, to his utter astonishment, the chief who had been so active in plundering and stripping him, was now as earnestly engaged in dressing him with those very garments he had forcibly deprived him of, and politely returned him his arms and purse: the other Bedouins performed the same kind office to his companions, who were equally amazed at the conclusion of this terrifying adventure.

This wonderful change of the scene was in consequence of the spirited conduct of Hussein, who, on his arrival at the walls of the convent, was surprised by some Arabs, who meant to detain him while the others were committing the robbery: they had seized his arms; but Hussein, after some remonstrances, obtained permission to mount a horse behind one of the Bedouins; and being conveyed to the place where they had posted themselves, he thus pathetically addressed them.—"Arabs, you have stripped a man who relied upon my protection, and for whose safety I have pledged my head; a man with whom I have eaten, who has reposed under my tent, and become my brother. Never can I revisit the camp, or cherish my wife and endearing infants.—Arabs, take away my life, or restore whatever was the property of my brother."

This energetic harangue, accompanied with expressive gestures, and an intrepid countenance, made some impression on the barbarians: but, without waiting for a reply, Hussein snatched his musquet from a person who held it, and, pointing it to the chief, threatened instantly to shoot him if he met with a refusal, resolving rather to draw their vengeance on his own head, than live under the stigma of his friend's misfortune. Hussein was known by the Arabs to be a man of great resolution, and that he would not hesitate much about carrying his menaces into execution: the chief therefore readily consented to restore the property of Sonnini and his companions, which was rigidly demanded, and as faithfully performed.

It was not enough for these robbers to appear just, they were also determined to be polite: the black chief now brought his horse, and insisted on Sonnini's riding on it to the convent, while he attended him on foot; the other Bedouins were equally complaisant to his fellow travellers. On their arrival at the walls of the convent, some baskets of bread, and dishes of lentils were let down by ropes, which furnished them with a salutary repast. Having finished their meal, several of the Arabs approached the European with great familiarity, and congratulated him on his life having been spared; at the same time condemning his conduct for rashly and voluntarily subjecting himself to such attacks, by traversing the desert which was known to be the resort of thieves.

The chief now solicited a present from M. Sonnini, for his exertions in procuring him the restoration of his property; but Hussein would not permit our author to part with a single parat. This conduct so highly offended the Arabs that, on a future occasion, they said they would act differently, and their first business should be to murder Hussein: they strongly intimated an inclination to renew their hostile designs; but Hussein laughed at their threats, and was so extremely vigilant that Sonnini could not find an opportunity of making a present to the chief.

Not succeeding in his application for a pecuniary reward, the Bedouin chief now demanded a written attestation or certificate from our traveller, stating, that having met him in the desert, he had taken nothing from him, and that he perfectly approved of his conduct. To prepare the certificate, one of the monks was let down from the convent, who wrote it in Arabic; and M. Sonnini, not choosing to affix his name to a testimony in favour of a gang of thieves, subscribed it La Deroutè. Abdallah, the chief of the robbers, then took care to secure the certificate; and, exhorting his travellers to guard against similar adventures, wished them a good journey.

Our travellers were now obliged to enter into a long contest with the Monks; though they certainly were convinced of the contrary, they pretended not to believe that they were Europeans. At length they offered to draw Sonnini up by the rope

rope, but he requested to be admitted by a small portal with an iron wicket, which was only opened to admit their provision; and then never to be made use of, if the Bedouins were suspected to be in the neighbourhood; accordingly they desired him to fasten himself to the rope. To shew him the method, the monk who wrote the certificate, suspended himself to it, and was drawn up by a pulley, and several of his companions followed the example. M. Sonnini, however, insisted upon the gate being opened, and Hussein seconded his resolution, protesting that if the monks did not permit him to shelter his camels, he would return in a few days, and exterminate every creature belonging to the convent. These declarations had the desired effect, and the wicket was opened, under certain regulations; but it was with the utmost difficulty that the camels could be ushered in; to accomplish which, the industry of the Arab, and the patience of the camel was equally entitled to the admiration of the beholder.

SECTION VIII.

Departure of Hussein—Coptic monks—Transactions with them—Zaidi Sourien—Ambu Bishoi—Remarkable Funeral—A Wedding Procession—Alaman—Sonnini is visited by a diseased Patient—Another Funeral Procession.

ON the following day Hussein reminded Sonnini of the adventure with the Arabs, and the difficulty which attended his extrication from their hands; adding, that he could not expect to be equally successful in similar situations: he frankly acknowledged that it was no longer in his power to be answerable for what might happen, as the Arabs would certainly murder him, if they met with them together again. He therefore observed, that an immediate return was indispensibly necessary for himself; and offered his services to conduct our author back by the same route he had come: but as Sonnini was now almost in the centre of the deserts, he was determined not to quit them without allowing himself time for making observations. Hussein, displeased at his determination, took an abrupt, but an affectionate leave of him *.

The fort contains a chapel, a reservoir for rain-water, and every thing necessary to sustain a long siege: the books belonging to the community are also kept here, though they negligently permit them to lie useless on the ground, mouldering in dust, and half consumed by the gnawing of insects; the monks, however, cannot be prevailed on to part with any of them. The cells of the monks are vaulted, low, and and level with the ground round the court—"suitable dens" says Sonnini, "for the rude idlers that inhabit them." The chapel is ornamented with only a few ostrichs' eggs, and some wretched pictures of saints: these portraits are considered as such masterly performances, that they were astonished at the indifference with which their visitors beheld them. The gospel is read in Arabic; the prayers are repeated in Coptic, which must be unintelligible to the monks, who can speak no other language than the Arabic. It is impossible to convey an adequate idea of the confusion that frequently prevails in the course of

* The convent in which Sonnini and his companions remained, after the departure of Hussein, was formerly inhabited by Greek monks, who were succeeded by Copts†, or natives of Egypt: among whom Saint Macarius rendered himself so particularly famous, that his name was given to the desert. The present residence of the Coptic *cenobites* is called *Zaidi el Baramous*, and by the Arabs *Kasr Zaidi*: it is an inclosure of lofty walls, without any other aperture than a small gate, which is opened about two or three times a year; when the people going up, or coming down, are hoisted or lowered by a rope and a pulley. The whole edifice consists of soft calcareous stones, many of which contain fossile shells. Within the walls, a small fortress is surrounded by a ditch, having a draw-bridge over it: to this fortress the monks retire, whenever the outer walls are forced by robbers; and, as Sonnini was informed by the secluded inhabitants, they were ten years before obliged to entrench themselves there against his friend Hussein, who was then the most resolute of robbers, and had broke through the great walk to pillage the convent; though for several years he had led a peaceable and honest life.

† The hair and eyes of the Copts are of a dark hue, and the former is often curled, but not more so than what is occasionally seen among Europeans. The nose is often aquiline; the lips sometimes thick, but not generally so: their complexion, like that of the Arabs, is a dusky brown. *Brown's Trav.* The Coptic women marry at fourteen or fifteen, and at twenty are past their prime.

their

ALGUAN PIGEON HOUSES.

Residence of the Coptic Gouhites called

ZAIDI EL BARAMOUS.

their devotional exercises; many altercations arise in the choice of certain psalms and anthems, and blows are frequently resorted to, in order to terminate the dispute.

During his residence at the convent, Sonnini punctually attended their performance of divine worship, and minutely copied the ceremonies and gestures of the monks: his companions were equally attentive, and so many ridiculous situations occurred, that they were sometimes seized with involuntary fits of laughter, which might probably offend the members of the community. During the time of service, the Copts neither sit, kneel, nor stand upright; remaining on their feet with their bodies bent forwards, and supporting themselves on a kind of crutch. The priest celebrates the mass with water, consecrated by him; the sacred vessels, consisting of glass plates, are also first consecrated by the priest: with this water small pieces of bread are mixed, forming together a mess like soup. The mixture being thus prepared, is used for the sacrament; of which the priest first takes a few spoonfuls, and then administers with a spoon to all who intend to partake of it. After the communion, the official pastor washes his hands, and places himself at the door of the sanctuary; and the congregation, in a kind of solemn procession, hold up their faces for the priest to dry his wet hands by stroking them. During the mass, the priest blesses some little round loaves; and, in celebrating this office, he wears a white surplice, with a cowl spotted over with little crosses*.

There were only three priests, and a few friars in this convent; the whole number of inhabitants it contained, when Sonnini and his associates were included, amounted only to twenty-three; but they were often visited by Coptic farmers, who came to suffer penance, and bring their offerings to the monks. They all eat together, one person only excepted, who continues to read while the others are regaling themselves. Their meals principally consist of a sort of biscuit made of the flour of lentils, and rice boiled in salt and water, despicable cheese, and sometimes a little honey: their sole beverage was brackish ill-tasted water. The convent is supported by collections, the offerings of visitors, and the alms of the wealthy copts. Caravans of camels bring them provisions two or three times a year; and the Arabs permit it to pass freely, considering it as their own. When they roam the desert, they find in these Coptic monasteries whatever is necessary for themselves and their horses. By ringing a little bell, the string of which hangs without, they are soon reconnoitred from the top of the wall, and instantly supplied with what they require. The monks of the deserts are not only useless, they are also dangerous and pernicious. Without the succours which they afford, the Bedouins could not long have subsisted in the environs, and thus have continued to infest the country with their continual devastations†.

In the midst of their enclosure, the monks have scraped together a little earth, which they call a garden, in which a few plants are raised. Among these our author was particularly struck with one, which he had never seen before in any part of Egypt: it is called native pepper, its stalks, when eaten raw, or boiled with provision, having a spicy taste. Either by the flowers or the fruit no judgment can be formed of the genus to which it belongs, though it appears to have no affinity to that of the peppers.

Near the monastery some ruins appear, said to be the remains of an ancient edifice, among which some steps descended to a well of brackish water. A quantity of stones were observed by our author before the gate, which were chiefly natron, grown extremely hard: and in the environs two sorts of gypsum were observed.

The Coptic monks collect in the neighbourhood of the Lakes of Natron, a sort of crystalized transparent salt gem, found in small pyramidical figures. This is denominated *marked salt*, each little pyramid having a mark on its base, asserted by the monks to belong to its original state,

* The Copts are extremely fond of ceremonies, especially those which promote activity and bustle: the priest, during the time of service, is perpetually engaged in the act of incencing the saints, pictures, books, &c. He gives his benediction with a little cross, on the top of which he has previously fixed a short end of a lighted wax-taper. The service being finished, all the people kiss a little dirty cushion; a cross is saluted next, and then a shrine, which they affirm contains the bones of seven saints: but, if the Arabs are to be believed, they contain only the bones of camels and asses, that died in the desert, which the monks have piously collected from different quarters.

† The dress of the monks accords with their habitations, and their food; a kind of robe, and a long black shirt, constitutes the whole of their clothing, differing but a few shades from the colour of their skin. Taking an impartial view of the Copts, adverting particularly to their short stature, and broad repelling countenances, these Coptic monastics are the ugliest of mankind, as well as the filthiest and the most disgusting.

though probably affixed by themselves. The monks of this convent are the only sellers, as well as the only collectors of this gem; and from their marvellous stories concerning it, the properties of it are deemed miraculous: and, among other things, they alledge, that its virtues will render women prolific.

Besides the monastery of Zaidi el Baramous, there is at no very considerable distance, the Syrian Monastery; and another, south by east; exclusive of a deserted building, on the other side of the Lakes, serving as a place of shelter to those who collect the natron. A day's journey westward from Zaidi el Baramous is the river without water *(Bahr Bela Ma)* the ancient communication between the lakes Mæris and Mareotis. Rocks of various shapes and dimensions, in this dry channel, are supposed by many persons to be petrified fragments of boats, &c.*.

M. Sonnini, having discarded the monk's dirty robe, rejoined his companions, and proposed to attack these robbers: a favourable opportunity presented itself, as the banditti were sitting on the ground round the provision, their musquets lying at some distance, and their horses at a still greater distance, standing under the shade of the wall; but though it appears probable that not one of the robbers would have escaped, if this spirited resolution had been adopted, the monks absolutely refused to open the wicket, fearing that if a single Bedouin should escape, the numerous body of them would be collected, and return immediately to ransack the convent. The Arabs, after having finished their meal, directed their course towards the Syrian monastery, expecting perhaps to fall in with our travellers by the way.

Sonnini dispatched a peasant to a Bedouin camp at Terrana, to engage some Arabs to escort him and his party from the convent; in consequence of which, ten of these Bedouins arrived, well armed, bringing with them a camel and some asses: one of them presented our author with a flamingo, that he had shot on the banks of the Natron lake, which his companions immediately roasted: but the voracious monks having conceived a fancy for it, eagerly seized it, and deprived our travellers of their expected repast.

Thinking some present would be required by the host, for the hospitality he had received during his abode in the convent, Sonnini asked his associates what they thought would be a sufficient recompence? The superior, without hesitation, informed him, that he expected he would first bestow something on the monastery; secondly, on the embellishment of the chapel; thirdly, on the poor; and fourthly, and lastly on himself. Our author, having listened attentively to this catalogue of wants, requested to know what sum might be expected for the whole? The superior replied, that he was not prepared to answer so general a question immediately; but, after a little calculation, he observed that the convent wanted white-washing all over, but he supposed five or six hundred sequins might be sufficient.—"A mere trifle!" says M. Sonnini, "for lodging and board on lentil bread, exclusive of the quantity of saline water which they had drank!"

The Frenchman made him a tender of the contents of his purse, which had been so considerably diminished by passing through the hands of the Arabs, and making a reserve for Hussein, that it was now reduced to six sequins. The monk was so violently enraged at such a present, that he loaded Sonnini with invectives, protested he would receive nothing from him, and invoked Heaven to send him some Arabs to dispatch him for his ingratitude. Not being able to curb his resentment at the fellow's insolence, Sonnini says, that he should "have beaten out the rascal's brains on the spot," had not the Bedouins conveyed him out of his reach.

* While Sonnini and his party continued at the Coptic convent, a peasant arrived from Terrana. He communicated the following intelligence: That the Bedouin robbers had been long waiting for them behind the Syrian Monastery; but, supposing they had taken some other route, they had proceeded to the environs of Terrana, where they had robbed some persons who were coming for natron of their camels and provisions. The day after this man's arrival, he discovered the recent footsteps of a horse round the walls: a few hours after, the bell of the gate was rung with violence by some Bedouins, who seemed much agitated, because they apprehended that strangers were within. The monks, in order to remove their apprehensions, lowered down some provision for them; and while they were employed in eating, Sonnini, assuming the habit of a friar, went up into the gallery to observe them as they conversed with the Copts, in the midst of whom he had taken his situation. They wanted to know the reason why the Sheck Hussein had arrived there with camels: one of them had seen upon the walls, the evening before, a person with a red shawl wrapped about his head, and much conversation was heard concerning Franks in pursuit of treasures, which he should be glad to meet with. The monks, instead of giving a satisfactory answer to these suggestions, endeavoured to mislead them by a number of ridiculous stories, that they thought too absurd to be credited.

Perceiving,

Perceiving, however, that the author was preparing to depart, he sent the Arab Shech to request the six sequins he had offered him. M. Sonnini accordingly delivered them: and immediately the travellers saw the old man addressing his prayers to Heaven, to bless them with a prosperous journey!

Leaving Zaidi el Baramous on the 13th of January, our travellers proceeded towards Zaidi Sourian, through deep passes, parallel to the great hills, which evidently have proceeded from strong currents. As they approached the monastery, their conductors prepared to act on the defensive, suspecting some Bedouins might be concealed behind the walls; but none of them appearing, they entered the convent in security. This little place of retreat is constructed on the same plan as that which Sonnini and his party had left. The monks seem less filthy in their persons, and less ferocious in their dispositions than those of Zaida el Baramous; the superior, though upwards of thirty years of age, was absolutely without a beard; a deficiency greatly to be regretted, as the beard is an appendage in this country which creates distinction and respect: he was, indeed, so much dissatisfied at this personal defect, that he solicited our European to inform him how he could acquire so estimable an ornament for his chin*.

Our adventurers quitted Zaidi Sourian on the 14th, Sonnini having first distributed among the monks his few remaining pieces of silver, and expressed a resolution of never stepping his foot within another convent. On passing one, however, called Ambu Bishoi, the monks were attending at the gate, and earnestly entreated the travellers to enter, assuring them they had the body of a saint, with a complexion as fresh and blooming as if he actually was alive. Disregarding this pressing invitation, the travellers proceeded in the eastern direction, and passed another of these houses devoted to sanctity, dedicated to Saint Macarius; Sonnini having positively refused to go near it. This convent is called Amba Monguar, and is also inhabited by Coptic monks. In the environs, the Copts point out several ruins of the ancient monastery of Saint Macarius; on which the Arabs bestow a name signifying the Women's Castle, a strange denomination for a retreat, erected out of antipathy to womankind, and inhabited by hideous Anchorites.

Travelling all night, the party arrived at Etris on the Nile, about five o'clock in the morning. The camp of those Bedouins who were Sonnini's conductors, was pitched close to this village. Proceeding to the tent of the Shech, the repast of hospitality was set before them. When Sonnini engaged the Bedouins in the desert, he candidly informed the Shech that he could not pay him before he returned from Cairo; he calmly replied, that he was perfectly easy about his pay, and added, that he had money at his service if he required it. The latter part of this declaration was little attended to by our author, forgetting that he was no longer in a country where the heart and lips were at variance. The repast being over, the Shech presented a small bag of money to Sonnini, expressing himself at the same time to the following effect. "I know all that has happened to you. With indignation I saw the behaviour of the monk at Zaidi el Baramous; I am also convinced that you will receive all the assistance you require from the Kaschef of Warden, in consequence of your letters of recommendation; but you will give me infinite concern if you apply to a dog of a Turk, to a Mameluc. I cannot bear that a man with whom I have eaten, whom I have protected, and who is become my brother, should apply to another for assistance.—Take this money!—It is yours—If you refuse it, I shall think that you disdain a friend, because he is not the inhabitant of a desert."

Unwilling to offend his generous host, Sonnini took a few patacas, which he would not see him enumerate, nor hearken to his promise of a speedy reimbursement.

Our author then proceeded towards Warden, the residence of the commander of the district, half a league south-east of Etris, and was politely received by the Mameluc officer, who insisted on his accepting of accommodations in his house. Warden is a large village near the western bank of the Nile, and built on the site of Latopolis, a city anciently dedicated to Latona. It had been

* These monks have a little garden, in which were observed a few date trees, some small olive trees, and an almond tree. Among a variety of culinary plants, the *libiab*, a species of large kidney bean, attracted the notice of the beholder; it is perennial, and, rising to a considerable height, well calculated to form arbours: the leaves are of a lively green. This species of pulse is universally cultivated in Egypt, and the pods are in general use as an article of food.

lately been notorious for harbouring a nest of pirates, who plundered all the vessels that navigated these branches of the Nile, till they were all dispersed by the vigorous exertions of Ali-Bey, and Warden became a place of security *.

Arriving at Etris, Sonnini hastened to the camp of his generous Schech, discharged the debt he had contracted, and presented him with a few yards of cloth; but the worthy Arab, resolving not to merit the imputation of ingratitude, contrived to convey a sheep, and several articles of provision to the boat, without the knowledge of his guest. Leaving Etris in the afternoon, our travellers saw Abouneschabe, and opposite to it, on the eastern bank, Tahoue: between these villages the Nile is extremely broad and shallow. Proceeding about half a league, our author arrived at the village of Jagnouss, where he tasted of the fruit called *nebka*. It grows on a large species of rhammus, higher than a plum-tree. The fruit resembles a small round apple, tasting like a crab before it is ripe; it is not unpleasant when in a state of maturity, but tasteless when over-ripe.

The Nile near Jagnouss was visited by immense numbers of ducks; in the midst of which flights of common pigeons were continually pitching on the water, even in the strongest part of the current, and sometimes remaining there longer than a minute. This practice, which much excited the astonishment of our author, may reasonably be attributed to the heat of the climate. Half a league from Jagnouss, in the route to Rosetta stands Ikmas, and half a league further, the town of Terrana. The last-mentioned place is an enclosed town, consisting entirely of mud-walled houses, and is the residence of the Kias-chef; and in its environs some ruins appear of the ancient city of Terenuthis †.

Passing Bour-Dgiall, Dimitschi, Tamle, and some other villages, our travellers arrived at Alguan, a small village, which has a most wretched appearance, but is remarkable for an extraordinary number of dove-houses, formed in the shape of bee-hives: they are constructed of earth, square below, and conical above: the insides contain earthen pots, where the birds may commodiously prepare their nests and produce their young. The commandant was a negro Mameluc ‡.

When

* Sonnini having hired a boat to convey him to Cairo, and return with him to Rosetta, he and his fellow travellers set sail on the 16th of January, at five in the afternoon; but a contrary wind rendered it necessary for him to anchor. About two, however, the next morning, he continued his route; and on passing a village on the western bank, saw the inhabitants quitting their dwelling, with their cattle and effects, to escape a party of predatory Bedouins. The master was afraid to enter the port of Cairo, lest his little vessel should be seized for the service of the army, which Ismael Bey was then collecting against his competitors Maurat and Ibrahim, he therefore stopped within half a league of that port; and Sonnini dispatched one of his attendants by land to Cairo, on whose return they set sail for Rosetta.

Having kept watch till midnight with the half of his party, our author lay down in the bottom of the boat, and resigned his post to the other half of his companions. Just as he was entering on a sweet repose, he was precipitately roused by the master, who informed him, that three small piratical vessels were rowing towards them, and he thought it necessary to fire immediately upon them, before they were attacked themselves. Several discharges of musquetry from his party instantly followed this intimation, and the robbers thought proper to make off with great celerity.

On the 18th the travellers passed between Warden and Guéreiss, below which Gerisel Warden is situated; where several flights of ducks, gulls of the large and small species, and a flamingo were seen; a number of spur-winged plovers also appeared on both sides of the river. Approaching Gerizel Warden, they saw a funeral; and at the head of the procession, a red and white flag were carried, a custom not adopted in towns: farther on, a less melancholy scene presented itself; it was a wedding at the small village of Menshie. The bride was mounted on a tall camel, and surrounded by a crowd of peasants, engaged in mock combats with long sticks; the country at the same time re-echoing with the sound of drums and hautboys; the camel advanced very slowly, and was frequently stopped to give the company an opportunity of dancing, shouting, and skirmishing around the bride: half a day was consumed in this whimsical procession, in parading about the village and its environs.

† A young Turk resided here, who was a manufacturer of very fine gun-powder; he had a feeble voice, and the hair of his head was white: both these circumstances arose from a fright into which he was thrown by Ali-Bey, who suspecting he had furnished supplies of powder to the Bedouins, whom he wished to destroy, ordered his head to be cut off. The tyrant, however, revoked his order the same instant; but the strong impression of fear had effected that surprising alteration in his voice and hair.

‡ Following the course of the Nile, they proceeded through several villages, but stopped for the night at Komscheric. They had seen in the course of the day, six pelicans flying in company, and a considerable quantity of wild geese. The wagtails, though dispersed during the day, assemble in flocks towards evening, fly a short time over the surface of the water, and then settle together on one of the shores to pass the night. Wagtails are so extremely plentiful in Egypt, and so tame as frequently to enter the cabin-windows, and feed, without apprehension of danger, by the sides of the passengers. Sonnini found a few

ANTIQUE FRAGMENTS.

Purchased by C.S. Sonnini de Salhe d Adejac.

ANTIQUE FRAGMENTS.

Purchased by C.S.Sonnini at Salhe el Adjar.

Tragic Mask, in Basaltes, Eleven Inches high.

A Fine Bust of Isis, in white Stone, Two Feet in height.

Tragic Mask, in Mortar, Nine Inches high.

ANTIQUE FRAGMENTS.

Purchased by C.S. Sonnini at Sidhe et Adjur.

T. Milton, sculp.

ANTIQUE FRAGMENTS.

Purchased by C.S. Sonnini at Sidhe el Adjar.

T. Hilton sculp.

KARAKAKOOA BAY, *in the Island of* OWHYHEE.

Cook

Sparrow sc.

KARAKAKOOA BAY, *in the Island of* OWHYHEE.

Cook

Sparrow &c.

A Head of Isis, in Alabaster.

A Grotesque Idol, in Porcelain.

A small Figure in Bronze.

A Porcelain Figure Enamelled with Aqua Marina.

An Osiris in gilt Bronze.

A Gnecophalus, in Porcelain.

A small Figure in Plaster

ANTIQUE FRAGMENTS.

Purchased by C.S Sonnini, at Salhe et Adjar.

T. Milton sculp.t

When the Shech arrived on the morning of the 25th, he exhibited a most disgusting spectacle. This miserable wretch had nothing remaining of his head except the upper part; the mouth, and the whole of the under jaw, had been consumed by a dreadful cancer, rendering him almost incapable of swallowing or breathing; and a speedy termination of his horrible existence was evidently prognosticated. Unable to be of service to the patient, and terrified with the sight of so hideous an object, Sonnini leaped hastily into the boat, and ordered it to be cast off from the shore immediately. At ten in the morning, on the same day, the travellers left Komscherick, to continue their voyage down the Nile, the direction of the river there being north-east by north: they passed several villages, which presented nothing remarkable; but a little below Zaira, on an eminence, stands a chapel, the burial place of a Mahometan saint, apparently erected on the ruins of an ancient town. Salahoum, a village, is distinguished by the wall of an ancient edifice. At the distance of half a league, they reached Shabour, a large ill-built village; but the house of the commandant was better constructed than the rest, though, like them, the walls were composed of mud, and the mineret of the mosque was tolerably handsome. Leaving Shabour on the 26th, they passed through several villages without any particular occurrence. The next day they arrived at Mehallet-Abou-Ali, in the Delta, the first brick town they had yet beheld, which was defended from inundations by a dike constructed of the same material*.

Having followed the course of the Nile for upwards of sixty leagues, our author arrived safely at Rosetta, and removed the anxiety of his friends, a report having been circulated that he and his companions had been massacred by the Arabs; and they were strongly inclined to credit that report, because Hussein had assured them that he left them in a very perilous situation. That worthy Arab had been daily in search of intelligence respecting our author; but when he had received certain information of his arrival, he hastened to fold him in his arms, and to add his congratulations to those of his countrymen.

---

w medals at Komscheric, which were of little value, but ey were sufficient to announce that this had been the site an ancient settlement. The Mameluc commander, who as a man of pleasing manners, prevailed upon our author wait for the arrival of an Arab Shech, a man of imortance, who was extremely ill, that he might have the enefit of his advice as a physician.

* In one of the streets they met a funeral: by the side of e bier a large black flag was borne, diversified with yellow ots and figures. The female mourners, who followed it, d in one hand a corner of their garment, which they ok continually, as if they were in the act of terrifying ething before them.

Here M. Sonnini beheld a new species of plover; the gth was about eight inches, and the head of a deep-green, rounded by a white diadem; the throat white, the under rt of the neck and body white, with a reddish tinge; the thers of the tail short and unequal; the legs and feet eish; the bill and claws black. These are common in eral parts of Egypt, and are usually seen in pairs; sometes, however, they appear in troops of seven or eight; y feed on the shore of the river on aquatic insects; they er alight on the mud, with which the shores of the Nile generally covered, but prefer the sandy part; they are shy, nor alarmed at the approach of man.

Near Mehallet-Abou-Ali, farther within the land to the , stands Sennehour-Medini, a village which exhibits many remains of antiquity. Near these ruins two villages, consisting of brick habitations, appear, which seem to be of greater antiquity than any others in Lower Egypt. On the western shore of the Nile, considerable vestiges of an ancient city were seen at a distance, but our author could not prudently venture to visit them, the neighbourhood being much infested by robbers and pirates. At a village called Salhe el Adsjar, he purchased a considerable number of fragments of sculpture and porcelain.

Pleased with having acquired these antiquities, our author, and his party, returned to pass the night off Mehallet-Abou-Ali, and sailed at five in the morning of the 28th. The boat stopped at Fouah, once a populous and flourishing city, being situated on the Nile opposite the entrance of the canal of Alexandria; but from the negligence of the Egyptian rulers, the canal and its navigation hastened to destruction; whence commerce was obliged to abandon the shore of Fouah, and to carry its riches to the harbour of Rosetta. Many of the ancient edifices of Fouah are in ruins, and the place, with its inhabitants, now exhibits the appearance of general poverty; but nature still smiles propitious on the surrounding soil, which displays a scene of singular fertility; and the fruits it produces are deservedly celebrated for their inestimable flavour. Dr. Pocock and M. Sonnini, suppose Fouah to be the ancient Naucratis. Leaving this place about noon, the travellers reached Rosetta at Midnight.

SECTION IX.

Considerations on the Bedouins—Wheat—Egypt—The Granary of Rome—Different Sorts of Bread—Barley the common Food of Horses—The Sugar Cane—Spices—Ruins of Taua—Fish of the Nile—Sets Sail for Cairo—Description of—The Inhabitants weak and uncultivated—Green Apparel prohibited—Anecdotes of Two Mamelucs.

WHATEVER may have been advanced by different authors and legislators respecting the depredations of the Bedouins, the prosperity of Egypt is generally understood to be connected with the preservation of them: they alone can traverse with ease the immense sandy uninhabited districts, and support habitual communications through them, while the numerous flocks they feed are brought to the cultivated parts, and there exchanged for articles more essential to their support and happiness*.

As soon as the waters of the Nile are retired, the grain is sown; hence the seed-time varies with the latitude, and is also earlier in Upper than in Lower Egypt. In general, little more is necessary than to scatter the seed over the moistened earth; though sometimes slight furrows are turned up by a wretched plough, without either wheels or coulter: the vegetation is so rapid, that in four months after the corn is sown, it is reaped. The sickle, however, is not employed in this operation; it is pulled up by the hand and conveyed to large floors, similar to those used for rice. This method is less advantageous than threshing with a flail, but it is also less laborious, and more expeditious; sufficient inducements for being followed by indolent husbandmen, rendered careless by abundance.

From the ears of wheat, cut before they are ripe, and slightly baked in an oven, being afterwards bruised and boiled with meat, an excellent soup is formed, much esteemed in Lower Egypt, and is known by the name of férik. Wheaten bread is usually made in little flat cakes, unleavened, and slightly baked. A finer sort for the inhabitants of cities, is covered with fennel-flower seeds, procured from Upper Egypt, which give them an aromatic flavour. Another sort of cakes is sprinkled with sesamum, giving them the flavour of a hazel-nut.

Barley occupies a considerable portion of land in Egypt; it is ripe almost a month before the wheat, and its produce is equally abundant. It is the common food of horses in Egypt, and all eastern countries, where rye and oats are hardly known. Barley is certainly much more productive than oats; and its roots, being weaker and less numerous, do not exhaust the land so much.

Flax has been common in Egypt from the earliest periods; it now is, and for many centuries has been, a considerable article of cultivation and trade; a large quantity of cloth is manufactured from it, and the indigo used in dying it is the produce of this country. The sugar-cane is among the valuable productions of Egypt, where its culture might be improved and extended. Sugar is made at Cairo, and some of a very fine quality is manufactured for the Sultan; but the process is slow, the art having made little progress there: the lower classes of the people eat the canes green, which are sold in the markets at a moderate rate, the consumption by this method

* No part of the globe displays so many resources for supporting the prosperity of agriculture, as the land of Egypt; the † fertility of its soil invites every species of cultivation. Of the plants of the four grand divisions of the earth, many already grow there, and all might be advantageously cultivated, and the portion of fertile land considerably enlarged. Many canals having been shamefully neglected, the water of the Nile no longer reaches those wide-extended lands to moisten them; and carelessness, ignorance, and tyranny, have permitted the sands to encroach on parts once covered with vegetable mould. The places rendered barren by neglect, constitute almost a fourth part of the land now in cultivation. Other tracts, where vegetation is feeble, are comparatively deserted, which, by activity and industry, would restore their ancient splendour and abundance.

Of every vegetable which has rendered the land of Egypt celebrated for abundance, wheat stands foremost. Rome considered this country as her nurse, as her inexhaustible granary; it was also the granary of Constantinople, and the resource of the neighbouring nations. Turkey and Arabia could not now subsist without the supplies they receive from Egypt.

† *Mr. Browne, in his Travels in Egypt, says, "the soil in general is so rich as to require no manure. It is a pure black mould, free from stones, and of a very tenacious and unctuous nature. When left uncultivated I have observed fissures, arising from the extreme heat, of which a spear of six feet could not reach the bottom. Browne's Travels* 64.

Sorts of Bread
a—Fish of the
ltivated—Green

n Lower Egypt,
férik. Wheaten
flat cakes, un-
A finer sort for
ered with fennel-
per Egypt, which
Another sort of
giving them the

e portion of land
month before the
ly abundant. It
n Egypt, and all
d oats are hardly
ch more produc-
eing weaker and
he land so much.
Egypt from the
or many centuries
of cultivation and
is manufactured
dying it is the
he sugar-cane is
of Egypt, where
l and extended,
ne of a very fine
Sultan; but the
made little pro-
of the people eat
in the markets at
on by this method

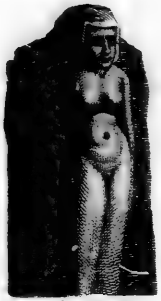
red the land of Egypt
nds foremost. Rome
as her inexhaustible
nstantinople, and the
Turkey and Arabia
lies they receive from

pt, says, "the soil is
e. It is a pure black
enacious and unctuous
bserved fissures, arising
of six feet could not

exceeding

Bust of a Woman unknown the head dress perforated to be worn as an amulet.

A Hawk in bronze



An Isis in Plaster.

A head of Isis in terra Cotta.

Two Marble figures or Children resting on a Dolphin supposed to be placed on a Fountain or Urn.

Antique bronze Cube.

ANTIQUE FRAGMENTS.

Purchased by C.S.Sonnini at Salhe & Adajar.

ANTIQUITIES.

Purchased by C.J. Scanini at Salhe el Adjar.

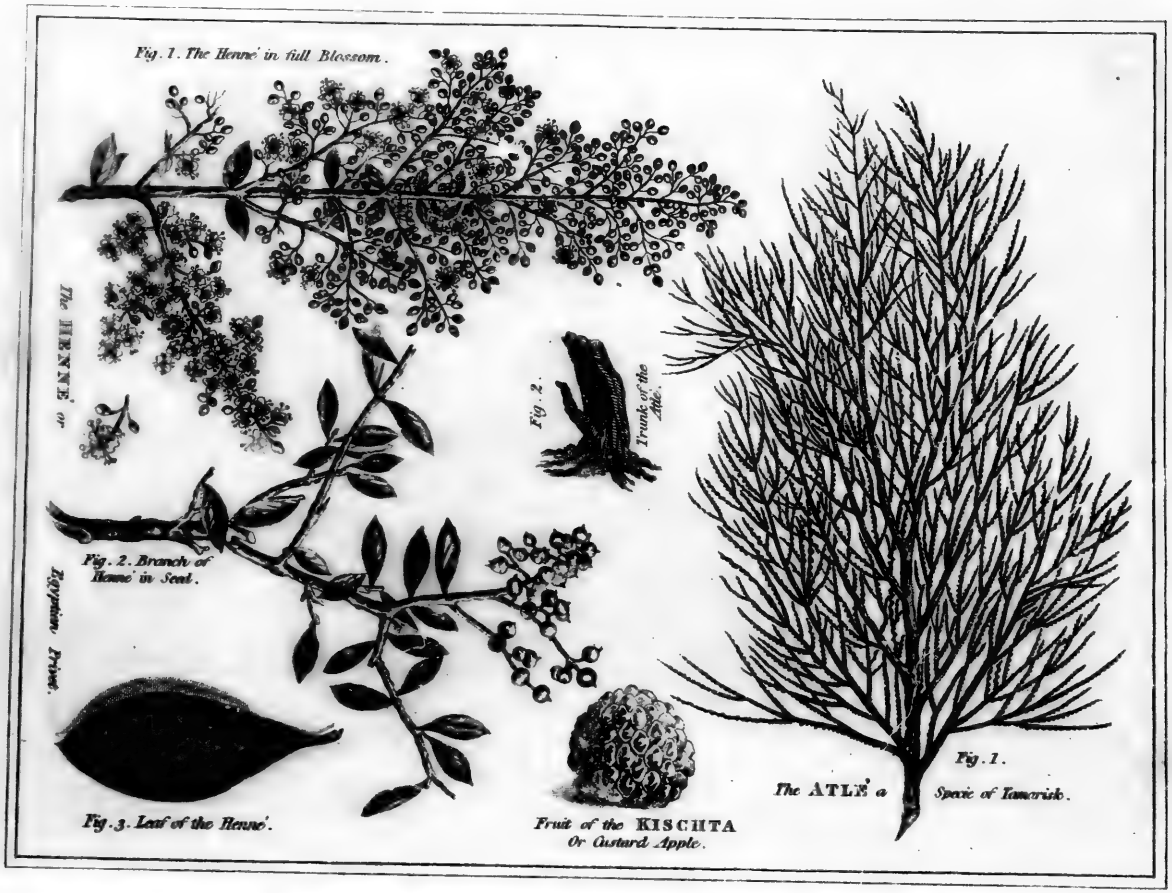


Fig. 1. The Henne' in full Blossom.
The HENNE' or
Egyptian Privet.
Fig. 2. Branch of Henne' in Seed.
Fig. 3. Leaf of the Henne'.
Fig. 2.
Trunk of the Atle.
Fruit of the KISCHTA
Or Custard Apple.
Fig. 1.
The ATLE' a Specie of Tamarisk.

Fig. 3. Leaf of the Henné.

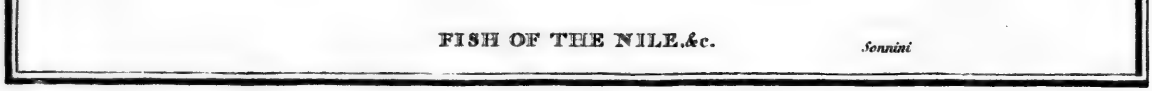
Fruit of the KISCHTA
Or Custard Apple.

The ATLÉ a Specie of Tamarisk.

FISH OF THE NILE, &c.

Sonnini

Milton sculp.



FISH OF THE NILE.&c. *Sonnini*

Milton. sculp.

A small Figure in Plaister.

A Beetle of Black Stone.

A small Figure in Bronze.

A Head in Bronze.

A Cat sitting, of Porcelain Enamelled.

A Head in Terra Cotta.

ANTIQUE FRAGMENTS,

Purchased by C. S. Sonnini at Salhe el Adjar.

ceeding all conjecture. The sugar canes be- to ripen in October, but they are not per- tly ripe till November or December.

Though Maillet * has asserted, that the culti- ion of the coffee-tree had been unsuccessfully empted in Egypt, the failure must certainly attributed to the want of skill or conduct in cultivator, as many parts of this country are well suited to the growth of the coffee-tree, as soil and climate of Arabia, where this shrub oduces its fragrant berries. Aromatic plants, oducing what are generally known by the ap- llation of spices, would find a suitable soil and opitious situations in Egypt †.

On the day of his departure for Cairo, M. Son- ni shot a bird near Rosetta, having much af- ity to the little grebe, or didapper: its length ten inches and a half; its head small in pro- rtion to its body; the wings short; no tail; the gs flattened on the sides, and covered with ales. In the month of February, small flocks ravens appear in the environs of Rosetta, mixing familiarly with the flocks of crows which never appear there at any other time.

Stopping at Jagnouss in his progress to Cairo, our author was informed that there were the remains of an ancient city; and a little below that village, he saw an extensive space covered with ruins, and pillars of granite lying on the ground. The people of the neighbourhood are daily finding medals, statues, and other frag- ments of antiquity. M. Sonnini purchased from them the following articles, *viz.* 1. An idol of por- celain, representing a cat sitting. 2. The bust of a woman in terra cotta. 3. A head of a woman in terra cotta. 4. A piece of sculpture, in white marble, of two children. 5. A porcelain idol of Osiris. 6. A head of a woman in stone. 7. A head of Vespasian. 8. The head of a woman.

The ruins near Jagnouss are probably those of the ancient city of Tena, their situation is dis- tinguishable by the tomb of a Turkish saint, which is built in a line with them on the same bank of the river ‡.

While

* Description de l'Egypte, Part II. p. 15.

† Fruit trees of various kinds adorn and enrich this envi- le country; but many others might be successfully added; e olive tree, which was always scarce in Egypt, might be opagated in great abundance, where it attains a larger ze than in Europe, and its fruit is in greater perfection; e fig-trees afford abundance of their pulpy and highly- voured fruit. Date-trees are found every where in the hebais and the Delta, not only on the cultivated districts, t on the sands, their cultivation requiring little care. The anches are cut off from the tree, with the dates on them, fore they are thoroughly ripe, and preserved in baskets; here they ripen in succession. To ascend the date-trees, hich have only branches on the summit, and are too nder to bear a ladder, the Egyptians make use of a girth, hich they tie to a rope that passes dexterously round the ee. Filaments are procured from the bark of this species palm-tree, of which ropes and sails for boats are con- ructed: baskets, and many other articles, are manufactured the leaves; and the very long rib of the branches is used the Mamelucs and Arabs, in their military exercises.

The cypperes is much cultivated in the neighbourhood of osetta; it produces a fruit resembling the American earth- t, but has a more agreeable flavour. Egyptian nurses ppose the juice of this fruit to promote an increase of ilk.

‡ No favourable wind occurring, the boat stopped at Ter- na, when our traveller availed himself of the opportunity taking a view of it, to see the manner of building illages in this country. Several small fishing vessels ap- eared in the Nile, which our traveller was anxious to amine, to ascertain the several species of fish common to at river. The schall is a species of shell-fish that has ever been described; its head is large and broad; and its ody is slippery, without scales; the back has two fins, the il is extremely forked; its general colour is a brownish grey, and many parts of the head and tail are tinged with red; it is about fifteen inches in length, and four in breadth. It is considered as execrable food, hardly fit to be eaten by any thing but cats. All the species of *silurus* found in the Nile were prohibited by the ancient Egyptians; and Mr. Pauw || presumes he has discovered the reason of this pro- hibition: "fishes without scales," he says, "used as food, promote all the diseases that have any affinity to the ele- phantiasis, or hypochondria, because they render the blood thick, and diminish perspiration."

The kaschoue resembles the pike, and, like the pike, voraciously feeds on other fishes; it is the oxyrinchus of the ancient Egyptians, and was venerated in one part of Egypt, while in other parts it was held in abomination. The kas- choue is pretty common in the Nile, and is universally relished as a delicacy. The hersé in its nose and head re- sembles a weasel; the head is without scales, but the rest of body has very small ones; the body is of a blackish colour, growing lighter towards the belly. The hersé never grows large, seldom exceeding six or seven inches in length. The kescheré is a species of perch, anciently called the Latos, and held sacred in the name of Latapolis: its Arabic name, scale, is given it on account of its having an unusual number of scales; it is one of the largest and best fishes of the Nile. This fish is extremely voracious, devouring many other species, of which it thus thins the Nile; and is one of the causes of the Nile having so small a number of fishes in proportion to its size, and the extent of its course. This fish is sometimes to be found of the weight of three hundred pounds. When of a small size, which is most common in the northern parts of the river, it is distingui hed by a peculiar name, that of hemnor.

The schilhy is a species of silurus, destitute of scales, common to the Nile, and preferable to the schall as food. The upper jaw has two rows of little, sharp, hooked teeth; but the under jaw has but one of these recurved teeth; the flesh

|| *Recherches Philosophique sur les Egyptiens, et les Chinois*, Tom. I. p. 154.

A Head in Terra Cotta.
ANTIQUE FRAGMENTS.
Purchased by C.S. Sonnini at Sakhe el Akjar.

While M. Sonnini was engaged in examining these fishes, a favourable wind arose, and he soon after set sail for Cairo: in a short time a forest of masts and yards informed him that he was approaching the harbour of that city, which is always crowded with vessels: he landed at Boulac, on the eastern side of the harbour, whence he and his companions proceeded to Cairo* on asses hired for that purpose: the bustle on the road indicated the approach to a populous city; and when they arrived there, they took up their abode in the house of the French consul.

The houses in the city of Cairo are not equal in elegance to those of the large cities of Europe; and their streets are crooked, narrow, and unpaved: their squares are large irregular places, destitute of embellishments; during the inundation, they are chiefly pools of water, and they become fields or gardens when the river has retired. The city, which is considerably more in length than in breadth, covers a space of eight or nine miles. Its population, consisting of Turks, Arabs, Moors, Copts, Syrians, Greeks, Jews, and Europeans, is estimated at four hundred thousand. Inhabitants of the winged race also take up their abode in Cairo; kites and crows living on the terraces of the houses in perfect security, adding their screams and croakings to the tumult of the restless populace. The prowling vulture increases the groupe of this singular society: the plaintive and amorous turtle, having nothing to dread from the talons of these devourers, or from the guns of the inhabitants, enters their dwellings without fear, giving them practical lessons of love and tenderness, in the caresses and attention of domestic happiness.

Here the splendour of excessive opulence in the few, was strongly contrasted with the extreme poverty of the many. The riches acquired by industry and care, in the intermediate classes, were carefully concealed from the prying eye of the rapacious, lest they should tempt the wealthy to practice extortions under specious pretences, which, with all their caution, they find themselves unable to prevent.

Though the men in power assume great splendour, they are as ignorant and uncivilized as the lowest among the populace. When decked in the robe of opulence, their manners are too ferocious for the eye to be deceived by the gloss of its magnificence. The beys are as ignorant, and as superstitious as the rude dregs of the people; not one of either could read or write; the knowledge of arithmetic was confined to the merchants, and the Mahometan priests bewildered themselves in attempting to expound the Koran; a few arts were exercised by foreigners, but mechanical occupations were in a very imperfect state, and the sciences were absolutely unknown. The mass of the people were barbarous beyond conception; foreigners were perpetually in fear of being insulted on the most frivolous pretext. The houses of the French were in a district by themselves, shut up by a large gate, and guarded by janizaries. Europeans could not appear in the streets but in the oriental habit, lest they should be torn in pieces: they were also obliged to wear a distinguishing mark of contempt, the talpack, a sort of high hairy cap. The enterprising English ventured to introduce the head-dress of the Druses, a large piece of striped silk, decorated with fringe, and rolled round the head like a turban. It was indispensably necessary to avoid wearing green garments, or those in which any thing verdant was introduced: to infringe this rule would have incurred the punishment due to profanation, which would have been equally prompt and terrible;

flesh is generally of a blackish grey colour, and the iris of the eye is of a golden colour. The bouri is a salt-water fish, ascending from the Mediterranean as far up the Nile as Cairo: it is the mullet, from the female row of which, botargo is made. Though the flesh is not firm, it is tolerably good eating: they are about ten inches in length. The sardine or sprat also quits the Mediterranean to pass up the Nile, where it is extremely plentiful. Those purchased by M. Sonnini were ten inches long, and three inches broad. The karmouth is a species of silurus, destitute of scales, and is very indifferent food: it is one of the most common fish of the Nile. Its length is about two feet: the muscles of its tail are remarkably strong, and it is uncommonly tenacious of life. The bayatte is a species of *silurus*, called by the inhabitants of Upper Egypt, *bogar*, or an ox, from its growing to an enormous size. They are insipid as food, and but little esteemed.

* The practice almost peculiar to Cairo, of hatching eggs by artificial heat, is said to proceed from experience, that, at a certain season, eggs fostered by hens are, in general, unprolific, while of those hatched in ovens not one third is lost. The ovens for this purpose are constructed of clay, and the eggs are placed in such a manner as not to touch each other. They are slightly moved five or six times in twenty-four hours. Care is taken to diffuse the heat equally throughout, which is at first rendered great, and then gradually diminished, till it is reduced to almost the state of the atmosphere, when the young brood are ready to come forth. The eggs are in the oven about twenty-two days; but at the end of the first eight it is known which will be unproductive. The oven is public property; so much per hundred is paid for hatching the eggs, on delivery of the chickens: the eggs which have not succeeded are also produced. *Brown's Trav.*

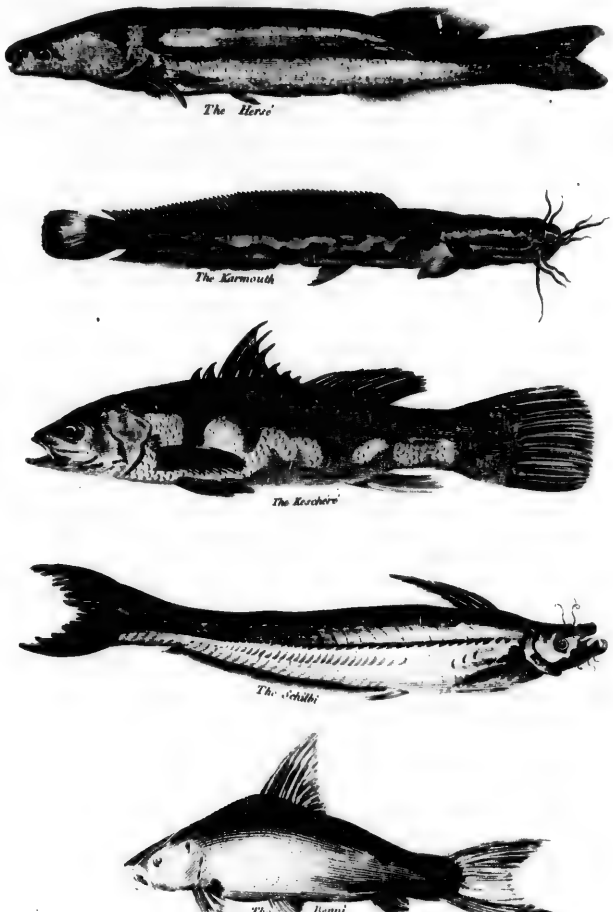
green

diate classes, were
ying eye of the ra-
ot the wealthy to
ecious pretences,
ey find themselves

sume great splen-
uncivilized as the
When decked in the
s are too ferocious
e gloss of its mag-
norant, and as su-
e people; not one
he knowledge of
erchants, and the
themselves in at-
; a few arts were
echanical occupa-
t state, and the
vn. The mass of
yond conception;
r of being insulted
The houses of the
emselves, shut up
janizaries. Eu-
streets but in the
e torn in pieces:
a distinguishing
, a sort of high
glish ventured to
Druses, a large
with fringe, and
ban. It was in-
wearing green
ny thing verdant
rule would have
ofanation, which
pt and terrible;

ro, of hatching eggs
m experience, that,
ns are, in general,
ens not one third is
onstructed of clay,
ner as not to touch
five or six times in
ise the heat equally
reat, and then gra-
most the state of the
eady to come forth.
wo days; but at the
ill be unproductive.
per hundred is paid
chickens: the eggs
ed. *Brown's Trav.*

green



FISH OF THE NILE.

Bonnini

Milton Sculp

reen was the favourite colour of Mahomet, and reserved exclusively for his descendants, and hose who acquire this qualification by making a ertain number of pilgrimages to his tomb.

Our travellers ventured to make a few excurions, mounted on asses, but they were obliged be rigidly attentive to decorum: if they met ith a Mameluc, a priest, or a man in office, ey made way for him, alighted, placed their right and on the breast as a token of respect, and stopped till the mussulman had passed. If they should e so inattentive as to neglect the performance of his degrading servility, the domestics of the great an, armed with stout sticks, would have punished them severely for their inattention.

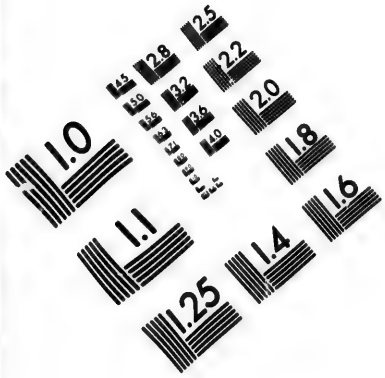
The government of Egypt was arbitrary, cruel, nd despotic. It consisted, when complete, of wenty-four beys or sangiacs: one of these acquired he authority of governor-general, and had unimited power, without control, without laws, and without any restrictions but such as were dictated y his own tyrannical will. All the beys had riginally been Mamelucs (pages or slaves of amour.) They were slaves, brought very young rom Georgia, Circassia, and other provinces of he Ottoman empire, and sold at Cairo: a few of hem were Ethiopians, brought from Nubia. These slaves were purchased by the Beys, who caused them to be educated in their own houses; an education principally tending to teach them the Mahometan religion, horsemanship, and military exercise. The power of the beys was regulated by the number of Mamelucs they supported; these slaves obtained the highest offices of state, in proportion to the influence they could exercise over their masters. Mamelucs being natives of a foreign country, their children were not permitted to inherit their privileges.

This kind of government existed in Egypt for near two hundred years before it was overthrown by the Ottoman Emperor Selim, in 1517. But though Selim conquered the country, he did not make any considerable alteration in its form of government. The Mamelucs might still acquire the supreme power, and they neglected nothing to procure the good opinion of their masters: their progress was rapid, as they were promoted to a place among the heads of the government. Having reached this height, they sought the summit of absolute power; to obtain the post of Shech el Belled, every artifice of intrigue and treachery was employed. After having secured a powerful party, beys have been known to go to the house of the governor-general, with every appearance of esteem, and respect, and in the midst of their conversation, suddenly stab him on the sofa; while his guards, instead of avenging his murder, have kissed the hands of the assassin, and proclaimed him sovereign*.

* In these frequent convulsions of the government, the people were the sufferers: they were considered merely as instruments to promote the designs of the covetous and ambitious: the beys harrassed, with their demands, the provincial governor, and they in return harrassed the people with their exactions. The people, at length, remained indifferent with regard to their quarrels and commotions; and the people of Cairo, expecting to experience the same vexations, whoever might be conqueror, had no predilection. The pacha kept by the Ottoman court at Cairo, as a shadow of its ancient authority, propagated discord among the beys, that the sultan might enjoy his phantom of religion. The pacha also received and transmitted the grand Seignior's tribute, when his vassals thought proper to pay it.

But the pacha continued in office only while he was in favour with the beys in power. If the Shech el Belled thought proper to be displeased with him, a messenger with a long black robe was sent into his apartment, who, without assigning his reason for so doing, turned the carpet of the divan; a well known signal that he was dismissed from his office, and must instantly quit the castle. Sometimes, indeed, the beys have not been contented with dismissing the pacha, but have also stripped him of his wealth, and caused him to be conveyed to prison. When Sonnini was in Egypt, in 1778, Mourat Bey treated Mahomet Vizier in this manner, who was a mild and respectable man, but had inconsiderately taken the part of Ismael bey against Mourat.

The divan of Constantinople appointed a successor without any demur; but even this semblance was offensive to the real despots of Egypt, and they frequently aimed at throwing off altogether the yoke of the sultan. The first of the Mamelucs who conceived the design of freeing Egypt from the authority of the court of Constantinople, was Ali Bey, about the year 1780. He would probably have accomplished his aim of rendering Egypt independent, had his scheme been properly conducted, or had he not become the victim of ingratitude. He placed his confidence in Rosetti, a Venetian merchant, a man whose understanding was too limited to comprehend a plan that was intended to change the political aspect of a country. Ali's favourite mameluc, Mehemet Bey, betrayed and fought his benefactor, who died of the wounds received in battle, and slew all his adherents. A Mameluc of Ali's, with less laudable dispositions than Ali, attempted to render the country independent: this was Mourat, who was often obliged to fly from Cairo, and yield to various competitors, and always was so fortunate as to return triumphant. He possessed the supreme power, a few interruptions excepted, from 1776, to the conquest of Egypt by the French. Mourat surpassed all his predecessors in magnificence: opulence reigned in his household; his money flowed from him in full streams; but it must be acknowledged, that he filled his coffers with the same facility by frequent and detestable extortions.



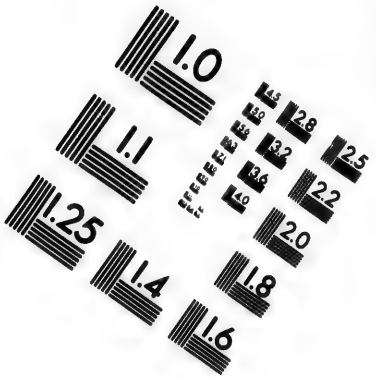
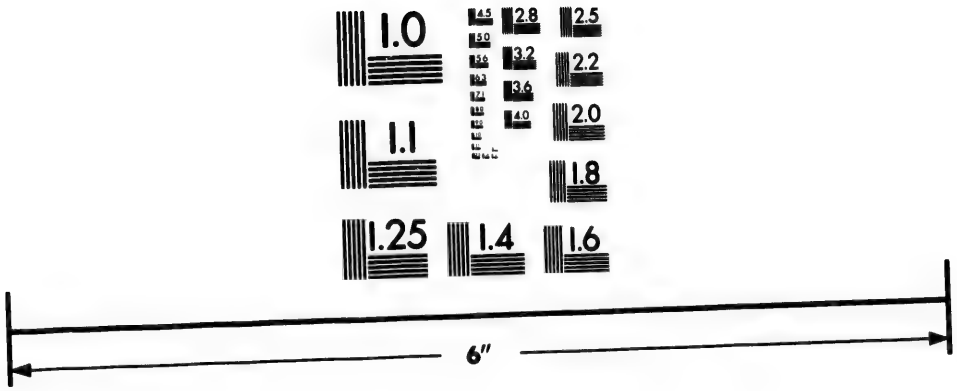
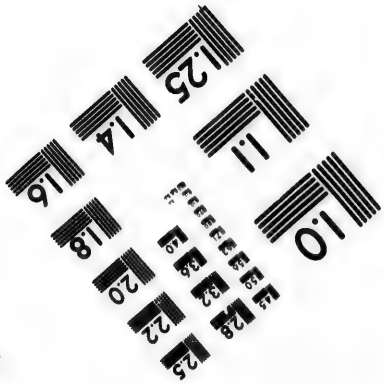


IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)





Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

Sonnini visited the camp of Mourat, where vast tents were erected for him and his principal officers, "Nothing," says he, "could equal the magnificence of his cavalry. Gold, silver, and rich embroidery on Morocco-leather, glittered in the rays of a fervid sun with a dazzling lustre."—He afterwards adds, "I have gone to the palace of Mourat Bey, with a young Frenchman who enjoyed his confidence. The bey received me with a kind of civility, made me sit by him, and gave me his own pipe to smoak, taking it from his mouth to present it to me. This was an honour, according to the customs of the country, which I have never received from any other person."

Mourat, pleased with Sonnini's answers to several questions, wanted to engage him in the double capacity of physician and engineer; offered him a house at Cairo, with domestics of all sorts, servants, and guards; a liberal allowance of provision, and a considerable salary. His offers might have seduced any one who was a stranger to the capricious humours of these unprincipled men, who load a person one day with magnificent favours, and the next furnish him with irons, or take off his head.

Mourat was in person a graceful figure, and had a fine martial appearance: a thick black beard ornamented his chin, and his eye-brows formed arches of ebony over his animated eyes; a scar on one of his cheeks added to the intrepidity of his countenance. Capable of enduring the greatest hardships, unmoved by adversity, bold in enterprize, cool in action, Mourat might have been a consummate general; his elevated and generous mind adapted him for sovereign dignity; but injustice, ignorance, and barbarity united in forming him a tyrant*.

The Mamelucs, exercised from their infancy in military evolutions, were singularly dexterous: in launching the javelin, they were certain of hitting the mark, but their principal weapon was the sabre†, with the wavy Damascus blade of truly tempered steel, which they wielded with astonishing skill. The habit of engaging in mock and real combats, rendered the Mamelucs brave and hardy; and had they possessed any knowledge of European tactics, they would have been a formidable corps; they were singularly expert in managing their horses; and though the reputation of Turkish cavalry is well known, it is much inferior to that of the Mamelucs, in gracefulness, celerity, and activity.

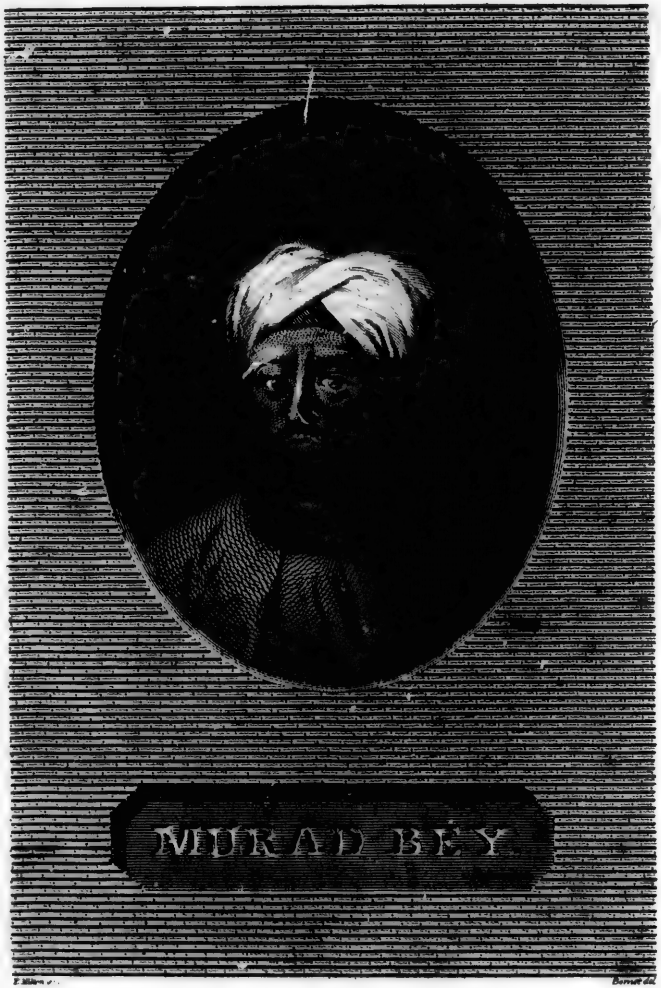
The Egyptian horses, which like the Barbs are descended from the Arabians, are the most beautiful existing: they are equally full of fire, vivacity, and vigour; but these horses have not so much bottom as the Arabians, which are found in the same countries: those of the Egyptian breed could not perform such journeys as the Arabian coursers; being more delicate, because more elegant, they would much sooner be exhausted. If, however, we allow that Arabian horses are the first in the world, those of Egypt may assert their preten-

* While the two beys of the Mameluc race are celebrated for their bravery and magnanimity; other noble actions are recorded to the honour of individuals among the Mamelucs, who are rendered remarkable by their gratitude to their masters and benefactors. The two following instances were related to Sonnini, when he was at Cairo:—Mehemet Bey, after having been victorious over his father-in-law and benefactor, put to death all who were supporters of the cause of Ali. In the exercise of his suspicious cruelty, he ordered a bey, who refused to abjure his fidelity to Ali, by whose favour he had risen to his exalted situation, to lose his hand, and his tongue. In this miserable condition, one of the Mamelucs had the generosity to attend him; and being anxious to be freed from the miseries of life, he made his faithful follower sensible of his wish to be thrown into the Nile, on which they were sailing to a destined place of exile. "Yes," replied the Mameluc, taking his patron in his arms, "I know that, in this extreme of wretchedness, life must be an insupportable burden—you shall be freed from it—but you shall not die alone"—he then leaped into the river with him, having infolded him closely, and they both embraced inevitable death in each other's arms.

The other instance occurred more recently: When Ismael had compelled Mourat to take refuge among the Arabs in Upper Egypt, the conqueror dispatched an old kiaschef, who had fought and was wounded on the side of Mourat, to solicit him to join his standard; and, as a farther inducement, offered to confer on him the most dignified situations, if he would embrace the victorious party. The old man informed the emissary of Ismael, that he thanked him for his offers, but declined accepting them; for having derived all he possessed from Mourat, fidelity to him was his duty, and he was resolved to follow him to the grave. Soon after, he abandoned all his property to the conqueror, only recommending to his humanity his wife and children; adding that, if the bey, from revenge or any other motive, should deprive them of the necessaries of life, he committed them to the protection of providence, the guardian of gratitude and fidelity.

† "I have often seen," says Sonnini, "these famous sabres tried. For this purpose, a large pillow, stuffed with feathers, is set on a support about the height of a man, in such a manner that the smallest blow would make it fall; and this the sabre, to be reputed of due quality, must cut in two at a single stroke.

sions


MURAD BEY

ns to a second rank*. What has been said of gyptian horses, is confirmed by ancient and mo- n testimony: the Jewish historians inform us, that was in Egypt chiefly where Solomon purchased, very high price, the prodigious multitude of rses which were kept in his numerous stables†.

The Beys kept in pay an auxiliary body of Moor- infantry, men who are called *Mangregis* (Men the west.) They were not only bad soldiers; y were also revengeful, cruel, and perfidious. ey sold themselves to any person who would rchase them.

Sonnini made few excursions in Cairo, though twice resided there for some time. During his t abode, the contests of the beys created so much nult, confusion, and disorder, that the gates the district appropriated to the French consul re generally kept shut. His second visit was er the French consul had quitted the city: and merchants, left without a protector, were ap- ehensive that his curiosity, and thirst after know- lge, might involve them in some difficulties.

He one day visited the castle, which stands on hain of mountains eastward of the Nile. This fortress, which commands the city, is itself commanded by the rocky mountain on which it is built. It is flanked with towers, and defended by a few wretched pieces of cannon; but the whole is gradually falling into ruins: remains of magnificent apartments, supported by pillars of granite, are still, however, to be seen in it. The way to the castle is nearly perpendicular, and has been cut through a rock: hence it is called Mokettam, or Cut Mountain. From the mountain, on which the castle is erected, the stones for building Cairo were obtained: they are white and calcareous. Cairo is defended with no other fortifications. It was once surrounded by walls, flanked by towers; but these are no longer entire: part of them have fallen beneath the stroke of time, and the remainder under the more destructive hand of barbarism. Two gates, which are of simple and noble architecture, remain. One of them is called Babel Nasr, the Gate of Victory; the other is named Babel Foutouh, the Gate of Passage; because on this side the sultan Selim entered the city by a breach‡.

From Cairo to Boulac the road is infested with improvisatori, or vagabonds half-naked, a set of wretched

* And Solomon had horses brought out of Egypt; and a riot came up, and went out of Egypt, for six hundred kels of silver, and a horse for an hundred and fifty. KINGS, x. 28, 29.

The Egyptian horses have deservedly the preference of all ers for size and beauty; the smallest of which are usually teen hands high, and all of them shaped, according to ir phrase, *kiff eli gazel*, like the antelope *Shaw's Travels*, 230.

See also relation Journaliere du Levant, par H. de auveau, p. 159.

† Bonaparte, then a citizen, now an emperor, in his er to the executive directory, dated Cairo, the 6th of ssidor, year 6, says, "The Mamelucs had a magnificent y of cavalry, covered with gold and silver, armed with best carbines and pistols of London manufacture, the t sabres of the east, and mounted perhaps on the best rses on the continent.

‡ On the eastern side without the walls, are exhibited the ns of the tombs of the sultans, which are magnificent; t most of them have been much injured by corroding time. om the vast quantity of mouldering and mutilated appear- ces, lying on the ground and its vicinity, it seems ap- ent that the city was once considerably larger than it is present.

A large canal, communicating with the Nile a little above d Cairo, crosses the middle of the city, from the west the north-west; over which there are several bridges, h a row of houses on each side. Ptolomy ascribes the con- action of this canal to Trajan; but M. Sonnini supposes to have been the work of the Pharaohs. The Arabic torians inform us that the bed of this canal is paved with rble, though it is now almost covered with mud; the Nile no longer flowing through it, but in the months of August, September, and October. The breaking down of the Dike, which closes its entrance, constitutes a ceremonious festival, at which the pacha and beys are present. When the water has retreated, the bottom which has received the filth from the sewers of the city, emits an insupportable stench, that renders the surrounding houses almost uninhabitable; but the heat accelerates the progress of its drying up, and it becomes one of the most populous streets in the city.

During his residence at Cairo, Sonnini passed much of his time at the windows of the consul's house, from whence he had an opportunity of seeing the dancing girls, whose steps and leaps were very different from those of European dancers; their merit seems to consist in the agitation of the loins. Though their performance was one of the most impudent exhibitions of a lascivious spectacle, it was highly gratifying to a depraved and unpolished people. The music which accompanied these dances was a hautbois, a lute with three strings, and a tambourine.

These female dancers, whose indelicate exertions always attract an immense crowd of spectators, wear on the thumb and fore finger of each hand, a little cup, which they occasionally strike together in regular cadence, like castinets. Their faces are bare, which in these countries is considered as the height of impudence: many of them wear a ring in one of their nostrils. Having concluded their dances, they let down their veils, and, holding their ears with both hands, make a most horrible squall. The jugglers succeeded the dancing girls, whose tricks imitate the performances of the itinerant conjurors in Europe. Tumblers also entertain the populace with feats of activity, and have a sort of merry-andrew, whose low ribaldry is employed to extort a laugh from the lovers of vulgarity.

wretched poets, who wear on their heads a cap of rushes, and compose verses extempore on any whom they suppose simple enough to part with a little money: two of them perhaps enter into a metrical dialogue of the virtues and talents of the person they address, and to whom they are entirely strangers: their eulogies generally consist of common place phrases, recited with great volubility.

SECTION X.

Marriages in Cairo—Caravans with Slaves from Nubia—Marriage a civil Act among the Mahometans—Slaves are exposed to Sale—Hot Climates most suitable to Horses, Asses, &c.

AMONG the processions attending civil or religious ceremonies in Cairo, Sonnini mentions those attendant on weddings. When the preliminaries of marriage were agreed on, the bride elect is attended wherever she goes by a numerous company. Preceded by music, she marches deliberately under a canopy enclosed with drapery, and is followed by a multitude of her relatives and friends. Her first visit is to the bath; after which she is conducted to the house of her husband, preceded by an additional number of persons, carrying some article of her clothes *, jewels, and a few moveables. The bride's dowry only consists in these effects, as the husband, instead of receiving a fortune, engages not only to give his wife a jointure, but purchases her of her father with a sum of money †.

In the warehouses of Cairo are found many of the productions of every part of the world, brought from their respective countries by themselves. But the negro slaves, a living species of merchandize, more particularly demand attention; they are conveyed to Cairo by the caravans of Nubia; two of these are usually brought every year, and the number of these unhappy wretches intended for sale, are estimated at between fifteen hundred and two thousand: of these the females are more numerous than the males. While Sonnini resided at Cairo, the price rose or fell, according to the number of them imported; but the finest negro of either sex, might be purchased for about three hundred livres.

Many of the negroes intended for sale, perish under the heat, abstinence, and fatigue of the journey, from their respective countries to Cairo; and when they arrive at the Egyptian capital, they are uncomfortably crowded into a building appropriated for the purpose, where they are exposed to sale by their countrymen; who permit every person who chooses, to examine, handle, and inspect them, as if they were so many cattle exhibited for slaughter. Only part of the slaves, however, remain in Egypt, many of them being purchased by merchants, and sent to Constantinople: the young Nubians are particularly valued in the Ottoman capital, where men, not choosing to rely on chastity, mutilate their brethren to secure the fidelity of their wives ‡.

* The lady's property on these occasions is a matter of triumph, she therefore chooses to have it displayed to the greatest advantage; the magnificence of the ceremony consists in the great number of attendants; a few ounces of the lady's property is a sufficient load for any person according to this etiquette.

† The first interview of the bride and bridegroom is after the former has been at the bath, when she is successively dressed in the habit of a Janissary, or some other male attire, as the fondness of the women for disguising themselves in the habits of men in these countries is remarkable. Having pleased herself, and her female companions, in the adjustment of these masquerade habits, bursts of merriment ensue, and the lady is shewn to her husband in different dresses and disguises. Many ceremonies then take place respecting the lady's chastity, which are not necessary to be mentioned here. Marriages among the Mahometans is merely a civil act, in which the priests are not permitted to interfere; the parties appear before the Cadi, who receives their declarations, and prepares and witnesses the agreement.

The circumcision of infants is another of the ceremonies in which the Egyptians as well as the Turks display the most ostentatious parade.

‡ It is certain that the hottest and driest climates are most favourable for horses; as those of Arabia, Persia, Egypt, and Barbary, stand foremost with regard to beauty as well as vigour; the same observation may with equal propriety be made of the asses of hot climates; in proportion to their distance from these they degenerate, the asses of the northern countries having no resemblance to those of the south. In Egypt they are extremely beautiful, grow very large, and are so much valued, that they sometimes bear a higher price than the horses; they move with elegance and grace, and their pace is quick and easy. The most opulent Mahometans do not disdain to ride on them; the ladies are pleased with them, and they are the only animals

commerce furnishes Cairo with every kind of chandize, its markets poured forth a profusion rticles for the sustenance and enjoyment of Every kind of fish that the Nile affords is e had in abundance: M. Sonnini had an ortunity of inspecting three which he had not re seen; these were the *bolty*, the *bayatte*, the *benni*.

The *bolti*, from which he took a drawing, was lve inches long, and four inches and a half in greatest breadth; the scales are large, the our of the body is white, with broad blackish ds descending from the back to the belly; the of the eye is of a golden colour. The *bolti* is found in the Nile, but chiefly in the small canals running out of it, and the pools remaining after the inundation; it is reckoned delicate and well-flavoured. The *bayatte* is of a sea-green colour, shaded with brown on the back and head; tinges of red are seen on the bony coverings of the gills: the iris of the eye is yellow.—The *benni* is very common in Egypt, and, according to Forskall's and Sonnini's observations, is of the same genus with the barbel, the carp, and the tench: the scales with which it is covered, are large, and shining with a silvery lustre. It is tolerably good food, and grows large, but a great number of small ones are caught.

SECTION XI.

rney into Abyssinia—Sonnini engages to sustain part of the Expence—Syrian Interpreter—Baths t Boulac—Butter at Embabé—Lupins—Jews' Synagogue—Chapel of the Copts—Aqueduct—Gizah—Memphis—Catacombs—Whirlwinds—Sonnini's Liberality to the Egyptians abused—Mountains of the Birds—Bardacks—Dreadful Storm with Hail—Sheick Abade—The Convent of the Pulley—Siout—Practice of Physic—Singular Procession—Searching for Gold.

FTER having resided a considerable time at Cairo, M. Sonnini formed a resolution of mpting to visit Abyssinia: though his allow- e from the French government was inadequate the expences of such an expedition, he was lling to furnish, from his own private property, atever more might be required. The route by Red Sea appeared to be the most agreeable, finding that he must wait a considerable e before he could procure a passage to Djedda, that he might be detained longer there till could be able to find an opportunity of ap- aching the shores of Ethiopia, he determined take the route of Upper Egypt; though it extremely dangerous on account of the erant Arabs, who committed their depreda- s with impunity; and though the country s in a disordered state, Mourat having recently feated Ishmael Bey.

Our traveller obtained letters of recommenda- n and protection from Mourat Bey, to all the governors in his interest. To these the Bey added a letter to Ismain-Abou-Ali, a powerful Arabic prince, by whose assistance he had been restored to the government. He advised Sonnini, before his departure, to adopt the turban, and the dress of one of his officers, to avoid the persecutions of the people. He also procured letters from the superior of the missionaries for the propagation of the faith, who have four convents for the reception of monks in Upper Egypt.

Sonnini engaged a Syrian christian as an interpreter, who spoke seven languages fluently, but without critically understanding the principles. He had agreed with the master of a small vessel to convey him into Upper Egypt, and no other person was to be permitted to enter the vessel without his approbation; and he might stop, or proceed, as his inclination should suggest. On these conditions he was to pay about seven shillings and six-pence per day for the use of the boat, and the labour of the master and his crew.

nals on which christians of any country are permitted to ear.

sses in Egypt are preferred to horses, by those who travel r the deserts, as they are more hardy and less delicate in choice of their food. The Musselmen in their pilgrimage Mecca, and the chiefs of the Nubian caravans, are generally conveyed by these animals. Some of them frequently stand for hire in the streets, ready saddled and bridled. The opulent inhabitants of Cairo spare no expence in the trappings of asses, and in procuring those which are the most valuable.

The period of our author's departure was now fixed; but, on his arrival at Boulac, the wind blew so violently from the south that he found it impossible to proceed; yet being happily relieved from his gloomy situation at Cairo, he passed the day agreeably at Boulac, walking about deliberately with a pipe in his mouth, observing the scenes and bustle of a commercial port. At night he visited the baths, which are very fine at Boulac. These are superb buildings for the purpose of bathing without water, where warm and humid vapours moisten the body, and mixing with the perspiration they excite, descend in copious drops over all the limbs. A number of operations are performed in the course of bathing, which Sonnini particularly enumerates, and adds, the persons who attend "draw a piece of pumice-stone over the soles of the feet."—Here, the French narrator observes, "you enjoy a delicious repose, and cannot forbear yielding to a kind of voluptuous langour."

But though the baths in Turkey are handsome buildings, they are much inferior, with regard to magnificence, to those which the Romans constructed under their emperors; the ruins of them, which remain, strike us with astonishment. The women in Cairo and Boulac have particular days and hours for visiting the baths, when no man is permitted to approach them*.

Sonnini left Boulac on the 21st of March, but proceeded no farther than to old Cairo, the master pretending that some repairs were necessary to the boat. This city, which marks the site of the Babylon of Egypt, is about half a league distant from Boulac, and is the port for such boats as come down from the Said. The Jews have a synagogue here, and the Catholics a convent and a church; the Copts possess a grotto, or low chapel, which, according to pious tradition, is said to have been inhabited by the Virgin Mary, with the infant Jesus, when they fled into Egypt. Here may be seen the granaries of Joseph, if the name of granaries can be properly applied to a large open space of ground enclosed with high walls, and divided into separate courts. The walls are injudiciously constructed, and have not the appearance of antiquity, evidently contradicting the popular error, which has attributed their erection to Joseph the patriarch†.

On the other side of Roudda stands the town of Gizah, rendered peculiarly pleasing by the lofty turrets of the mosques, the numerous date trees, and the majestic river which laves the foundation of the houses. In the vicinity of Gizah stood the ancient city of Memphis, and at two or three leagues distance are those splendid monuments of Egyptian glory and magnificence, the pyramids, which bear indiscriminately the name of the pyramids of Memphis, or the pyramids of Gizah.

Sonnini having collected the master and sailors belonging to his vessel, two triangular sails filled by a fresh breeze from the north, drove her forward with rapidity; and her prow opened for itself an easy passage, notwithstanding the resistance of the current. After proceeding about eight leagues, she stopped near a little mud village called Sheck Itam, which had a picturesque appearance, from its being surrounded with groves of date-trees. Several white herons perched among the verdant boughs, to add splendour to the scene.

In the chain of rocky mountains, which border the eastern shore of the Nile, beginning at Cairo great cavities are seen, whence stones had been extracted for the construction of Memphis and the pyramids: the stones of the latter are exactly of the same species with the calcareous rock of the mountains.

* Opposite to Boulac, on the western shore of the Nile, the small village of Embabé presents itself, where butter is to be procured in the greatest perfection, and where only butter can be had fit for eating in any part of Egypt. The fertile plains in the vicinity of this village, abound with excellent productions; among which is a species of lupins, in high estimation among Egyptians. After stripping the seeds of a thick hard skin, the inhabitants boil the seeds, (or peace) in salt and water; they are frequently sold, ready dressed, in the streets and markets. The christians of the east eat lupins to create a relish for brandy, of which they often drink excessively. Flour is also made of lupins, which is used like that of other farinaceous plants: their stalk burnt to cinders, supply the places of charcoal in the preparation of gun-powder.

† The aqueduct which conveys water to the castle, is the work of the Arabs, and is certainly a very beautiful structure it is supported by three hundred and fifty lofty arcades; and the water is raised by a chain pump, with four wheels which is worked with oxen. In front of Old Cairo, the small island of Roudda is situated, in the middle of the river: on this island the mekkias, or measure, is erected, to ascertain the progress of the inundation. It is a high pillar supposed to be the work of the Arabs.

On the 22d, our travellers continued their pro-ess up the Nile*; Sonnini saw, at a little dis-ce, the pyramids of Sakkara, and also a town the same name, celebrated for its catacombs of mmies. The north wind still continued favour-le to our travellers, but sometimes blew violent alls: whirlwinds were frequent on the Nile, hich gave a kind of flattulent motion to the water, if it was boiling up. In the plain of Sakkara, lumns of sand were raised by the wind almost n with the clouds. Passing through several llages, our travellers stopped for the evening at afr Jaiat, where a kiachef resided. The western ore of the Nile is here lofty and steep; but eastern bank the chain of mountains retires, ving vast spaces for cultivation†.

On the morning of the 23d, the boat proceeded e leagues farther to Riha, a village on the stern shore, almost opposite to Atsieh, a town ciently consecrated to the Cyprian goddess, lled Aphroditopolis. The following day it was possible to make use of sails, the boat was there-re drawn by a rope; while M. Sonnini, walking ong the side of the Nile, killed several wild geons. After proceeding about three leagues, ey moored at night opposite Schment-el Arab: e houses of this village, like those of Upper gypt, are square, with pigeon-houses over their ofs, and appear handsome at a distance; but approaching them, nothing but mud-walls and retchedness appear to delight the eye of the be-lder. During this day's route, the eastern ore seemed steril and uninhabited; the western s cultivated and fertile.

Several large tracts of land are covered with the thamus, a productive source of trade to the Egyptians, the flowers affording the beautiful red dye, known by the name of *safranum*. But it has a strong offensive smell ‡.

Similar gusts, with aggravated circumstances, continued on the 27th: the mariners were much dejected, and could hardly be prevailed on to attempt to put the boat again in motion; and when they did, the fury of the storm rendered their endeavours abortive, and they were compelled to stop behind a point of sand, to protect the vessel from the violent agitation of the current: the heat was more excessive than on the preceding day, and the sweat distilled from every pore: the shifting sand, adhering to their faces, obliged the mariners to be continually cooling their eyes with the water of the river, and clearing them of the intrusive scorching dust. Towards evening, however, the fury of this scorching wind abated, and the party was enabled to proceed to Benisouef, a large, handsome, opulent town on the western shore, about thirty leagues distant from Cairo. The houses are constructed of brick, mingled with the date-trees, and the aspiring turrets render the aspect of the place more pleasing than the generality of towns and villages in Upper Egypt. A manufactory of coarse carpets gives it commercial consequence, and the fertility of the adjacent fields promotes the happiness of the neighbouring inhabitants. It is under the jurisdiction of a kiaschef.

A profound calm succeeded this tempest on the 28th, which continued till four in the evening, when the travellers proceeded on their voyage, and at night arrived at a village called Bebe, the rasidence of a kiaschef, and embellished with a mosque and a convent. On the 29th a fine breeze

* In sailing up the Nile, a great number of villages are be seen in every direction. Boats, all of the same kind, navigated in the same manner, about ten or fifteen tons then, continually pass and repass. These are filled with vegetable productions of the country; sheep, goats, and women; sometimes a horse or a camel is to be seen g down in the boat. *Ledyard's Trav. into Egypt.*

† With people, like the Egyptians," says Sonnini, "I ld not expect to accomplish a voyage, exempt from dis-tations: greedy and dishonest, whatever benefit you con-on them, they are never contented." Our traveller had ught with him an ample provision of coffee and tobacco, ich, from the moment of his sailing with them, he had red with them; but being dissatisfied with his mode of rality, they modestly demanded possession of the tobacco coffee, that they might supply themselves as they thought per. Sonnini not only refused to comply with their in-nt demand, but from that moment discontinued his volun-y douceurs: they broke out into murmurs on the occasion, which were of pretty long duration, but finding they were wholly ineffectual, they at length thought proper to be quiet.

‡ The sailors were again obliged to haul along the boat on the 26th, the wind blowing from the south: during the whole morning they only reached the town of Bousef, about a quarter of a league farther. Here they encountered one of those violent gusts of wind from the south, so dangerous and alarming in these countries. "Wretched," says Sonnini, "is the situation of those who find themselves entangled in the vast sandy deserts with which Egypt is bordered; intrepidity then is of no avail whatever, and the most valiant armies may be there overturned with clouds of sand which the wind drives impetuously along: they may be stifled to death, and perish in despair. The atmosphere was on fire, and at the same time darkened by whirlwinds of dust." Both men and animals inhaled the scorching vapours, mingled with burning sand, the plants were parched by the excessive heat, and all animated nature experienced its baleful influence.

wafted

wafted the vessel, and the weather and atmosphere were delightful: the eastern shore exhibited mountains of sand and rock, in some places verging into the river, in others retiring into the desert, and adding to the horror of its aspect. These barren mountains have acquired the name of Djebel el Teir (Mountains of the Birds,) to indicate the inhabitants who people them. The adventurers thought proper to cast anchor in the vicinity of Sheick Zaiar, a large place on the western shore, after having sailed about five leagues.

On the 30th they continued their route to Senon Seni, where they particularly observed the manner in which the women provide themselves with a plenitude of water from the Nile. Each individual is laden with three earthen vessels: one, very large, which is placed upon the head; the second, somewhat smaller, hangs behind the back, supported by a rope passing across the forehead; and the third, which is the smallest, is supported on the left shoulder, and held by the right hand.

On the 31st a pleasant breeze conducted the travellers to Miniet, where a mountainous chain extends along the bank of the Nile towards Arabia, exhibiting the appearance of a lofty wall, from its perpendicular position. This city has a very pleasing appearance, the houses of which are chiefly constructed of unburnt brick; but those of the kiaschef, and some few of the principal people, are built of stone. A tax is collected here on all vessels navigating the Nile; and here is a manufactory of earthen vessels called *bardacks*, in which water acquires a pleasant degree of coolness*, which makes it very salutary in so scorching a climate. Mutilated columns, and pillars of granite, with accumulated heaps of rubbish, clearly demonstrate that Miniet occupies the place of a more ancient city. Some have supposed it to be Hermopolis the Great; others are of opinion that the ruins are those of Cynopolis, where dogs were worshipped by the populace; and a modern traveller supposes Miniet to be the ancient Philœ. The modern city, however, is about one hundred and fifty miles from Cairo†.

A dreadful storm arose on the evening of the second of April, accompanied with hail, which is seldom seen in Egypt: whirlwinds of sand obscured the beams of the sun, and precipitate undulations agitated the surface of the river. The storm having abated on the 3d, the travellers resumed their voyage on the 4th, and came within sight of Scheick Abade, a resort of pirates to the east of the Nile; where immense magnificent ruins announce the site of a large city that was founded by the emperor Adrian, who rendered himself contemptible by his unnatural passion for Antinous‡.

The boat-master was, with great difficulty prevailed on by Sonnini to approach these ruins, as they are peopled by the worst tribe of Egyptians, and the most ferocious robbers: after some altercation, however, he landed with his draughtsman, and found, among a rich variety of antique monuments, a triumphal arch supported by fluted pillars, fifty feet in width. A number of granite pillars stand towards the mountains, but the other remains are a confused mass of ruins. While the travellers were engaged on this spot, the report of a gun announced the approach of robbers, and they had just time to escape to the boat,

* Mr. Bruce, in his travels to discover the source of the Nile.

† M. Sonnini had two letters of recommendation given him at Cairo; one for the kiaschef of Miniet, and the other from an opulent friend to the French merchants; but they were both absent; the kiaschef was levying contributions throughout the district, and the Turk had retired to one of his villages near the town. The epistle directed to the latter was instantly forwarded to him; which procured a present from him to our author of five excellent sheep, and two large pots of butter; with a complimentary message, expressive of his regret, and lamenting that he was not on the spot to accommodate him.

The second person, in point of consequence, at Miniet, having heard that our author was a physician, sent a messenger to request his attendance, as he had unfortunately broke his leg three days before. Sonnini attended the summons, and found the patient had been most curiously handled by a Coptic surgeon. He was laid upon the ground without either matrass, mat, or carpet, with his thigh and leg stretched out. His extended leg and thigh were kept in that position by a little temporary brick wall, which the physician had erected on each side. The fractured limb was to be confined in this piece of masonry, till a perfect cure had been accomplished; and, in order to hasten the knitting of the bone, a plaister was daily applied to the limb, composed of earth, oil, and the white of an egg.

‡ Antinopolis was built on the site of the ancient Egyptian Abidus, long celebrated for the oracles delivered by Besa, a pretended divinity. Abidus and Antinopolis are, however, now mingled in one general destruction: the vestiges of the latter excite the more regret, as its mutilated remains exhibit elegant forms and graceful contours of the best Grecian and Roman architecture, instead of those gigantic monuments of stone usually found among Egyptian ruins, which rather create astonishment than admiration.

and

COLUMN *at* ANTINOPOLIS
FIGURE *found at* ECHMIMM.

Sonnini.

Ruins of the Temple of
HERMOPOLIS *in* EGYPT.

to get clear of those plundering barbarians, did not neglect, however, to salute them many threats and imprecations *.

uitting the desolate shores of Antinous, they eeded to Mellavoui, a small handsome city, ted at about half a league from the western of the Nile, which is the residence of a hef. The next day the voyage was continued bout ten leagues, when the travellers arrived Manfelout. Two leagues below, on the eastern , a chain of lofty rocks projects over the river, d the mountain of Aboufeda, the name of a mussulman, who was interred in a small el there. Near this monument of piety, or r of supersition, many of the same religion, are the most abandoned robbers, live in hewn in the rock, and whom it is nearly ossible to exterminate, from the difficulty of oring their retreats.

Manfelout is larger and handsomer than Miniet, its commerce chiefly consists in grain of every , and cloth; having large manufactures of atter. It is pleasantly situated, and surround- with palm and fruit-trees. On the eastern e, opposite Manfelout, a monastery of Copts ents itself, inclosed with high walls, which is red only by a basket, drawn up by means of lley; whence the edifice has acquired the ap- ation of The Convent of the Pulley.

I. Sonnini, who had known the kiaschef of nfelout, at Cairo, had received from him letters ecommendation to all his dependents; he was efore hospitably received at Manfelout by the kiaschef's treasurer; and on the 6th of April proceeded to Siout, five leagues farther. He was accommodated there in a house belonging to the same commander, which was elegant and spacious; and as he intended to continue some time at this place, he thought proper to discharge his boatman, with whose conduct he had little reason to be satisfied. He acted like many other faithless servants, who frequently complain of hard services being imposed upon them by the master, and yet make supplication to remain with him, when he forms a resolution of parting with them.

Siout is a large city in Upper Egypt, erected on an artificial eminence about a mile on the west side of the Nile: a canal conducts the water to the city, over which a handsome gothic bridge, of three arches, is erected. Near this spot the ancient city of Lycopolis † is supposed to have stood, where a wolf or a jackall was worshipped ‡.

Having letters from Mourat Bey to the kiaschef of Siout, our traveller was graciously received by him. The kiaschef Ibrahim, receiver of the taxes from the caravans of Nubia, was also extremely obliging, and lent him horses to enable him to visit the environs of the city §.

Sonnini having acquired considerable reputation at Siout, as a physician, people from all quarters came to consult him, and those of a superior class prevailed on him to visit them [illegible] he was not much gratified with the exce[illegible] he had so generally procured; as he knew [illegible] professor of medicine must here practise h[illegible] ence in a particular manner ‖. Be the disor[illegible] what

* In the mountains near Antinoe many openings are to be which were probably places of sepulture or catacombs; as are to be found in the environs of all the great cities Thebais. The inhabitants ascribe their excavation to ns: in which opinion they are supported by the decla- of the missionary Vansleb. The Christian legends d them as the solitary retreats of holy hermits. The ne of Sheeh Abade, inclosing the tomb and relics of an saint of that name, form a strong contrast to the mag- nt fragments of the city of Adrian. But it is truly ting that, while the Mahometans regard this saint as a us partizan of the Koran, he is claimed by the Christians e of their bishops, who was honoured with matyrdom siné.

† Pocock imagined that Siout was the site of Antœopolis, h Ptolemy has placed it on the eastern shore. Mr. e, in his travels to the source of the Nile, says he con- Siout to be erected on the ruins of the ancient city of Isiu. Sonnini supposes the Jackall to have been the sacred al.

‡ About a mile behind Siout a chain of rocky mountains een, which appear from the city to be pierced with holes of different forms: these are the entrances of caverns hewn out in the rock; some of which are beautifully ornamented with symbolical figures. They lead to spacious halls, having hieroglyphics on the sides nearly obliterated by time; and the remains of paintings are still distinguishable on the ceilings. It seems very probable that these excavations were intended as places of sepulture by the ancient Egyptians: this opinion is, in some degree, supported by the following remark, that they are always found in the places near which great cities existed; whence it may be inferred, that the caverns of the mountains of Siout have been the catacombs of the Lycopolitans.

§ [illegible] L. I. No. V.

‖ "What would become (says Sonnini) of the physician who should venture to prescribe a remedy that is *not taken by the mouth?* He might esteem himself happy if he came off with his life; as such a proposal would be considered as a most serious insult. I shall never forget what befel a French surgeon in one of the Ports of Caramania. A Turkish Aga consulted him on a severe pain in his head. The surgeon prescribed a *particular* remedy. The Mussulman, enraged that to cure a complaint in the *head*, application was to be made to a *part diametrically opposite*, started up in a fury, drew

what it may, the physician only deigns to feel the pulse before he prescribes; if he should ask a single question of the patient, or shew the least hesitation, he would be instantly dismissed with contempt. Should he unfortunately be called in by a man in power, he *must* either cure his patient, or expect to die himself; for if the patient dies, the physician is punished as an assassin*.

But while Sonnini was employed, against his inclination, in restoring the health of others, he was himself attacked with the violent disease of the eyes, called by the Greeks *chemosis:* the ball of one of his eyes started from its orbit; sleep never closed his swollen eye-lids, and his face had a most horrible appearance. Unable to bleed himself, he sent for an Italian missionary to perform that operation. This pretender to surgery was so unskilful in the business he had undertaken, that he broke the lancet in his patient's arm, which he slashed in every direction, to extract the fragment. He so far succeeded in his operation, however, that he gave our author a copious bleeding, but he procured him no relief.

Sonnini had recourse to cooling draughts, but without effect; his sufferings continually increased. At length he ordered some poppy-heads to be boiled in water, which he drank when night arrived, and experienced profound repose for about fifteen hours; during which time the narcotic proved so salutary, that his eye returned into its socket, and when he awoke he was perfectly cured: a little dimness, however, remained for a few days. But, during his convalescence, our auth found it necessary to change his lodging; t kiaschef, to whom the house belonged, having rived with all his train. A small house was hir for our traveller, and his companions, who o cupied the whole of it: and he solemnly declar that he paid only *two medinas,* (rather more th a penny a-day); though he supposes, that being foreigner, they were induced to charge him t extravagant sum†.

The kiaschef of Siout entertained a very hig opinion of M. Sonnini's talents in the medic line, and supposed him also to be a profoun dealer in magic, he therefore proposed to hi that they should go together to a mosque in t city, where great treasure was said to be conce ed, and discover all this treasure by means of h sorcery; which might be shared between the Our author assured him that he was wholly u acquainted with the method of finding gold, b if it was his particular desire, he would accompa him to the mosque: he did so; and, after e amining the building, assured him that the repe which had been propagated was entirely groun less, and that no riches were concealed in a part of it.

The Syrian interpreter having frequently to Sonnini that the kiaschef wished to engage him his service, our traveller took this opportunity reproaching the commander with endeavouri to deprive him of so valuable a servant; he a cordingly desired a young Alexandrian to menti

drew his sabre, and was with great difficulty prevented from sacrificing the Frenchman to his resentment.

* Except in some particular maladies, the Egyptians acknowledge only three sources of diseases; the *bile*, the *blood*, and the *cold;* and, having felt the pulse, the physician has only to pronounce one of those words, without making use of any explanatory terms of appellation, whatever may be the disease. No great difficulty attends the proper choice of one of these words: a yellow complexion denotes *bile:* red announces *blood*, and pale denominates *cold.* M. Sonnini became well acquainted with these important signs, and seldom erred in his conjectures: he also employed a little artifice by concealing his own knowledge of Arabic, and being always attended by his interpreter. By this deception, judiciously managed, he obtained great celebrity.

A common method of cure among the Egyptian physicians, is to burn the part affected: this practice among the antient Greeks was often successful, when it was exercised with discretion; but in Egypt it is performed so unskilfully, that the patients are frequently covered with sores, proceeding from the application of hot irons, when the disorder has not been in the least abated.

† Passing the streets of Siout, our travellers frequently saw the processions which attend the circumcision of children. One of these processions opened with hautboys and cymba flags of different coloured silks followed next, on which written in Arabic the Mussulman profession of faith ‡. Th were surrounded by priests, chanting passages of the Kora behind them a man carried a tabernacle, adorned with m monds and streamers, containing the sacred book. T circumcised children followed, splendidly arrayed, a mounted on horses adorned with all the trappings of luxur two men supported each child, and a third led the hor Several camels also appeared in the procession, each bear a pair of kettle drums. Women closed the scene, mingli their shrill vocal sounds with roaring instruments, accom nied with long rollings of the tongue; the common meth of expressing joy among the Egyptians.

An extraordinary circumstance happened at Siout on t 15th of April. Rain is so uncommon in the southern part Egypt, that it may almost be said it never rains there: h on the day above stated, a violent south wind blew, accom panied by a clouded sky during the whole day; and fro time to time a little rain fell; but at night a storm arm with a torrent of rain, accompanied with lightning, a some peals of thunder.

‡ There is but one God, and Mahomet is his prophet.

is circumstance to the Kiaschef, who seemed tonished at the charge. The interpreter being nt for, and interrogated on his business, acowledged he had been guilty of misrepresentation, in consequence of which the enraged Kiaschef ordered him to be bastinadoed; but, on the earnest solicitation of Sonnini, a pardon for him was procured.

SECTION XII.

urney to Sennaar— Love Potions—Conspiracy to assassinate the Author—Who is again sent for to a Patient—Dinner with the Copts—Robbers—Erysipelas—Ruins of Panopolis—Courtezans—Farschout—Sahel—Echmimm—Accident which befel the Author's Boat—Dendera—Tentyris.

WHILE Sonnini was ruminating on the journey into Abyssinia, a favourable opportunity offered at Siout for undertaking it. He oposed to accompany a caravan then on the e of departure to Sennaar, whence he intended pass into Abyssinia. The Kiaschef Ibrahim ving great influence with the people of this ravan, Sonnini requested him to use his interest ith the Kabir* in settling the agreement for e journey. The Nubian at first demanded an orbitant sum, and several conferences ensued the subject at the house of Ibrahim, through e medium of the Syrian interpreter; but no reement was concluded on. A few days after, e same Nubian came to Sonnini's house, requesting to speak with him in private. Having smissed every one but his interpreter, he asked r traveller if he knew of any drugs that would t powerfully as *love-potions*, assuring him that ch stimulents were much coveted in his country, d that the king had expressly commanded him procure such compositions.

Our traveller, without paying much regard to Kabir's information, replied in the affirmative, hich gave him such infinite pleasure, that he instantly abated one half of his demand. Satisfied with the moderate terms proposed, Sonnini flew to Ibrahim with the news; but Ibrahim did not appear to rejoice on the occasion: he indeed cooly congratulated our author, but requested he would conclude no agreement without his interposition. In the mean time the Nubian seemed extremely anxious for our traveller to visit Sennaar, assuring him that he would be graciously received by his Sennarian majesty; and at length declared that he would require nothing for his journey, resting assured that the king would make him a sufficient recompence for conducting the stranger to his court†.

These Nubians come from the extremity of Africa, to bring into the capital of Egypt those valuable commodities which nature has placed there, to compensate the heat of the climate, and the oppressive ardour of the sun. Besides gold, and other merchandize, they also bring monkeys and parroquets, which amuse the affluent at Cairo. The monkeys, which, like many other animals, were objects of veneration among the Egyptians, are not natives of the country‡.

As

* A name given in Nubia to men in power.

† This sudden change created some suspicions in Sonnini's breast, but he was still impatient to embrace an opportunity of performing his favourite plan; and was on the point of closing the agreement with the Kabir, when he received a message from the Kiaschef, inviting him to come to his house, attended only by the young Alexandrian. On his arrival there, the Kiaschef informed him that he must think no more of his journey to Sennaar; for that, suspecting some treachery from the Kabir's pressing importunities, he had caused him to be watched, and had discovered that the Syrian interpreter and the Nubian chief had agreed to massacre M. Sonnini and his companions, as soon as they arrived in the desert, and divide their spoils between them. That the traveller might not entertain a doubt of the fact, the Kiaschef sent for the Syrian, and mentioned to him the particulars he had discovered of his perfidy, and advised him to confess the whole horrible plot. The confounded Syrian fell, as if thunder-struck, at the feet of the Kiaschef, acknowledging his crime, and accusing the Kabir of having projected it, and adding some circumstances which were not perfectly known. Ibrahim, assuming an indignant tone, ordered the offender to be caned to death, and Sonnini permitted the instruments of punishment to be produced, before he attempted to intercede for his pardon; which the Kiaschef would not comply with, but on condition that his master would faithfully promise to punish the offender. Sonnini, having expressed his gratitude to the Kiaschef, from whom he had received many other favours, returned to his house, where he found the Kabir, who, not knowing what had happened, had come again to solicit his speedy departure with the caravan.

‡ The Nubians of Dongola and Sennaar are tall and well proportioned; they wear a beard and whiskers, and their skin

As a physician, Sonnini's reputation was extended far and wide. A Sheick of the Arabian Bedouins encamped near Manfelout, hearing of his extraordinary skill, invited him to his camp; but, on his arrival, he found he was not to exercise his art on the Sheick, but to restore to sight an old Arab who had been blind for upwards of two years. He was, however, informed to his great surprize, that our author's skill did not extend to performing miracles, but he caused him to be carefully sent back to Siout. He then took leave of the Sheick, and of the innumerable quantity of flies which swarmed within his camp *.

The plains which surround Siout are remarkable for their fertility; the orchards yield a fine variety of fruit, and the farinaceous plants excite admiration by a rapid growth and an abundant produce. Hemp is much cultivated in these countries; but instead of being spun into thread, as in Europe, it is prepared by the Arabs and Egyptians in such a manner as to supply the want of intoxicating liquors: it creates a kind of voluptuous relaxation, of a delicious stupor, which inspires gaiety and produces pleasant dreams. It is different from European hemp, its stalk being thicker and less elevated; its leaves broader; its fruit more numerous, and the plant itself exhaling a stronger smell.

After a long residence at Siout, partly occasioned by indisposition, Sonnini thought of continuing his route to the south of Egypt; but, being unable to procure a boat to ascend the Nile, he hired two camels and six asses, to convey him and his companions to Echmim. Quiting Siout on the 23d of May, about noon, the travellers proceeded for about ten hours, and arrived at Tomieh about nine at night; a very small market town, but the residence of a Kiaschef. In the course of the day they passed through the large town of Aboutigé, near which are the ruins of the ancient city of Abotis; but no monuments or remarkable fragments remain, a confused heap of rubbish is all that is now exhibited. In the mosque at Tomieh, a stone camel was shewn, which, the inhabitants affirm, turns itself towards Mecca when the pilgrims leave Cairo, and turns again towards Cairo when the pilgrims quit Mecca. But Sonnini had no opportunity of examining this wonderful statue.

The travellers pursued their journey the next morning leaving Tomieh about six o'clock; but they had hardly rode two leagues when four men on horseback directed their course towards them; and, to remove all doubts, a peasant declared they were robbers. For a considerable time they continued to ride round our author and his companions: sometimes advancing, sometimes retreating. Our travellers being thoroughly prepared, were perfectly easy with regard to any attack that these highwaymen might think proper to make, looking on, and diverting themselves with their manœuvres. Observing at last, that instead of exciting terror they only afforded amusement, the robbers disappeared with velocity.

Arriving at Tahta, a town about twelve leagues from Siout, the travellers stopped to rest themselves. Here our author's progress was impeded by the application of an opulent Copt, named Mallum Mourcous, who requested him to call at his house, to administer advice in a very dangerous disease; and, on his arrival, entreated him to decline the completion of his journey till he had restored the petitioner to health. Sonnini, however, vainly attempted to accelerate his departure, by asserting that the Arabic prince, Ismain-Abou-Ali, expected to see him. But the Copt assured him he was well known to the prince, and would make so satisfactory an apology to him in a letter, that he would be answerable that he would not be offended. Sonnini

skin is of a shining black. The yprofess Mahometanism, with the addition of many pagan superstitions; they go almost naked, having seldom any other covering than is required by decency; but some of them wear a long shirt of grey cloth, the sleeves of which are turned up, and leave the arm bare. They have usually several small leathern cases, for the reception of money, tobacco, or other articles in general use; on the bend of the right arm a poniard is fastened, with a leathern sheath; they have no covering for the head, but they plait their woolly hair in different modes, as fancy may suggest. Those Nubians who engage in commerce, speak the Arabic language; but among themselves they have a particular idiom.

* One of the rich Copts of Siout insisted on giving Sonnini a dinner. The interior of the house was commodious, and every thing had the appearance of affluence. The repast was served up with profusion, and the company drank copiously of excellent date-brandy, served up in glasses of Venice crystal. In other respects the people take their meals like the Turks and Arabs. They swallow with precipitation, and are not like men whom the pleasure of society assemble together; but rather like brutes whom want and voracity collect around their pasture. The grease runs in streams from the sides of their mouths, and the stomach sends forth frequent fumes, attended with reiterated reports.

per-

erceiving that none of his attempts to evade ould be regarded, consented to remain with his tient, according to his request.

His complaint was a violent erysipelas, a kind St. Anthony's fire, which covered one side of breast, and was attended with excruciating in. He had been attended by all the physicians the country, who had pronounced his malady curable. Sonnini, however, modestly declares, I will not say I was more skilful, but more for-nate" than others, " and at the end of ten days *Iallum Mourcous* was perfectly cured*."

The Copts are condemned as heretical in the oman church; but, among those of Tahta, ere were many converts to the Catholic faith. heir curé, who was a respectable man, had ssed fifteen years in a seminary at Rome, and uld speak Latin and Italian fluently. He sured Sonnini that the coptic Catholics were uch persecuted by their brethren, and that one the most violent persecutors was Mallum lourcous †.

On his arrival at Echmimm, a town about lf a league from the Nile, on the eastern bank, nnini hastened to the convent of Italian onks, where he found his companions pre-aring to re-cross the river in search of him. hey informed him that their reception at the onastery had been uncivil and inhospitable; as they could not, without much difficulty, get permission to repose within the walls; and it was afterwards intimated to them that they must provide themselves with another lodging. M. Sonnini, notwithstanding he had a recommendatory letter from their superior at Cairo, was received in a manner equally rude, and obliged to leave the place without having seen any of the monks; though he had waited in the court half the day, exposed to the heat of the sun, while his com panions procured a lodging for him in the city ‡.

A spruce delicate monastic read the letter from the superior with a smile of contempt, and then informed our author that he was not himself the superior, but he would seek after him. His words, however, did not accord with his actions, as, without farther ceremony, he turned himself round upon the sofa, without looking or speaking any more at the disgusted European.

The catholic Copts at Echmimm are supposed to form half the population of the city. Their curé had been ten years at Rome, and was highly estimated by his flock, as he added the practice of physic to that of divinity.

Echmimm would have been a beautiful city, if the houses had been built with better materials; the streets are wide and straight, while those of other cities in Egypt, are narrow, crooked, and irregular. The materials a indeed so defective,

* When the opulent Copt found himself relieved from his ngerous disorder, he knew not how to express the extent his gratitude and joy. The day before his physician's parture, he sent him some rouleaux of seguins; but Son-i, recollecting his former behaviour, returned the gold, d desired the messenger to inform his master, " that a nchman rendered services solely for the pleasure of being eful." He requested him to present to Mallum Mourcous very fine telescope, as a mark of acknowledgment for his spitality. The gift was accepted, and Sonnini, at his parture, left the Copt impressed with a more favourable nion of Europeans, than he seems to have entertained at arrival.

† The curé procured several antique stones, the engrav-gs of which were not without merit. After the heavy ns of winter in the north of Egypt, and after the inunda-n of the Nile in the south, the Egyptians often discover graved stones as well as medals. Though good medals are dom found in Egypt, excellent engraved stones are fre-ently met with.

A species of palm-tree, called fan palm, is peculiar to per Egypt: it is there called the *doum*. This palm-tree, y common in Thebais, shoots forth several naked stalks, rked with circular rings, and terminated by broad leaves the form of a fan. The fruits, like those of other palm-es, grow in bunches. By disposing their stalks in the m of elegant vases, nature enlivens, with the verdure of these magnificent bouquets, plains frequently stripped naked, and generally scorched by the sun.

Leaving Tahta on the morning of the first of June, our traveller, weary of imitating the slow pace of the camels, went on before, with two of his attendants. After some time they stopped for their companions, but none of them were to be seen; a considerable part of a sultry day was spent in looking for them, whence it was conjectured that they had fallen a prey to robbers. As night approached, they proceeded in great anxiety to Souhaje, seven leagues from Tahta, where the Kiaschef politely invited them to sup and take their repose; but this hospitable reception could not dispel the uneasiness they experienced at the loss of their companions. The next morning, however, in going to cross the Nile to Echmimm, Sonnini had the satisfaction to learn, that his friends and their camels had crossed over the preceding day; their conductors having shewn them by a shorter route than that which he had taken.

‡ M. Sonnini thus describes the Monkish *petit maitre* who received him at the convent.—" A little beard, carefully trimmed, and arranged with uniformity, shaded without encumbering his chin; every thing about him announced the most attentive solicitudes of the toilet, as the *ton* of a *petit maitre*. My figure, scorched by the sun, appeared to startle him; the wrinkles of ill-humour furrowed his fair forehead, and a look of disdain measured me from top to toe."

that, should the rain fall as violently as it does near the coast in the Delta, the whole city would soon be washed away. A grey tint spread over the buildings, gives them a very gloomy appearance. The walls are embellished with earthen pots, the asylums of pigeons; and pigeon-houses, in the shape of a square tower, appear on many of their roofs. A chain of rocky mountains to the eastward reflects an excessive degree of heat. M. Sonnini says, "I never felt it *(the heat)* so violent as on the day after my arrival at Echmimm; that is to say, the 3d of the Month of June *."

Leaving Echmimm on the 9th of June, Sonnini and his companions crossed over to the western shore of the Nile, to pursue their journey by land to Farschout. During the whole of the day, the heat was so excessive, and the air impregnated with such fiery clouds of dust, that both men and cattle were in danger of suffocation. Passing through the city of Girge, the capital of Upper Egypt, they arrived at Bardis in the evening; when a wealthy inhabitant of that place, to whom they had a letter, received them with great civility. On the following day the travellers reached Farschout in the afternoon, where another colony of Italian monks were planted. Our travellers carried with them letters of recommendation, similar to those which had proved so ineffectual at Echmimm, and were anxious to know how they would operate: Sonnini therefore left his companions in the environs of the town, and proceeded to the house of the monks; an inferior servant refused to admit him, alledging that the superior was asleep. Sonnini then requested him to take charge of a letter from the superior-general; but even this favour was insultingly refused. Provoked at so many evasions, our author snatched the letter out of his hands, and retired fuming with rage.

He dispatched a person to procure a lodging among the people of the town: three hours elapsed in a state of uncertainty, while the messenger was endeavouring to find a suitable accommodation; during which time the travellers were exposed to the extremities of heat and dust. Sonnini then requested by means of an interpreter, that the monks would point out a house to which he might retire. The superior returned with the interpreter, and begged he would make choice of the convent, where he acknowledges to have received *civility*.

On the 15th of June, M. Sonnini quitted the convent of Farschout; the monks had behaved to him, during his stay, with great civility; and as the Nile was supposed to be infested with pirates, he committed part of his baggage to their care. He and his companions then repaired to the water side, and got into the boat; which was just on the point of being pushed off, when a Mameluc with a party of soldiers came up, and saying the boat was engaged for the Kiaschef of Basjoura, his master, compelled our adventurers to disembark with their baggage. The camels that had brought the goods were therefore reladen, and the travellers were preparing to return to Farschout; when the Mameluc informed the interpreter, that if Sonnini would give him a chequin, he would resign the boat to him. M. Sonnini declared he would not give him a parat, being now convinced that he had acted without authority. The Mameluc reduced his claim to a pataca, about fourteen pence, and only requested that sum as a matter of favour. To prevent further delay our author complied; but so much time had elapsed in adjusting this busi-

* Ruins of the ancient city of Panopolis or Chemmis, are still to be seen to the eastward of Echmimm, and near the enclosure of the modern town. Among these an enormous stone, half sunk in the earth, demands particular notice; it has on one of its sides a Greek inscription, which is too much obliterated to be legible, but the word "*Tiberio*" is distinguishable. Beneath the surface of the ground, part of which has been dug up, some beautiful paintings appear. The most conspicuous figures are a sphere, with the twelve signs of the zodiac. There are also several ruins of ancient edifices, and some immense stones, resembling that already noticed.

An ancient mosque at Echmimm is still much venerated among the christians, who pretend that it was formerly one of their churches. They say it is more than a thousand years old. It appears, however, to have no pretensions to such antiquity. It is remarkable for having several small granite pillars, extracted from the ruins of Panopolis. Like the other cities of Egypt, Echmimm contains a great number of courtezans: their beauty and perfections have been highly extolled by many travellers, but if Sonnini is to be believed, "you only behold these wretched creatures, ugly for the most part, poorly dressed, and repelling by the excess of their effrontery." So far from being legally protected, as some authors have said, the Kiaschef's immediately banish all those who have substantiated charges against them; and some of these magistrates will not even permit a courtezan to come within their jurisdiction.

DES

the letter out of
with rage.
procure a lodging
own; three hours
rtainty, while the
to find a suitable
time the travellers
s of heat and dust.
neans of an inter-
point out a house
e superior returned
ged he would make
ne acknowledges to

Sonnini quitted the
onks had behaved
great civility; and
be infested with
of his baggage to
nions then repaired
to the boat; which
g pushed off, when
soldiers came up,
ged for the Kiaschef
npelled our adven-
eir baggage. The
oods were therefore
were preparing to
e Mameluc inform-
nini would give him
the boat to him.
ld not give him a
that he had acted
ameluc reduced his
een pence, and only
tter of favour. To
thor complied; but
adjusting this busi-

more than a thousand
have no pretensions to
or having several small
ins of Panopolis. Like
contains a great number
ections have been highly
onnini is to be believed,
creatures, ugly for the
selling by the excess of
ng legally protected, a
ef's immediately banish
rges against them; and
ven permit a courtezan

nest

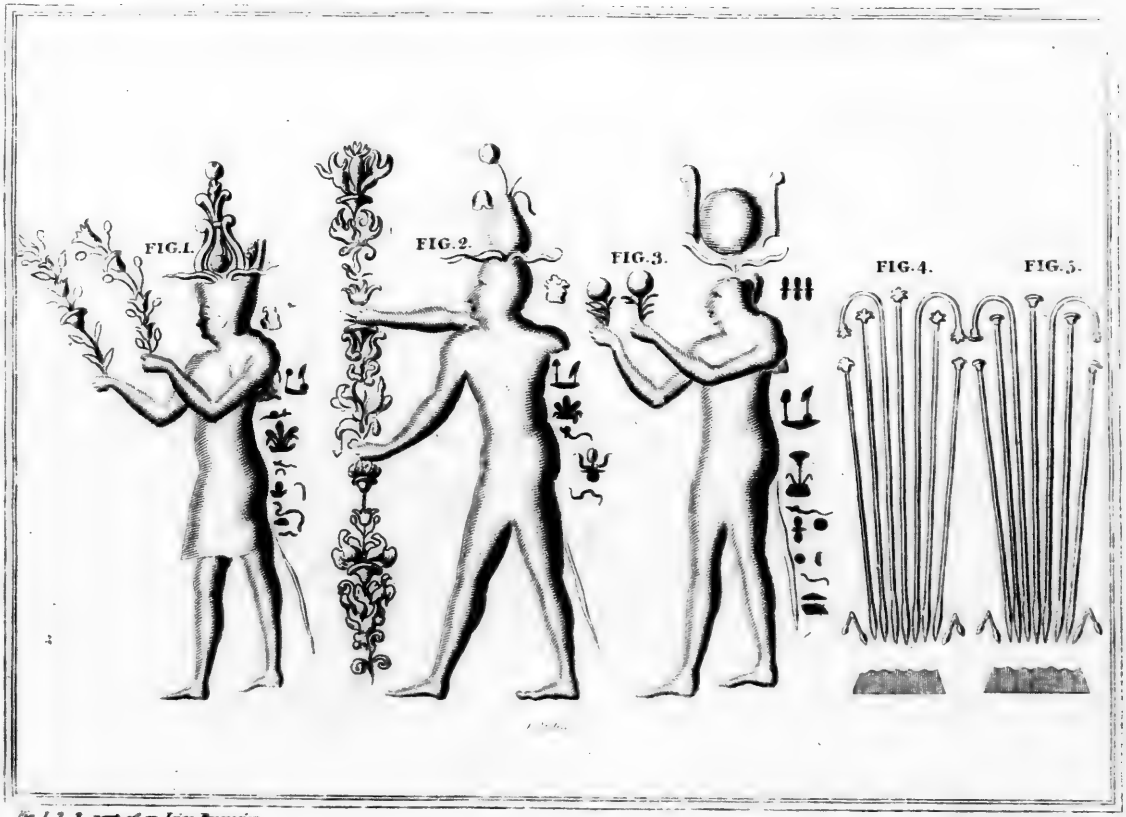


Fig 1.2.3 part of an Isiac Procession.

Fig 4.5 the Water Lily.

Figures in the Temple of Dendera.

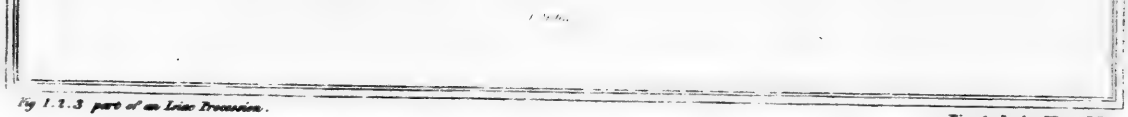
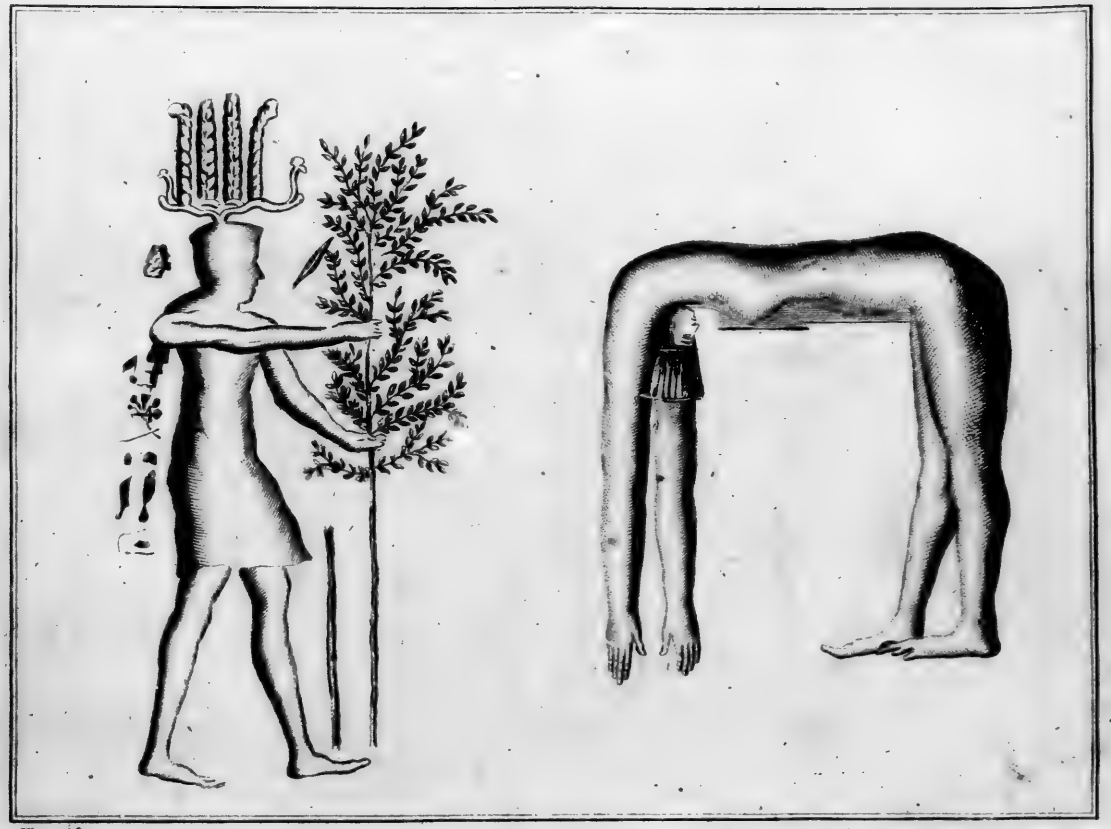


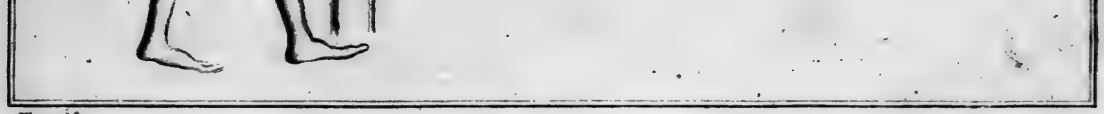
Fig 1.2.3 part of an Isiac Procession.

Fig 4.5 the Water Lily.

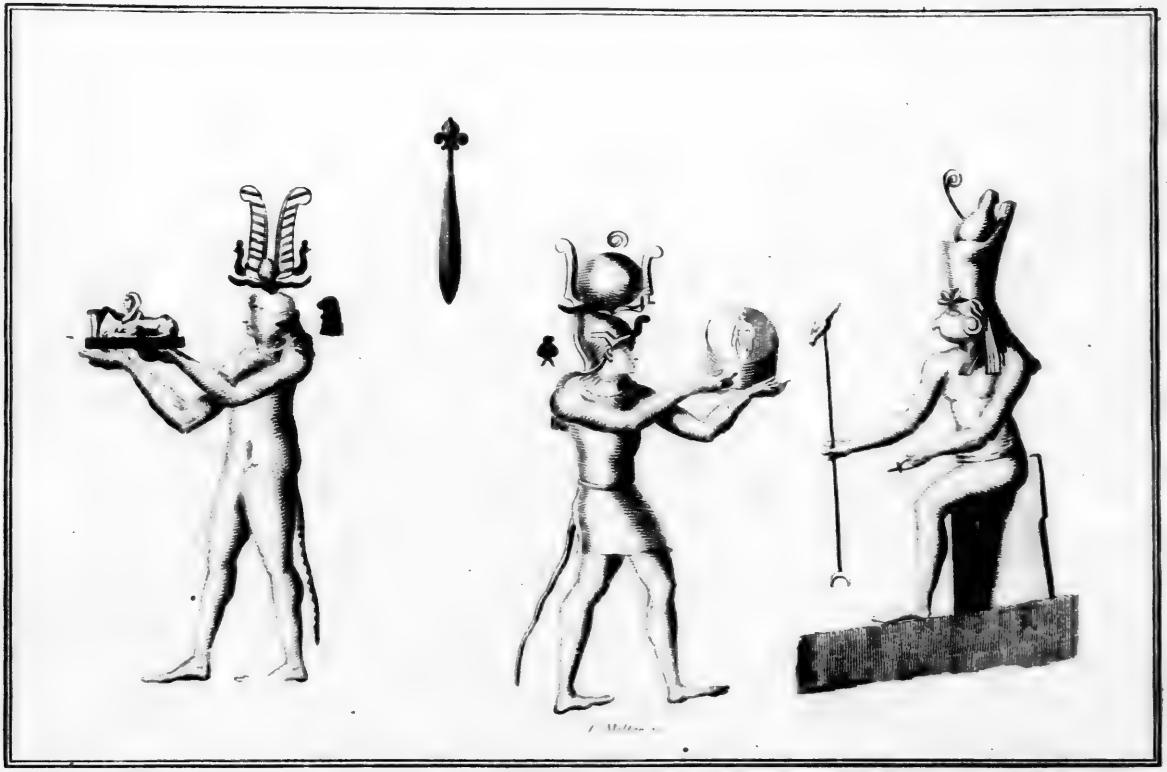
Figures in the Temple of Dendera.



Figures in the Temple of Dendera. ..... Plate 3.

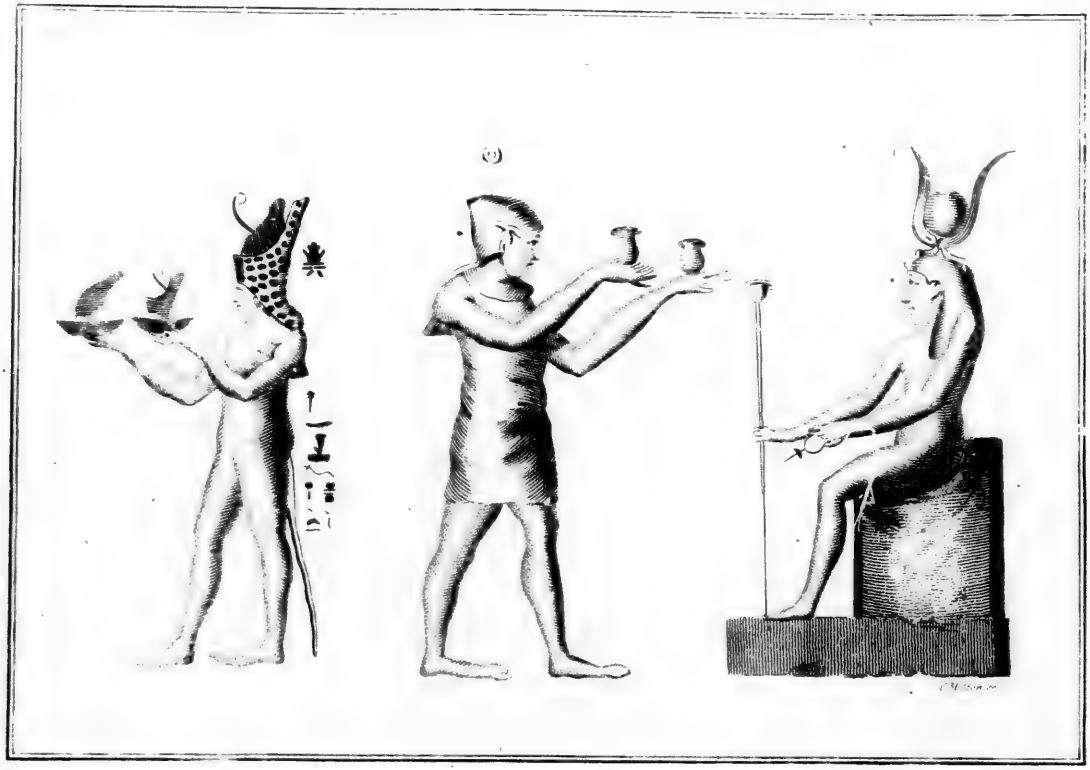


Figures in the Temple of Dendera. ..... *Plate 3.*



Figures in the Temple of Dendera. ..... *Plate 2.*

Figures in the Temple of Dendera. .....Plate 2.



Figures in the Temple of Dendera *Plate 4.*

that the boat could not depart till the next
and the travellers took up their abode in it,
Sahet*.

he next morning the weather was calm, and
oyage was commenced, but the sailors were
r the necessity of hauling the boat along with
e. Several floats of water-melons were de-
ding the Nile, the Egyptians never taking
rouble of loading boats with these fruits, but
n them together in rafts, in order to convey
to their destined places. The first crocodiles
dventurers saw in the river were a little beyond
et, but they became more numerous southward.
se frightful animals are so formidable to the
bitants, that enclosures of stakes are in many
es formed in the river, to prevent their biting
he women's legs, as they draw water.

he travellers stopped opposite Hou, a village
he site of the ancient city of Diospolis Parva.
aps of rubbish, large bricks, stones, and an
ade that forms an entrance to a subterraneous
duit, are now the only vestiges of the ancient
ks. From *Hou* they proceeded to *Kafr*
aiad, where they saw a flotilla descend down
river, conveying earthen ware to Cairo for sale.
e wind being favourable, they proceeded in the
ht; but, on its becoming very dark, they stop-
near an island of sand, below which the stream
ermines the western bank in so great a degree
o occasion frequent falls of large masses of
th†.

On the evening of the 17th, they arrived at Dendera, near the ancient Tentyris, on the western shore of the Nile. The city itself was of great extent, and surrounded by fertile plains and orchards. Dendera and the surrounding country are under the dominion of an Arabic prince, who bears the title of emir, but is tributary to the Beys of Cairo. Our travellers waited on the emir, and presented him with the letters of Mourat Bey and prince Dervisch: he received the strangers graciously; and, by his conversation, seemed to possess exalted talents; his apartment indeed was mean, and the persons who surrounded him had a very wretched appearance. The prince, like the rest, wore a long black frock, and he was particularly distinguished by a turban. But the qualities of his mind made ample compensation for the poverty of his appearance; his good sense rendering him much superior to the generality of Egyptian governors‡.

M. Sonnini, his draughtsman, and interpreter, proceeded, on horseback to the site of Tentyris, about a quarter of a league distant from Dendera, towards the mountains of the west. They had hardly arrived there, when the emir and his attendants appeared. The prince accompanied them over every part, and pointed out such objects as had been noticed by former visitors, and the places where they had dug up the ground. He even desired him to give orders to have it dug up in any part he chose. This offer Sonnini de-

Figures in the Temple of Dendera Plate I.

* The kiaschef, hearing of the behaviour of his representative, ordered him to restore the money he had extorted, and to apologize for his conduct: his manner was now as humble as it had before been insolent, but our author, on dismissing him, permitted him to carry off the fourteen piastres.

† Our travellers had often heard these masses precipitate, and congratulated themselves on escaping their tremendous fall, not thinking of the dangers that impended. The master and the sailors, having carelessly supposed they had fastened the boat to the shore, yielded to the power of sleep upon the beach; and Sonnini and his suite, after some time, fell asleep in the boat: at length the violence of the current detached the vessel from its insecure fastening, and carried it rapidly away. Thus they were carried down by the impetuosity of the stream, for the space of a league, when the boat violently struck with a terrible crash against the shore, very near a place from whence a large quantity of loosened earth had fallen. Awaked by this terrific shock, the astonished adventurers found the vessel, repelled by the land, driven towards it by the current, turning round in every direction, and furiously striking against the bank; the darkness of the night added to the horror of the scene, and for a time prevented them from finding the oars.

At length, however, they succeeded in getting near the centre of the river, when they heard a mass of earth fall on the very spot which they had quitted with so much difficulty. They proceeded to the opposite shore, and there fastened their boat, intending to wait for the return of day to assist them in finding out the sailors. They soon appeared; for, missing the boat, they swam to the opposite shore, and quickly obtained the necessary information. On their approach, Sonnini's companions, to shew their disapprobation of their negligent conduct, saluted them with some serious blows with the oars. The master, who was at some distance behind, hearing the roaring lamentations of the sufferers, had recourse to an active pair of heels to effect his escape. The threatened punishment, however, was afterwards withheld, on condition that he would voluntarily return to the boat.

‡ The Emir generously offered Sonnini a safe conduct to the ruins of Tentyris, and made honourable mention of several Europeans whom he had seen. Being asked by a person why foreigners were so desirous of visiting ruins, he informed him, that the ancestors of the French were once in possession of all Egypt, and that from respect to their forefathers, they now came in search of paintings and fragments, which effectually reminded them of their ancient power. An answer well calculated to combat the absurd prejudices of barbarians against an enlightened traveller.

clined

clined accepting, but thanked the emir for his obliging offer. The prince then mounted his horse and departed, leaving his son, and some of his servants, with peremptory commands that no person should presume to disturb our adventurers *.

The emir expressed the greatest regret at the disorders, which he said had been committed by the Mamelucs who had taken shelter in his small dominion. He visited Sonnini one day in his boat, which served him also for a habitation, preceded by baskets freighted with delicious fruits; he also gave our author an engraved stone, and some copper medals, found in the ruins: in return for which he presented the emir with a fowling-piece, and a small quantity of gun-powder, which his delicacy would hardly permit him to accept; but on his return home, he sent him several sheep and a liberal supply of other provision for his voyage, as a small compensation.

The evening before their departure from Dendera, some robbers were discovered on the banks of the Nile, who evidently were preparing to attack our travellers. Sonnini was roused from a profound sleep by a sudden scream, expressive of alarm. The sailors, on perceiving the thieves, had adopted this terrible outcry, as the safest method of defence. Their clamours having prevented M. Sonnini's attendants from seizing two men preparing to enter, they liberally distributed some blows among the sailors. At length a discharge of musquetry was fired, which prevented the robbers from renewing the attack.

SECTION XIII.

Neguadé—Sonnini applied to as a Physician, by an Arabic Prince—Rising of the Nile—Mallas—Poctor—Appolinis Parva—Cosseir, a Port on the Red Sea—Mocha Coffee—Astonishing Produce of Wheat—Pigeons, Turtle Doves, Sparrows—Flies, Bees, Wasps, Scorpions—Wives poison unfaithful Husbands—Burning Maslich—Perfidy of Montus—Kous—Grasnes—Thebes—Gourne—Pestured with Rats and Fleas—Swine's Flesh—Crocodiles.

RESUMING the voyage on the 21st of June, the boat proceeded to Abnoub, a considerable village, five leagues to the south of Dendera, on the eastern bank of the Nile. This village began the territories of Ismain Abou Ali the Arabic prince, to whom Sonnini was sent as a physician. Ballas, another village, under the dominion of the same prince, has a celebrated manufacture of earthen pots, called *Ballas;* which have two handles, and the bottom terminates in a point, like the Roman amphora. Vessels of this shape, though extemely inconvenient, have been perpetuated in Egypt from the remotest antiquity.

Proceeding on the 22d to Neguadè, a place which has been dignified with the title of city, by some travellers, they found it little more than a village, chiefly inhabited by Copts, though the

* Amidst an extensive space of ground, covered with desolate ruins, and attesting the magnificence of ancient Tentyris, a superb edifice presents itself, entire, and in high preservation. This is one of the most striking erections on which antiquity has endeavoured to impress the seal of immortality: it was a temple dedicated to Isis, the principal divinity of Egypt: the front is one hundred and thirty-two feet in length, and the height one hundred and ten feet, eleven inches. Enormous pillars, twenty-one feet in circumference, sustain a large vestibule. The interior of the edifice is divided into a number of halls; the walls of which are covered with hieroglyphics. The cielings are painted of a resplendent azure blue, strewed with figures of a bright yellow. Among a variety of representations, an exact model of a sceptre, surmounted by the fleur-de-lis, the arms of the king of France, is in many places apparent. Many rudely carved figures are on the walls and columns, representing several religious processions used in the worship of Isis, which are now inexplicable.

The form of this temple is an oblong square, and its construction is of white stones, taken from the adjacent rock. Rubbish collected by ages, has raised the soil to a level with the roof of the building behind; which induced the Egyptians to erect a village on the very summit of the temple, upon a more permanent basis than inconstant sands or marsh earth: this modern village was deserted and in ruins, and formed a striking contrast to the splendid remains of the ancient city of Tentyris. But there are many other proofs of the barbarism then prevailing among the Egyptians: their avowed detestation of the arts, and particularly of sculpture and painting, had induced them to destroy or mutilate every figure within their reach. They were assisted in their barbarous rage by the troops of Cairo, who indulged their brutality in firing bullets and cannon balls into several parts of the temple, the beautiful and brilliant cieling bore evident marks of their folly and ferocity.

resident

lence of a Coptic bishop. The Catholics have a curé here, and two Franciscan Friars, who sumptuously provided for, and possess too h seraphic pride to condescend to instruct their . M. Sonnini received from the chief of the ion the skin of a large hyæna, which had killed in the neighbourhood of Néguadé. animal is common in the mountains and ds of Upper Egypt. It approaches the habita- s of man like the jackal; and, like him, prowls he night time. The hyæna is as carnivorous as jackall, feeding on the most disgusting prey, and s more expert in attacking and carrying off living mals. The hyæna drags the prey it has run down he caves near the river, and in those caverns are nd the remnants of its victims. This is the only druped of prey that constantly inhabits these so- des: the tyger and lion * seldom make their ap- rance; the hippopotamus has not been seen in ypt for upwards of one hundred and fifty years: use of fire-arms has been supposed to have driven ay that, and several other wild animals †.

Having settled his most urgent business, he ed our author who he was? Sonnini then de- red to him the letter of Mourat Bey. Having used it, he highly commended the attention of friend, who had sent him a physician of won- ful skill to cure his diseases; among the prin- al of which he mentioned, that of being no ger a hero among the ladies. That no time ght be lost in an affair of such importance, the ich determined that his doctor should attend in a tour through his dominions, and that he uld take the necessary restoratives during the rney.

M. Sonnini was far from being pleased with his ation, as he knew he should not be able to satisfaction to the wishes of the old chieftain. en the prince arrived, a sumptuous dinner was served up, after which his highness indulged himself with his usual nap: Sonnini availed himself of the moment to return to the house of a Catholic Copt at Luxor; but he was speedily followed by a messenger from the prince, who informed him that he must not think of leaving his highness, as he was now declared his *physician*, and was expected to be ready to set out with his patient the following day: sheep, and provisions of all kinds, accompanied the messenger, and were presented to Sonnini in the name of his illustrious patient.

Our author, finding himself much embarrassed how to act, wished to gain a little time, and therefore informed the prince, that he was willing to attend him, but wished to return to Néguadé for a few days, having occasion to take some repose. The request was readily granted, and an order was dispatched to the prince's overseer at Néguadé, to furnish his physician with every thing he required: our author immediately proceeded to that village, where he hoped to contrive some method of escaping the dangerous honour of being physician to the Arabian Court.

He was accompanied in his boat by an Italian monk, who had been collecting the alms of the inhabitants of the district, and who had loaded the vessel with their pious contributions. Reaching Néguadé on the 26th, he accompanied his seraphic guide to his habitation, where he continued for a few days. This was the eve of the rising of the Nile, prior to which the water had changed its colour, and began to swell: the inhabitants were encouraged to hope the inundation would be considerable, from the swarm of water-spinners which almost darkened the air. On the 28th, Sonnini was invited to dine with a Catholic Copt named Mallum Poctor, belonging to Kous, a village on the eastern side of the water, in which a kiaschef resided.

* Buffon in his natural history of the Lion, has proved the Lion species is reduced to a tenth part of what it to be, which he supposes to have been occasioned by increase of the human race.

† On the 23d the boat quitted Néguadé, and at night anchor was cast in the middle of the river, as each shore known to be infested by banditti: a large stone performe office of an anchor, and a feeble rope, formed of the of the palm-tree, supplied the office of a cable. During night, an expert swimmer cautiously approached, but as instantly discovered by the watch, and, by a musquet- was prevailed on to make a precipitate retreat. On 24th the boat proceeded to Luxor, a village on the ern shore, built on the ruins of the ancient Thebes. author was there informed that the Arabic prince, Ismain Abou Ali was then encamped on the opposite shore. On receiving this intelligence, he instantly crossed the river.

Arriving at the camp, he was introduced to the prince in the tent, who was very infirm, ugly, and much advanced in years; he was wrapped up in a ragged shabby great coat, with his beard foppishly died red with henna; which, added to his age and horrid figure, rendered his appearance hideous. But, though his person was not fascinating, his head was clear, and his conversation sensible and vivacious. He was surrounded by a multitude of Arabs, and inhabitants, to whom he listened with attention and adjusted their disputes; and at the same time dictated to his secretaries, issued several orders, and pronounced judgment with admirable precision and propriety.

He entertained our author with a sumptuous repast, accompanied with date brandy*.

In conversation with Mallum Poctor, Sonnini expressed a desire to visit the coasts of the Red Sea, when he received a promise from him of safe conduct to Cosseir: but as our author had engaged to wait for prince Ismain at Néguadé, in compliance with his own proposal, he accordingly returned thither, after having experienced the most attentive civilities from the Copt. During his residence at Néguadé, our author directed his attention to such objects of importance as naturally presented themselves: his first enquiries seem to be more particularly applied to the fertility of the lands in Upper Egypt. Though exaggerated assertions have been often blended with the truth, in this particular, yet the soil† of Egypt is certainly the most productive of any that has yet been discovered upon the globe. The produce of the wheat harvest is usually estimated, upon an average, from twenty-five or thirty for one. In extraordinary seasons, favoured by fortunate circumstances, wheat affords a produce of fifty to one; and when the earth parsimoniously admits of no more than twenty for one, the inhabitants complain heavily, and consider it as a kind of dearth. This surprising fertility is more brilliant to the south than to the north of Egypt.

The manner of sowing corn, among the Egyptians, is another source of its excessive multiplication: the sower carefully walks behind the plough strewing in the small furrow made by that instrument, a proper portion of grain, which is regularly covered in tracing a second furrow. By this method all waste of corn is avoided, not a grain seeming to be purposely thrown down to feed the attending birds: the stalks, separately arranged in parallel lines, at a suitable distance from each other, readily admit the action of the air and sun; the seed regularly acquires due nourishment and growth, and seldom becomes abortive or diseased.

Fields enriched with such luxuriant harvests naturally attract granivorous birds; pigeons, turtle-doves, larks, and sparrows, assemble in the corn fields; where the two latter may be seen in the heat of the day, with extended bill and agitated breasts, as if panting for respiration. Swallows and other birds, prey on the winged insects which never quit a climate so liberally affording them subsistence and habitations‡.

A beautiful species of ichneumon fly, with a long weapon at the extremity of the body, oc-

* Kous occupies the spot of the ancient city of Appollinis Parva; on which no other antique monument now remains than the front of a small temple dedicated to the sun, half buried; not more than ten or twelve feet of it appearing above the surface of the ground. The walls have been formerly embellished with a variety of figures and hieroglyphics, which the superstition of the inhabitants have erased: several Greek inscriptions, which have been copied by Lucas and Granger, are no longer discernible.

Cosseir, a port on the Red Sea, is three days journey from Kous: caravans are conducted to it by a road through the desert, carrying the commodities of Egypt for Arabia, and bringing back the coffee of Yemen. Most of the caravans from Cosseir arrive at Kous; though some of them go to Banoub, and others to Kenné; and it is only at one of these three places that Mocha coffee can be procured genuine. When it has reached Cairo it is mixed by the resident merchants of that city. At Alexandria it undergoes a second mixture by the factors who forward it to Marseilles, where it seldom fails to receive further adulteration. Sonnini brought away a bag of this genuine coffee, which he procured at Kous; and the trunk in which it was carried retained the perfume for several years after; and, whenever it was opened, communicated a delightful fragrance.

† "The qualities of the air" says Volney, in his travels in Egypt, "with those of the earth and the heat, give vegetation an almost incredible activity, wherever it is supplied with water. The gourd, called *kare*, in twenty-four hours will send out shoots four inches long. But it is worthy observation that the soil of Egypt is *unfavourable to all exotics*. Foreign plants degenerate rapidly, and the French merchants, who cultivated European vegetables, were obliged annually to supply themselves with seeds from Malta, &c. which, when sown, succeeded very well in producing the vegetable; but if the latter were suffered to run to seed in Egypt, the seed would produce nothing. The same happens to apricots, pears, and peaches when transplanted to Rosetta. *Volney's T*

‡ But the most numerous and troublesome among the insects are the flies, by which both men and animals are cruelly tormented: their obstinate rapacity is astonishing; and their perseverance is so great, that, when they incline to fasten upon any particular part of the body, if they are driven away, they return and settle in the same instant. They particularly delight in fixing upon the corners of the eye, and on the edge of the eye-lid, tender parts which attract them by their slight humidity. But flies are not the only troublesome insects; bugs§ and lice prey upon man and beast with a rapacity not to be conceived in European countries. The inhabitants of a superior class, notwithstanding their frequent ablutions, cannot preserve themselves from this annoyance. Bees, wasps, and scorpions grow in Egypt to a very large size; and their sting occasions acute pain, swoonings, convulsions, and sometimes death.

§ The following remarks reflect no distinguished honour on the inhabitants of this country. The villages are mere miserable assemblages of poor, little mud huts, flung very close together without any kind of order, full of dust, lice, fleas, bed-bugs, flies, and all the curses of Moses. The common people wear only a shirt and drawers; the children go naked: They rank infinitely below any savages I ever saw. *Ledyard's Travels.*

occasionally

nally enters the houses in Upper Egypt. Its is of a beautiful emerald green, and the let and the belly are of a glittering purple The drone bee, which Oliver has stiled the with a yellow corselet, is common here; it is visible in the winter months*.

he monks here have acquired a considerable ee of fame for curing the venereal disease by ns of sudorifics, without confining their nts to any particular regimen; but on the rary recommend indulgence in a variety of . For the same disease, the Arabs bury nselves up to the neck in sand, and remain in position during the whole day, without taking sustenance. The patient is sometimes thus ially buried for twenty or thirty days successively.

t is affirmed by the Egyptian physicians, that smoke of the mastich, by which earthen els are perfumed for cooling water, has the er of instantly killing any sick person who athes it: though this is probably only a rooted udice, it is so generally propagated and eved, that no person is permitted to burn tich in the open air, till he has strictly enquirwhether there is any sick person in the neighrhood.

One day the monks of Néguadé, not imagining any person was ill in the neighbourhood, e employed at the gate of their convent, in act of perfuming their vessels with the smoke mastich. In an instant a woman was observed a child in her arms, afflicted with the small , running with eager haste from an adjoining e. When she had placed the child beyond reach of danger, she screamed aloud, and eavoured to excite the rage of her countryn against the Franks, who, she said, intended ill her child.

The inhabitants of Upper Egypt have a ater aversion to Europeans than the people of Lower: this hatred was instilled by the Copts, who are very numerous above Cairo. The catholic missionaries, who came from Italy to preach against them, and consign them to damnation, naturally excited the enmity of the Copts; who, not knowing how to distinguish missionaries from other Europeans, consider the whole as dangerous beings, and exert all their influence to injure them. Hence the danger and difficulty of traveling in Upper Egypt, experienced by Europeans, may be principally attributed to the establishment of the Roman missionaries.

Sonnini frequently experienced the treachery and perfidy of these monks: while he was contriving some expedient to escape from the overabundant kindness of an Arabian prince, whom he did not wish to serve; a monk who sought every opportunity of exercising his perfidy and malignity, was equally active to dispossess the supposed physician. Hearing that Ismain was at a village, not far distant, the hypocrite procured an audience, and ventured to complain of the decline of his patron's esteem; observing that the favour which he thought his long service had deserved, was conferred on a stranger, who was no physician, but a soldier in disguise, and who might ignorantly administer medicines that would poison him, instead of procuring any beneficial effect, as it was impossible for him to judge of their nature and operations. He then took occasion to add, that, by his skill, he had often relieved the prince, and informed him that he had just discovered new medicines that would effectually restore his health and vigour. Ismain heard the monk's harangue without expressing any displeasure; but had it been addressed to a Bey, our traveller's death would have been inevitable, to expiate the fraud he had committed.

It had the effect, however, which our traveller most ardently panted for: when he came to Néguadé he no longer urged M. Sonnini's stay, though he behaved with the utmost affability. On our author's requesting his protection to facilitate

* In proportion as the traveller advances towards the , the complexion of the natives grows darker. The en of Neguadé are tawny, and have a very thick skin: are usually cloathed with a shift or jacket of blue cloth, large openings at the sides; which, by suffering the air rculate freely, is well adapted to the heat of the climate. In many of the southern districts, the European monks obliged the catholic women to quit the wide easy robe, wear a confined vesture, alledging that the former is cent; but the monks of Néguadé permit any of them to according to their fancy. The women of Upper Egypt are not, in general, so tall and well proportioned as European females, but their eyes are large and sparkling. M. Sonnini was informed, that these women, when seized with jealousy, frequently administe to their husband, a particular poison, not to inflict a s dy or sudden death, but to bring on a gradual decay, more intolerable than death itself, and which is certain to put a period to his life: the symptoms attending the disorder thus produced, are similar to those which attend the scurvy; and no remedy is known to prevent their fatal termination.

facilitate the remaining travels he intended to make in the Thebias, the prince immediately gave him recommendatory letters, and the parties separated equally satisfied with each other; prince Ismain in losing his new physician, and Sonnini in having escaped the impracticable task of renovating an old infirm and emaciated debauchee.

After expostulating with the superior on the villainy of his conduct, Sonnini quitted the convent of Néguadé, the abode of treacherous hypocrisy, and crossed over to the Kous, where the Copt, Mallum Poctor, procured him a commodious apartment, in which he proposed to remain till the departure of the caravan for Cosseir *.

On the dry and almost steril plains of Upper Egypt, the true acacia is found, which yields the gum denominated Arabic; it is an useful but not an ornamental tree. Its wood is of a deep red colour, hard, and capable of receiving a beautiful polish: its seed, inclosed in a husk, yields a red colour, used in dying Morocco; and the trunk and branches distil the gum of great commercial importance, known by the name of gum-arabic. The acacia would assist greatly to restore fertility to the steril parts of Upper Egypt; for, when the root fastens in a bed of vegetable earth, the sandy layer, which might surround the bottom of the trunk, would not injure its growth †.

Sonnini continued some time at Kous, before he abandoned his intention of visiting the Red Sea: the kiaschef of Kous had frequently cautioned our traveller to be upon his guard against Mallum Poctor, as he suspected him to be capable of artifice and imposition. Of the propriety of these suspicions he was speedily convinced. Mallum, in order to plunder Sonnini, had as sociated with a Turkish merchant, who seems to have been perfectly qualified to enter into such a partnership. The preparations for the journey to Cosseir afforded them frequent pretences of extorting money. Sonnini had before given the Copt a telescope, a brace of pistols, and some bottles of cordials; another telescope had been sent to the Turk, which he declined accepting, intimating that an equivalent in money would be more agreeable to him. He and the Copt had already received from our author twenty-five chequins on account of the journey, without any appearance of its commencing. Sonnini was successively assured, that a caravan was preparing to set off; and that some Bedouin Arabs delayed the journey: then he affirmed there was no caravan but some rapid camels should convey him to the Red Sea; and in this new arrangement, he was to leave his baggage to the care of the Turkish merchant, to be forwarded by the next caravan. The snare was too gross to meet with the success they had promised themselves, and M. Sonnini fully comprehending their drift, immediately informed them that he would give up all thoughts of the journey, and peremptorily demanded the money they had extorted from him. They exclaimed exceedingly against the injustice of so extraordinary a claim, alledging that he was still indebted to them for their services; but, on his threatening to lay their complaints before prince Ismain, they returned five chequins. To avoid further trouble respecting this clandestine affair, Sonnini thought proper to give up all hopes of receiving the other twenty, resolving to be no longer exposed to the collusions of those rascals.

* The village of Kous is surrounded by beautiful orchards, and, though irregularly planted, have a very pleasing effect, the boughs of different fruit trees, mixing together without art or design, form a sweetly variegated shade; the branches flourishing with blossoms or fruits the greater part of the year. The flowers, which the warmth of the climate renders more odoriferous, exhale a fragrance which can better be conceived than expressed; the air was filled with the sweetest exhalations, among which the exquisite odour of the blossom of the citron trees most enchantingly prevailed. Our author was on this fascinating spot when the grapes are most abundant, and till then had never beheld any so large, and so delicious; and the pulp was sweet and aromatic. This fruit is much esteemed here by the opulent, who consider it as the most agreeable alleviation of the heat occasioned by the climate.

Melons of various species were sold in the streets and markets; but Sonnini remarks, that, "there is no one of those melons of so good a quality as our choicest European melons; the greater part of them are insipid." Dates have begun to ripen.

† The sesane which distills gum-arabic, is applied to various uses in Egypt: the oil extracted from its seed is in high estimation, though it is fit only to burn in the lamps; the dregs of the oil, added to honey and citron juice, form a favourite ragoût to an Egyptian palate. Preparations from sesane are used by ladies, to acquire that *embonpoint* which they all desire, to clean the skin, give it bloom, preserve the beauty of the hair, and to promote the increase of the milk when they become mothers. The oil of sesane is particularly recommended for its efficacy in curing diseases of the eyes; but in this country, except among women whose faces are continually covered with veils, eyes perfectly sound are seldom to be met with.

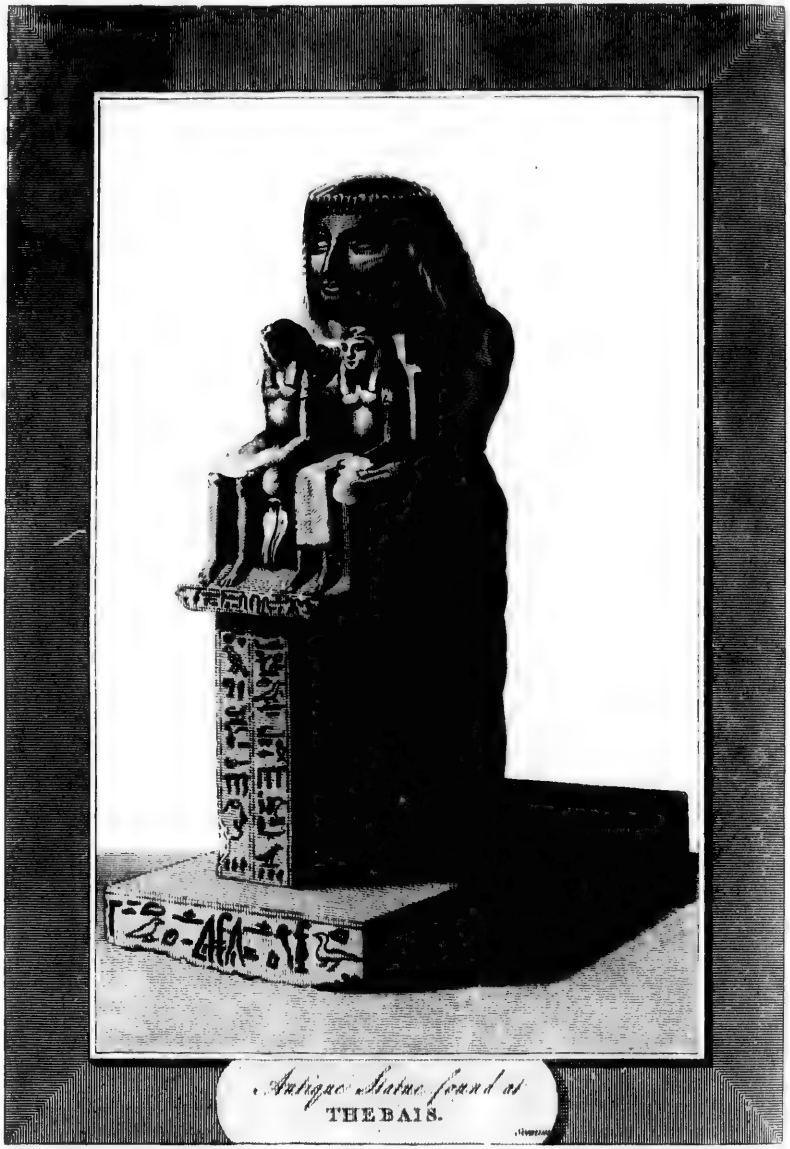
nder Sonnini, had a
rchant, who seems
ed to enter into such
ations for the journe
frequent pretences
had before given th
e of pistols, and som
er telescope had bee
ne declined acceptin
ent in money would
He and the Copt ha
ur author twenty-fi
e journey, without an
encing. Sonnini w
caravan was prepari
louin Arabs delayed th
there was no caravan
uld convey him to th
v arrangement, he w
ne care of the Turki
d by the next caravan
o meet with the succes
lves, and M. Sonni
drift, immediately i
d give up all thoug
nptorily demanded th
from him. They e
nst the injustice of
edging that he was s
r services; but, on h
mplaints before prin
e chequins. To av
this clandestine affa
o give up all hopes
y, resolving to be
usions of those rasca

---

that, "there is no one of
ity as our choicest Europe
em are insipid." Date

gum-arabic, is applied
extracted from its seed i
only to burn in the lamp
noney and citron juice, for
ptian palate. Preparatio
to acquire that *embon*
the skin, give it bloom,
and to promote the increa
mothers. The oil of sesa
for its efficacy in curi
this country, except amo
lly covered with veils, ey
met with.

H



Antique Statue found at
THEBAIS.

now came to a resolution to continue his
towards the ruins of the ancient city of
bes.

aving Kous on the 17th of July, with the
ion of four Arabs to his suite, he proceeded
the eastern bank of the Nile on horseback:
t noon they stopped at Nouzarie, a village
bited by Copts. Karnak, a small miserable
ge, is not far distant, whose cottages serve to
hten the magnificence of the splendid ruins
h surround them.

onnini remained some time motionless with
ure, on seeing the objects which present-
themselves on the site of the ancient
bes, where there now remains, amid the
k of ages, and the ravages of barbarism,
uments seeming to transcend the strength
ingenuity of man. Obelisks, colossal and
ntic statues, and avenues formed by rows of
inxes, which are still discernable, though
efully mutilated; porticoes of prodigious
ation, immense collonades, thousands of
mns overthrown, occupy a space of vast
nt *.

t was with regret that Sonnini could prevail on
self to quit these interesting ruins, after taking
asty survey, a war being daily expected to
k out on the very spot: some beys of the vanquished party of Ismael, who had fled to this neighbourhood, had engaged so many partizans, that the victorious Mourat was much alarmed. The latter sent a small army, commanded by a Bey of his own family to exterminate the remainder of his enemies. Thus our author found himself between two hostile armies, both anxious for the combat. Exclusive of the confusion occasioned by the war, the robbers were active in stripping travellers, and pirates plundered the vessels in the Nile. Clans of Arabs renewed ancient quarrels, and one village waged war and vengeance against another. Amidst the riotous licentiousness attending a convulsed state of the country, a stranger could not expect protection, as authority no longer existed. No choice remained for our traveller, but instantly to return down the Nile †.

Night approaching, our traveller and his attendants were accommodated with one of the most spacious of the cottages; care had been previously taken to guard against attack or surprise from without, but no sooner had the travellers laid down, than a legion of enormous rats flocked into their apartment, danced over them, and occasionally saluted them with a bite. At the same instant a tempestuous wind arose, which blew down large portions of their frail

* Sonnini's reflections on these ruins are strikingly in-
ding.—" Let the so much boasted fabrics of Greece
Rome come and bow down before the temples and the
ces of the Thebes of Egypt. Its lofty ruins are still
striking than their gawdy ornaments; its gigantic
cks are more majestic than their perfect preservation.
glory of the most celebrated fabrics vanishes before the
ligies of Egyptian architecture; and to describe them
, a man must possess the genius of those who con-
ed and executed them, or the eloquent pen of a
uet."

Before he began his voyage, however, he was desirous
isiting the ruins on the western bank §. This spot was
etually infested by robbers, and had the singular reputa-
of being the most dangerous place in Upper Egypt;
though advised by his attendants not to venture on so
rdous a project, Sonnini resolved upon surveying these
brated ruins; he therefore crossed over the river to
rnei, and sent for the Sheich to come to the water-side;
Sheich immediately attended, and conducted him to the
ge; and a miserable village it was, consisting of only
huts, about the height of a man, and having no other
ring than a few palm leaves. The inhabitants are well
d to the village; they were half black, and almost
d; and their countenances were gloomy, haggard, and
ious. They seemed to pay little attention to the Sheich;
he Syrian interpreter, equally base and cowardly, shed
of dismay.

he people of Gournei, however, conducted themselves with honour and propriety: Sonnini passed the greater part of the day with them, in purchasing little idols and antique medals, which they had found among the ruins; but most of the medals he procured were of small value, many of them were copper and *Ptolemies*. Three or four gold coins were indeed purchased with the rest, but they were Arabian; beautiful cornelians were often found amidst the ruins, ready cut, and fit for the engraver. The traveller was convinced that the western part of ancient Thebes, was not inferior, in point of magnificence, to the eastern; but the monuments it contained were not in so good a state of preservation. Some specimens still remain of the astonishing solidity of the edifices that were here erected; among these are an ancient temple, entirely covered with hieroglyphics; a superb portico, and some colossal statues, as the fragments of the statue of Memnon. He could only take a cursory view of these valuable remains, the greater part of which he could but glance at from afar.

Our author was anxious to visit the sepulchres of the Theban monarchs, but no person could be found sufficiently courageous to conduct him thither; and the Sheich himself declared to his guest, that in consequence of a recent war between his subjects, and the inhabitants of some neighbouring villages, it would be imprudent to expose himself with guides, who, instead of affording him protection, would probably excite the vengeance of his foes.

§ The ancient city of Thebes was twenty-seven miles in circumference, and the Nile flowed through the midst of it.

tenement. Soon after, the wall burst outwards; a circumstance greatly in favour of our travellers, who, fearful of being crushed with the remainder, hastily quitted their miserable shelter, and passed the remainder of the night in the open air, with their muskets on their shoulders.

M. Sonnini had proceeded about one hundred and forty leagues from Cairo, when he came to a resolution of returning: he found it difficult to get away from Gournei, as the boats of the Nile avoided its shore, and the inhabitants were involved in a war with the people of Kamoulé, where a man had been recently murdered. No person could be prevailed on to become their guide to Néguadé, dreading the consequences of the resentment of the people of Kamoulé. At length, however, a man engaged to direct their course; and the Sheick furnished horses for a journey, which he had not the resolution to undertake. He accompanied them about a quarter of a league, but, turning a deaf ear to all importunity, he refused to advance farther. Another man, half naked, on foot, with a very unfavourable appearance, and only armed with a stick, then led them by a circuitous route, to avoid the neighbourhood of Kamoulé: they climbed over rocky mountains, passed through narrow straits, and irregular windings, among an accumulated heap of rocks, and traversed the wildest deserts, without meeting a trace of either men or animals; till at length, after travelling six hours, they descended into the plains near Néguadé, where they crossed over to Kous, accompanied by the conductor, who, well pleased at having escaped his enemies, and resolved to avoid an exposure of his person a second time, drove the horses belonging to Gournei along the eastern shore of the Nile, till he arrived opposite to the place of his residence.

Our author had hardly returned to his former habitation at Kous, when Mallum Poctor came to visit him, with all the external marks of friendship and esteem. He warmly congratulated him on his relinquishing the journey to Cosseir, because the Turkey merchant, in whom he thought he might confide, had contrived a plan to get him robbed upon the road. Sonnini, however, paid but little attention to the assertions of a man with whose treachery he was so perfectly acquainted. The Turkish merchant was now absent from Kous; but had he been there, as Poctor absent, he would have related a similar story of Poctor. Prudence induced our author to dissemble respecting this transaction, as the Copt was a man of interest in his country; and though his professions of friendship were of little avail, the effects of his enmity might have proved prejudicial *.

They are alert in that element, though they make but a slow progress on land; where they

* Mallum Poctor had numerous flocks of sheep and goats in his possession. These animals are different in appearance in Upper and Lower Egypt. The sheep are stronger and lustier; their head and tail larger in proportion, and their legs shorter. They have a thick fleece, and when they are shorn, the wool is permitted to remain on the top of the head; as this grows rapidly, a thick bushy tuft is presently formed, which hangs over their forehead, and greatly interrupts their sight. Their colour is a reddish brown, which becomes darker as their age increases; some, however, are black, and others white, but the latter inclines to the yellow. Their skins are used by the Egyptians as mattrasses; supposing themselves secure from scorpions while they are sleeping on them, it being a generally-received notion among them, that a scorpion will not alight upon wool. The goats are smaller than those of Lower Egypt, their horns are thin, and beautifully turned; their hair is long and bushy, and of a silky softness.

Swine are never seen in the farm yards of Upper Egypt. It is not reasonable to believe, that so general an aversion as that respecting the eating of hog's flesh, should have no other foundation, as some people have imagined, than a natural abhorrence to the voracious appetite which leads these animals to wallow in heaps of the vilest ordure; on that principle they would reject the flesh of fowls, which, it is well known, devour the vilest and the most disgusting aliments. The vast quantity of fat with which the hog is loaded, obstructing the perspiration in hot climates, renders the Egyptians liable to the leprosy. This was, in fact, the real cause of an aversion, which the superstition of the Jews has retained in colder climates, where the hog is nutritious to man. Abstinence from the flesh of the hog has been transmitted to the present race of Egyptians. The flesh of swine, anciently forbidden by the Egyptians, is also prohibited to the Mahometans, and the Copts never eat it.

In sailing on the Nile near Kous, crocodiles surround the boat, but they appeared only on a level with the surface. They never rise upon the vessels, no other danger being apprehended from them, than the risk of losing a limb from their tremendous bite when a person is swimming. In one part of Egypt, the crocodile was formerly worshipped; and in another, furiously destroyed; but at present it is neither destroyed nor reverenced. In the southern parts they assemble in vast numbers, and impart a musky smell to the water of the Nile. When the sun is at its height, their heads appear above water, immoveable, floating slowly down the current, like so many logs of wood, basking in the heat which they delight in. The noise of musket-shot alone disturbs them. Sonnini shot at several, but he knew not whether he killed them or not; those he hit disappeared beneath the water.

not readily distinguished at a distance, by similarity of their colour to the slimy shore. the muddy coast of the Nile they also deposit eggs*.

onnini intending shortly to make his departure Kous, his friend Poctor presented him with g of curious brilliant stones, which had been d among the ruins of ancient monuments. ong these was a small round flint, of a dark ow colour, on which were scattered white spots ed with yellow. This species has the reputa- of curing the sting of scorpions. Similar ues are attributed to many other stones, and haps with equal propriety. Before our travel- departed from Kous, his medical skill was com- ely put to the test. The kiaschef fell from his e, and dislocated his shoulder; and, not know- the difference between physic and surgery, de- nded our traveller's professional assistance. nini and his companions endeavoured to put shoulder in its place; and the Mameluc pa- tly endured their awkward efforts, without ceiving their deficiency of skill. Sonnini, fear- his patient would not choose to part from him he was restored, left him that very evening, proceeded to Kenné, a village on the eastern k of the Nile.

Kenné, an inconsiderable village, is the first lezvous of the caravan of Cosseir. It is the ient Cœna or Cænopolis; but it is no longer t it was. The monuments which adorned this ient city are not now seen, and its commerce most annihilated. Between Kous and Kenné, village of Koft is situated, on the coast, near site of the ancient town of Cophtos, which me flourishing by the commerce with the Sea. Many have asserted that the canal of Red Sea, now filled up, terminated here; but rs place its boundary in the neighbourhood of né.

ur author now paid a second visit to Dendera, re the emir again entertained him in the most itable and friendly manner, and presented with a beautiful antique head, of white mar- but this and many other things were after- ls taken from him. Embarking on the Nile, whose waters daily assumed a greater swell, they stopped on the 25th at Reishie, a village on the western bank. From thence they proceeded to Kelhé, another village on the same side: the people of this place were in a state of rebellion against the kiaschef of Basjoura, and supposed our adventurers had been sent against them by the kiaschef. Hardly had they landed, when thirty or forty of the villagers, armed with sabres and lances, began to attack them; but, finding the strangers were peaceably inclined, the villagers desisted, and treated them with hospitality.

The travellers resumed their voyage, but soon experienced another species of danger: the violence of the current and wind rendered their situation alarming by water, and the convulsed state of the country, presented equal danger upon land; the latter, however, was resolved on, and, after much difficulty, they reached the shore at Sahet, a port of Basjoura and of Farschout. M. Sonnini sent the Reis to acquaint the Sheich that a kiaschef, who intended to sleep in the boat, ordered him to keep a strict watch that no banditti came near it. In consequence of this message, the commandant came himself, with some attendants, and passed the whole night in guarding the vessel. At the dawn of day, he sent a complimentary message to the European, accompanied with coffee for his breakfast: but Sonnini departed as speedily as possible, lest more apparent day should discover that the pretended kiaschef was *destitute of a beard.*

Arriving at Bélianā, a considerable village, on the 27th, they passed the night there: in the vicinity of which some ruins occupy a large extent of ground. On the following day they proceeded to Girge, a city next in extent to Cairo. It is the capital of Upper Egypt, and the residence of a Bey. Here was another hospital of Monks for the propagation of the faith, to which our author had a letter from Cairo. The superior, a graceful old man, with a long white beard, received the letter from his hands; but perceiving it had been written some time before, he superciliously threw the paper in Sonnini's face, telling him the letter was worth nothing. The monk, perceiving our author's

* The fecundity of the crocodile would be very alarming inhabitants, were not other animals industrious in the ction of their eggs; particularly the tortoise of the Nile. diles, when full grown, attain the length of thirty, or fifty feet. The Egyptian Catholics affirm that a ile has the sagacity to distinguish a Christian from a Mussulman, and though he may not prefer the flesh of the latter, he never attempts to attack the former. Hence the Christians bathe without fear in the places most resorted to by crocodiles, and consequently where the Mahometans dare not venture to expose themselves.

agitation

agitation at this treatment, was perfectly ashamed of his conduct, and poured forth a torrent of apologies, which Sonnini returned by turning his back upon him, and quitted the house; resolving never after to visit one of these abodes of folly and impertinence.

On the morning of the 29th, our author resumed his voyage: the north-wind blew for several days with unabated fury, and raised waves to an unprecedented height. With much difficulty the boat was safely conducted to Menshié, the site of the ancient Ptolemais Hermii. A few scattered remains, and a stone mound to restrain the waters of the river, are the only existing proofs of its former splendour. The kiaschef of this place asked our author if he had letters from Mourat Bey; and, on his answering in the affirmative, declared that was a very indifferent recommendation, as Mourat was on the point of being deposed. It appeared that a bey, named Hassan, had raised a strong party against Mourat, and this kiaschef intended to join him. In a short time afterwards he informed our author that he must accompany him as a physician to the army, to cure the wounds which Hassan might receive in battle. M. Sonnini, displeased at this intelligence, abruptly left Menshie, and arrived at Souhaje on the thirtieth.

On the 31st he ordered the Reis to proceed with the boat to Tahta, whilst he travelled to the same place on horseback, accompanied with two Arabs. This was the place where Sonnini had acquired great reputation for performing an important cure on the Copt, Mallum Mourcous; his return was therefore no sooner announced than he was attended by a multitude of real or imaginary invalids*.

During M. Sonnini's residence at Tahta, little lizards, of uncommon beauty, thronged on the shores of the river: gold and azure bespangled their bodies, and their tails were of a beautiful sky-blue. These refulgent lizards are seldom met with in the north of Egypt; sometimes, but not often, they approach the habitations of men: they are highly venerated by the people.

Having discharged his kanja at Taghta, Sonnini waited till some boat should touch in the neighbourhood that would convey him to Cairo. On the 6th of August a large vessel, called a masch, arrived with corn, so completely laden that it lay even with the water; and to prevent the entrance of that element, a bastion of fascines and mud was erected round the edges. As no other vessel could be procured, our travellers embarked in this; with the additional lading of a large number of men and sheep stowed on the top of the corn. They passed the village of Kau el Kebir on the eastern bank, near which an ancient colonnade is visible, and in good preservation: the ancient city, once existing here, is supposed by some to be the Antæopolis, and by others Diospolis Minor†.

On the 8th, when the boat was on the point of departing, they beheld the village of Koum el Arab on fire, an effect of the dastardly war of the Arabs, in which neither valour nor generosity was discovered. Repairs were necessary to the boat, and it was with difficulty got into Aboutige for that purpose: an opportunity then offered of proceeding to Siout by land, which Sonnini did not neglect to embrace. Intending to set out the next morning with a Turkish collector of revenue, he passed the night in a caravansera. He had hardly composed himself to rest, when several musket-shots were fired into the building; every one ran out but Sonnini, who, upon enquiry, was informed that the alarm proceeded from robbers who had endeavoured to break into the house‡.

* The few days which our traveller remained at Tahta, furnished him with a further opportunity of observing the diseases of the country, and the practice adopted by Egyptian physicians. They bestow several appellations on the venereal disease, some of which are truly whimsical. It is most generally denominated *embarek*, or the *blessed*; sometimes it is entitled *the disease of goats;* and sometimes *the disease of camels.* For the cure, they prescribe a great quantity of meat and strong brandy; and order the body of the patient to be rubbed with oil and sulphur. But these disorders are treated more methodically at Cairo: a decoction of Sarsaparilla is administered every day for forty days successively, and the patient has then no other allowance than unleavened bread and honey: after that time, plentiful doses of brandy are prescribed.

† The master of the vessel being a native of this town, it was natural to suppose he would stop here to visit his family, and *lay in a stock of corn.* Having caused a larger portion to be conveyed to his house, he prudently made up with the mass as much dry earth as he had pilfered of the grain, that the lading of the vessel might not appear to be diminished. Our travellers, while they were at Touna, saw a conflict between two parties of Arabs; but, as Sonnini justly observed, it seemed to be "a slight skirmish between bad marksmen, mutually endeavouring to shun each other." At length, one of the parties rode off with the greatest composure.

‡ The journey at length commenced, when our author was surprised at seeing his Turkish companion stop, repeatedly, to pick up pieces of dirt, which he swallowed with appar-

travellers arrived safely at Siout, and on th M. Sonnini proceeded to Manfelout; and xt morning the boat from Aboutige brought mpanions and his baggage. Our author then hired a small tenement at Siout, intending to wait for a more convenient vessel than that which he had quitted.

SECTION XIV.

Medicine—Curious Prescriptions—Vessel runs a-ground—Narrowly Escapes Destruction.

ISAGREEABLE and troublesome occupations now became the unavoidable lot of our nturer. The Pacha of Cairo, who was afflicted ith a lingering disease, resided at Manfelout, dispatched a messenger to M. Sonnini, reing his attendance as a physician. He did however, seem to be distressed for want of icians, as several from all quarters were cold at his mansion, and he obediently followed eir prescriptions, in succession; and frequently he same time.

me of the remedies proposed were extremely ous; one in particular for a disorder in the , directs,—That he should *walk* into the ntry till he should happen to find a rag of any which he was to drag home with one of his ed feet: he was then to take three sticks and e alum, and burning the whole together, in- the smoke issuing from the flame; but our or does not mention whether the patient tried prescription, or whether it really effected a . Fortunately for Sonnini, however, the a soon enabled him to pursue his voy- A galley at Manfelout, which could only navigated during the swell of the Nile, was edily to set sail for Cairo. The vessel was laden with two hundred and fifty tons of corn; variety of bales belonging to private persons, about a hundred men, and several head of cattle. Three commodious apartments in the stern were appropriated to the use of M. Sonnini, by the desire of the Pacha.

Early on the 25th the vessel put in motion, but was soon ran a-ground near the shore, from the awkwardness or unskilfulness of the crew; and it cost them a day and a half's labour to get her off again: they afterwards stopped to take in some buffaloes, where they remained another day and night, when the wind drove the vessel from her cables, and she floated rapidly down the stream, narrowly escaping destruction by being dashed against the rocks or mountain of Aboufeda; but fortunately, after several manœuvres, she was securely fastened to her moorings *.

When the vessel arrived at Miniet, the Reis immediately landed, with about twenty of the passengers, and they all hastily proceeded to the residence of the kiaschef, exclaiming violently on the road against the Infidel who had dared to strike a believer. The populace assembled in crowds, and followed the Reis, calling aloud for the head of the *dog* who had abused a favourite of

rent delight. Sonnini, wishing to know his reason for sing so singular repast, he replied that an insatiable etite had rendered it necessary to him, which he had y times attempted to resist, but in vain. He had spent greater part of his life in Turkey, and felt this strange ensity after a long residence in Egypt. He was about years of age, corpulent, of a yellowish complexion, le, and languid.

After some delay the vessel set sail on the morning of 27th, the Reis having taken on board, among other per- four villains who had deserted from the army; and having escaped the fatigues of war, set no bounds to insolence. Finding that Sonnini and his attendants Europeans, they more particularly directed their abuse them, and took every opportunity to insult them: at th they carried their audacity to such unwarrantable lengths as to strike two of M. Sonnini's attendants. The blows being naturally returned, an engagement commenced. Our author hastened to the spot, with his sabre in his hand, and applied a few strokes to the shoulders of the aggressors, with the flat side. They immediately desisted, but the confusion was succeeded by an universal exclamation throughout the vessel, "an Infidel to strike a Mussulman!" "It was an unpardonable offence;" and they talked of throwing our author overboard! The Reis, instead of appeasing the tumult, was more clamorous than the rest; but Sonnini, and his attendants, retired into their apartment at the stern. The fire-arms, with which they were provided, appeared sufficiently formidable to keep them at bay; and they contented themselves, for the present, with murmuring, and threatening revenge.

Mahomet. M. Sonnini's Egyptian servants, whom he had sent after the Reis to observe his conduct, returned with intelligence that their master was to be bastinadoed on the soles of the feet, and advised him to conceal himself or make his escape; but he determined to face the danger, and endeavour to avert it. He went on shore immediately with his attendants, and passed among the crowd, still clamorous for vengeance. Arriving at the kiaschef's house, he saw the Reis preferring his complaint, who soon perceived him, and pointed him out to the kiaschef.

Is it you then, said the kiaschef, in an angry tone, that have dared to offer violence to a believing Mussulman? Pay no attention, replied our author, to these paltry slaves. I am the friend of Mourat Bey, from whom I have something to communicate to your ear,—Then, advancing towards the kiaschef, and pretending to whisper to him, Sonnini slipped a few chequins into his hand, which the commandant did not disdain to pocket. The effect was presently perceived; for, rising up, and darting strong menacing looks at the Reis, he expressed the most violent rage that he should presume to complain to him of a Frank, on whose wisdom, virtue, and power, he pronounced a most elaborate eulogium. The Reis attempting to reply, received a box on the ear from the kiaschef, who also sentenced him to undergo the discipline of the cane. The opinion of the multitude was now completely changed; they no longer demanded the life of the impious infidel, but calmly dispersed, applauding the exalted justice of the kiaschef, and expatiating on the excellent qualities of the Franks.

Notwithstanding the protection our traveller had received from the kiaschef, M. Sonnini deemed it imprudent to trust himself again on board a vessel in which he had received such outrageous treatment; and expose himself to the resentment of the Reis and his sailors. The kiaschef, however, swore by the Prophet that nothing disagreeable should befal him; and sent two officers to conduct him back to the vessel, and continue with him during the night. In the morning, the officers, by the kiaschef's command, informed the Reis, that he must answer with his head, for the safety of his passengers; and also desired a party of Mamelucs, who were then on their passage to Cairo in another boat, to take care that no violence should be offered them. It was also agreed, that if any misunderstanding should arise, Sonnini should display his schall at the poop, and the Mamelucs should instantly assist him. All these precautions might, however, have been spared; for the Reis and his companions limited their revenge to a few murmurs, which were very little regarded.

On the evening of the 30th the travellers halted near a district beautifully ornamented with date trees: as soon as they had dropped anchor, the Mamelucs visited them on board, to enquire if any of them had received cause of complaint, and obliged the Reis to apologize even for having suffered insolent expressions to have been used. Our author received his excuses with disdain, though he was highly gratified to see a man humbled who had endeavoured so essentially to injure him. Next morning the voyage was renewed. A violent north wind, during the fore-part of the day, rendered their progress dangerous, and the adjacent plains were overflowed.

Continuing to descend the Nile on the 31st, they sailed by a chain of rocks, which the waters touch for a considerable space, and which appear to have experienced some great convulsion. At the summit, a chapel announces the burying-place of a holy Mussulman, universally revered under the name of *Sheick Embarek*. The mountains to the eastward of the Nile are considerably more elevated than those to the westward: they are also much nearer the river, the shore of which is frequently formed by them. Towards the west, however, the mountains are much farther removed, and sometimes they are too remote to be perceptible from the river. Those which are washed by the Nile, project above, whilst the middle and lower parts retire; being furrowed lengthwise over the front which borders the Nile to the very summit; appearing as if the waters had flowed to this height against their declivity, and had there marked the progressive diminution of the elevation of their course. Another observation, suggested by the navigation of the Nile, is, that when these mountains, or masses of rocks towards the east, confine the current of the Nile, the shallows on the opposite shore advance also to a point, and leave an exceeding narrow channel to the river which is formidable to navigators.

The Nile now diffused over the plains her fertilizing waters: the canals were successively filling; and the part of Egypt, where our adventurer then was, seemed the most delightful country upon earth; as the eye embraced situations the most picturesque, and contrasts the most striking. Towards the west

…, the land produces an abundance which ages of …ultivation have not exhausted. Villages, upon …ences surrounded with water and trees, appear … so many verdant islands, floating on the sur… of a tranquil bason. Towards the east, barren …ntains, and barren masses of rock, heaped … above another, and devoted to eternal sterility, …ent a forbidding uniformity, except where … clefts exhibit little cottages very thinly scat…, and spots of ground covered with various … of plants, especially with the sugar cane, … vivid colour is beautiful to behold*.

They sailed by Feshné a market-town on the …ern shore, which bestows its name (*Dsjebel Feshné*) to a mountain, that renders the naviga… dangerous; because, having experienced … commotion, several fragments of the rock … loosened and rolled into the river. Being …ed off Bébé the first of September, a dead … continued them there till the 2d. The chain … mountains of *Feshné*, which had gradually …nished into little hills of sand, rises again below …, and forms a high cape, which limits the … of the river. They call it the mountain of …unoor from a saint of that name, whose place … interment is discernible upon the base. The … passed Benisouef without stopping. Here … Nile extends itself to a vast distance, and forms … immense sheet of water, above which houses, … parcels of cultivated land, appear as if they … floating.

… the approach of night the vessel was moored opposite to the village of Meimoum†, at a distance from the shore. On the opposite coast, an old Coptic convent appears; and a little lower a point of rocks, known by the name of *Dsjebel Naulti*, (the Sailor's Mountain;) an Egyptian mariner having been buried there, who was canonized by his companions. Riha was their last station before they arrived at Cairo. The inundation was extending itself to the westward, as far as the base of the immense pyramid, several leagues distant from Riha.

Water fowl were not so common now, as in that season when the Nile returns to its bed; a specious cause may be thus assigned: they do not now so frequently appear on the river, because the plains being inundated, they extend themselves over a greater space. Hardly had the morning of the 4th began to dawn, when the impatience of the crew to arrive at Cairo induced them to spread two immense sails on the boat, and they arrived in the evening off the Coptic monastery of Figs, within the distance of half a league from Old Cairo. Here the vessels from Upper Egypt disembark their passengers, and their cattle, that they may have nothing on board but their cargo, when they appear in the ports of Cairo.

The neighbourhood of Cairo was now in the greatest agitation: the Beys were encamped with their forces, and on the point of marching into Upper Egypt. M. Sonnini therefore hastened from the city, without even waiting to see his fellow countrymen. On the 6th of September he

* The following lines, by Mr. *Gray*, are so beautifully descriptive of the face of the country in Egypt, during the inundation of the Nile, that the reader will, it is presumed, excuse us for inserting them:

What wonder in the sultry climes, that spread
Where Nile, redundant o'er his summer bed,
From his broad bosom life and verdure flings,
And broods o'er Egypt with his watr'y wings,
If with advent'rous oar and ready sail,
The dusky people drive before the gale,
Or on frail floats to neighbouring cities ride,
That rise and glitter o'er the embient tide?

† … pelicans were observed skimming along the surface … water, the flight of which appeared to be much inter…: particularly observing one of them, it flapped its … about eight or nine times in succession; after which … red in the air, and again beat its wings: thus it alter… proceeded during the continuance of its flight. … here are no birds of passage which arrived here in … numbers than quails. They assemble on the sandy … Egypt in very large flocks. It is difficult to conceive … bird which is so heavy in its flight, that it cannot … any considerable distance, and which alights in our … almost as soon as it had taken wing, should venture to traverse a great extent of sea. The islands scattered over the Mediterranean, and the vessels sailing along its surface, serve them indeed for places of rest and shelter, when the winds become boisterous, or contrary to the direction of their route. But these asylums, which the quails have not always sufficient strength to attain, and the distance of which is frequently fatal to them, likewise prove places of destruction to them. Too much exhausted to fly, they suffer themselves to be caught without difficulty upon inhospitable shores: they are also easily taken by hand upon the rigging of ships; and when excess of fatigue prevents them from rising to that height, they strike with violence against the vessel's hull, fall back stunned by the shock, and disappear in the waves. Whatever may be the dangers of the long voyage to which these birds do not seem destined; whatever losses these feeble travellers may sustain in the course of the passage, there still arrives so great a multitude in the environs of Alexandria, that the number to be seen there is incredible. The Egyptian fowlers catch them in nets. During their first arrival, such quantities are exhibited for sale in the markets, that three or four were sometimes purchased for a medine. The crews of merchant-ships lived upon them; and at the consul's office at Alexandria, complaints were exhibited by sailors against captains of vessels, for giving them nothing to eat but quails.

embarked

embarked at Beissons to proceed to Rosetta, where he arrived on the 7th, at six o'clock in the morning, and was politely received, by those whose favours he had before experienced. On the 22d. began the Ramadan, or Fast of the Mussulmen; and our traveller attended the ceremony of its opening. In the evening, all the tradesmen in Rosetta* assembled in companies, and marched in procession through the town, by the light of burning chips of resinous wood, contained in iron pots carried upon the point of long poles†. The principal of each corporation, splendidly dressed, was mounted on a fine horse: several of them wore masks, which excited much mirth among the populace. The chief Nightman assumed the character of an European; at whose appearance the expressions of joy among the spectators were particularly audible. Hence an idea may be formed of the respect shewn to the natives of that country, by Egyptians.

During the month appropriated to the Ramadan, it is not only unlawful to eat or drink from the rising to the setting of the sun; the use of tobacco is also prohibited. But on the setting of the sun, the rigid abstinence of the day is succeeded by feasting, dancing, music, and every species of entertainment that can be devised.

After having rested a few days at Rosetta, M. Sonnini proceeded to Alexandria, where he resumed his native dress, to which it was some time before he could again accustom himself. A vessel among those which were appropriated to supply caravans, or to the coasting trade along the seas of the levant, was preparing to sail for Smyrna, and he embraced an opportunity of finding his way into Greece and Turkey. He separated from all his companions, whose task was to finish with the expedition through Egypt, excepting the person who was particularly attached to him. The vessel in which he embarked sailed from the new port of Alexandria on the 17th of October 1778, and he soon lost sight of the regions of a country, where the prodigies of art attempted to vie with the exuberance of nature.

* In walking about the gardens of Rosetta, Sonnini was shewn a hedge-hog. This quadruped is common in Lower Egypt, but it is not to be found in the Saïd. The pools of water in the environs were filled with thousands of frogs, which make a terrible noise. The reeds, under which these animals conceal themselves at the bottom of the water, serve for making ropes of general use.

† The same idea prevailed at Rosetta as in the Saïd, respecting the property attributed to the mastic; but in Upper Egypt it was considered as mortal to the sick who inhaled it; whereas at Rosetta it was only said to be pernicious. Accordingly the sick, in order to avoid the danger of breathing it in a country where mastic is frequently burnt, take the precaution of holding continually under their nose an onion, the odour of which, if it be more wholesome than that of mastic, is undoubtedly far less agreeable. All the mastic that is consumed in Egypt, comes from the island of *Scio*, in the Archipelago. The women are constantly chewing small pieces of it melted with wax; it is used in *ragouts*; and the vessels employed for cooling water are perfumed with it, as well as almost every household utensil.

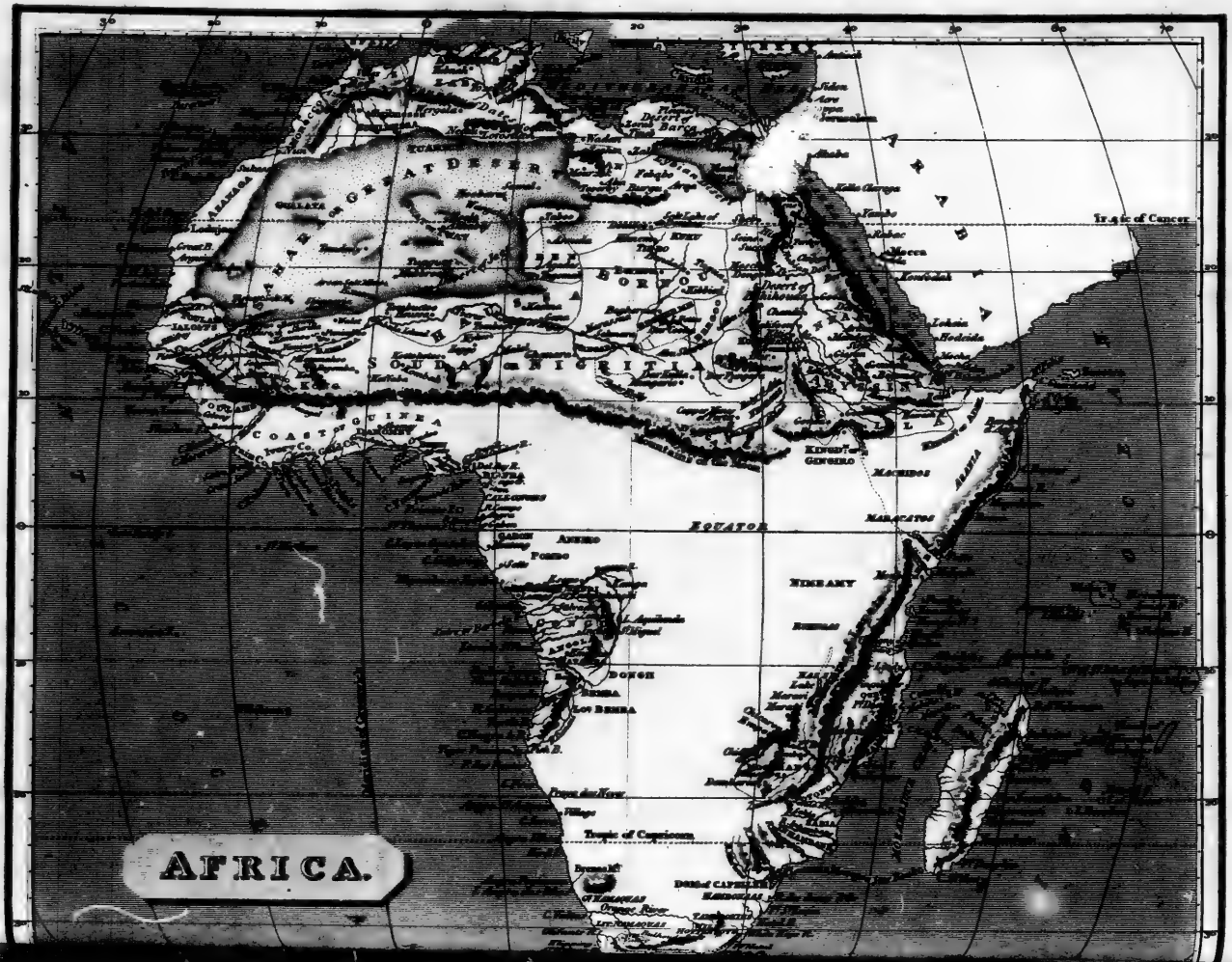
THE END OF SONNINI's TRAVELS.

TRAVE

; the use of tobacco
e setting of the sun,
day is succeeded by
every species of en-
ed.
days at Rosetta, M.
ndria, where he re-
ich it was some time
m himself. A vessel
propriated to supply
ade along the seas of
sail for Smyrna, and
of finding his way int
eparated from all h
to finish with the en
xcepting the perso
d to him. The vesse
from the new port
October 1778, and h
s of a country, wher
oted to vie with th

---

id the danger of breathi
requently burnt, take
nder their nose an oni
e wholesome than that
greeable. All the ma
from the island of *Scio*,
e constantly chewing sm
s used in *ragouts*; and
r are perfumed with it,
ensil.


AFRICA.
Tr. of Cancer
EQUATOR
Tropic of Capricorn
SOUDAN
NIGRITIA
ABYSSINIA
COAST OF GUINEA
ZAARA
NUBIA
ABEOKUTA
FOMBO
DONGO
BENGUELA
MONOMOTAPA
ZANGUEBAR
MOMBAZA
MELINDA
MAGADOXO
MACHEDOI
MARACATOO
NIMEANY
ZANGUEBAR
Cape of Good Hope
Table Mountain
Dutch CAPE TOWN
HOTTENTOTS
Orange River
Meridian of the Moon

TRAVELS

INTO THE

INTERIOR DISTRICTS OF AFRICA.

By MUNGO PARK, *Surgeon.*

Performed in the Years 1795, 1796, and 1797,

By the Direction of the African Association.

SECT. I.

Park's Motives for undertaking the Voyage—His Instructions—Arrival at Jillifree, on the Gambia—Arrival at Dr. Laidley's—Some Account of Pisania, &c. The Country described —Proceeds to the Interior—Description of the Feeloops, the Jaloffs, the Foulahs, and Mandingoes —Some Account of the Trade between the Europeans and Africans.

THE necessity of prosecuting discoveries on the African continent, induced the noblemen gentlemen of the African association to en- a person to undertake so laudable an enter- ; and to explore the interior country by the of the Gambia river. Mr. Park, stimulated n anxious desire to examine into the produc- of a country so little known; and presuming, his youth and excellent constitution, that he ld be able to endure fatigue and encounter s, he offered himself to the society for that im- ant service.

fter submitting to a minute examination, h terminated greatly to Mr. Park's honour, committee unanimously acceded to his wishes, essing perfect satisfaction with respect to his ifications. They proposed an annual salary wo hundred pounds, which he acknowledged e sufficiently large, making no stipulation for ture reward, relying on the honour of those whose indulgence he was destined to the ardu- but delightful task*.

e left Portsmouth on the 22d of May, 1795, saw the mountains of Magradore on the can coast on the 4th of June. After a pleasant and expeditious voyage, he anchored at Jillifree on the northern bank of the Gambia, opposite the spot distinguished by the appellation of James's Island. Barra, the kingdom in which this town is situated, produces the necessaries of life in great abundance; but the inhabitants trade principally in salt, which they convey up the river in canoes to Barraconda, where they barter it for Indian corn, cotton, elephants' teeth, and gold dust. The sovereign of Barra, who has imposed enormous duties, which fall indiscriminately on all vessels, is universally dreaded by Europeans. These duties, or customs, which amount to about twenty pounds, on every vessel, great or small, are rigidly collected in person by the governor of Jillifree, with a numerous train of insolent dependents, who are very rapacious. Having acquired a smattering of the English language by their intercourse with the British sailors, they clamorously beg for any thing they behold which engages their fancy, and are so very earnest and pressing in their importunities, that it is almost impossible to refuse them their unreasonable requests.

Proceeding from Jillifree he arrived at Vintain on the twenty-third; this town is situated about

---

Procuring from Mr Beaufoy, the secretary of the asso- n, a recommendation to Dr. Laidley who had been long nt at an English factory on the banks of the Gambia; er with a letter of credit on that gentleman for two ed pounds; he took his passage in the brig Endeavour, l vessel trading to the Gambia for ivory and bees-wax, anded by captain Richard Wyatt. By a memorial red to Mr. Park, he was directed, on his arrival in Africa, to proceed to the river Niger, either by Bambouk, or some other convenient route; and endeavour to ascertain the course, the rise, and termination of that river: that he should, if possible, visit Tambuctoo, Houssa, and the principal towns or cities in the neighbourhood; and afterwards return to Europe by the most convenient route that the then existing circumstances should render most adviseable.

Mr. Pinkerton, in his modern geography, lately publish-

two miles up a creek on the southern side of the river; a place frequently resorted to by Europeans, as a mart for bees-wax, which is carried thither for sale in great quantities. This commodity is collected in the woods by the Feloops, a savage race of people, who inhabit a country of considerable extent, abounding in rice; where goats and poultry are also to be procured on reasonable terms. With their honey they produce a beverage of an intoxicating quality, resembling that which is fabricated from the same article in England, usually denominated Mead*.

Leaving Vintain on the 26th of May, Mr. Park continued his course up the river, which is both deep and muddy, and abounding with fish; some species of which, though unknown in Europe, are very excellent food. Impenetrable thickets of Mangrove cover the adjacent country, which is flat and swampy: Plenty of sharks present themselves at the entrance from the sea; and higher up, the hippopotamus, or river horse, are very numerous. The latter might more properly be named the river elephant, being of enormous bulk, and his teeth producing excellent ivory. This amphibious creature, with short legs, and cloven hoofs, is perfectly inoffensive; feeding on grass, and such shrubs as the banks of the river afford, seldom venturing to go any distance from the water; in which he always seeks protection on hearing the approach of man.

He next proceeded to Jonkakonda, a place of much commerce, expecting to receive some lading for the vessel, where he arrived at the end of six days. Different European traders came the next morning from their different factories, expecting letters addressed to them, and regular information of the particulars of the cargo; when the captain dispatched a messenger to Dr. Laidley, informing him of Mr. Park's arrival. He repaired to Jonkakonda the ensuing morning, and gave him Mr. Beaufoy's letter; when the doctor politely invited Mr. Park to continue at his house in Pisania, till an opportunity should present itself of prosecuting his journey. This invitation was too agreeable to be refused; and, being furnished by the doctor with a horse and guide, he left Jonkakonda on the morning of the 5th of July, and arrived at Pisania at eleven o'clock the same evening, where he was accommodated with a handsome suite of apartments†.

About this time a violent fever attacked our traveller, occasioned by the descending dews to which he had imprudently exposed himself, in observing an eclipse of the moon, to enable him to ascertain the longitude of the place: a delirium accompanied the fever, and, after the crisis, his convalescence advanced so deliberately that he was confined to his apartment almost the whole of the month of August. Thinking his health at that time in a considerable degree restored, he occasionally ventured to walk out to examine the productions of the country. In one of these excursions, having exceeded his usual jaunt on a sultry day, the fever returned, and he was again confined to his bed on the 10th of September. The malady, however, was less violent than before, and, after a farther confinement of about three weeks, he found himself in a condition to renew

ed in two volumes quarto, mentions Mr. Park's travels in the highest terms of approbation. After prefacing an extract from them in these words—"This enterprizing and ingenious traveller"—He farther observes, that, "We are indebted to Mr. Park for the Moorish kingdom of Ludamar, and for another called Beero, the capital of which is Walet. Not to mention curious and interesting information concerning the manners, and present state of the countries through which he passed."—Vol. II. 770.

* In trading with Europeans the Feloops usually employ a factor of the Mandingo nation, who knows a little of the English language, and is conversant with the trade of the river, to make their bargains, and receive their money. The broker, conniving with the European, receives a part of the sum agreed upon, which he presents to his employer, as the whole: the remainder, which is properly denominated the *cheating money*, is delivered to him when the Feloop is gone, which he pockets as his regular fee. Though the language of the Feloops is appropriate, they find little inducement to learn it, while their trade is thus conducted by the Mandingoes.

† Pisania is a small village on the banks of the Gambia about the distance of sixteen miles from Jonkakonda. It was established by the subjects of Great Britain, as a factory for trade, and solely inhabited by them and their black subjects. It is under the sovereignty of the king of Vany. It was here that Mr. Park began to study the Mandingo language, which is generally understood throughout this part of Africa. In this commendable pursuit he received important assistance from Dr. Laidley: and, anxious to obtain some knowledge of the country he had undertaken to visit, he was referred to certain traders, called slatees, a class of free black merchants who are much respected in this part of Africa, who come from the interior countries with enslaved negroes for sale. Mr. Park, however, soon discovered that their accounts were not to be regarded, as they palpably contradicted each other in the most important particulars; and all of them endeavoured to dissuade him from prosecuting his design. He was therefore the more anxious to ascertain the truth from his own personal observations.

…otanical amusements; devoting the rainy days …e exercise of drawing plants, &c. in his cham-

…hile he was labouring under this grievous …dy, in a climate extremely gloomy at that …n of the year, when the black clouds dis…e their collected waters in torrents; while …cating heats oppress by day, and the night …ndered hideous by the croaking of myriads of …, the shrill cry of the Jackall, the hyæna's …ious howl, the dismal concert is only inter…ed by the roar of the most tremendous thunder. …the care and attention of Dr. Laidley in some …ee alleviated Mr. Park's distress, and the …y hours were beguiled by his company and …ing conversation.

…o romantic scenery delights the eye of the …eller in surveying this extensive level country, …rowned with numerous woods; a gloomy uni…ity admits no pleasing landscape: but if nature …been sparing in her charms of variety, she has …owed the more important blessings of fertility …abundance: a moderate degree of cultivation …uces a luxuriant harvest, furnishing more …a sufficiency of corn for the consumption of …espective inhabitants; the cattle are plentifully …plied from the pastures, and the rivers of Gam…and Walli abound with delicious fish*.

…he domestic animals resemble those of Europe. …he are found in the woods, but their flesh is …esteemed, the prejudices of the Mahometans …ng possibly spread among the pagans. Ante…s are also dispersed in the woods, which afford …ious venison. Poultry of all kinds, the turkey …epted, are extremely plentiful. The Mandingo …ntry also produces several wild animals, as the …ther, the hyæna, and the elephant; the latter …which, these Africans have never attempted to …ugate to their service, for which they are so eminently qualified. The negroes sometimes destroy the elephants by fire-arms, and hunt them down in hopes of being rewarded by their teeth; a valuable acquisition which they barter for other articles from the Europeans. As an additional reward, their flesh supplies them with food, of which they are extremely fond.

The ass is the only beast of burden in these territories: in agriculture no animals are required: the plough is unknown among them; the sole instrument employed in husbandry is the hoe; and slaves are the only labourers.

A surprising swell of the Gambia occurred on the 6th of October, when the water rose fifteen feet above the high-water mark of the tide. It, however, gradually, but not regularly, subsided; sometimes sinking upwards of a foot in twenty four hours. By the beginning of November the river acquired its former level, and submitted to its accustomed ebb and flow. A material change in the atmosphere succeeded the abatement of the flood, and Mr. Park experienced a perfect restoration of his health. Conceiving it a proper season for travelling, as the natives had completed their harvest, and provisions were abundant, he thought a moment was not to be lost, and resolved upon a speedy departure. Dr. Laidley being at this time engaged at Jonkakonda, Mr. Park wrote to him to desire he would use his interest to procure him the first caravan; that he should leave the Gambia for the interior country; and also to procure for him a horse and two asses. Discovering, however, that he had been trifled with by the Slatees, and that their promises were not to be regarded, he declined entering into any positive engagement with them; and, the time of their departure being also uncertain, he resolved to avail himself of the dry season, and proceed without them. Dr. Laidley approved of his de-

…Rice, and Indian wheat, is plentifully produced here, …several varieties of the holcus: and the gardens in the …ity of the towns and villages, afford a multiplicity of …ent plants, as onions, cavalances, yams, cassavi, ground …pompions, and gourds. Cotton and indigo are also …rated in these situations; the former supplying them …clothing, and the latter forming a most excellent blue …r, to be used in dyeing.

…the preparation of their corn for food, a large wooden …r, called a paloon, is used in bruising the seed till it is …ted from the husk. It is then judiciously exposed to …nd, to procure a more perfect separation, and clear it …ly from the chaff. The corn is then beaten into the …tence of meal, and variously dressed, according to the …iling custom of different countries. But, among the nations of Gambia, it is formed into a kind of pudding called *kouskous*, as follows: after moistening the flour with water, it is completely stirred or shook about in a large calabash, till it assumes the appearance of sago: two vessels are then luted together, either with cow-dung, or a sort of paste made of meal and water; the lower vessel usually containing also some animal food and water, the steam of which ascends through several holes, which are perforated through the bottom vessel for that purpose; the composition, thus softened, was esteemed in all the countries which were visited by Mr. Park. Though this is the usual method of making a pudding, other modes of cookery are adopted, of which corn is the principal ingredient. Vegetable food is abundant, but the natives are sparingly supplied with animal food, though it is not absolutely withheld from them.

termination

termination, and offered him every accommodation in his power to contribute to his ease and safety.

Mr. Park having thus come to a resolution of taking leave of his hospitable friend, and being under the necessity of remaining at Pisania, he embraced that opportunity of giving a concise description of the people who inhabit the borders of the Gambia.

The natives of these countries may properly be divided into four general classes: the Jaloffs, the Feloops, the Foulahs, and the Mandingoes: among all these, the religion of Mahomet has made considerable progress. The body of the people, however, whether free or enslaved, persevere in maintaining the blind and innocent superstitions of their ancestors, and are denominated infidels by the Mahometans.

The Jaloffs are war-like, vigorous, and martial, inhabiting a considerable part of the tract between the river Senegal and the Mandingo states on the Gambia. Though extremely black, they have not that protuberance of lips, nor that depression of the nose, so frequently prevalent among the Africans: they are therefore considered by the white traders to be superior in their persons to any negroes in the surrounding continent. They have divided their territory into several independent kingdoms, whose chieftains are often hostile to their neighbours. In their manners and government they resemble the Mandingoes, more than any other nation, but they excel them greatly in the manufacture of cotton cloth. Their language is comprehensible and significant.

The Feloops are gloomy, and seldom forget an injury, frequently transmitting their quarrels to posterity with the most vindictive malice. A son considers it his duty to be the avenger of his deceased father's injuries, and succeeds to all his animosities. If a man is slain in any of these sudden contests, which frequently occur at their feasts, when the whole party is inebriated by their essence of honey, the eldest of his sons, if more than one exists, procures the sandals of his departed father, which he wears once a year, on the aniversary of the tragic accident, till a proper opportunity for revenge presents itself. But, notwithstanding this fierce and unrelenting disposition they possess some excellent qualities, being singularly grateful to their benefactors, and faithful to those who place a confidence in their integrity. British property of great value, has frequently been left at Vintain for a considerable time, under the care of the Feloops, who have uniform manifested the strictest honesty and punctuali

The Foulahs, who reside near the Gamb delight in a pastoral life, and have introduc themselves into all the kingdoms on the windwa coast, where, by paying a tribute for their land they follow the occupation of husbandmen herdsmen. Not having had many opportuniti during his residence at Pisania, Mr. Park thoug proper to omit further particulars respecting the people, till he had acquired a more perfect histo of them. Their complexions are tawny, the hair silky, and their features pleasing.

The Mandingoes, who derive their name fro the republic of Manding, are the most numero of all the natives in the African interior, a their language is generally understood and spok by the inhabitants. They are mild, affable, a obliging: the men are tall, robust, and capa of laborious employments; the women are viv cious, docile, and agreeable. The dress of bo sexes consists of cotton cloth, manufactured b themselves: that of the men is a kind of loo frock, with drawers descending below the calf the leg; white cotton caps on their heads, a sandals on their feet, complete their masculi attire. The waists of the women are encirc with two pieces of cloth, of the length of abo six feet, and the breadth of three; one of the reaching to the ancles, serves as a kind of pe coat; and the other forms a sort of upper ro and is thrown negligently and loosely over t neck and shoulders. This is the general mode dressing among the natives of these districts; b the head-dresses of the women vary with t caprice of national fashion. In the countr near the Gambia, a kind of bandage, c *jalla*, decorates the forehead which it encircle another taste prevails in Bondou, where a sm plate of gold is worn on the middle of the fo head, secured with strings of beads. At Lu mair and Kaerta, the hair is artificially raised an immoderate height, and decorated with coral, brought from the Red Sea by pilgrims their return from Mecca. This African metho of adorning the head was adopted by the Engli ladies about half a century ago. The ladies Kasson display their ingenuity in tastefully orn menting their heads with sea-shells.

The government of all the Mandingo states monarchial, but the power is subject to certa limitations. On important occasions, the prin

n or elders are convened, by whose advice conduct must be regulated, and without concurrence they cannot engage in war, or de a pacific treaty. A chief magiſtrate, bears the title of Alkaid, is established in town, to preserve decorum, levy duties on ers, and preside in courts exercising local ction. The proceedings of their courts are nly conducted in the open air, being com- of free elders of the town, who are deno- ed Palavers.

e negroes having no written language, ally decide according to *ancient customs*, in imitating the Common Law of England; nce the rapid progress of the Mahometan on among them, they have admitted, with religious tenets, many of the civil institu- of the prophet. Where the koran is not iently explicit, recourse is had to *al sharra*, d of exposition and digest of the Maho- n laws*.

habitations of the Mandingoes are small commodious; a conical roof, composed of oo cane, thatched with grass, is usually orted by a circular wall of mud of the height out four feet. Such are the palaces of the , and the hovels of the slaves. Their stic furniture is proportioned to their archi- re: a hurdle, sustained by several upright s, about two feet from the ground, on which t, or some skins are placed, forms a bed for ccupiers to repose on; some earthen pots for culinary purposes, a jar for water, a few wooden bowls and calabashes, and a couple of low stools compose the rest†.

It may be necessary to observe here, that these remarks on the natives of this country are chiefly applicable to those of a *free condition*, and constitute no more than about a fourth of the inhabitants at large. The remainder are slaves by birth, or occupation, who derive no consolation from the idea of a future emancipation; and are employed in the cultivation of the land, in attending the cattle, and other servile offices. Mr. Park, however, was informed, that the Mandingo master cannot deprive his slave of life, nor dispose of him to a stranger; but this degree of protection extends no farther than to a domestic slave: captives taken in battle, or condemned to slavery for crimes or insolvency, are wholly in the power of their owners. Sometimes indeed it happens, when no ships are on the coast, that a humane master incorporates his purchased slaves with his domestics, thus conveying to the children, if not the parents, the privileges of the native class.

The Portuguese were the first Europeans who established a factory on the Gambia; after which it was successively possessed by the French and the English, by the latter of whom the trade was wholly engrossed; but was afterwards almost annihilated by laying it open to the general commerce of Europe. Only two or three annual ships are now supported by this commerce, and the value of British exports does not exceed

he frequency of appeal to written laws, with which gan natives were unacquainted, occaſioned the in- ion of *palavers*, or profeſſional pleaders, who were ted to appear in behalf of the reſpective contending , in the ſame manner as in the Engliſh courts of law. Mr. Park was at Piſania, a cauſe was liti- d which ed the Mahometan lawyers with an excellent op- nity of displaying their legal abilities.—An aſs, the rty of a Serawoolli negro, had forcibly entered a f corn belonging to a Mandingo, and committed great r and devaſtation. The proprietor, having detected imal in the fact, drew his knife and inſtantly cut his The Serawoolli called a *palaver*, or in European commenced an action to recover the damages he had ed by the loſs of his aſs, which he declared was very erable. The defendant acknowledged he had ſlain ast, but pleaded a *ſet-off*, inſiſting that he ſuffered by imal's ravages, a loſs as conſiderable as the ſum de- d for the unfortunate treſpaſſer. To aſcertain this s found ſo extremely difficult, the cauſe having been d ſo intricate by the chicanery of the learned advo- hat after a hearing of three days, the court broke up without making a decree, and a ſecond palaver was recommended.

† A plurality of wives being allowed to every man of free condition, it is thought eſſential to accommodate the ladies with a ſeparate habitation, ſuppoſing altercations would frequently ariſe through the jealouſy of the ladies who partook of the endearments of the huſband. All places of this deſcription, belonging to one maſter, are incloſed with a ſort of wicker fence, formed of ſplit bamboo, and named a Surk. Several of theſe Surks, having narrow paſſages between them, compoſe a town; though in theſe erections no regard is had to regularity. It ſeems, however, to be an invariable rule to place the front-door to the ſouth-weſt, to admit the ſalutary breeze from the ocean. In every large town, a ſtage called the Bentang is erected, compoſed of interwoven canes, and generally ſheltered from the ſun by the ſhade of a large tree, which anſwers the purpoſe of a Town Hall. Here juſtice is adminiſtered, and public affairs tranſacted; and here the indolent aſſemble to enjoy the fumes of their tobacco, and collect the intelligence of the day. In the principal towns the Mahometans have alſo a moſque, appropriated to the celebration of their worſhip.

twenty thousand pounds. France and Denmark have still a small share in this traffic, and the Americans, by way of experiment, have lately sent a few vessels to the Gambia.

The European exports to the Gambia, chiefly consist of broad cloth, Manchester and India manufactures, cotton-caps, ammunition, iron ware, fire-arms, glass beads, amber, spirituous liquors, and some other trifling articles. For these are taken in exchange, gold-dust, ivory, bees-wax, hides, and slaves. Though the latter may be considered as the most considerable, including the annual purchase of all nations, the number of them seldom exceeds one thousand. The greater part of these unfortunate creatures are brought from the remote inland countries in periodical caravans, to be distributed among the neighbouring villages near the coast, where they are secured till the arrival of a slave-ship, or till they are purchased by the black traders. In the mean time these miserable wretches, who are unacquainted with the language of the maritime districts, are kept constantly fettered, and laboriously employed by their temporary task-masters, by whom they are as scantily fed as they are otherwise unnaturally treated. The price is generally regulated by the eagerness or indifference of the purchasers; but a young healthy male from sixteen years of age to twenty-five, will produce eighteen or twenty pounds to his owner.

Exclusive of their human merchandise, the Slatees supply the natives with a commodity called *shea-toulou*, an article extracted from the kernel of a nut: it perfectly resembles butter, and is an admirable substitute for that excellent food. It enters into the composition of the provisions which are appropriated to domestic uses, and is therefore coveted with avidity. They also supply the inhabitants with native iron, frankincense, and odoriferous gums. In return for which they receive considerable quantities of salt*, an article not easily procured in this part of the country, as our traveller too frequently experienced. The inland natives are, however, occasionally supplied with it by the Moors, who procure it from pits in the Great Desert, and are gratified in return with cotton, cloth, and slaves†.

SECTION II.

The Author proceeds to Jinday—Story related by a Mandingo Negro—Proceeds to Medina—Interview with the King—Saphies or Charms—Description of Mumbo Jumbo—Wrestling Match—Crosses the Wilderness to Fallika—Inhabitants of—Proceeds for Fatteconda—Crosses the Neri—Interview with Almami, Sovereign of Bondou—Visits the King, arrives, &c.

MR. PARK took his departure from Pisania, and the hospitable mansion of Dr. Laidley, on the 2d of December, 1785, having been furnished with a horse for himself, and two asses for his interpreter and servant. The former, who was a negro, spoke the English and Mandingo languages, was a native of this part of Africa, and had received the name of Johnson. Dr. Laidley had also supplied him with a negro boy of his own, named Demba, a sprightly youth who was also acquainted with the Mandingo tongue, as well as that of the Serawoollies: to induce him to behave well, the doctor promised him his freedom on his return, if a favourable report should be made of his fidelity and conduct.

* Dr. Shaw, in his travels through Barbary, informs us, that salt-pits are frequent in the desert, and the more northern parts of Africa: and the same author, in his description of Algiers, near the coast, says, "five miles to the southward of Arzew is a large space of ground full of salt-pits, which in any other country, where commerce was understood, would bring in a considerable revenue to government. These salt-pits take up an area of about six miles in compass, and are environed with mountains. In winter the whole space appears like a lake; but in summer, the water being exhaled by the heat of the sun, the salt left behind is crystallized, and dug up with amazing facility." Salt is the staple article of the trade carried on by the Moors with the Negroes.

† In bartering one commodity for another, many inconveniences have arisen from the absence of coined money, to adjust the balance precisely between the respective articles; in consequence of which the natives of the interior make use of small shells, which they denominated *kowries*. From their early intercourse with Europeans, iron attracted their notice in a very particular manner, it being so essential an article in husbandry, and in forming the instruments of war; it therefore soon became the medium by which the value of all other commodities was estimated.

r tourist did not incumber himself with age. It consisted principally of provisions o days, some changes of linen, a pocket nt, a magnetic compass, a thermometer, owling pieces, an umbrella, two pair of , some tobacco, a small quantity of beads, A freeman named Madiboo, with two , and Tamé, the late blacksmith to Dr. ley, accompanied him on foot, preceded by respective animals. Thus, our traveller had s than six attendants, all of whom had been t to regard him with the most profound ct. The doctor himself, two of his friends, several of their domestics, escorted him on urney the two first days in grand procession. arrived at Jinday on the evening of the day, and were accommodated at the house of gro lady, whose sable charms had formerly vated Mr. Hewett, an European trader. this amour the lady had acquired the urable appellation of *Seniora*. In the even- hey repaired to an adjoining village belonging emaffoo, the most opulent of the Gambia rs. Thinking it a particular honour con- d upon him by this unexpected visit, he pre- d them with a fat bullock, which was im- iately slaughtered, and, part of it being ed, furnished a delightful evening's repast. he Negroes sup at a late hour, some amuse- was thought necessary, to prevent a kind situde too often experienced by those who in anxious expectation of some truly gratify- njoyment; some stories were indirectly re- ed from a Mandingo, who very politely lied with the intimation, in the following or r language *.

"A long time ago," said the narrator, "the le of Doomasansa were extremely annoyed lion that nightly robbed them of some of cattle; by a constant repetition of these edations, the natives of that country having red great injuries from the rapacity of this ious monster, a party of them formed a re- ion to hunt him down, and put a period to normities. They accordingly proceeded arch of the common enemy, and discovered a thicket where he had attempted to con-

ceal himself. An expert marksman instantly firing on him, brought him to the ground, while he was springing from the thicket towards his assailants. The animal, though much wounded, displayed such evident tokens of vigour and revenge, that no one dared singly to attack him; a conversation was therefore held, whether it would not reflect more honour on their prowess, to take the atrocious enemy alive. Many different plans were proposed among the multitude of counsellors; at length, an old man submissively requested them to attend to a scheme which he should take the liberty to propose. Strip the roof of a house of its thatch, and convey the bamboo frame, (well secured together by thongs) and throw it over the lion; but if, on your approach, he should endeavour to spring upon you, you need only let down the roof upon yourselves, and fire at the animal through the rafters."

"This speech had the effect that might be expected; a hut was instantly dismantled of its covering, and the hunters, supporting the proposed den on their shoulders, marched with great intrepidity towards the wounded malefactor. But the beast, having now in a great degree recovered his strength, assumed a ferocious countenance, and the intimidated hunters, instead of proceeding any further, resolved to provide for their own safety by covering themselves with the roof; but the business was conducted in such an injudicious manner, that both the beast and his pursuers were taken in the same trap, and the lion devoured his antagonists at his leisure, to the great mortification and astonishment of the people of Doomasansa. The inhabitants of this place are, at this day, so much ashamed of this transaction, that the bare mention of catching *a lion alive*, incurs their heaviest displeasure."

On the following day Mr. Park took his leave of Dr. Laidley and his friends, and rode slowly into the woods. Being now in the midst of a boundless forest, the inhabitants of which were wholly uncivilized, he began to meditate on the perils to which he must inevitably expose himself. These considerations cast a gloom over his mind, and while he was ruminating on his

* ough these stories bear some analogy to those in the n Nights Entertainments, they are generally of a more us turn.

mode of amusement is not peculiar to the Negroes, but has been resorted to by all nations, previous to the extensive circulation of literature; but among the indolent and feeble Africans, no great intellectual or moral exertions can be expected.

fate,

fate, he was roused from his reverie by a body of people, who abruptly informed him, that he must either pay them the usual customs, or accompany them to the king of Walli. After endeavouring to convince them that the object of his journey was different from that of trade, and therefore he was not amenable to taxation like the Saltees, he soon experienced that his arguments were ineffectual, and prudently complied with their demand: he accordingly delivered four bars of tobacco into their hands, declaring it for the king's use; immediately after which he was permitted to proceed to a village near Kootacunda, where he passed the night. On the 4th of December, he passed Kootacunda, the last town in the kingdom of Walli, and stopped to pay customs at a village adjoining. On the subsequent day Mr. Park reached Medina, which is the king of Woollis's capital. The dominions of this sovereign are bounded by the Walli, west, and the Gambia on the west and south; by the little river Walli and Bondou, on the north, and north-east; and by the Sirubani wilderness on the east*.

Medina†, at which our traveller was now arrived, is the capital of the kingdom, a large town, consisting of about a thousand houses, fortified in the African style by a surrounding high wall, composed of clay, with an exterior defence of pointed stakes and thorny bushes; but this boundary seems rapidly decaying, and the outward fence has suffered materially from the petty depredations of house-wives, who pillage the stakes for fuel. Obtaining a lodging at the house of one of the king's near relations, Mr. Park was cautioned, on his introduction to his Majesty, n to presume to *shake hands with him*, it being u usual, it was alledged, to allow this liberty strangers. Thus instructed, he waited on Jett the king, requesting his permission to pass t Bondou. He was the same venerable person of whom Major Houghton made such honour mention in the account transmitted by him. T sovereign was seated before the door of his humb palace, while several men and women, arrang on each side of him, were employed in clappi their hands and singing. After saluting him spectfully, the traveller acquainted him with t object of his visit. The monarch courteously plied, that he would not only permit him to p ceed, but he would also offer up prayers for safety. On this declaration one of Mr. Par attendants, to manifest his sense of the kin courtesy, began to sing an Arabic song; at ev pause of which the king and his retinue, path cally answered, *Amen, Amen*, solemnly striki their hands against their foreheads. The k also assured him, that a guide should be rea on the following day, to conduct him to t frontier of Bondou. Having taken his leave, sent the king an order upon Dr. Laidley, three gallons o rum, in return for which he ceived a large ntity of provisions.

Early in th ning, on the 6th of Decemb our traveller re-visited the rustic palace, to enqu if a guide might then be permitted to attend h He found Jetta, his majesty, seated on a bullock hide before a large fire‡. Jetta received visitant with a benevolent countenance, but e nestly entreated him to relinquish his intentio

* The country is generally woody, and the towns are usually seated in valleys surrounded by cultivated spots, whose produce affords an adequate supply to the inhabitants. The soil is abundantly fertile, excepting near the tops of the ridges, where stunted shrubs proclaim its barrenness. The natives are plentifully supplied with esculent vegetables, tobacco, cotton, &c. while the surrounding country is universally covered with impenetrable woods and extensive forests. The natives, who are Mandingoes, consist of two religious sects; the Mahometans, who are called *Bushreens*; and the Pagans, who are indiscriminately known by the appellation of *Kafirs* and *Sonakees;* the former signifying *unbelievers*, and the latter *lovers of strong liquors*. The Pagans are much more numerous than the Mahometans, and the management of the state is under their guidance. The converts to the Koran are indeed consulted on business of public importance; but the executive power is vested exclusively in the hands of their *Mansa*, or King, and the great officers of state by him appointed; but, in every class, particular respect is paid to the authority of aged men. the death of a sovereign, the eldest son, if at the year discretion, succeeds to the regal authority. If there i son of a competent age, a meeting of the great men is c vened, and the late king's nearest relation is exalted to government, in his own right, to the exclusion of the min if with the approbation of the council. The expences the government are defrayed by tributes from the people, by taxes on travellers, on goods conveyed across the coun Those who pass from the Gambia towards the interior, the customs in European merchandize; on their return th pay in African; which are regularly demanded and collect in every town.

† In the Arabic, a city, a common name among t Negroes, having been borrowed from the Mahometans.

‡ Africans are sensible of the smallest variation in the t perature of the air, and often feel cold when an Europea oppressed with heat.

assur

g him that Major Houghton lost his life in
ourse of this journey; adding, that if our
er exposed his person in the same unknown
y, it was much to be apprehended that he
meet with a similar fate. He said the
of the eastern country were not like those
olli, who were acquainted with white men,
pected by them; but the eastern inhabitants
ever seen a man of that colour, and would
nly destroy the first they beheld. The tender
ude of the king demanded the warmest
ude of Mr. Park: he thanked him for his
onate concern, but professed a resolution to
ed, notwithstanding all the dangers that
present themselves. The sovereign shook
ad, and desisted from further importunity;
ng the guide to hold himself in readiness.
onductor appearing about two o' clock, our
t traveller bade a final adieu to the venerable
ign; and, after three hours moderate riding,
d at Konjour, a small village, where he and
ite intended to repose for the night. With
beads they purchased a fine sheep, which
ttendants killed with all the ceremonies
ribed by their religion. Part of the animal
g been dressed, an altercation arose between
f the negroes and the interpreter, respecting
rns. The former claimed them as his per-
, he having performed the office of a butcher:
on controverted the claim. To adjust this
e, the traveller gave a horn to each of the
nts. Enquiring further into the particulars
respecting the proper disposal of these horns, it appeared that they were held in the greatest estimation as portable sheaths, or cases for preserving certain charms or amulets called *aphies**, which the negroes constantly wear about their persons.

These saphies are sentences from the Koran, written on small pièces of paper, which are sold by the priests, like Popish indulgences, to the natives, who suppose them to possess virtues of the superlative kind. By some they are worn as preservatives against the bite of snakes or alligators; by others to protect their persons against hostile weapons; others to prevent or cure diseases. Some ridiculously imagine that hunger and thirst may be prevented, by the possession of these wonderful papers. They are also supposed to conciliate the favour of superior powers. Even the art of writing, in this part of the continent, is considered as bordering upon magic; and they rely not, in this case, on the doctrines of the prophet, but on the arts of the magician.

Departing from Konjour, and passing through Malla, Mr. Park arrived at Kolor, a town of some magnitude, on the 8th: near the entrance of which Mr. Park saw a fantastic kind of dress hanging from a bough. It was formed of the bark of a tree which the natives informed him belonged to *Mumbo Jumbo*†.

Leaving Kolor on the 9th, Mr. Park proceeded through Tambacunda, and on the 11th arrived at Koojar, the frontier town of Woolli, near Bondou. King Jetta's guide being now destined

---

milar charms, or amulets, are common in other parts ca.

dulity, respecting magic, has ever prevailed in ig- ages and countries, not only among the uninformed, en in learned and civilized nations, and frequently the learned themselves. Fear appears to be the minant passion among the Negroes, their saphies are re principally applied towards the objects of that . In Greece, Rome, and other European countries, rafi and magic take a much wider range, and seek ls for gratifying variety of passions. A Thessalian tress not only employed charms against the bite of ns and vipers, objects of fear; they also used them to m their rivals the objects of their love.

his whimsical exhibition, which is common in the go towns, was invented by the Pagan natives to keep ives in awe; among whom, as the number is un- quarrels frequently arise to such a height that the can no longer preserve tranquillity in his household. cases, *Mumbo Jumbo* is called in; to whose decision ican ladies must invariably submit. This strange

arbiter, who is generally suspected to be the husband himself, or a friend of his instructed for this purpose (thus disguised and armed with a rod of authority) announces his approach by dismal screams in the neighbouring woods; and when day-light is fled, and "darkness visible" presents itself, the tremendous judge enters the town, and proceeds to the Bentang, where the inhabitants have assembled. This ceremony affords no gratification to the women; the person in disguise being unknown to them, every married female suspects she may be the principal person in the pantomime. When summoned, however, they dare not refuse to make their appearance, and the rites are commenced with songs and dances, to amuse the company till the hour of midnight, when the culprit is seized by the implacable Mumbo. The devoted victim is instantly stripped naked, tied to a post, and unmercifully scourged with *Mumbo's* rod, amidst the deriding shouts of the assembly; and it is equally strange and true, that the rest of the women were more outrageous than the men, in pouring forth their exclamations against their offending sister. Day-light at length put a period to this humiliating scene.

to return, our traveller rewarded him for his trouble with some amber. Being informed that it was sometimes difficult to procure water in the wilderness, he engaged three elephant-hunters to serve him in the double capacity of guides and water-bearers. The inhabitants of Kooja beheld the white man with surprise and veneration, and civilly invited him to a wrestling match in the evening in the Bentang. At this exhibition, which is very common in all these countries, the spectators formed a ring round the wrestlers, who were athletic and active young men, full of emulation, and accustomed to such contests. Being stripped to a short pair of drawers, and having their skin anointed with oil, the combatants approached each other on their hands and knees, parrying for some time; till at length one of them sprang forward, and grasped the knee of his antagonist. A great degree of judgment and dexterity were then displayed, but the contest was principally decided by superior strength. The music of a drum gave considerable animation to the wrestlers. After this grand display of power and agility, a dance commenced, in which the performers were distinguished by a number of little bells, fastened round their arms and legs, and in this amusement the motions of the dancers were also regulated by the drum. The same instrument of music keeps order among the spectators, by imitating the sound of certain arbitrary sentences, which is generally understood among them.

In the evening Mr. Park was presented with a liquor which much resembled the British beverage of strong beer; and, on enquiring into its composition, was informed that it was produced from corn, which had previously experienced the operation of malting. A root producing a grateful bitter, supplied the place of hops.

Here it may be necessary to observe, that, when our traveller engaged the three elephant-hunters in his service, he paid each of them three bars in advance. In the morning of the 12th one of these negroes absconded, with the money he had received from our traveller in part of wages; when, to prevent the desertion of the other two, he caused their calabashes to be filled. Before he had travelled a mile, his attendants halted to prepare a saphie to insure them a safe and prosperous journey. A stone was therefore spit upon, and thrown on the road, whilst they muttered a few incoherent sentences. Having repeated this operation, three times, the negroes confidently proceeded. Our tourist's surprise was next excited by the appearance of a large tree, called by the natives *neema taba*. It was decorated with innumerable rags of cloth, which travellers across the wilderness had at different times fastened to the branches*.

Tallika, which is the frontier town of Bondou towards Woolli, is principally the residence of Mahometan Foulahs, who, by their great traffic in ivory and provisions with travellers, acquire great affluence, and live in elegance and ease. The king of Bondou has an officer stationed here, whose employment consists in giving early intimation of the caravans that arrive, which are taxed according to the number of loaded asses that accompany them. Beneath his roof, our traveller accepted a temporary accommodation, and was attended by him to Fateconda, the king's residence, for which our traveller rewarded him with five bars. From hence Mr. Park dispatched a letter to Dr. Laidley by the master of a caravan on his route to the Gambia. This caravan con-

* This practice was perhaps at first adopted to inform the traveller that water was near the spot, but the custom is now so prevalent that hardly a person passes without bestowing his tributary rag. Mr. Park followed the example, and suspended a piece of cloth on one of the boughs. In Ireland, and the northern parts of Britain, a similar custom prevails; and rags are there deposited round the borders of the walls.

A more important object now demanded their attention; a supply of water being necessary, our traveller dispatched one of the guides in search of that essential article, while the asses were unladen and refreshed with provender: a pool was found, but the liquid it contained was thick and muddy; and near it were discovered the remnants of a fire, recently extinguished; clearly manifesting that it had been lately visited either by travellers or banditti. The attendants apprehending the latter, and supposing the robbers were at no considerable distance, Mr. Park proceeded to another watering-place, where he arrived late in the evening, after the fatigue of a long day's journey. In this situation he kindled a large fire, and lay down at more than the distance of a gun-shot from any bush, surrounded by his cattle; the negroes agreeing to keep alternate watch to prevent surprise. As soon as day-light appeared, the calabashes were filled at the pool, and the whole company set out for Tallika, the first town in Bondou, where they arrived about eleven in the forenoon.

Mr. Park gratefully acknowledges that he was every where well received by the natives, and that the fatigues of the day were generally compensated by the indulgences of the evening. Even the African mode of living, which was at first unpleasant to him, he began at length to be reconciled to, having conquered many of those prejudices which originally at first appeared insurmountable.

sisted

sisted of five asses laden with ivory. On the road from Tallika to the royal mansion, a quarrel arose between two of the suite, one of whom was a smith, and the other his companion; and many opprobrious epithets were liberally bestowed upon one of them. This language to an African, is considered as a greater offence than a blow; and consequently it enraged the other to such a degree, that he drew his cutlass on the calumniator; and would doubtless have wounded him, had not Mr. Park desired the smith to be silent, and warned the other that if he again presumed to draw his weapon, or assault any of his fellow travellers, he should consider him as a robber and an assassin. He was quieted by this threat, and the company marched on till they arrived at a kind of assemblage of small villages, scattered over a fertile plain. At Ganado, one of these rustic hamlets, they halted for the night, where a comfortable supper, and mutual presents restored tranquillity to the late contending parties. An itinerant *singing-man* presented himself, who amused them with entertaining stories, and performed some pleasant airs, by breathing on a bow-string, accompanied by a stroke with a stick *.

At day-break on the 15th, Mr. Park's fellow travellers took leave of him, pouring forth fervent prayers for his preservation, and crossed the Neriko, a respectable branch of the Gambia. The declivities of its banks were covered with *mimosas*; and fine muscles, a shell-fish not eaten by the natives, were observeable in the mud. To avoid the fervour of the meredian sun, they reposed two hours beneath a spreading tree, and were regaled with pounded corn and milk. In the evening they arrived at Koorkarany, where the smith had some relations, and where they continued two whole days. This is a Mahometan town containing a mosque, and encircled with a high wall. A number of Arabic manuscripts were here shewn to Mr. Park, particularly the copy of a book called *Al Shara*. A priest explained to him in Mandingo, the most remarkable passages; and he, in return for his civility, agreeably surprised him with a sight of Richardson's Arabic grammar.

Leaving Koorkarany, he accompanied a young man who was going to Fattaconda for salt, and at night arrived at Dooggi, a small village three miles distant from Koorkarany, where he purchased a fine bullock for six little stones of amber. Departing from Dooggi the following morning, a number of Foulahs and others joined him, which, added to his former associates, formed a considerable body, and dissipated all apprehensions of plunder from the inhabitants of the woods. One of the asses now becoming refractory, the following singular method was adopted to render him obedient. The negroes cut a forked stick, and putting the forked part into the animal's mouth, like the bit of a bridle, tied the two smaller parts together above his head, leaving the lower part of the stick long enough to strike the ground, if the ass should attempt to put down his head. Finding the inconvenience that attended his obstinacy, the ass afterwards carried his neck in a proper position, and quietly proceeded with his drivers. Though this contrivance produced a ludicrous appearance, it perfectly answered the purpose for which it was intended.

In the evening they arrived at Buggill, a small village, and passed the night in a wretched hovel, where their bed consisted of a bundle of corn-stalks, and their evening's repast was as little gratifying as the scene of their repose. The wells here are deep and curiously contrived. Proceeding from hence they came to a large village, where they intended to remain during the night. Many of the female inhabitants were dressed in a thin French gauze, extremely well calculated to display their persons to advantage. Their behaviour however did not correspond with the elegance of their drapery, for they were extremely rude and troublesome, surrounding the travellers in great numbers, begging for amber, beads, &c. They tore Mr. Park's coat, forcibly cut the buttons from his boy's clothes, and were proceeding to other extremities; to avoid which he instantly mounted his horse, and proceeded on his journey.

Entering Soobrudooka in the evening, his company then consisting of fourteen persons, Mr. Park purchased a sheep and a quantity of corn for supper. After regaling themselves with this repast, they all passed an uncomfortable night, by sleeping in a heavy dew. On the following day, about noon, they arrived at a considerable village on the banks of Falemé, a rapid rocky river. The circumjacent country, however, was beautiful and fertile fields of rich grain, called by the natives *manio*, but of a different species from that cultivated on the Gambia, delight the eye of the beholder. It grows, in the dry season, in great abundance, and

* These are travelling bards, who sing extempore songs in praise of their employers.

and is reaped in January; botanical writers name it *holcus cernuus*. The inhabitants were attentively employed in procuring fish from the rapid stream, by a variety of methods. The largest were taken in long baskets of split cane, placed in the midst of an impetuous current, formed by a ridge or wall of stone built almost across the stream, leaving certain places open, through which the water rushed, and prevented the fish from returning after they had once entered. The smaller sort were easily caught in cotton handnets, manufactured by the people, and used by them with astonishing dexterity. The latter species of this fish resemble sprats in size and form; and their usual method of preparing them for sale is to pound them in wooden mortars, and then expose them in heaps to the sun, that they may be dried by his benign influence. Though the smell of this preparation is not very inviting, it is thought a great luxury in the Moorish countries to the north of Senegal. A piece of it is usually cut off by the natives, and dissolved in boiling water, after which they mix it with their *kouscous*.

Returning to the village after this excursion, to survey the fishery, Mr. Park received a visit from an old Moorish Shereef, in order to bestow his blessing upon him, and request some paper to write saphies upon. Finding that this petitioner had seen Major Houghton in the kingdom of Kaarta, he gave him a few sheets of paper, that he might indulge his superstition. Proceeding northward along the banks, Mr. Park arrived at Mayemow in the evening; when the hospitable master of the town presented him with a bullock, and the favour was compensated by a present of beads and amber. Crossing the river, they arrived at Fatteconda, the capital of Bondou; in which he was politely accommodated by a respectable Slatee*. Soon after Mr. Park was respectfully conducted to the king, who expressed a desire of seeing him immediately, if he was not too much fatigued. Taking his interpreter with him, he instantly followed the messenger till they were out of town: thinking some imposition was intended, he asked the guide whither he was going? receiving a satisfactory answer, he followed his Majesty's servant to a large tree, which served as a canopy to a man who sat beneath it on a mat. When he advanced, the king desired him to come and sit by him. After hearing what he had to say, he only asked Mr. Park if he wished to become a purchaser of any gold or slaves; being answered in the negative, he seemed astonished, but desired he would come to him again in the evening, that he might be supplied with some provisions.

The name of this prince was Almami, and he was a Pagan. Our traveller was told that he had acted unkindly towards Major Houghton, and had caused him to be plundered. His behaviour to Mr. Park, at the first interview, though he shewed him more civility than he expected, did not remove the fears he entertained, that some improper measure might be taken, now he was wholly in his power. Thinking a handsome present might be advantageously employed in this dilemma, he took with him in the evening some tobacco, amber, an umbrella, and a cannister of gun-powder. Supposing his bundles would be searched, he concealed some articles in the roof of the hut where he lodged, and put on his new blue coat that he might preserve it.

All the apartments of the royal family are surrounded by a lofty mud wall, which gives the whole an appearance of a kind of citadel; and the interior is separated into several distinct courts. At the first place of entrance, Mr. Park found the door guarded by a man standing with a musket on his shoulder, and the avenues remarkably intricate which led to the presence-chamber. When he entered the court in which the king resides, the guide and interpreter, according to custom, took off their sandals: the former pronouncing the king's name aloud, and repeating it till he was answered from within. Mr. Park found the monarch seated on a mat, attended by two of his officers: he repeated what he had before asserted, concerning the object of his journey; of the truth of which his Majesty intimated a doubt, declaring he thought it impossible that any man in his senses would undertake so dangerous a journey, merely to take a view of the country and its inhabitants †. Having deli-

* As there are no inns in Africa, strangers repair to the Bentang, till they are invited to accept of a lodging by some of the inhabitants.

† The same absence of curiosity appears in the islands of the Pacific Ocean, in the torrid latitude, at Ohaheite, the Friendly Islands, and others, visited by Captain Cook, and subsequent navigators. The same inertness of intellect is manifested by Jetta and the king of Bondou; the latter supposing the idea of travelling from curiosity as totally impossible.

vered his presents, which were graciously received, the umbrella gave infinite delight to his majesty; this he repeatedly furled and unfurled, to the admiration of himself and his attendants. He was particularly desirous of learning the use of this wonderful machine, which was minutely explained, to the satisfaction of the sable prince *.

Being again desired to attend the king, a little before sun-set, he presented to his Majesty some beads and writing paper, as an offering on taking leave. The king politely signified his approbation of the traveller's conduct, by a present of five drachms of gold, accompanied with a still greater act of kindness, that of suffering his baggage to pass *without examination*, and the owner to depart whenever he thought proper.

On the morning of the 23d, the travellers left Fatteconda, and soon arrived at a small village which was the boundary between Bondou and Kajaago. Hearing the road was dangerous for travellers, they resolved to proceed by night till they came to a more respectable part of the country. Two persons were instantly hired to conduct them through the woods; and, when it was supposed that the inhabitants were asleep, they set out. The stillness of the air, the howling of wild beasts, and the deep solitude of the forest, added solemnity to the scene. Not a syllable escaped the lips of any of them, but in a whisper; all were attentive, and seemingly sagacious. Some amused themselves by pointing at the wolves and hyænas, as they glided like shadows from thicket to thicket. On the following day they arrived at Joag, in the kingdom of Kajaaga.

In this place Mr. Park thought proper to introduce some account of Bondou † and its inhabitants. The boundaries of Bondou are Bambouk on the east; Tendu, and the Simbani wilderness, on the south; Woolli, on the south-west; Foota Torra, on the west; and Kajaaga on the north. This country is generally covered with a profusion of forest-scenery, but the land is more elevated than that of Woolli; in richness and fertility the soil is not inferior to any tract in Africa. From its central situation, between the Gambia and Senegal rivers, it is much resorted to by the Slatees, and others who come from the interior countries to purchase salt. The different branches of commerce are principally conducted by the Mandingoes and Serawoollies, who have settled in this part of the world, and trade with Moorish countries, bartering corn and cotton cloths for salt; which they again barter in other districts for iron, shea-butter, and gold-dust, they also deal in a variety of fragrant gums, with which the

* Mr. Park attempting to withdraw, the king desired him to stop a short time, to hear him pronounce an eulogium on white men. He then expatiated on our traveller's blue coat and yellow buttons, which seemed particularly to please his fancy. He concluded by requesting it as a present, and assuring him, that he would wear it on all public occasions; and acquaint every one who saw it of the white man's great liberality. The request of an African prince, in his own capital, has the force of a command: the coat was instantly taken off, and laid at his Majesty's feet, though it was the only good one that he was master of; in return, our traveller was presented with abundance of provisions, and the king requested his attendance in the morning.

Obedient to the will of the African prince, Mr. Park attended him the next day, when he found his Majesty confined to his bed by indisposition. He informed our tourist, that he thought the loss of a little blood would contribute to his recovery; but when that gentleman had tied up his arm, and displayed the lancet, his courage abated, and he was desired to postpone the operation. He then informed Mr. Park, that his women wished to see him, and begged he would indulge them with a visit. Being conducted to the court appropriated to the ladies, the whole seraglio surrounded him in an instant; some begging for physic, others for amber, and all of them requesting to experience the salutary effects of blood-letting. These females, amounting to about ten or twelve, were principally young and handsome; having their heads adorned with a profusion of gold and amber. They rallied Mr. Park, with some pleasantry, on the prominence of his nose, and the whiteness of his skin, both of which they declared were artificial: the first was produced by dipping him in milk when he was an infant; and the latter acquired its grotesque appearance by continual pinching. He admitted the propriety of their remarks upon his own deformity, and was lavish in his compliments on African beauty; praising the amiable glossy jet of their complexions, and the divine depression of their noses. Thinking him rather too extravagant in his commendations, they thought proper to check him in his career; assuring him that flattery (or *honey-mouth*, as they emphatically termed it) was not fashionable in Bondou. It is evident, however, that the ladies were not displeased, for they immediately presented him with some fish, and a jar of honey.

† Bondou is inhabited principally by Foulahs, a race of negroes who lead a wandering life, and employ themselves chiefly in the pasturage of cattle; there are, however, a great number of Mandingoes among them, by whom the trade of the country is chiefly conducted. The king was a Sonikee, or Pagan, like the king of Woolli, but he had adopted the Moorish name of Almami; and, with the name seems to have imbibed also somewhat of the Moorish disposition; for, though our traveller had presented to him his umbrella, and some other articles, he compelled him to strip in his presence, and surrender his coat; which, he said, he would reserve for his own wearing, on great and public festivals. *Proceedings of the African Association, 5.*

Mandingoes delight in perfuming their apparel and habitations. Travellers are burdened with very heavy duties, from which the king derives a greater revenue than any of the neighbouring states; in consequence of which he is well supplied with arms and ammunition *.

The industry of the Foulahs is obvious, even on the banks of the Gambia, where their corn is finer, and their flocks more numerous than those of the Mandingoes; but in this, their native country, they accumulate abundance of wealth from their pastoral occupations, while a glorious harvest rewards the exertions, and the cattle multiply through their kindness, attention, and familiarity. In the evening they are collected from the woods, and secured in folds in the different villages. In the center of each fold, a small hut is erected, in which a herdsman attends to keep watch during the night, to preserve the cattle from thieves, and to keep up several large fires round the premises, to alarm the savage tenants of the forests. They milk their cattle in the morning, and in the evening; but the produce from a single cow is much less in quantity, than is given in Europe. It is, however, very excellent, and the Foulahs use it principally as an article of diet, but not till it is sour. The cream, which is very thick, is converted into butter, by shaking it violently in a calabash; after which it is dissolved over a gentle fire, and preserved for use in earthen pots. This article forms a part of many of their dishes; and they liberally anoint their faces, heads, and arms with it. But the Foulahs, and all the inhabitants in this part of Africa, are totally ignorant of the formation of cheese.

The Foulahs also possess some very excellent horses, which are probably a mixed breed of the original African with those of Arabia.

SECTION III.

Account of the Kajaaga—Serawoollies—Their Manners and Customs—The Author is robbed by Order of the King—Charity of a Female Slave—Proceeds to Kayee—Crosses the Senegal—Arrival at Teesee—Interview with the King's Brother—The Author detained at Teesee—Rapacity of Tiggity Sego—The Author arrives at Kooniakary.

THE travellers were now arrived at Kajaaga, which the French distinguish by the name of Gallam. The climate is healthy, and the air salubrious; and the face of the country beautifully diversified with hills and vallies. The meandering of the Senegal river renders the scenery on its banks extremely picturesque. The complexion of the inhabitants, who are called Serawoollies, is a deep glossy black. They are habitually a trading people, having formerly supplied the subjects of France with gold and slaves, and still continue to trade with the British factories on the Gambia. Though ardent in their pursuit of riches, they are said to be fair and honourable in their mercantile transactions †.

About two o'clock the next morning several horsemen

* The inhabitants differ in their complexions and national manners from the Mandingoes and Serawoollies. The Foulahs, as already observed, have small features, soft silky hair, and are tawny. Next to the Mandingoes, the Foulahs are the most considerable of all the nations in this part of Africa. Those of Bondou are naturally mild and gentle; but the ungenerous maxims of the Koran have rendered them less hospitable to strangers, and more reserved and cautious. They consider all the negro-natives as their inferiors. The principal men, (the sovereign excepted) and a majority of the inhabitants of Bondou, are Mussulmen, but they are by no means bigotted. Religious persecution is unknown among them. Small schools are established in the different towns, where many of the Pagan, as well as the Mahometan children are taught to read the Koran, and instructed in the tenets of the prophet. The Arabic language is also introduced among the Foulahs, of which they have acquired some knowledge. Their native tongue, which abounds in liquids, is unpleasant to the ear.

† When a Serawoolli merchant has completed his trading expedition, he returns home and receives the congratulations of his neighbours, who assemble on the occasion. If the traveller has been successful in his peregrination, he displays his wealth and liberality by making appropriate presents: if, on the contrary, fortune has proved unkind to the adventurer, they instantly desert him, pronouncing him a man of no understanding, who, (as they express it) after so long and perilous a journey, could bring back nothing *but the hair upon his head.*

Their language, though inharmonious, is worth acquiring by those who travel through these regions, it being generally understood in the interior kingdoms.

Reaching Joag, the frontier town, the travellers took up their abode at the house of the chiefman, called the Dooty; who,

horsemen entered the town, who, after paying their respects to the Dooty, repaired to the Bentang, on which Mr. Park had made his bed. One of them, supposing he was asleep, attempted to purloin his musquet, but perceiving that he could not effect his purpose undiscovered, he thought proper to desist. Mr. Park discovered, by the countenance of his interpreter, that something unpleasant was in agitation. He was also alarmed to see Madiboo, and the smith, so soon returned. On requesting the particulars, Madiboo informed him, that while they were dancing at Dramanet, ten horsemen belonging to Batcheri the king, with his second son at their head, had enquired if the white man had passed. At this instant the ten horsemen arrived, and, coming to the Bentang, dismounted, and seated themselves among those who had come before, increasing the number to about twenty, forming a circle round the amazed European, and each man holding a musquet in his hand. Mr. Park informed his landlord that he did not understand the Serawoolli tongue, and therefore requested them to explain their business in the Mandingo language. To this they agreed, and the diminutive man mentioned the business to the following effect:—that the king had ordered them to conduct him to Maana, as he had dared to enter the king's town without paying the accustomed duties, or causing any present to be delivered to him; for which omission, according to the laws of the country, himself and his attendants were forfeited, together with his cattle and baggage. He concluded a long harangue, by observing that he had received orders from his sovereign to conduct him to Maana, and desired to know if he was ready to depart; at the same time assuring him, that it would be equally vain and imprudent to resist an irritated body of men.

Our author expressed a willingness to comply with their commands, but entreated a short delay, to give the horse a little corn, and to adjust accounts with his landlord. Taking the Dooty aside, and making him a small present of gunpowder, he requested his advice in so critical a situation; the Dooty was decidedly of opinion, that our traveller ought not, on any consideration, to approach the king; assuring him, that if he should observe any thing valuable in his possession, he would demand it without ceremony. From this declaration of the landlord, Mr. Park became more solicitous to accommodate matters with the king's officers; he admitted, indeed, that he had entered his Majesty's frontier, but denied that he knew it was his duty to pay the necessary taxes before-hand, and was ready to pay them at that moment; he then tendered, as a present to the king, the five drachms of gold he had received from the king of Bondou. This tender was accepted, yet notwithstanding Mr. Park's resistance, the bundles were opened; but the men were greatly disappointed at not finding in them such a quantity of gold and amber as they expected; and continued wrangling with each other, and our traveller, till sun-set, when they departed, having first pilfered from him about half his goods.

These proceedings dispirited Mr. Park's attendants, and Madiboo entreated him to return. Johnson ridiculed the idea of proceeding without money; and the smith was afraid of speaking, or being seen, lest he should be recognised as a native of Kasson. In this disposition they passed the night, by the side of a dismal fire, resolving to combat hunger the following day; when, towards the evening, as Mr. Park was amusing himself with chewing straws upon the Bentang, an old female slave, with a basket on her head,

who, though a Mahometan, was distinguished for his hospitality. The town is surrounded with a high wall, through which a number of port-holes for musquetry have been perforated. Every private habitation is also encompassed with a wall, in consequence of which, the place has the appearance of an assemblage of little citadels, strongly fortified. West of the town a small river glides along, the banks of which produce onions and tobacco, amply repaying the natives for their skill and labour.

In the evening Madiboo, the Bushreen, from Pisania, visited his father and mother at Dramanet, a neighbouring town. The blacksmith accompanied him; and when it was dark, Mr. Park accepted an invitation to partake of the sports of the inhabitants, it being customary to welcome strangers. A great crowd surrounded a party who were dancing by some large fires, to the music of four drums beat with great regularity and uniformity. The dances, however, consisted more in lascivious gestures, than in muscular exertion, or graceful agility: the ladies, in particular, strove who should most distinguish herself in the science of displaying voluptuous attitudes.

This species of movement is also prevalent among the women of Otaheite, and other islands discovered in the Pacific. In the oriental islands of India, among the dancing girls of Hindostan; and in all those countries in which there is not liberality of sentiment, and wisdom enough to elevate women to their proper sphere in society, and where they are considered as mere objects of sensual dalliance, their opinions and amusements correspond with their condition of unjust degradation.

accosted him, and asked if he was *provided with a dinner?* Supposing she was jeering him, he made no reply; but his boy, who was sitting near him, answered for him, and assured her that the king's officers had robbed him of all his money. Hearing this declaration, the good old woman, with a look of genuine benevolence, taking the basket from her head, presented him with several handfuls of ground nuts, and walked away without giving him time to make his acknowledgments for so seasonable a supply. This trifling circumstance, says Mr. Park, afforded me infinite satisfaction, and induced me to reflect with pleasure on the conduct of one, who, without entering into the particulars of my distresses, listened implicitly to the dictates of her own feelings. Taught by experience that hunger was a misfortune, she commiserated that misfortune in others.

Soon after the old woman had left our traveller, he received intelligence that a nephew of Demba Sego Jalla, the Mandingo king of Kasson, was coming to visit him. This prince had been dispatched on an embassy to Balcheri, king of Kajaaga, to accommodate some disputes that had arisen between his uncle and the latter. Not having succeeded in his endeavours, he was on his return to Kasson; and, having been informed that a white man was at Joag, curiosity induced him to take the liberty of paying his respects to him. Mr. Park represented his situation as deplorable, and the prince frankly offered him his protection; he even undertook to conduct him to Kasson, and be answerable for his safety, if he would accompany him the following morning. Our author gratefully accepted the favour, and was ready with his attendants, to proceed on their journey*.

About noon the travellers stopped at Gungadi, a considerable town, containing a large number of date-trees, and a clay mosque, with six turrets, the pinnacles of which were respectively crowned with ostrich-eggs. Towards the evening they arrived at Samee, a village pleasantly situated on the banks of the Senegal, a beautiful but shallow river, gently gliding over a sandy bottom, the margins of which are covered with verdure. In the afternoon of the following day, they reached Kayee, a spacious village, erected on the sides of the river. A remarkable cataract in its vicinity, passed impetuously over a rock of whin-stone, precipitating itself into the bason of a deep and muddy stream. Mr. Park supposed it impracticable to get the cattle down the bank, which was upwards of forty feet above the water; but the negroes forced the animals along a path almost perpendicular, and the travellers cautiously followed to the canoe, which waited to receive the baggage. The asses, indeed, were extremely troublesome; their natural stubbornness of disposition prompted them to endure the utmost severity of the drivers, rather than commit themselves to the danger of the watery element, into which they, however, were at length compelled to enter, and eventually arrived at the opposite shore. Two hours were spent in getting the cattle over, and another hour in transporting the baggage.

Towards evening Mr. Park and Demba Sego embarked in the canoe, the latter thinking this a proper opportunity to have a peep into our author's tin box, which stood in the fore-part of the canoe; and in extending his arm for this purpose, he unfortunately destroyed the equilibrium of the crazy vessel, and overset it. Being at no great distance from the shore, they only experienced a complete immersion, and returned without much difficulty; where, after wringing the water from their apparel, they took a fresh departure, and were safely conveyed to Kasson.

On their arrival at Kasson, Demba Sego immediately informed Mr. Park that they were now in his uncle's dominions; and that a token of gratitude would be expected in consideration of favours so liberally bestowed on a stranger. This proposition rather startled our traveller, who began to fear; but thinking it would have been folly to expostulate, he gave the prince some tobacco, and seven bars of iron, with which he seemed perfectly satisfied. After a long and tedious journey, they arrived at Teesee, on the evening of December 29th, and were entertained in Demba Sego's hut. The next morning Mr. Park was introduced by the prince to his father, Tiggity Sego, brother to the king of Kasson, who received him with great respect; observing, however, that

* Our traveller's new protector, Demba Sego, had a grand retinue; and the whole company, at their departure from Joag, consisted of thirty persons, with six loaded asses. Having rode on cheerfully for some hours, they came to a tree for which Johnson, the interpreter, made frequent enquiry. Here he desired them all to stop; and producing a white chicken, he tied it by the leg to a branch of the tree: he then assured the company they might proceed in safety. This ceremony he meant as an offering to the spirits of the woods, who were a powerful race of beings of a white complexion, with long flowing hair.

he had never seen but one white man before, which Mr. Park conjectured must have been major Houghton. In answer to the king's enquiries, he mentioned the motives which induced him to explore the country, but the truth of his declarations did not seem to be admitted. Tiggity Sego then informed him that he must repair to Kooniakary, to pay his respects to that prince, but desired to see him before he left Teesee.

In the afternoon a slave belonging to the old king eloped, and on a general alarm being given, every person who was possessed of a horse rode into the woods in search of him. Demba Sego borrowed our traveller's courser for the same purpose; and in less than an hour they all returned with the unfortunate culprit, who was severely scourged and ironed.

Mr. Park lent his horse a second time to Demba Sego, and during the absence of the animal, amused himself in walking about the town of Teesee, and conversing with the natives who treated him with great respect, and supplied him with milk, eggs, and other provisions on very reasonable terms*.

An assembly of the people was summoned the following day, to hear the purport of a message from Almani Abdulkader, king of Foota Torra, threatening hostilities in the name of this powerful monarch, "Unless all the people of Kasson would embrace the Mahometan religion, and evince their conversion by saying eleven public prayers." This message created great alarm among the inhabitants; and, after some consultation, they agreed to conform to his pleasure, and actually offered up eleven prayers, which were considered as a sufficient testimony of their having embraced the doctrines of the Prophet.

Demba Sega having now returned with our traveller's horse, he began to make preparations for setting out for Kooniakary the next morning: but the old man gave him several broad intimations that he must not think of departing, till he had paid him the duties he was entitled to from all travellers; and he had an additional claim on him for the extraordinary kindness he had shewn him: he even went, accompanied by several of his people, to know of Mr. Park what recompence he intended to make him? When the latter offered him seven bars of amber, and five of tobacco: but Demba rejected the present as unworthy the acceptance of a prince, and threatened to convey the whole of the baggage to court, that the

* Some description of Teesee may not be thought intrusive: it is a large unwalled town, having no other security against the attacks of an enemy than a sort of citadel, in which Tiggity Sego and his family reside. Its extent is considerable, and some of its customs singular. This place was formerly inhabited only by some Foulah shepherds, who lived in affluence by rearing herds of cattle in the neighbouring luxuriant meadows: but their prosperity exciting the envy of some Mandingoes, the latter forcibly took possession of the lands, and dispersed the shepherds. The present inhabitants, though affluent, are far from being particular with respect to their food, often feasting upon rats, moles, squirrels, locusts, snakes, &c. A strange custom prevails here, which is rigidly adhered to, that no woman is permitted to eat an egg; and nothing will be a greater insult to a female of Teesee than to offer her such an article of food. It is the more extraordinary, as men eat eggs without scruple in the presence of their wives. Mr. Park observes, that he believes no such prohibition is enforced in any other of the Mandingo countries. Our author attended a palaver here, held by Tiggity Sego, in which the debates were conducted with much warmth and ingenuity. A young wealthy Pagan, having lately married a beautiful woman, requested some saphies from a Mahometan priest, to shield him from accident during the expected war. The priest yielded to his solicitation, and to render the saphies more efficacious, enjoined the young husband to avoid all nuptial intercourse with his bride for the space of forty-two days. This injunction was submitted to, and punctually obeyed. Without acquainting his wife with the real cause, the Pagan absented himself from her company. In the mean time a report was propagated in the neighbourhood, that the priest was too officious in his visits, and more intimate with the young wife than he ought to be. Hearing frequent repetitions of these surmises, the husband interrogated his wife on the subject, who candidly acknowledged that the Bushreen had seduced her. A palaver being called, in consequence of this confession, the fact was proved against the Bushreen, and he was sentenced to perpetual slavery, or to procure two slaves for his redemption, at the election of the complainant. The injured husband, however, rather chose to have him publicly whipped before Tiggity Sego's gate. This was acceded to, and the sentence immediately executed. The number of stripes to be inflicted on the offender, was, according to the Mosaic law, *forty, save one.*

As Teesee was a frontier town, and consequently would be much exposed, during the war, to the excursions of the Moors; Tiggity Sego had sent round to the neighbouring villages, to endeavour to procure a sufficient quantity of provisions for the consumption of one year, exclusive of the growing stock, which the enemy might probably destroy. Persons were accordingly delegated to conduct this business; with orders to procure these supplies either by purchase or solicitation. The project being approved by the country people, on the 4th of January 1796, Mr. Park went to meet the escort with the provisions. It was composed of about 400 men, marching in regular order, having corn and ground-nuts in large calabashes upon their heads. They were preceded by a strong guard of bowmen, and followed by eight musicians, or singing men. When they approached the town, some vocal strains were poured forth, which were answered by a few strokes on their large drums. Thus they proceeded till they arrived at Tiggity Sego's gate, where the provisions were delivered; and from thence repaired to the Bentang-tree, and concluded the day with festive recreations.

sovereign might choose for himself. Without waiting for a reply, Demba began to unpack the goods, and with the assistance of his attendants, spread them over the floor. Every article that pleased their fancy, was taken without ceremony or scruple. Even the tin box, which had so much attracted Demba's attention in crossing the river, was eagerly seized. On collecting the scattered remains of his wealth, Mr. Park perceived, that, as he had been robbed of half his property at Joag, so here he had been plundered of half the remainder. Having been under some obligation to Demba Sego, he did not reproach him for his rapacity, but resolved, at all events, to take his leave of Teesee the next morning. To recruit his drooping spirits, he purchased a fat sheep, with which he and his associates regaled themselves.

Quitting Teesee on the 10th of January, they had a distant prospect of the hills round Kooniakary; and passed through Madina, a town of considerable extent. Soon after which they came in sight of Jumbo, the blacksmith's native town, from whence he had been absent about four years. Hearing of the smith's approach, he was welcomed by his brother, accompanied by a singing-man. He had provided him a horse, that he might make his entry in a dignified manner; while the travellers were earnestly requested to charge their pieces. The procession now took place: the singing-man led the way, followed by the two brothers; a number of the inhabitants of the town assembled, expressing great joy at seeing their old acquaintance the blacksmith. On entering the town, the singing-man repeated some extempore stanzas on the valour of his countryman, who had surmounted many difficulties; and strictly enjoined his friends to procure him a suitable entertainment on his return. Arriving at the blacksmith's residence, the company dismounted, and, having discharged their musquets, gave place to the relations, whose emotions of joy were strongly displayed on the event. The aged mother of the smith was led forth, leaning on a staff, to bid him welcome: being totally blind, she deliberately stroked his hands, arms, and face, and expressed her happiness that her latter days were blessed by his return.

During these congratulations, Mr. Park seated himself by the side of one of the huts at a little distance, fearing his presence might interrupt the flow of filial and parental tenderness: and the attention of the company was so much engrossed by the blacksmith, that he remained wholly unobserved. When the people present had seated themselves, the smith was requested, by his father, to relate his adventures. He dutifully complied with the request, and mentioned the material occurrences of his life, with the dangers he had encountered in returning to his native country. Towards the conclusion of his narrative, he had frequently occasion to mention the name of Mr. Park; and after many acknowledgments of his kindness, suddenly pointed to the place where he was seated, exclaiming *affille ibi siring!*—"Behold him sitting there!"—All eyes were instantly directed to him, whom they seemed to regard as a superior being: every one expressing his regret that he had not seen him before; and some of them were exceedingly alarmed at being so near a being of so wonderful an appearance. Their apprehensions, however, subsided by degrees, the blacksmith having satisfied them by assurances of his being perfectly inoffensive. Encouraged by this declaration, some of them ventured to feel the texture of his apparel, but not without fear and suspicion; and when he moved himself to look at the young children, their mothers precipately ran away with them. In a few hours, however, they all became reconciled to him. The remainder of that, and the whole of the succeeding day, was spent in mirth and feasting.

The blacksmith declared he would not quit our traveller while he remained at Kooniakary, for which place they set out on the 14th of January, and arrived about noon at Soolo, a village in its vicinity. Mr. Park had deviated from the direct road to visit a Slatee named Salim Daucari, a wealthy Gambia trader. He was acquainted with Dr. Laidley, who had given him credit to the amount of five slaves, and had favoured our traveller with an order for the whole of the debt. The Slatee was at home, and received his visitors with attention and respect.

By some extraordinary means the king of Kasson had been apprized of Mr. Park's motions; for he had been at Soolo only a few hours, when Sambo Sego, the second son of the king of Kasson, came thither with a party of horse, to know why he had not been to Kooniakary, to visit the king, who was very impatient to see him. Salim Daucari apologized for Mr. Park, and agreed to accompany him to Kooniakary the same evening. They proceeded immediately to the royal residence: but as the king was taking his repose, the interview was deferred till the next morning; and the travellers were entertained in the hut of Sambo Sego.

SECTION IV.

The Author has an Audience of the King of Kasson—Departs for Kemmoo—Is received kindly by the King of Kaarta, who dissuades him from proceeding—Takes the Path to Ludamar—To Jarra—Journey from Kemmoo to Funiskedy—Murder of a Youth by the Moors—The Author arrives at Jarra—Situation of the surrounding States.

ON the ensuing day our traveller obtained an audience of the king (Demba Sego Jalla;) but the concourse of people assembled to see the *White Man* was so great, that it was with difficulty he could approach the regal hut. At length, however, he arrived in the presence of the monarch, whom he found sitting on a mat; and appeared to be about sixty years of age: His success in war, and his amiable conduct in time of peace, had gained him full possession of the affections of his people. After a respectful salutation from Mr. Park, which he courteously returned, he surveyed that gentleman with great attention; and being made acquainted with the object of his journey, the sovereign appeared perfectly satisfied, and promised him his aid and protection. He said he had seen Major Houghton, and presented him with a white horse; but, in crossing the kingdom of Kaarta, he had by some means lost his life among the Moors.

The audience being ended, Mr. Park returned to his temporary abode, where he packed up a small present for the king; which, though trivial in itself, was well received by him; and our traveller in return was complimented with a large white bullock. But though the king acted with politeness and even generosity to Mr. Park, that gentleman soon discovered that considerable obstacles would probably impede his progress. The king himself deigned to favour him with the particulars which would be too minute to be admitted in an abridgment.

Desirous of proceeding as soon as possible, Mr. Park requested Daucari to intercede with the king to procure him a guide by the way of Fooladoo, it having been rumoured that war had already commenced between the monarchs of Bambarra and Kaarta. In consequence of this solicitation, Daucari set out for Kooniakary on the 20th of January, and returned the same evening with the king's answer, stating that he had agreed with the king of Kaarta to send all merchants and travellers through his dominions: but if Mr. Park wished to prefer the route through Fooladoo, he would not withhold his permission, though he could not, without a breach of his agreement, supply him with a guide. Duly reflecting on this answer, and having experienced the want of regal protection in the former part of his journey, he formed a resolution to wait till he could pass through Kaarta without danger.

A rumour was now propagated that our adventurer had received a large quantity of gold-dust from Salim Daucari; and on the morning of the 23d, Sambo Sego, with a number of horsemen, came to demand an account of the particulars. He insisted upon knowing the exact amount of the money he had received; declaring that half of it belonged solely to the king; and that he himself, as the king's son, with the king's attendants, who were his relations, was entitled to a considerable present. Mr. Park had almost prevailed on himself to submit to this arbitrary exaction, when Salim Daucari kindly interposed, and induced Sambo to accept of sixteen bars of European merchandize, and some powder and ball, as a complete discharge of every demand made upon him in the kingdom of Kasson*.

* From the top of a high hill, to the south of Soolo, Mr. Park enjoyed a most enchanting prospect of the country. The number of towns and villages, and the state of cultivation around them, surpassed any thing he had then seen in Africa. A gross calculation of the population of this part may be formed, when it is considered that the king of Kasson can collect four thousand fighting men by the beating of his war-drum. This country abounds in wolves and hyænas, who take refuge during the day in the crevices and fissures of the rocks. Some of these animals entered Soolo in the night of the 27th. Their approach was announced by the dogs of the village, which howled most tremendously. The inhabitants, knowing the cause, assembled with proper weapons of defence, at the inclosures of cattle, when by fighting bunches of grass, and waving them to and fro towards the hills, uttering repeated shouts, they had the good fortune to disperse the savage intruders; though, on examination, it was found that five of the cattle were killed, and many others torn and wounded.

The

The king of Kasson received intelligence that the war had not yet taken place between Bambarra and Kaarta, and that our author might probably pass through Kaarta, before the Bambarra army invaded that country; two guides on horseback were therefore sent from Kooniakary, to conduct him to the frontiers of Kaarta. In consequence of which he took leave of Salim Daucari, and, for the last time, parted from his worthy fellow-traveller the blacksmith, quitting Soolo about ten o'clock. Proceeding through the village of Soome, where they slept, they continued their route along the banks of the Krieko, a fertile and populous neighbourhood. A number of people, at this time, had fled from Kaarta and sought refuge here on account of the Bambarra war. In the afternoon they reached Kimo, where the guides appointed by the king of Kasson left Mr. Park. Though the Krieko is here but a small rivulet, it descends with an impetuous current from the east of Kangee, down the eminence of Tappa, where it assumes a more placid appearance; and then meanders gently through the delightful plains of Kooniakary; till uniting with another stream, it is received in the Senegal, near the Falls of Felow.

After taking a cursory view of Kangee, which is a considerable town, they passed a number of villages, and arrived in the afternoon at Lackarago. In their route they met multitudes of people flying from Kaarta, with their families and effects. They left Lackarago the next morning, and soon perceived the mountains of Fooladoo. Proceeding down an abrupt precipice, they continued their way in a dry bed of a river, where the trees over head met and were delightfully umbrageous. The sandy plains of Kaarta next presented themselves; and at noon they arrived at a watering-place, where they procured as much milk and corn-meal as they could eat, for a few strings of beads. Provisions are so plenty in this quarter, that the natives seldom require any payment for the refreshments of travellers.

They reached Feesurah about sun-set, and remained there all the following day, to inform themselves of the situation of affairs before they proceeded any farther. The landlord made so exorbitant a demand for his lodging, that Mr. Park refused to pay it; but his attendants, terrified at the reports of approaching war, prevailed on him to discharge the extravagant claim. This was accomplished with some difficulty, chiefly by the present of a blanket which Mr. Park presented to the host. Matters being thus adjusted, the landlord mounted his horse, and undertook the post of leader: This man, was one of those Negroes who observe the ceremonial part of Mahometanism, but retain all their pagan superstition, and even drink strong liquors: They are called Johars, and are very numerous in Kaarta*.

About noon our traveller entered the capital of Kaarta, seated on an extensive plain. Here the monarch ordered a lodging for the stranger, and promised to grant him an audience in the evening. In the mean time Mr. Park was much incommoded by the natives, who rushed into his abode in crowds, though a person was appointed to defend it, till their curiosity was fully gratified. At the hour appointed, he was conducted by the messenger to Daisy Koorabarri, King of Kaarta. He was not distinguished from his subjects by his apparel: a bank of earth about two feet high, upon which was spread a leopard's skin, proclaimed the royal dignity. Mr. Park was, however, astonished at the number of the king's attendants. The fighting men were all seated on his majesty's

* When the company were in the midst of a lonely wood, he desired them to halt; and, with a hollow piece of Bamboo that was suspended from his neck, whistled loudly three times. Mr. Park was startled; supposing it might be a signal for some of his associates. But the landlord assured him, that nothing more was meant than to ascertain the successful event of their journey. He then dismounted, laid his spear across the path, and after having pronounced a few unintelligible prayers, again gave three loud whistles. After which he appeared to be attentively listening, as if in expectation of an answer: but as no answer was returned to his magic calls, he said their journey would be safe and unmolested.

Quitting Karankalla, they directed their course to Kemmoo. As this was but a short day's journey, they loitered their time away in gathering delicious fruits near the road side. Thus amused, Mr. Park wandered a little from his people, when two Negro horsemen, armed with muskets, came galloping from the thickets: on seeing them he stopped, the horsemen followed his example, and all three appeared to be equally astonished and confounded. As he approached them their terror increased, and, viewing him with horror, rode off at full speed; while the other, in a panic of fear, covered his eyes with his hand, and continued muttering prayers, till his horse slowly conducted him after his companion. Soon after they fell in with Mr. Park's attendants, to whom they related a terrifying story: their fears had represented our author as dressed in the flowing robes of a tremendous spirit, and one of them declared that, when he had made his appearance, a blast of wind, cold as water, poured down upon him from the sky.

right hand, and the women and children on the left. Mr. Park, seating himself on the ground before him, stated his reasons for wishing to pass through his country, and entreated his protection. The king replied, that he was unable to afford him much assistance; all communication between Kaarta and Bambarra being cut off. He therefore advised the European to return to Kasson till the conclusion of the war. But as Mr. Park dreaded the idea of passing the rainy season in the interior of Africa, and was unwilling to return to Europe till he had made further discoveries, he formed a resolution to go forward. In consequence of which he begged his majesty would permit a man to accompany him, as near the frontiers of his kingdom as might be consistent with safety.

This conversation was interrupted by the arrival of a Moorish horseman, whose steed was covered with sweat and foam, and who requested an audience, having something of importance to communicate to his majesty. The king immediately, as a token for strangers to withdraw, took up his sandals, and our traveller returned to his lodgings*. In the evening the king sent our traveller a fine sheep; a very acceptable present as they had all fasted the whole day, and while he was partaking of the royal gift at supper, prayers were announced by the beat of a drum, and the sound of wind instruments, composed of elephant's teeth: the tone of which was melodious and nearly resembling that of a human voice. Daisy's army being now at Kemmoo, the mosques were very much crowded; whence it appeared that about half of them were Mahometans.

On the following morning Mr. Park sent his horse-pistols and holsters as a present to the sovereign, and begged the messenger to inform him that he was inclined to quit Kemmoo as soon as he could procure him a guide. In about an hour afterwards the king returned thanks for the present, and sent eight horsemen to conduct him to Jarra: three of the horsemen were his majesty's own sons.

* This messenger was a scout belonging to the king, each of whom has his particular situation on an eminence, to watch the motions of the enemy.

The following night the travellers slept at a village named Marina. During the night some thieves broke into the hut where the baggage was deposited, cut open one of Mr. Park's bundles, and stole a quantity of beads, amber, gold, and apparel. Extreme heat retarded their progress the next day, but about four in the afternoon, they saw two Negroes sitting among some bushes, at a little distance from the road. The royal party, supposing them slaves who had run away from the service of their masters, hastily prepared their pieces, and surrounded the spot to prevent their escape; but on their near approach, the strangers, fitting an arrow to each of their bows, and holding others between their teeth, gave a signal for the horsemen to stop, who, on demanding some account to be given of themselves, found they were inhabitants of Toorda, a neighbouring village, and were employed in gathering *tomberongs*†. Of these they shewed two large baskets full, which they had collected: These berries are much esteemed by the Africans, and are converted into a substance resembling gingerbread, by being dried in the sun, and pounded in a mortar. The stones are afterwards shaken in a vessel of water, to separate the meal that adheres to them. The fruit is collected by spreading a cloth, or something, to receive it, and beating the branches.

Arriving in the evening at Toorda, all the king's people returned, except two who remained to conduct Mr. Park and his attendants to Jarra. A party of Moors, in the absence of the Bushreens and opulent people in Funingkedy had already gone to Jarra, and a party of Moors, in their absence, had stolen some of their cattle. About two o' clock, on the 16th, five of these thieves came again with the same rapacious purpose, and selecting sixteen of the finest bullocks, drove them off at a full gallop. The inhabitants, to the number of about five hundred, saw this transaction, without attempting to rescue their property: five musquets indeed were fired at the plunderers, but, being loaded with gunpowder of their own manufacture, did no execution‡.

Quitting

† These are small farinaceous berries of a yellow mealish substance and delicious flavour, the same with the fruits of the *rhamus lotus* of Linnæus.

The lotus is very common in all the kingdoms which Mr. Park visited, and is particularly plentiful in the sandy soil of Kaarta, Ludamar, and the northern parts of Bambarra, where it is one of the most common shrubs of the country. It is also found at Tunis and in the Negro kingdoms. Little doubt can be entertained of its being the *lotus* mentioned by Pliny, as the food of Libian Lotophagi.

‡ One of the herdsmen, attempting to throw his spear, was wounded by a shot from one of the Moors, and a number of people conducted him slowly towards the town. His

Quitting Funingkedy, Mr. Park and his attendants, accompanied by about thirty people, resolved to travel all night to avoid the Moorish banditti. At eight o'clock the next morning they passed Simbing, the frontier village of Ludamar. From this village major Houghton sent his last letter, written with a pencil to Dr. Laidley. Though it is uncertain whether this brave but unfortunate man lost his life by famine, or the weapons of the savages; we have authentic intelligence of his having been plundered by the Moors of all his property, and suffered the extremity of hunger for several days. After his death, however, his body was dragged into the woods, and Mr. Park was shewn the spot where his remains were left to perish. About four miles from Simbling, near a small stream of water, the travellers observed a number of wild horses, all of one colour. They are hunted for food by the Africans, by whom their flesh is thought delicious.

Mr. Park then enters into a long digression respecting a war which desolated Kaarta, and spread terror into many of the neighbouring states. But, as we do not conceive ourselves justified in digressing to such an extent, we shall follow that gentleman to Jarra, a large town, built of clay, and stone intermixed: the clay is intended to answer the purpose of mortar. It is situated in the Moorish kingdom of Ludamar; but the inhabitants are principally negroes, who purchase a precarious protection from the Moors by tribute, to avert their depredations*.

When Mr. Park arrived at Jarra, he procured an apartment at the house of Daman Jumma, a Gambia Slatee, on whom he had an order from Dr. Laidley for the value of six slaves. Daman acknowledged the debt, but said he was unable to pay more than the value of two slaves. He was, however, extremely useful to our traveller, by procuring an exchange of his beads and amber for gold, which, being more portable, was more easily concealed. The difficulties they had already encountered, and the savage deportment of the Moors, had so completely terrified Mr. Park's attendants, that they declared they would not proceed a step farther to the eastward. Thus situated, our traveller applied to Daman, to obtain from Ali, king of Ludamar, a safe conduct into Bambarra; and he hired one of Daman's slaves to conduct him thither, as soon as the passport should be obtained. A messenger was dispatched to Ali, who was then encamped near Benown, and Mr. Park complimented that prince with a present of five garments of cotton cloth, which he had purchased from Daman. In a few days, a slave arrived from the monarch, to escort Mr. Park to Goomba, and demanded a garment of blue cotton cloth for his attendance. About this time, Demba, the Negro boy, declared he would attend our traveller, adding, that, though he wished his master to turn back, he never would desert him; but he had been induced by Johnson to pretend he would do so, to prevail on him to return.

Having taken some necessary precautions, and adjusted his concerns as well as he was able, he quitted Jarra, accompanied by his boy, the slave sent him by king Ali, and one of Daman's slaves.

mother, frantic with grief, walked on before, clapping her hands and relating the perfections of her son. *Ee Muffo fonio*, (he never told a lie). And when the wounded son was taken in at the gate, the disconsolate mother exclaimed *Ee Muffo fonio abada*—"He never told a lie, no never." When conducted to his hut, and laid upon a mat, the most piteous screaming and howling assailed the ears of the lamenting spectators. When their grief had in some degree subsided, Mr. Park examined the wound: he declared the ball had passed through his leg, having fractured both bones a little below the knee. He added, that the only possible chance of recovery, was to cut off his leg a little above the knee. They stared with horror at the idea, having never heard of so strange a method of cure, and would by no means give their consent to such an operation. The patient was therefore committed to the care of some old priests, who pretended to secure his passage into Paradise, by desiring him to repeat some Arabic verses, which they whispered in his ears. After many unsuccessful attempts the poor boy, exhausted with pain and loss of blood, uttered with extreme difficulty, *La illa el-allah, Muhamet rasowl allah*—"*There is but one God, and Mahomet is his Prophet.*" The Bushreens, after this evidence of his faith, declared he would be happy in a future state. He died the same evening.

* The Moors of this part of Africa strongly resemble, in their persons, the Mulattoes of the West Indies, and appear to be a mixed race between the Moors of the north, and the Negroes of the south; possessing many of the worst qualities of the two nations. Before the Arabian conquest in the 7th century, the whole of the inhabitants of the continent of Africa then known, were generally called *Mauri* or Moors; and were converted to the religion of Mahomet during the reigns of the Caliphs. Many of the Numidian tribes retired southward over the Great Desert, to avoid the fury of the Arabians: and by one of those tribes were discovered and conquered the Negro nations on the Niger.

By the Niger, the river Senegal is certainly meant, as in the Mandingo language it is called *Basing* or the *Black River*. To what extent these people are now spread over the African continent, is not precisely known; but it is supposed that their dominion extends from west to east, in a narrow line from the mouth of the Senegal to the confines of Abyssinia.

After a fatiguing journey over the sands, they arrived at the Moorish watering-place of Compe, and afterwards continued their route to Deena, a large town, inhabited more by Moors than Negroes. Mr. Park was received in a hut belonging to one of the latter. The Moors assembled round the hut he occupied, and treated him with the greatest insolence and indignity, hoping to irritate him to an immoderate degree of rage, and afford them a pretence for pillaging his baggage; but finding such insults ineffectual, they at last declared that he was a christian, and therefore his property became lawful plunder to the followers of Mahomet. In consequence of which they opened his bundles, and robbed him of every thing that they thought the most alluring. This outrage intimidated Mr. Park's attendants to such a degree, that they positively refused to accompany him beyond this town; and, on the following morning, about two o'clock, he departed from Deena. Though it was then moon-light, the roaring of wild beasts was intimidating, and pointed out the necessity of proceeding with great caution.

On a piece of rising ground, about half a mile from the town, he heard somebody hallo! and, looking back, saw his faithful boy running after him; he informed him that Ali's man had set out for Benown, but Daman's negro was still at Deena; and, if his master would stop a little, he expected to persuade the latter to join him. Seeing some water at a little distance, he dispatched the boy to fill a soofroo; but, on examining the place for that desirable beverage, the roaring of a lion (perhaps also in search of that element) occasioned his precipitate return; and they submitted patiently to the disappointment. In the afternoon they reached Samaminkous, a town chiefly inhabited by Foulahs*.

Mr. Park stopped at Dalli on the 6th, in order to have the company of some of the inhabitants who were going to Goomba the following day; but to avoid the crowd, which curiosity had gathered round him, he visited in the evening a Negro village, named Samea, where the hospitable Dooty kindly received him, and killed two sheep for the entertainment of himself and his friends. On the following day his landlord requested him to stay till the cool of the evening, at which time he promised to conduct him to the next village. He accepted the invitation, and passed the forenoon very agreeably with the poor Negroes, the mildness of their manners forming a striking contrast to the rudeness and ferocity of the Moors. In the midst of this harmless festivity, when Mr. Park had abandoned all disagreeable apprehensions, a Moorish party unexpectedly entered the hut, who seizing on our author, commanded him, in the king's name, to attend them quietly to the camp, where Fatima, the favourite lady of their sovereign, expected him with impatience. She had heard much about christians, and was therefore extremely anxious to see one.

Supposing entreaty and resistance would be equally ineffectual, our traveller prepared to follow the messengers; he reluctantly took leave of his landlord and the company, and, attended by his Negro boy (for Daman's slave escaped on perceiving the Moors) they arrived at Dalli in the evening. Mr. Park and his boy were conducted through the woods to Dangali, where they slept.

On the 10th of March they set out for Sa-

* Continuing their journey the following day, they observed such a quantity of locusts, that the trees appeared black with them. These insects devour every vegetable that presents itself to their voracious jaws, and speedily deprive the tree of its verdure. In their flight they are directed by the current of the wind, which at this season is always from the north-east. About noon they reached Sampaka, a large town, which, when the Moors and Barbarrans were at war, was thrice attacked by the former; but they were driven off with great loss, though the king of Bambarra afterwards gave up this, and several other towns. Here Mr. Park lodged at the house of a Negro, who practised the art of making gun-powder. He shewed that gentleman a bag of nitre, very white, but the crystals were much smaller than common. It is procured from ponds which are filled with water during the rainy season. When that is evaporated, a white efflorescence is observed on the mud, which the natives collect and purify. The Moors procure sulphur from the Mediterranean, and the different articles are pounded together in a mortar. The sound of its explosion is less sharp than that of European gun-powder.

After their departure from Sampaka, our travellers saw two herds of camels feeding, each having a fore-leg tied up to prevent its straying. Arriving at Dalli, it was instantly proclaimed that the *white man* was come into the town; when the people who had been dancing, terminated their pastime, and walking in regular order, preceded by the music, advanced towards Mr. Park. Their principal instrument is a flute, which they blow obliquely over the end, regulating the sounds by a judicious application of the fingers to the holes, perforated for that purpose on the sides. Some of their airs are plaintive and simple,

mam-

mamingkoos, and, on the road, overtook a woman and two boys, with an ass. She said, that, in attempting to go to Bambarra, she had been robbed by a party of Moors of some gold, and a considerable quantity of her clothes. The same evening the new moon ushered in the month of Rhamadon.

Large fires were kindled in many parts of the town, and an unusual quantity of victuals was dressed to celebrate the day. Mr. Park ordered his boy to fill a soofroo of water for his own use, the Moors having assured him that they should not taste meat or drink till sun-set; but the excessive heat of the sun overcame their scruples, and constituted the soofroo a very essential part of their baggage. Having arrived at Deena, Mr. Park paid a respectful visit to one of Ali's sons, whom he found sitting in a low hut, with five or six of his companions, washing their hands, feet, and mouths. He had no sooner seated himself, than the prince handed him a double-barrelled gun, directing him to dye the stock of a blue colour, and repair one of the locks. Mr. Park endeavoured to convince him that he knew nothing about gun-making. Then, replied he, you shall instantly make me a present of some knives and scissars. And when the boy, who acted as interpreter, declared Mr. Park had no such articles, he eagerly snatched up a musket, and would certainly have killed the boy on the spot, had not the Moors interfered, and induced the strangers to retreat.

Intimidated by this treatment, the boy attempted to make his escape in the night, but the vigilance of the Moors prevented him from carrying his project into execution.

On the 12th of March Mr. Park and his guards departed from Deena towards Benown. About one the intense heat of the sun obliged them to stop; when their supply of water being expended, they could not venture to wait longer than a few minutes to collect a little gum, that being an excellent substitute to moisten the mouth. Reaching the camp of Ali at Benown a little before sun-set, they observed it was composed of an irregular number of dirty tents; and, among the tents appeared large herds of cattle, camels, and goats. On Mr. Park's arrival he was instantly sursounded by such an immense crowd of people, that it was with difficulty he could move. One pulled him by his clothes, another seized his hat, a third examined his waistcoat buttons, and a fourth exclaiming, *La illa el allah Mahamet rasowl alabi*; signifying, in a menacing tone, that Mr. Park must repeat those words. At length he was conducted to the king's tent, where numbers of both sexes were waiting his arrival. Ali was sitting on a black leather cushion, and employed in clipping some straggling hairs from his upper lip; a female attendant holding up a looking-gluss to assist him in the operation. He appeared to be an old man of the Arab cast, with a long white beard, and a sullen indignant aspect. Surveying our traveller with attention, he enquired of the Moors whether he could speak Arabic. Being informed that he could not, he seemed surprised, but made no remarks. The ladies were extremely inquisitive, inspected every particle of our traveller's dress, searched his pockets, and obliged him to unbutton his waistcoat to display the whiteness of his skin. They even counted his toes and fingers, seeming very much to doubt whether he was in reality a human being*.

At sun-rise the king, with a few attendants, visited Mr. Park, and informed him that he had appointed a hut for his future abode, in which he might be defended from the sun. To this place he was conducted by the sovereign's order: it was composed of corn-stalks, strengthened by stakes, and covered with a level roof. To deride the christian, Ali had ordered a wild hog to be produced,

* About this time the prieſt announced evening prayers, but, before the aſſembly was diſperſed, a Mooriſh interpreter informed Mr. Park that his Majeſty had ſent for ſome proviſions on his account: immediately a wild hog was brought in by ſome boys, who faſtened it to the ſtrings of the tent; and the ſovereign, by ſigns, directed our author to kill and prepare it for his own repaſt. Though he was very hungry, he did not think it prudent to eat any part of an animal held in ſuch abhorrence by the Moors, and therefore replied, that he never ate the fleſh of ſwine. The hog was then untied, and the Moors ſuppoſed he would inſtantly run at Mr. Park, having imbibed an idea, that a great enmity ſubſiſts between hogs and chriſtians; but in this they were diſappointed, for the animal was no ſooner liberated than he indiſcriminately began to attack every one he came near, and finally ſought a ſhelter beneath the Mahometan throne. Mr. Park was then conducted to the tent of Ali's chief ſlave, but was not permitted to enter, or defile any of its appurtenances by the touch. A little boiled corn, ſalt, and water, was produced in a wooden bowl for his refreſhment, and a mat was ſpread upon the ſand, on which he paſſed the night, ſurrounded by the curious multitude.

duced and tied to one of the stakes, which drew together a number of mischievous boys, who amused themselves by beating and irritating the animal. Our author was also again exposed to the tormenting curiosity of the Moors. To oblige them, he was compelled to take off his stockings, and display his feet; and even his jacket and waistcoat, that they might be able to form a general notion of his wardrobe. This exercise he was under the necessity of repeating the whole day: they were particularly delighted with the curious contrivance of his buttons. About eight o'clock in the evening he received a supply of kouskous, and salt and water for his supper, a very desirable repast, as he had not tasted food since the morning.

The Moors kept regular watch during the night, and frequently peeped into the hut to see if he was asleep. About two in the morning a Moor entered the hut, probably with a view of pilfering something; and groping about, laid his hand upon Mr. Park's shoulder. Mr. Park immediately started up, and the Moor, in his confusion, fell upon the wild hog, which returned the attack by biting his arm. His Majesty, supposing the white man had escaped, now galloped to the hut on a white steed; but hearing the cause of the alarm, he instantly retired, leaving his prisoner undisturbed till morning. With the returning day, the series of insult and irritation was renewed. The boys assembled to torture the hog, and the men and women to calumniate and revile the chriftian*. The Moors, though indolent themselves, are rigid task-masters, and keep every person under them perpetually employed. Demba, our author's boy, was sent into the woods to procure withered grass for the king's horses; and, after a variety of projects respecting Mr. Park, they at last resolved to employ him in the respectable office of a barber. His first display of official skill was in shaving the head of the prince of Ludamar, in the presence of his father; but, either from ignorance of the art, or the improper shape of the instrument, he made a slight incision in the boy's head. This circumstance alarmed the king, who instantly commanded him to resign the razor, and walk out of the tent. This disgrace was considered by Mr. Park as a fortunate event, as he had resolved to become as insignificant as possible, to afford an inducement to the restoration of his liberty.

On the 18th of March four Moors arrived from Jarra, with Johnson, our traveller's interpreter, having arrested him before he knew of Mr. Park's confinement; and brought with them the bundle that had been left at Daman Jumma's house. Johnson was conducted into Ali's tent for examination. The bundle being opened, Mr. Park was summoned to explain the use of the contents. When he had satisfied Ali's curiosity respecting the articles of apparel, the bundle was again tied up, and covered with a kind of cow-skin bag. The same evening Ali sent some of his people to inform Mr. Park that there were thieves in the neighbourhood, and that to prevent my valuable articles from being stolen, it was necessary to convey them into his tent. Every thing was accordingly taken away; nor was he permitted to retain a single shirt. Ali was indeed greatly disappointed, at not finding among the effects, so large a quantity of gold and amber as he had expected, and sent his myrmidons the next morning to examine whether any thing was concealed about his person; they searched every part of his apparel, and took from him his gold, amber, a watch, and a pocket compass. In the night he had fortunately buried another compass in the sand; and this, with the apparel on his person, was the whole now left him by this rapacious and inhospitable savage †.

Mr. Park, anxious to know his destiny, went to

* The rudeness, ferocity, and fanaticism which distinguish the Moors from the rest of mankind, had now an opportunity of gratifying their propensities. Mr. Park was a *stranger*, *unprotected*, and a *christian*; each of these circumstances is sufficient to extinguish every spark of humanity from the heart of a Moor; but, added to all these heavy charges, he was strongly suspected by them of being a *spy*; in such a situation he certainly had every thing to fear.

† The pocket-compass excited much curiosity and superstition, and induced the king himself to enquire why the little piece of iron, meaning the needle, always pointed to the great desert. Though this question somewhat puzzled our adventurer, to plead ignorance he thought would appear evasive; he therefore immediately replied, that it pointed to the residence of his mother, who lived beyond the sands of Schara, and that it would conduct him to her whilst she was living, and would point to her grave after her decease.

This solution added to the surprise of the sovereign, who, after

to the king, and entreated permission to return to Jarra; a request which met with a peremptory refusal. The queen, he alledged, had not yet seen him, and he must wait till she arrived; after which his horse would be restored, and he would be at liberty to leave Ludamar. The adventurer appeared pleased, and entertaining no hopes of making an immediate escape, on account of the heat, which was at that time excessive, he resolved to wait patiently for the rainy season. Filled with melancholy at this tedious procrastination, and having endured a restless night, a violent fever attacked him the next morning. He had muffled himself up in his cloak to promote perspiration, and was asleep, when a party of Moors entered the hut, and with their accustomed barbarity pulled away his cloak. By signs as well as gestures he informed them that he was sick, and wished to be permitted to sleep; but his distress was a subject of mirth to these savages. Wearied out with such continued insults, and perhaps rendered a little peevish by his illness, he feared he might be induced, in an unguarded moment, to overleap the bounds of prudence, and manifest some sudden act of resentment, when death must be the inevitable consequence.

In this deplorable situation he quitted the hut, and laid down under the shade of some spreading trees, at a little distance from the camp; but even here their cruelty pursued him, for Ali's son, with a party of horsemen, came galloping to the place, and ordered him to follow them to the king. His supplications for a few hours rest were renewed, but in vain; and after much abusive language, one of them presented a pistol towards him, and snapped it twice; he cocked it a third time, when the dejected invalid begged him to desist, and consented to return with them to the camp. When arrived there, Ali seemed much out of humour, and after repeatedly opening and closing the pan of the pistol, said something to him in Arabic, to the following effect. "It clearly appears that you have been contriving an escape, and if in future you are seen without the limits of the camp, orders have been issued that you shall be shot by the first person that happens to discover you*."

A few days having elapsed, Ali sent a slave to our traveller to order him to be in readiness for an excursion with the monarch in the afternoon, as he intended to gratify his women with the sight of the extraordinary stranger. The message was hardly delivered, when the king, with several attendants, came riding to the hut. A new difficulty now occurred; the Moors could not be reconciled to the European's *nankeen breeches*, which they condemned as inelegant and indecent, especially in the presence of ladies. The difficulty, however, was at length removed; the king having ordered him to wrap his cloak around him. They visited four different ladies in their tents, by each of whom Mr. Park was presented with a bowl of milk and water, while they examined his hair and skin with the minutest attention, though they seemed to shudder at his strange complexion; they even affected to consider him as a being inferior to themselves. All these ladies were extremely corpulent, which is here considered as the criterion of beauty.

In the course of the excursion, the dress and

after turning it round repeatedly, was convinced that it always pointed the same way, he returned it to the European, supposing something magical was contained in it, and that it was dangerous to have such an instrument under his roof.

A council was soon after held in Ali's tent respecting Mr. Park, and their decisions, which were all unfavourable to him, were differently related by different persons. Some affirmed that he was sentenced to death, others that he was only to suffer the amputation of his right hand; while the prince, a youth of nine years of age, assured him, that his uncle had persuaded his father to put out his eyes. He thought proper, however, to delay this operation till the queen, Fatima, who was then in the north, had seen his curious prisoner.

* A sand-wind commenced on the morning of the 22nd, which continued for two days; during which, though its force was not very considerable, it raised a sufficient quantity of sand to darken the whole atmosphere, sweeping from east to west in a thick and constant stream. The Moors, on these occasions, cover the face with a cloth, to prevent them from inhaling the sand.

About this time the women of the camp had stained their feet, and the ends of their fingers, of a dark saffron colour; but whether it was from a religious motive, or merely to ornament their persons, was not precisely known. A party of these ladies visited Mr. Park in his hut, to ascertain by *actual inspection*, whether the rite of *circumcision* extended to christians as well as to the followers of Mahomet. Though a little surprised at this strange request, Mr. Park thought proper to treat the business jocularly, and informed them that it was not usual in his country to give *ocular demonstration*, in such cases, before so many beautiful women; but if all would retire, except one young lady, to whom he pointed, (selecting one of the handsomest among them) he would satisfy her curiosity. The ladies relished the joke, and retired laughing, and the damsel to whom he had given the preference (though she did not claim the privilege of inspection) seemed to approve of the compliment, by sending him some meal and milk for his supper.

appearance of the European afforded infinite mirth to the company, who galloped round him, exhibiting various feats of equestrian activity. The Moors are excellent horsemen; they ride without fear; their saddles are so constructed as to afford them a secure seat; and their roads, which are soft and sandy, are preservatives against fatal accidents from falling. The Moors hold their horses in great estimation, as their fleetness enables them to plunder the Negro countries: they feed them plentifully and frequently, and indulge them with a quantity of sweet milk in the evening. A child having died in the camp, the mother and the relatives assisted in the dead howl, in which they were joined by many female visitors. In the evening the body was committed to the grave, and a shrub planted thereon, which no stranger's fingers are permitted to defile.*

SECTION V.

Mr. Park has a short Allowance of Provision, Christian Captives being required to keep Mahometan Lent—Advised by the Shereef not to travel to Tombuctoo, assuring him that Christians were there considered as the Devil's Children—The Bambar Army approach Ludamar—Mr. Park is introduced to Queen Fatima—Suffers greatly from Thirst—Partakes of Water with the Cows—Some Account of the Moors.

AFTER a month's captivity in Ali's camp, and daily experiencing new distresses, his cruel oppressors permitted our traveller to pass one sultry evening in solitude and reflection. At midnight, a bowl of kouskous, with salt and water, was served up for himself and his two attendants, intended as a full allowance for the following day; for, as this was the Mahometan Lent, the Moors not only fasted themselves, but required a similar abstinence from a Christian captive. Time, at length, had rendered his situation more tolerable, and he began to be better reconciled to the sufferings of hunger and thirst. In order to beguile the tedious hours, he amused himself by learning to write Arabic. From the people who came to see him, he became acquainted with the characters.

Ali proposing to go two days' journey to the north to meet his queen Fatima, a bullock was killed, cut in slices, and dried in the sun: this, with a moderate quantity of dry kouskous, furnished provision upon the road. The tyrant, apprehensive of poison, never partook of any food that was not dressed under his immediate inspection. Soon after the departure of Ali, a shereef arrived with salt and other merchandize from Walet, the capital of Biroo. He resided in the same hut with Mr. Park. Acquainted with the Arabic and Bambarra tongues, he had travelled commodiously through several kingdoms; he had visited Housa, and resided many years at Tombuctoo. In the course of conversation, our traveller mentioned an inclination to travel to the last mentioned city, but the shereeff endeavoured

* On the 7th, a whirlwind overturned three tents, and greatly injured our traveller's hut: the heat of the air, at the same time, was almost suffocating, and the naked feet of the Negroes were violently scorched by the sand. About this time a Moorish wedding was celebrated; the ceremony of which is thus described by Mr. Park:—"In the evening, the tabul, or large drum was beat, to announce a wedding, which was held at one of the neighbouring tents. A great number of people of both sexes assembled, but without that mirth and hilarity which takes place at a Negro wedding: here there was neither singing nor dancing, nor any other amusement that I could perceive. A woman was beating the drum, and the other women joining at times, like a chorus, by setting up a shrill scream; and, at the same time, moving their tongues from one side of the mouth to the other, with great celerity. I was soon tired, and had returned into my hut, where I was sitting almost asleep, when an old woman entered, with a wooden bowl in her hand, and signified that she had brought me a present from the bride. Before I could recover from the surprise which this message created, the woman discharged the contents of the bowl full in my face. Finding that it was the same sort of holy water, with which, among the Hottentots, a priest is said to sprinkle a new-married couple, I began to suspect that the old lady was actuated by mischief or malice; but she gave me seriously to understand, that it was a nuptial benediction from the bride's own person; and which, on such occasions, is always received by the young unmarried Moors, as a mark of distinguished favour. This being the case, I wiped my face, and sent my acknowledgments to the lady. The wedding drum continued to beat, and the women to sing, or rather whistle, all night. About nine in the morning, the bride was brought in state from her mother's tent, attended by a number of women, who carried her tent (a present from the husband) some bearing up the poles, others holding by the strings; and in this manner they marched, whistling as formerly, till they came to the place appointed for her residence, where they pitched the tent. The husband followed, with a number of men leading four bullocks, which they tied to the tent-strings; and having killed another, and distributed the beef among the people, the ceremony was concluded."

to deter him from so imprudent a journey; assuring him that *Christians* were there considered as the devil's children, and enemies to the Prophet. The shereeff then communicated to him the following particulars—"that Houssa was the largest town he had ever seen; that Walet was larger than Tombuctoo, but was less resorted to by strangers; that between Benown and Walet was ten days' journey; but the road not leading through any considerable places, travellers supported themselves by purchasing milk from the Arabs, who kept their herds near the watering places: two days were consumed in passing over a sandy country without water: from Walet to Tombuctoo was eleven days' journey, but water was plentiful, and the journey was performed upon bullocks: that many Jews are seen at Tombuctoo, but that all spoke Arabic, and used the same prayers as the Moors." *

Johnson and Demba, the two attendants, lay stretched upon the sand in a sort of torpid slumber; and even on the arrival of some kouskous could not be aroused without difficulty. Mr. Park experienced no inclination for sleep, but was affected with a deep convulsive respiration, like perpetual sighing, a dimness of sight, and a propensity to faint, when he attempted to sit up; and these symptoms continued till some time after he had taken nourishment.

A messenger arrived at Benown with the unwelcome intelligence that the Bambarra army was approaching the frontiers of Ludamar. This alarm threw the whole country into confusion, and in the afternoon, Ali's son arriving with about twenty horsemen, ordered all the cattle to be immediately driven away, all the tents to be struck, and the people to depart. In obedience to these orders, the baggage was carried upon bullocks. The king's favourite concubines rode upon camels, with a commodious saddle, and a canopy to ward off the scorching rays of the sun. Proceeding northward, they arrived in the evening at the Negro town of Farani, near which they pitched their tents. The confusion which attended this encampment obliged our travellers to undergo another day of fasting and humiliation.

Two of Ali's household slaves, a man and a woman, who had come with the tents, went to water their cattle at the town wells, at which there began to be a great scarcity: when some Negro women observed the cattle approaching, they ran with their pitchers towards the town, but before their arrival at the gate, they were stopped by the slaves, who compelled them to pour the water, intended for their own families, into the troughs for the cattle: they were also obliged to draw water till all the cattle had drank; and the Moorish female slave actually broke two wooden bowls over the heads of the negroes, for being dilatory in obeying her commands.

Arriving at Ali's camp, Mr. Park immediately waited upon Ali, and saw queeen Fatima in his presence. Ali seemed well pleased with his coming, and familiarly shook hands with him, at the same time informing his consort that he was *the Christian*. She was of the Arab cast, with long black hair, and remarkably corpulent. At first she seemed shocked at having a Christian so near her; but when Mr. Park, (by the assistance of a Negro boy) had gratified her curiosity by answering many questions, she seemed reconciled, and presented him with a bowl of milk. The heat was now excessive, and the scarcity of water was greater here than at Benown; and this scarcity was felt by none more severely than by our unfortunate adventurer, whose boy was repeatedly driven from the well by the unfeeling Moors, when attempting to fill the skin which Ali himself had given him for that purpose; astonished that the slave of a Christian, should have presumed to draw water from wells dug by the followers of the Prophet.

Mr. Park was so indifferently supplied with water, that he frequently passed the night in the situation of Tantalus †. Once in particular, having solicited in vain for that fluid at the camp, he

* Being thus amused, Mr. Park passed his time with less uneasiness than formerly; but as his supply of victuals was left to the direction of slaves, over whom he had no control, his sufferings were more severe than in the last month: for two successive nights they neglected to furnish the accustomed meal; and though the boy begged for sustenance from hut to hut in a small Negro town near the camp, he could only procure a few handfuls of ground nuts, which he readily shared with his master. Mr. Park was now too sensible that when hunger has been endured for some time, it will produce languor and debility; but a draught of water, by keeping the stomach distended, will afford a temporary relief.

† As soon as he had shut his eyes, fancy conveyed to him the streams and rivers of his native land; there, as he wandered along the verdant brink, he surveyed the transparent stream with transport, and hastened to swallow the delightful draught; but, alas! disappointment awakened him, and he found himself a lonely captive, perishing with thirst, amidst the wilds of Africa.

resolved

resolved to try his fortune at the wells, to which he was guided by the lowing of the cattle. He found the Moors very busy in drawing water, and requested permission to drink; but they drove him away with abusive contempt. Arriving at a well, where there was only an old man and two boys, he repeated the same request; the old man instantly drew up a bucket of water; but when the traveller was stooping to take hold of it, he recollected that Mr. Park was a Christian; and, fearing that the bucket might be polluted by his lips, he dashed the water into the trough. Though this trough was small, and three cows were then slaking their thirst at it, Mr. Park was anxious to come in for his share, and pushing his head between two of those valuable animals, drank with them till the water was nearly exhausted.

In this manner passed the sultry month of May, during which time no alteration took place in the traveller's situation. Ali still considered him as a lawful prisoner; and though Fatima allowed him a larger supply of provisions than he received at Benown, no mention had been made of his release. The wet season, however, was approaching, when the Negroes usually return to the environs of the Great Desert; but a concurrence of circumstances produced a change in his favour more suddenly than he expected.—The fugitive Kaartans, who had taken refuge in Ludamar, finding the Moors intended to leave them, and dreading the resentment of their own sovereign, whom they had so basely deserted, offered to treat with Ali for a number of Moorish horsemen, to co-operate with them in expelling Daisy from Gedingooma; for till Daisy should be humbled, they could not return to their respective towns, nor live securely in the neighbouring kingdoms. To extort money from these people, Ali dispatched his son to Jarra, and followed him in a few days.

This was too favourable an opportunity to be neglected by our traveller. He immediately applied to Fatima, whose power was absolute in all important affairs, and begged her interest with Ali to obtain permission for him to accompany him to Jarra. After some consideration, the request was favourably received. Fatima looked kindly on him, and seemed to pity his distresses. His bundles were brought into the presence of the royal consort, and he was ordered to explain the use of the respective articles for her amusement. He was also required to shew the manner of putting on the boots, stockings, &c. with all which he cheerfully complied, and received the promise of permission to depart in the course of a very few days.

Here Mr. Park interrupts the narrative of his adventures, by collecting into one point of view, such observations on the Moorish country and character, as naturally occurred to him in his situation:

The Moors of this part of Africa consist of many tribes, the most powerful of which inhabit the northern banks of the Senegal, and are known by the names of Trasart and Il Braken. The tribes of Gedumah, Jafnoo, and Ludamar, though less numerous than the former, are next in power. Each is governed by a king, who exercises absolute jurisdiction over his own horde. Their employments in time of peace are chiefly pastoral, and their sustenance is principally derived from milk and the flesh of their cattle, which they sometimes devour voraciously, and sometimes practice the most austere abstinence. When enjoined by their religion, or engaged in their journies across the Desert, they endure hunger and thirst with surprising fortitude; but when opportunities occur of indulging their appetites, they swallow more at one meal than an European does in three.

Agriculture is but little practised among them, and the materials for manufacture are scantily produced. They purchase cotton-cloth, and other articles, from the Negroes, in exchange for salt, which they dig from pits in the Great Desert.—They contrive, however, to weave a strong cloth, with which they cover their tents, the thread of which is spun by the women from goats' hair; and from the hides of their cattle they manufacture saddles, bridles, &c. Their knives and spears are formed of the native iron, but sabres, fire-arms, and all their other weapons, are purchased from Europeans, in exchange for Negro slaves. Their chief commerce is with the French traders on the Senegal. They practice Mahometanism with all its bigotry, superstition, and intolerance: not having a mosque at Benown, their devotions are performed in an open shed, or an inclosure made of mats. The priest, who is also a schoolmaster, is attended every evening by his pupils, who learn from him a few sentences of the Koran, by the light of a large fire. When these lessons have been read and transcribed, and a few prayers committed to memory, the scholar's education is

deemed complete; and with this slender stock of learning he enters his career of life: glorying in his acquirements, he surveys with contempt the unlettered Negro.*

The usual dress of the women is a piece of cotton cloth, wrapped round the middle, and descending like a petticoat almost to the ground.—To this are sewed two square pieces of the same manufacture, which are united over the shoulders. The head is encircled with a plain bandage, which is occasionally extended to defend their features from the sun. Sometimes, when they go out to take the air, they are veiled from head to foot.

Their employments are regulated by their situation: queen Fatima and her ladies of the first degree, devote their hours to the conversation of visitors, performing devotions, or contemplating their charms at the looking-glass. Though the lower females attend to their domestic duties, they maintain a petty despotism over their slaves, and are as vain, as voluble, and as capricious as their betters. The condition of the captives is truly wretched; they are obliged to labour excessively in the most servile offices; and to heap the measure of their misfortunes, they are miserably fed, and unmercifully punished.

Among the Moors of Ludamar, the dress of the men differs but little from that of the Negroes, excepting that they all wear the turban, which is universally made of white cotton cloth. Such of them as have long beards,† display them with ostentatious satisfaction, as denoting an Arab ancestry. But among the generality of the people the hair is short, bushy, and black. The diseases most prevalent among them are the intermittent fever, and the dysentery, when Nature is generally left to herself, though nostrums are sometimes administered by old women. Many of the Moors, in the southern states, are subject to the small pox; and the Negroes, who reside near the Gambia, practise inoculation. The administration of criminal justice is prompt and decisive: on such occasions the offender is brought before the king, who pronounces, of his sole authority, what judgment he thinks proper; though capital punishments were seldom inflicted on any but the Negroes.

The wealth of the Moors consists in their numerous herds of cattle; but as their time is not wholly engrossed by pastoral employments, they spend the rest of the day in trifling conversation, or in planning schemes of depredation on the Negro villages. The king's tent is the scene of general rendezvous, where great liberty of speech is tolerated among the subjects; but in speaking of their sovereign, they are all unanimous in his praise. Songs are composed in honour of him; but they are so replete with adulation, that a Moorish monarch only could hear them without blushing. The king surpasses his subjects in the elegance of his apparel; but in his intercourse with them, all distinctions of rank are frequently forgotten. He even condescends to eat of the same bowl with his camel-drivers, and reposes himself on the same bed during the heat of the day ‡.

Mr. Park could not form any correct estimate of the number of the king of Ludamar's Moorish subjects; but the cavalry, amounting to about two thousand, formed a very small proportion of the population. Each soldier furnishes his own horse, together with his accoutrements: he has no other pay than the produce of his plunder.—The horses are so beautiful, and so highly esteemed,

* Of feminine perfection the Moors have singular ideas; for in their estimation the *most corpulent* is the *greatest beauty*. A perfect beauty is so ponderous as to be a load for a camel; and a woman of moderate pretensions must not be able to walk without a slave under each arm to support her. From this astonishing taste in the men, the girls are compelled by their mothers to acquire this perfection early in life, by swallowing a vast quantity of kouskous, and a similar portion of camel's milk every morning. Whether the girl has an appetite or not, the injunction must be complied with; the kouskous and the milk must be swallowed, though blows are sometimes required to enforce obedience. "I have seen," says Mr. Park, "a poor girl sit crying, with the bowl at her lips, for more than an hour, and a mother, with a stick in her hand, watching her all the while, and using the stick without mercy, whenever she observed that her daughter was not swallowing." This strange practice, instead of producing indigestion and disease, soon occasions that excess of plumpness which is so captivating in the eye of the Moor.

† Mr. Park was, at one time, inclined to suppose that the Moors were willing to favour him, by their approbation of his beard, which was now grown to an enormous length, and was always beheld by them with a mixture of envy and admiration. He jocularly adds, "I believe in my conscience, they thought it too good a beard for a Christian."

‡ His revenues arise from a tax on his Negro subjects; a tax upon korrees, or watering places; and another upon all merchandize passing through his kingdom. It should not be omitted, however, to mention, that a very considerable part is acquired by the plunder of individuals. Many are afraid of being thought rich, as the king has several spies stationed in every town, to collect information respecting the wealth of his respective subjects; and where the temptation of wealth is strong, he is capable of inventing a plausible plea of seizing it for his own emolument.

that

that twelve or fourteen slaves are sometimes given by Negro princes for one of them.

Ludamar has, for its northern boundary, the Great Desert of Jarra, which is an amazing tract of sand, almost destitute of inhabitants, except where the scanty vegetation is observable in particular parts, to supply with pasturage the flocks of a few poor itinerant Arabs. In other places, where they are better supplied with water and pasturage, small parties of Moors have fixed upon a residence, where they live in independent poverty, secure from the government of Barbary. In other parts, the disconsolate wanderer sees nothing around him but a vast expanse of sand and sky, and a gloomy and barren void; and the mind is tortured with apprehensions of perishing with thirst. Surrounded by this dreary solitude, the traveller beholds the dead bodies of birds, driven by tempestuous winds from happier regions, and ruminating on the dreadful length of his passage, listens with horror to the voice of the driving blast *.

Though the Moors resemble the Mulattoes with regard to complexion, the expression of their features display a disposition to cruelty and artifice. A staring wildness in their eyes gives them the appearance of being in a state of lunacy. Innumerable instances might be drawn of their treachery and malevolence from their conduct to the Negroes. Without provocation, and sometimes under the fairest professions of friendship, they will suddenly seize upon the Negroes' cattle, and sometimes upon the inhabitants themselves. The Negroes never retaliate; the fleetness of the horses of the Moors render them so formidable, that resistance is hardly thought of.

Like the roving Arabs, the Moors are frequently removing from place to place, influenced by the season of the year, for the convenience of pasturage. In February they strike their tents, and approach the Negro country to the south, where they remain till the rains commence in July: they then return to the Desert, where they continue till the month of February. Inured to hardships by this wandering life, and linked in the bonds of unity with their associates, they harbour an insurmountable aversion towards strangers. Deprived of all intercourse with civilized nations, and boasting a superiority to the Negroes, by a very superficial knowledge of letters, they combine, in their character, the superstition of the Negro, with the cruelty and treachery of the Arab; and are the vainest, the most bigotted, ferocious, and intolerant of all the nations on the earth.

If Mr. Park has not given so copious an account of the manners of this singular and secluded people, as might be expected, the extreme wretchedness of his situation will operate as a sufficient apology, as he had but few opportuities of collecting information. He now ventures, however, to resume his narrative.

* In these melancholy regions, the only wild animals to be found are the antelope and the ostrich; but on the skirts of the Desert, where water is more plentiful, lions, panthers, elephants, and wild boars make thier appearance. Of domestic animals, the camel only can endure the fatigue of crossing it; being enabled, by the particular conformation of his stomach, to carry a supply of water for ten or a dozen days. On this, and other accounts, he is the only beast of burthen employed by the trading caravans. The flesh of this animal is preferred by the Moors to any other, and the milk of the female is nutritive and pleasant.

SECTION VI.

Ali departs from Jarra—Demba seized and sent into Slavery—Ali returns to his Camp—Daisy, King of Kaarta, approaches Jarra—Inhabitants quit the Town, &c.—Author proceeds through the Wilderness—Suffers from Thirst, and the Sands—Providentially relieved—Obtains Food from a poor Woman—Continues his Journey through the Wilderness—Arrives at Wawra.

HAVING obtained permission to accompany Ali to Jarra, our traveller took a ceremonious leave of queen Fatima, who graciously condescended to restore him part of his apparel; and on the evening before his departure, he received his horse and accoutrements by Ali's order. Early on the 25th he quitted the camp of Bubaker, accompanied by Johnson and Demba, and a number of Moorish horsemen. Ali, with fifty horsemen, retired privately from the camp, during

the

the night. In the afternoon the travellers overtook Ali, and his fifty horsemen at a watering-place in the woods. The company reposed, for the night, in the tents of some shepherds near the wells; but as there was not accommodation for the whole party, Mr. Park was ordered to continue in the open space in the centre of the tents. During the night there was much lightning, and at day-break so heavy a sand-wind commenced, that it was impossible to look up: the cattle were so tormented with the particles of sand lodging in their eyes and ears, that they ran about like mad creatures, insomuch that our traveller apprehended he should be trampled to death.

In the morning, however, he was ordered to get ready to depart; and Ali's chief slave informed the Negro boy, that Ali was to be his master in future. Then turning to Mr. Park, he said, "The boy, and every thing but your horse, must go back to Bubaker; but you may take the old fool (meaning Johnson) with you to Jarra." Mr. Park, shocked beyond description at the idea of losing the poor boy, expostulated with Ali, and observed that though he had been imprudent in coming to Ludamar, he had been sufficiently punished for such imprudence by being so long detained, and afterwards plundered of all his little property. But the threat which he had now denounced was intolerable; the boy, whom he had now seized upon, was not a slave, nor accused of any offence. His fidelity to his master has plunged him into his present situation. "As his protector," added Mr. Park, "I cannot see him deprived of his liberty, without remonstrating against the cruelty and injustice of the act."

Ali, with the haughty and malignant smile of a tyrant, assured his interpreter, that if he did not instantly depart, he would also send our traveller back. Poor Demba was not less affected than Mr. Park, who finding it in vain to expect redress, shook hands with the unfortunate youth; and having blended his tears with those of the boy, assured him of his utmost endeavours to procure him his release. He then experienced the torment of seeing poor Demba led off by Ali's slaves towards the camp at Bubaker.

The Moors, and Mr. Park, after a fatiguing journey, arrived at Doombani, a large walled town, where they were joined by some horsemen from the northward. On the 1st of June they proceeded towards Jarra; the company consisting of two hundred men, all on horseback. At Jarra, our traveller was accommodated at the house of his old acquaintance Daman Jumma, to whom he related the most extraordinary passages of his late adventures. He then requested him in the most pressing terms, to procure a ransom for the boy, and promised a bill upon Dr. Laidley, for the value of two slaves. Daman undertook the business, but Ali deferred the matter from day to day; telling Daman that if he wished to purchase the boy for himself, he should have him, at some future time, at the price of a common slave. To this proposal he agreed, and the money was to be paid whenever the boy was sent to Jarra.

Ali's object in visiting Jarra, was to procure money from the fugitive Kaartans, who, taking refuge in Ludamar, had resolved to attack from thence their lawful sovereign Daisy. Ali, with the warmest professions of friendship, agreed to furnish them with two hundred horsemen, on condition that they should previously supply him with four hundred head of cattle, two hundred garments of blue cloth, and a stipulated quantity of beads, &c. In order to procure the cattle, they persuaded the king to demand half what was required from the people of Jarra, promising shortly to make a suitable return. The next day a proclamation was made by the drum and the crier, that if any person should suffer his cattle to go into the woods the next morning, before the king had made a selection from them, his house should be plundered, and his slaves arrested for the service of his majesty. Paying due obedience to this proclamation, two hundred of the best cattle were delivered to the Moors the next morning; and the full compliment was afterwards made up by the same arbitrary means.

On the 8th of June Ali returned to Bubaker, to celebrate a certain festival, and permitted Mr. Park to remain with Daman till his return. The next morning all the Moors departed from the town. During their stay they had committed many robberies; and, with the most unparalleled audacity, had seized upon three girls, who were bringing water from the wells, and carried them away into slavery. Two people, dreadfully wounded, were discovered on the 12th at a watering-place in the woods: one of them was already dead, but the other was brought alive to Jarra. Before he breathed his last, he said he had fled through the woods from Kasson: that Daisy had commenced hostilities against Sambo Sego, surprised

prised three of his towns, and slain the inhabitants. He named many who had been slaughtered in Kasson; in consequence of which the death howl was universal in Jarra for two days.

Some fugitive slaves from Kaarta reported that Daisy, hearing that hostile preparations were making against him, intended to visit Jarra. On this intelligence the Kaartans demanded of Ali the two hundred horsemen which he had contracted to furnish; but Ali plainly informed them that his cavalry were otherwise employed. The Negroes, thus deserted by the Moors, and expecting no clemency from the king of Kaarta, resolved to collect their forces, and hazard a battle with the king, who was now almost destitute of provisions: eight hundred effective men were therefore instantly produced, who entered Kaarta on the 18th. On the following day a thunder storm, accompanied with rain, revived the face of nature, by producing a pleasant coolness in the air: no rain having fallen for many months before.

Mr. Park, finding his endeavours to recover the boy ineffectual, began to think of his own safety before the commencement of the periodical rains. After mature consideration, he resolved to avail himself of the first opportunity of escaping, and to proceed alone to Bambarra, Johnson having refused to proceed any farther. Such was his perplexing situation when the Jarra army, returning from their expedition, fired their musquets as a testimony of joy; but the detail of the expedition did not relieve the people of Jarra from their fears and apprehensions. Daisy was at a town near Joka, surrounded by so numerous an army, that all attempts to attack him were abandoned: two of Daisy's towns were, however, seized, and the whole of the inhabitants carried off, but lest the king should hear of this circumstance, and be induced to cut off their retreat, they returned through the woods by night with all their booty*.

Mr. Park arrived at Quaira, on the evening of the 28th; where he remained a few days to recruit his horse, and wait for the arrival of some Mandingo Negroes who were going to Bambarra. In a few days Ali's principal slave, and four Moors arrived at Quaira. Johnson, the interpreter, suspecting their intention, deputed two boys to listen to their conversation, from which they discovered that our traveller was to be conveyed back to Bubaker. In the evening two of the Moors were convinced, by privately inspecting his horse, that he could not effect his escape upon so wretched an animal; and having enquired where he slept, returned to their companions. Fully perceiving their intentions, our traveller resolved instantly to set off for Bambarra, to avoid a second captivity. Johnson applauded his resolution, but refused to accompany him, having agreed with Daman to assist in conducting a caravan of slaves to the Gambia, as it furnished him with an opportunity of returning to his wife and family.

Thus circumstanced, Mr. Park determined to proceed by himself, and lost no time in getting ready for his departure. His wardrobe consisted of two shirts, two waistcoats, two pair of trowsers, a hat, a pair of boots, and two pocket-handkerchiefs: he had not a single bead, nor any other article of value belonging to him, to purchase provision for himself, or for his horse. At day-break Johnson informed him that the Moors were all asleep: sensible of the danger of deliberating, he instantly stepped over the Negroes, who were sleeping in the open air; and, having mounted his horse, took leave of Johnson, requesting him to take care of the papers which he had delivered to him, and inform his friends on the Gambia that he had left him in good health, on his road to Bambarra.

* A spy from Kaarta brought intelligence that Daisy had taken Simbing, and intended to be in Jarra the ensuing day. A number of persons were stationed on the tops of rocks, and all the avenues to the town, to give early intelligence of Daisy's motions. The women prepared for quitting the town, with all the expedition that circumstances seemed to require: at day-break, about half the people took the road for Bambarra, by the way of Deena. Their departure was afflicting to the beholders. The women and children crying, and the men, with dejection stamped upon their countenances, looking back with regret on their native town, which they were now compelled to abandon. On the following day information was brought from the centinels, that Daisy was on his march to Jarra, and that the opposing army had fled, without attempting to resist. Great was the terror of the inhabitants at this alarming intelligence. Mr. Park, though he had every reason to be pleased with Daisy's behaviour to him when at Kemmoo, did not wish to expose himself to the mercy of his army, fearing he might in the general confusion be mistaken for a Moor: he therefore mounted his horse, taking a large bag of corn before him, and rode out of the town with the disconsolate inhabitants. Our traveller halted at a small farm called Kadeeja, where he saw Daman and Johnson employed in filling large bags of corn, to be carried on bullocks, for the sustenance of Daman's family on the road.

He proceeded with extreme caution, surveying the bushes, and frequently listening, till he had got about a mile from the town, when he unexpectedly found himself in the neighbourhood of a Moorish watering-place. The shepherds followed him, giving him insolent language; and when he afterwards congratulated himself that he was perfectly out of their reach, he was alarmed by a loud shout; when, looking back, he saw three Moors on horseback, galloping at full speed, and brandishing their fire-arms. Knowing it would be in vain to attempt to escape, he turned to meet them. Two of them immediately caught hold of his bridle, and the other, presenting his musquet, said he must go back with them to Ali. Mr. Park accordingly rode back with the Moors, with apparent unconcern; when, in passing among some thick bushes, one of them commanded him to untie his bundle, and shew them the contents: but finding nothing valuable, one of them seized his cloak, and wrapped it about himself. This was an article of importance to our traveller, as it defended him from the rain by day, and from the musketoes in the night; he therefore entreated them to return it, but in vain: two of them rode off with the prize, and the third, when Mr. Park attempted to follow, struck his horse over the head, and, presenting his musquet, ordered him to proceed no further.

Perceiving that these men were not sent by authority to apprehend him, but merely to rob and plunder him, he turned his horse's head once more towards the east. The Moor followed his confederates, and Mr. Park, that he might not again be overtaken, struck into the woods, and after some time and observation, found himself in the proper road.

Great was the joy of our traveller, when he conceived himself perfectly out of danger; but soon his situation became truly deplorable, and deprived him of the prospect of procuring food or water. Having taken a circuitous route to avoid being seen, he directed his course through the wilderness, east-south-east towards some town or village in the kingdom of Bambarra. Oppressed with extreme thirst, when the burning heat of the sun was reflected with violence from the hot sand, he travelled on without having seen a human habitation. About four, he saw a large herd of goats, attended by two Moorish boys, who informed him that the goats were the property of Ali, and that they were going to Deena, where water was plentiful, and where they intended to stay till the pools in the Desert had been filled by the rain. Then, shewing him their empty water-skins, assured him they had seen no water in the woods*.

Determined to make another effort to prolong his existence, and the evening being cool, he resolved to travel as far as his feeble limbs would carry him, in hopes of discovering a watering-place. Putting the bridle on his horse, and driving him before him, they went on slowly for about half an hour, when some rays of lightning darted from the east, which he deemed a delightful sight, as it proclaimed the approach of rain. The wind roared, and the dust for a time was suffocating; but when the fury of the wind abated, a plentiful shower of rain ensued. The poor traveller spread his cloaths to receive it, and allayed his thirst by wringing and sucking out the delicious fluid.

The darkness of the night obliged him to lead his horse, and he guided him by the compass, which the lightning enabled him to observe. About two o'clock the animal started, and, looking round, he saw a light at a short distance among the trees: proceeding cautiously towards the spot from whence it proceeded, he saw many other lights in different places; and by the lowing of the cattle, and the clamour of the herdsmen, he concluded that it was a watering-place, and probably belonging to the Moors. Delightful as the sound of the human voice was to him, he resolved once more to strike into the woods; but being still thirsty, and dreading the approach of a burning sun, he ventured to search for the

* Little consolation could be afforded to our adventurer by this representation: his thirst was now become intolerable; his mouth was parched, a sudden dimness frequently impaired his sight, and he began to apprehend that he should absolutely perish with thirst. Towards the evening he ascended a high tree, from the uppermost branches of which he took a melancholy view of the barren wilderness, where he perceived only a dismal uniformity of sand and shrubs. Descending from the tree, he saw his horse agreeably engaged in devouring the brushwood and stubble. Unable to attempt walking, and his horse being too much fatigued to carry him, he thought it would be the last act of humanity he should have it in his power to perform, to take off his bridle, and permit him to shift for himself. In attempting this commendable deed, a sudden giddiness and sickness seized him, and he supposed the hour of death approaching. Nature, however, at length resumed her functions; and on recovering his senses, he found the bridle remaining in his hand.

wells;

wells; when, approaching too near one of the tents, he was perceived by a woman, who immediately gave an alarm: two persons came to her assistance; but he hastened again into the woods, and eluded pursuit*.

Whilst the horse was feeding, and our traveller's heart was elevated in silent praise to him, who had so bountifully spread a table for him in the wilderness, one of the natives communicated something to our hostess in a whisper, which evidently excited her astonishment; and from which it appeared that a resolution had been formed for seizing our traveller, and carrying him to Ali. He therefore prudently tied up his corn, and that he might not be suspected of having ran away from the Moors, pursued his journey in a northerly direction, attended by a vast concourse of the people.

Getting rid of his troublesome attendants, he again had recourse to the woods, and slept under a large tree; having a bundle of twigs for his bed, and his saddle for a pillow. He was awakened in the morning by three Foulahs, who, supposing him to be a Moor, pointed to the sun, reminding him that it was time to offer up their prayers. Without attending to this admonition, Mr. Park arose, and continued his journey over a level country. Pursuing a certain path, he arrived, about midnight, at a small pool of rain-water. Remaining here for the night, his sleep was much interrupted by the howling of wild beasts, and the tormenting assiduities of muskitoes and flies.

Pursuing his course on the 4th of July, he saw a vast number of wild hogs, antelopes, and ostriches, and met with some Foulah shepherds; one of whom invited him to come into his little tent, and partake of some dates. Crawling into this hospitable place, upon his hands and knees, he found a woman, and three children. A dish of boiled corn and dates was produced before them. While Mr. Park was eating, the children gazed at him with astonishment; and, on the shepherd's exclaiming a Nazarine! they all began to cry, and instantly followed the mother, who cautiously crept towards the door, and ran from the tent as rapidly as they could; so terrified were these creatures at the very name of a Christian. Here our adventurer procured some corn for his horse, in exchange for some brass trinkets. Sleeping at night under a tree, he was disturbed by wolves, which prompted him to set forward before day; and about ten o'clock, on the 5th of July, he arrived at Wawra, a Negro town, but tributary to the king of Bambarra.

SECTION VII.

The Author proceeds to Wassiboo—Accompanied by some fugitive Kaartans to Bambarra—Discovers the Niger—Account of Sego—Hospitality of a Negro Woman.

RELIEVED from the persecutions of the Moors, and being much fatigued with his journey, Mr. Park resolved to recruit his exhausted powers by sleep; and meeting with a hearty reception from the Dooty, he enjoyed a refreshing repose of two hours upon a bullock's hide. The people assembled in crowds to learn who the stranger was, and from whence he came; some declared him to be an Arab; others insisted upon his being a Moorish sultan; and their different opinions were supported with so much energy that the noise awoke him. The Dooty at length interposed, and assured them he was a white man, but that, from his appearance, certainly was a very

* The croaking of frogs now attracted his attention, and following the sound, he arrived at some shallow muddy pools, where he and his horse allayed their thirst. Ascending a tree in the morning, he saw the smoke of the watering-place he had passed in the night: he also perceived another pillar of smoke to the east, at the distance of about twelve or fourteen miles. Thither directing his course, he was informed by some Negroes, who were planting corn, that he was near a Foulah village, belonging to Ali, the name of which was Schrilla. After some hesitation, Mr. Park ventured to enter it, and accordingly rode up to the Dooty's house, where admittance was denied him, and where he could not obtain a handful of corn for his unfortunate horse. Quitting this inhospitable door, he rode slowly out of the town to some low scattered huts in the vicinity: at the door of one of these humble dwellings, he saw an elderly woman employed in spinning; he petitioned her, by signs, for some food; endeavouring to convince her that he was extremely hungry. The benevolent creature immediately abandoned her distaff, welcomed him to her little habitation, and provided for him a dish of kouskous, of which he made a comfortable meal: and in the European manner expressed his gratitude, by giving her one of his pocket-handkerchiefs.

a very poor one. Several women came to see him in the course of the day, and begged him to enquire of king Mansong what was become of their children: one of them told him, that her son's name was Manadee, and that he had been taken from her three years ago by Mansong's army; and entreated Mr. Park, if he should happen to see him, that his mother and sister were still alive. In the afternoon, the Dooty examined Mr. Park's leather bag, but, finding nothing valuable in it, he returned it, and ordered him to depart in the morning.

At day-break, on the 6th, Mr. Park departed, in company with a Negro; but the Negro's ass took an early opportunity of kicking him off, and he returned, leaving our traveller to prosecute the journey by himself. About noon he reached Dingyee, where his landlord requested a lock of his hair to make a saphie, which he said would convey to its possessor all the knowledge of a white man. Mr. Park complied with the request, but finding his head pretty closely cropped, he put on his hat, for which he apologized, by observing, that he wished to preserve some part of this valuable merchandise for a future occasion.

He proceeded to the small town of Wassiboo, where he remained four days at the Dooty's house. Cultivation, in this neighbourhood, is carried on with ardour; and the land is so abundantly fertile that, as the natives themselves express it, *Hunger is never known:* But, being continually in fear of the Moors, they find it necessary to carry their arms with them into the field.

A few days afterwards eight fugitive Kaartans arrived at Wassiboo: finding it impossible to exist under the tyrannical government of the Moors, they were resolved to transfer their allegiance to the king of Bambarra: at their request, Mr. Park accompanied them as far as Satilē, in the neighbourhood of which they arrived in the evening. The people, labouring in the corn fields, surprised at the sight of so many horsemen, took the travellers for a party of Moors, and ran screaming away from them. One of the company rode among them, to convince them that they were in an error, which alarmed them still the more; but after a full explanation at the gates, the travellers were permitted to enter. Setting forward the next day, the roads were found wet and dirty, but the country was beautiful, and watered with transparent rivulets.

About noon, our traveller's horse became so much fatigued that he was unable to keep up with the company; he therefore dismounted, and desired them to proceed, declaring he would follow them as soon as his faithful animal had taken a little rest; but the worthy Negroes, fearing Mr. Park might be attacked by the lions, which were very numerous in that quarter, if he continued alone, left one of the company to assist in driving the horse, whilst the others proceeded to Galloo. Joining the party at that place, they were well entertained by the Dooty *.

Leaving Moorja, and passing through Datliboo, they came to a large village, where they intended to pass the night. They proceeded to Fanimboo, where the Dooty, hearing there was a white man in company, brought out three old musquets, and was much disappointed at finding that Mr. Park could not repair them. As the travellers proceeded, they found the towns more numerous than before, but the people were less hospitable to strangers: even a little corn was solicited in vain; and Mr. Park, being under the necessity of driving his horse before him, did not reach Geosorro till after it was dark. He there found his companions wrangling with the Dooty, who absolutely refused to give or sell them any provisions: and as none of them had tasted food for the last twenty-four hours, they were not disposed to fast another day if they could avoid it. Our traveller, finding entreaties ineffectual, and being extremely fatigued, he fell asleep. About midnight, however, he was aroused with the joyful intelligence of the arrival of food, by which they were enabled to pass the remainder of the night with comfort †.

In the morning of the 20th our traveller petitioned,

* Next morning, thanking their landlord for his hospitality, the travellers set out for Moorja, a large town, famed for dealing extensively in salt. The inhabitants, being chiefly Mahometans, permit kafers to drink beer (corn spirit) in certain houses. Our traveller saw about twenty persons sitting round large vessels of this beer, all of them convivial, and many of them inebriated.

† They resumed their journey at the dawn of day; when Mr. Park, from the inability of his horse to travel, was again left behind his companions. Walking barefoot on the road, he was met by about seventy slaves coming from Sego: they were tied together by their necks with thongs of a bullock's hide. After them came Sidi, Mahomet's servant, whom Mr. Park had seen at Benown, and by whom he was informed that these slaves were going to Morocco, by the road of Ludamar and the Great Desert. Some time after our traveller met with about twenty Moors on horseback, who were the owners of these slaves. Arriving

titioned, in vain, for food; but, in the absence of the Dooty, he prevailed on his wife to indulge him with a handful of meal; which, mixed with water, was no unwelcome breakfast. Having departed from Doolinkeaboo, he stopped at a Korree, and was gratified with some milk by the Foulahs. Joining company with two negroes, who were going to Sego, they stopped at a little village, where a friend of one of the Negroes invited them to a sort of public entertainment. A dish called Sinkatoo, composed of sour milk, meal, and beer, was liberally distributed; and the women formed a part of the society; a circumstance which Mr. Park had never before observed in Africa. No compulsion was exercised, every one drank as he pleased; they nodded to each other before they drank, and on setting down the calabash, generally said *berka* (I thank you.) The men and women drank till they were almost intoxicated, but none of them were quarrelsome.

Mr. Park, and the two Negroes, proceeded on their journey, and passed several villages, where the European was constantly taken for a Moor, and became the subject of considerable mirth to the Bambarrans. Seeing him drive his horse before him, they were much diverted at his appearance—"He has been at Mecca," says one; another asked if his horse was sick, &c. They were accommodated that night at a village, where Mr. Park procured victuals for himself, and corn for his horse, at the moderate expence of a Button; and was informed that he should see the Niger the following day. The idea of seeing the Niger, and the buzzing of musketoes, would not permit the traveller to repose during the night; he therefore had saddled his horse, and was ready by day-light; but the gates of the village being shut, to avoid the intrusion of wild beasts, he was obliged to wait till the inhabitants were stirring.

Having at length departed, they proceeded towards Sego, the capital of Bambarra. As they approached the town, they fortunately overtook the fugitive Kaartans, to whom Mr. Park had been so much indebted in his journey through Bambarra: they readily agreed to introduce him to the king, and as they were passing through some marshy ground, one of them exultingly exclaimed, *Behold the water!*—and, looking forwards, he saw with infinite pleasure, the great object of their mission, the majestic Niger!—Hastening to the margin, and drinking some of that valuable fluid, he fervently rendered thanks to the Great Ruler of all things, for having thus far crowned his endeavours with success*.

When Mr. Park arrived at the ferry, the people, who were waiting for a passage, looked at him with astonishment. He had continued upwards of two hours on the bank, without having an opportunity of crossing; in the course of which time, information was communicated to Mansong, that a white man was coming to see him. A messenger from Mansong informed Mr. Park, that he could not possibly admit him, till he knew what had induced him to visit his country; and that he must not presume to cross the river, without the king's permission. He then pointed towards a distant village, desiring the traveller to procure accommodations there, and promised him further instructions in the morning.

However discouraging this reception, our traveller set off for the village, where, to his farther mortification, no person would admit him into his house: every one beheld him with astonishment and fear, and he sat the whole day without food in the shade of a tree. Towards evening the wind arose; and as a heavy rain was expected, he resolved to pass the night among the branches of the tree, to secure himself from destruction by wild beasts. About sun-set, however, when he was turning his horse loose to graze, a woman

riving at Doolinkeaboo, he was informed that his fellow travellers had gone on. The Dooty, at his request, furnished him with a draught of water, which is generally considered as a presage of greater hospitality; he therefore ventured to promise himself a good supper, and undisturbed repose. But he was unfortunately mistaken; a tempestuous night ensued, and the Dooty's hospitality was limited to the glass of water.

* Sego, at which he had arrived, consists, properly speaking, of four distinct towns, two on the northern bank of the Niger, and two on the southern bank. They are all surrounded with mud-walls of considerable height; their houses are formed of clay, with flat roofs, and of a square form; some of them have two stories, and many of them are white-washed. Moorish mosques are numerous, and the inhabitants are estimated at about thirty thousand: here the king of Bambarra has fixed his residence; and here many slaves are employed to convey people over the river; and, though the fare paid by each individual is trifling, it produces a considerable revenue. The canoes are of a singular construction, being formed of the trunks of two large trees, rendered concave: in consequence of which they are long, and disproportionably narrow. The view of this large city, the quantity of canoes upon the river, the crowded population, and the cultivated state of the surrounding country, formed altogether a prospect of civilization and magnificence, which our traveller little expected to find in the Bosom of Africa.

returning from the labours of the field, stopped to observe him; and, struck with his dejected appearance, enquired from what cause it proceeded; which he briefly explained to her: with a look of commisseration, she took up his bridle and saddle, and desired him to follow her. Having conducted him into her hut, and lighted up a lamp, she spread a mat on the floor, and told him he should be welcome to repose there till the morning. Understanding he was hungry, she caused some fish to be broiled upon the embers, and served them up for his supper. After assuring him that he might sleep without apprehension, she ordered the female part of the family, who stood gazing on him with astonishment, to resume their task of spinning, which occupied them the principal part of the night, whilst their labour was sweetened by songs; one of which was an extempore effusion, as their guest was the subject of it. It was sung by one of the young women, and the rest assisted in the chorus; the air was remarkably sweet and plaintive, and the words, literally translated, were these:

The winds roared, and the rains fell,
The poor white man, faint and weary, came
and sat under our tree.
He has no mother to bring him milk, no wife
to grind his corn,
Let us pity the white man, no mother has he, &c.

Trifling as this circumstance may appear, our traveller was extremely affected and oppressed by this unexpected kindness, which he was unable, in any proportionate degree to return, and sleep fled totally from his eyes. In the morning, he presented to his beneficent landlady, two of the four buttons which remained upon his waistcoat. He continued in this village the whole of July 21st, in conversation with the natives, who came in crowds to see him. As the evening approached he became uneasy, no message having arrived from the king. To add to his chagrin, he had been informed by the villagers that Mansong had received some unfavourable accounts of him, from the Moors and Slatees residing at Sego, who had formed many conjectures concerning the motives of his journey; that consultations had been held respecting his reception and disposal; that he had many enemies, and consequently must expect no favour.

About eleven o'clock, however, a messenger arrived from the king, which afforded very little satisfaction. He enquired if Mr. Park had brought him any present? and seemed very much disappointed on being informed that he had been robbed of all his property by the Moors. Mr. Park expressing a desire to go to court, was informed that he must wait till the afternoon, when the sovereign would send for him. In the afternoon of the following day, another messenger arrived from Mansong, who said it was the king's order that our traveller should instantly depart from the neighbourhood of Sego; but that Mansong, wishing to relieve the distresses of a white man, had sent him five thousand kowries*, to enable him to proceed on his journey: and if Jennē was his place of destination, he (the messenger) would conduct him to Sansanding.

Mr. Park was at first puzzled at the king's behaviour, but after some conversation with the guide, he had reason to believe that Mansong would have had no objection to admitting him into his presence at Sego, had he not been apprehensive that he might not have been able to protect him against the inveterate malice of the Moorish inhabitants: his conduct therefore was prudent and liberal. This benevolent prince thought it sufficient, that a white man was found in his dominions in great distress, and that no other plea was necessary to entitle the sufferer to his bounty.

SECT. VIII.

Departure from Sego to Kabba—Description of the Shea or Butter Tree—The Traveller proceeds to Sansanding—Arrives at Modiboo—Kea—Embarks for Moorzan—Conveyed across the Niger to Silla.

HAVING been compelled to leave Sego, Mr. Park was conducted, the same evening, to a village at the distance of about seven miles, where he and his guide were favourably received.

* Kowries are small shells, which pass current as money in many parts of the East Indies as well as in Africa. Mr. Park estimates about two hundred and fifty kowries equal to one shilling.

Our

Our traveller had acquired a considerable knowledge of the Bambarra tongue, and could speak it with a tolerable degree of fluency. The guide, who was friendly and communicative, expatiated on the hospitality of his countrymen, but informed our traveller, that if he was determined to go to Jennē, he had undertaken a very dangerous enterprize; that the town, though nominally a part of Mansong's dominions, was in reality a city of the Moors, and that the governor and principal inhabitants were Bushreens. He further informed him, that the places beyond Jennē were still more under the Moorish influence; and that Tombuctoo was wholly in the possession of these savages, who permitted no Christians to reside among them. But not choosing to return on such vague information, he proceeded with his guide on the 24th, and passed a large town named Kabba, situated in the midst of a fine cultivated country. The people were employed in collecting the fruit of shea-trees, from which they prepare the vegetable butter: these trees grow naturally in the woods, and in very great abundance; they resemble the American Oak, and the fruit, of which the butter is prepared, is not unlike a Spanish olive: "The kernel," says Mr. Park "is enveloped in a sweet pulp, under a thin green rind; and the butter produced from it, besides the advantage of its keeping the whole year, without salt, is whiter, firmer, and, to my palate, of a richer flavour than the best butter I ever tasted made from cow's-milk. The growth and preparation of this commodity, seem to be among the first objects of African industry, in this and the neighbouring states; and it constitutes a main article of their inland commerce."

After passing through several villages, Mr. Park and his conductor arrived at Sansanding, a very large town, containing about ten thousand inhabitants, much resorted to by the Moors, who get gold dust and cotton cloth, in exchange for coral, beads, and salt. Our traveller requested his guide to conduct him, in the most private manner, to a temporary abode: in consequence of which they rode between the town and the river. He was happy to find that all the Negro inhabitants took him for a Moor, under which character he would probably have passed unmolested, had not a Moor, who was sitting by the river-side, discovered the mistake; and, making a loud exclamation, occasioned many of his countrymen to assemble.

When our traveller arrived at the house of the Dooty, numbers of people surrounded him, speaking a variety of dialects. When the substance of what had been spoken was mentioned by the guide, who acted as interpreter, it appeared, that one of the Moors pretended to have seen him at one place, and another at some other place. A Moorish woman even swore that she had kept his house three years at Gallam, on the river Senegal. Mr. Park, supposing they had mistaken him for some other person, requested he would point towards the place where they had seen him. They pointed south. After a number of assertions and observations, one of the multitude started up, and swore by the prophet, if Mr. Park refused to go to the mosque, he would assist in carrying him there.

At length the Dooty interposed in our traveller's behalf, and informed the Moors that he would not suffer the king's stranger to be ill treated, whilst he was under his protection, but in the morning he should be dismissed. Their clamour was somewhat silenced by this address, but they insisted upon Mr. Park's ascending a high seat near the door of the mosque, that he might be exposed to every one. Here he sat till sun-set, when he was conducted to a small hut, the door of which was shut, that he might not be disturbed by the Moors. Many of them, however, climbed over the mud-wall, expecting to see the white man eat eggs, and perform his evening devotions. Convinced, at last, of the falsity of many improbable tales which had been insisted on, the Dooty admitted that Mr. Park would willingly partake of any proper food that might be offered him, and ordered a sheep to be killed, that part of it might be dressed for his supper.

About midnight, when the Moors had left our adventurer, this hospitable man visited him, and entreated him to write him a saphie, observing, that "If a Moor's saphie is good, a white man's certainly must be better." Mr. Park furnished him with one containing the Lord's Prayer, with a reed for a pen, ink manufactured from charcoal and gum-water, and instead of paper, a thin board was substituted.

Early in the morning Mr. Park left Sansanding, after which nothing particular occurred till the 27th, when he arrived at Nyara, where the Dooty resided in a house two stories high. He produced to Mr. Park some gun-powder of his own manufacturing, and exhibited, as a curiosity, a little

a little brown monkey, which he said had been conveyed to him from a distant country, called Kough. Reaching Nyamee on the 28th, the Dooty sent his son on horseback to conduct our adventurer to Modiboo, a town at no considerable distance. Riding through the woods, the guide frequently stopped to examine the bushes; assigning as a reason, that the lions were very numerous, and frequently attacked travellers. A large animal of the camelopard kind, was about this time perceived by Mr. Park, standing at a little distance; the neck and fore-legs were very long, the head was furnished with two short horns, turning backwards; and the tail, extending to the ham joint, had a tuft of hair at the end; the colour resembling that of a mouse. The animal moved from them with a slow trot, occasionally turning its head to see if it was pursued. Shortly after, as the travellers were advancing, they saw a large red lion at a short distance, with his head couched between his fore-paws. The Foulah suddenly exclaimed, "God preserve us!" and Mr. Park, expecting he would instantly spring upon him, prepared to throw himself on the ground, that his horse might become the victim rather than himself; but, from his not being hungry at that time, or some other cause, he suffered the terrified beholders to pass without molestation. To avoid any more of these alarming encounters, they took a circuitous route through some swampy ground, and at sun-set arrived at Modiboo *.

Early in the morning Mr. Park was hurried away by the Dooty, but not without furnishing him with a guide to Kea. Though weak, and incapable of walking, his horse was still less capable of carrying him; after proceeding about six miles, in crossing some clayey ground, he fell, and was unable to rise. His master, finding all endeavours to get him on his legs entirely useless, took off his saddle and bridle, and placed some grass before him; at the same time indulging the melancholy apprehension, that he should speedily be in as miserable a state; he then left the poor animal to his fate, and reluctantly followed his guide on foot. Proceeding along the bank of the river till about noon, he arrived at Kea, a small fishing village, where the Dooty, a surly old man, gave him a very cool reception. When Mr. Park solicited his protection with great humility, and mentioned the circumstances of his unfortunate situation, he laconically replied, that he was not to be won by fine speeches, and that he should not enter his house.

In this dilemma, and without an apparent chance of procuring a place of rest, a fishing canoe came down the river; when the Dooty condescended to wave his hand to the fisherman, and desired him to conduct the stranger to Moozan. The fisherman having no objection, Mr. Park embarked in the canoe with him, his wife, and a boy. The guide returned to Modiboo. When the canoe had proceeded about a mile down the river, the master of it paddled to the bank, and desired our traveller to get out; he then tied the canoe to a stake, stripped, and dived under the water, where he continued such a length of time, that the European supposed he had actually drowned himself, and was astonished that his wife was so patient an observer of such a calamity; but he suddenly raised up his head astern of the canoe, and called for a rope. With this rope he plunged a second time into the water, and then placed himself in the canoe, and the boy assisted him in pulling. At length a large basket made its appearance; it was about ten feet in diameter, and contained two fine fish, which the fisherman took ashore, and concealed in the grass.

After returning the basket into the water, they proceeded a little further down, and took up another basket, containing one fish. The fisherman now left them that he might take his prizes to market; and the woman, the boy, and Mr. Park, went down the river in the canoe. About four they reached Moorzan, a town on the northern bank; whence Mr. Park was conveyed across the river to the large town of Sylla. Here he continued under a tree till it was quite dark, surrounded by many hundreds of people; when, after much entreaty, the Dooty permitted him to enter his balloon, that he might be sheltered from

* This is a delightful village on the banks of the Niger, commanding an extensive view of that river. Here fish are caught in great abundance, with large cotton nets, which are used like the common nets in Europe. Crocodiles also are found here, that are not often dangerous; but swarms of musketoes, arising from the swamps and creeks, harass the most torpid of the natives; Mr. Park usually passed the night without shutting his eyes, these tormenting insects were so intolerable; their stings occasioned immoderate blisters on the arms and legs.

from the rain, but the place was so extremely damp, that the symptoms of fever he had before experienced were now increased.

Exhausted with sickness, hunger, and fatigue, half-naked, and destitute of every article of value to barter for provision, clothes, or lodging, he began seriously to reflect on his situation; he was now convinced that the obstacles to his further progress were insurmountable. The kowries which remained of the king of Bambarra's present, would not enable him to hire a canoe for any considerable distance, and he had little hopes of supporting himself by charity in a country where the Moors have so much influence. He had made every effort to execute his mission in its fullest extent, which prudence could justify. Had there been the most distant prospect of a successful termination, neither the hardships of the journey, nor the dangers of a second captivity, would have forced him to desist.

Having determined to return, our traveller collected what information he could obtain of the further course of the Niger eastward, and the kingdoms in its vicinage, from the Moorish and Negro traders. The particulars of which Mr. Park mentions, but as he could not possibly vouch for their authenticity, they cannot with propriety be admitted here.

SECTION IX.

The Author arrives at Modiboo—Is much incommoded in Travelling—King of Bambarra sends Persons to apprehend him—Incidents on the Road—Arrives at Taffara, &c.

MR. PARK now informed the Dooty of his intention to return to Sego, and signified his determination of travelling along the southern side of the river; but the Dooty informed him that the number of creeks and swamps on that side, would not permit him to take that route; and even the route on the northern bank was then impassable, from the overflowing of the river. By the Dooty's recommendation, however, our traveller was conveyed to Moorzan in a canoe. Here he hired another for sixty kowries, which conducted him to Kea, where, for forty kowries more, he was permitted to sleep in the same hut with one of the Dooty's slaves. This poor Negro, perceiving the emaciated and ragged state of his companion, humanely lent him a large piece of cloth to cover him during the night *.

Passing on, in friendly conversation, they soon perceived the footsteps of a lion in the mud; when the Negro insisted that Mr. Park should walk before him. The latter begged to be excused, and afterwards absolutely refused, alledging that he was unacquainted with the road. Displeased at our traveller's behaviour, the Negro, after some menacing language, accompanied with looks of vengeance, threw down the saddle, and left him. Mr. Park, giving up all hopes of ever obtaining a horse, threw the saddle into the river. The Negro seeing this transaction, jumped into the river, brought out the saddle, and ran away with it. Mr. Park continued his course alone, and reached Modiboo in the afternoon, when he perceived that his guide had got there before him; who, expecting his conduct would be censured, restored the saddle he had taken. Our traveller had also the satisfaction of finding his horse alive.

Departing from Modiboo on the first of August, Mr. Park proceeded to Nyamee, driving his horse before him. There he remained three days, on account of the incessant rain. On the 5th he set out, but the country was so deluged, that he was continually in danger of losing the road, and was obliged to wade across creeks for miles together, knee-deep in water. In the evening

* The next morning Mr. Park accompanied the Dooty's brother to Modiboo, who engaged to carry his saddle, which he had before left at Kea. Proceeding about a mile to the westward, they observed a considerable number of earthen jars, piled up on the bank of the river; they were ingeniously formed, but not glazed. Approaching them, the Dooty's brother plucked up a handful of grass, which he threw upon them, intimating that our traveller ought to do the same, which he accordingly did. The Negro then informed him, with a very serious countenance, that these jars belonged to some supernatural power, and were first seen on the spot they now occupied about two years ago; and that every traveller as he passed them, manifested his respect to the invisible proprietor, by throwing some herbage on them to protect them from the rain.

he arrived at Nyara, from whence he departed on the 7th, and reached the small village of Nemaboo.

Mr. Park was anxious to procure a fellow-traveller, and, after many enquiries, a Moor and his wife who were going to Sego, agreed to take him with them. They set out on the morning of the 9th, riding on bullocks, but they were wholly unacquainted with the road. Instead of wading before the animals to examine if the ground was solid, the woman boldly entered the first swamp, riding upon the top of the load, but before she had proceeded two hundred yards, the bullock sunk into a hole, and threw both the load and the woman among the reeds; the husband seemed to feel for the misfortune of his wife, but was not very active in yielding her assistance. About sun-set they arrived at Sibity, but the Dooty received our traveller very cooly; and when he solicited for a guide to Sansanding, he received an insulting answer, signifying that his people were better engaged. He passed the night in a damp old hut, which he expected would fall in upon him in the course of the night, the walls and roof being so softened by the rain, which still continued. Our adventurer being now refused provisions by the Dooty, purchased some corn for himself and his horse to feed upon.

Being compelled to leave Sibity, he set out for Sansanding, expecting to receive no better treatment, it being generally supposed that he had come to Bambarra as a spy; and as Mansong had refused him audience, all the Dooties were at liberty to treat him as they pleased. He reached Sansanding at sun-set, where his reception was such as he predicted. Counti Mamadi, who had formerly been so kind to him, saw him with indifference, and every one endeavoured to avoid him. Counti Mamadi himself came to him privately at ten o'clock, and informed him, that Mansong had dispatched a canoe to Jenné to bring him back; he therefore advised him to quit Sansanding before day-break, and not to stop at any town near Sego. He accordingly left that place on the 12th, and proceeded to Kabba.

On approaching the town, he saw a number of people assembled at the gate, one of which ran towards him, and taking his horse by the bridle, led him round the walls of the town; then pointing to the west, ordered him to go along, if he regarded his safety. Our traveller hesitating at this intelligence, several other persons advanced, and urged his departure in the strongest terms. He now began to suspect that some of the king's messengers were in the town in search of him, and that these Negroes, from motives of humanity, were anxious for his escape; he therefore took the road for Sego, and passing a small village, where he was refused admittance, and threatened with flagellation, he proceeded to another, where the Dooty permitted him to sleep in a large balloon. In the corner of this place a kiln was constructed for drying the fruit of the shea tree: it contained a considerable quantity of fruit, under which a clear fire was kept, which, it was said, would be ready for pounding and boiling in three days. The butter thus manufactured is preferred by some to that prepared from fruit, and dried in the sun.

About ten on the 13th, Mr. Park arrived at a small village near Sego, where he petitioned, in vain, for provisions. He was again treated with contempt, and informed that Mansong had dispatched persons to apprehend him; and the Dooty's son assured him that he had no time to lose if he wished to escape. Our traveller was now fully convinced of the danger of his situation, and resolved to keep at a distance from Sego. He mounted his horse, and taking the road to Diggani till he lost sight of the village, struck to the westward. About noon he halted under a tree, to consider of some plan of proceeding, and formed a resolution of passing along the Niger, to observe how far that river was navigable. A little before sun-set he arrived at the Foulah village of Soobo, where, for two hundred kowries, he purchased a lodging for the night. On the 14th he passed a walled town called Kamalia, and rode through a large market-town named Samee: he passed through the midst of the multitude without being particularly noticed, every one supposing him to be a Moor. In the afternoon he reached Binni, a small village, where the Dooty's son, in consideration of one hundred kowries, agreed that he should remain for the night; but the Dooty afterwards insisted upon his leaving the place immediately; and had not the wife and son exerted themselves in his behalf, he must certainly have complied.

About noon Mr. Park entered the village of Kaimo,

Kaimo*, on the bank of a river, where he unsuccessfully endeavoured to purchase some corn, that article having become extremely scarce throughout the country; but when he was about to depart, a villager brought him some as a present, asking in return his blessing upon him. With this request our adventurer readily complied, and the villager received it with many grateful acknowledgments. Upon this corn our traveller made a meal, though it was the third successive day that he had lived entirely upon that article. In the evening he arrived at Song, a small village, where the unfeeling inhabitants would not permit him to enter the gate; but hearing that lions were numerous in the adjoining woods, he resolved to pass the night in the vicinity of the town, and took his repose under a tree near the entrance. In the night he was alarmed with the hollow roar of a lion at no considerable distance, and climbed the tree for safety. He had before attempted to open the gate, and on being ordered to desist, informed the people of his danger. Moved by compassion, however, they at length permitted him to come in.

On the 16th Mr. Park proceeded on his journey, and passed a town called Jabbee, in which there was a mosque. He found it very disagreeable travelling, occasioned by the overflow of the river, and in crossing a swamp, sunk suddenly into a deep pit, from which he could with difficulty recover himself; both the horse and the rider were completely covered with mud. About noon our adventurer stopped at a village near Yamina, where he purchased some corn, and dried himself. Yamina was formerly a considerable town, and is now a place of some importance, but as it is much frequented by the Moors, he did not think it safe to lodge in it, and rode briskly through it: the people indeed looked at him with astonishment, but he did not give them time to ask many questions; he arrived at Farra in the evening, where he procured a lodging. The next day he passed Balaba, a small town, and afterwards beheld the ruins of three other towns, the inhabitants of which had been carried away by Daisy, king of Kaarta. In the evening he reached Kanica, where the Dooty, sitting on an elephant's hide, received him kindly, and gave him some milk and meal for his supper.

Mistaking his road on the 18th, he discovered his error when he ascended an eminence, and observed the Niger considerably to the left. Directing his course towards it, through bushes and long grass, he came to a small rapid stream, which he supposed to be a branch of the Niger; but on examining it more attentively, he found it to be a distinct river, which the road evidently crossed (a pathway appearing on the opposite side). He sat down on the bank, expecting some traveller might arrive, and explain to him the situation of the ford. No traveller, however, arriving, and the clouds menacing rain, he resolved to enter the river a little above the pathway, in order to reach the farther side before the stream had impelled him too far down. He then fastened his clothes upon the saddle, and standing up to his neck in the water, was pulling the horse by the bridle to make him follow; when a man, who accidentally arrived, exclaimed with great vehemence, "come out! or you and your horse will be devoured by the alligators!"

Mr. Park obeyed, and the stranger, who had never before seen a white man, seemed exceedingly astonished, saying in a low tone of voice, "God preserve me! who is this?" But finding he could speak the Bambarra tongue, and that he was travelling the same way with himself, he promised to assist him in crossing the stream, the name of which was Frina. Then calling aloud to some person, who answered from the other side, a canoe conducted by two boys appeared, advancing from among the reeds. Mr. Park and himself, in consideration of fifty kowries, was ferried over the river, and in the evening arrived at Taffara, where he found the language of the people was pure Mandingo, without any mixture of the corrupted dialect of Bambarra.

SECT.

* On the 15th, he passed Sai, a large town, surrounded with two very deep trenches. On the top of the trenches are a number of square towers, and the whole appeared like a regular fortification. Desirous of knowing the meaning of this extraordinary entrenchment, Mr. Park obtained the following particulars. About sixteen years ago, when the king of Bambarra's father desolated Maniana, the Dooty of Sai had two sons slain in the battle, fighting in his service. He had a third alive, and when the king demanded a further reinforcement, this youth, among the rest, was demanded, and the Dooty refused to send him. This conduct so irritated the king, that when he returned from Maniana, and found the Dooty protected by the inhabitants of Sai, he sat down before the town with his whole army, and surrounded

SECTION X.

Inhospitable Reception at Taffara—A Negro Funeral at Sooha—The Author proceeds to Koolikorro—Supports himself by writing Saphies—Reaches Maraboo—Kindly treated at Kooma—Is robbed and stripped by Banditti.

ON his arrival at Taffara, Mr. Park was informed that the Dooty had died a few days before, and that the principal inhabitants were then electing another. He assured them that he should continue there but one night, and that Mansong had furnished him with kowries to pay for his lodging. No attention was, however, paid to his application, no person invited him in, and he was obliged to sit alone under the Bentang tree, exposed to a violent tornado, which continued till midnight; when the stranger, whose information had enabled him to cross the water, paid him a visit, and invited him to supper, producing provision which he had brought to the door of the hut. After partaking of this friendly repast, our traveller slept upon some wet grass in the corner of a court. His horse was less fortunate than himself, for his corn was all consumed, and he could not procure a supply *.

Proceeding on his journey the 21st, he passed the villages of Kayoo and Toolumbo, and arrived at Maraboo. He was accommodated at the house of a Kaartan, who, from his hospitality to strangers, acquired the name of *Jatee*, the landlord, and his house was considered as a public inn for the reception of all travellers. Those who had property were well lodged and attended, and they were liberal in their acknowledgements; but those who had nothing to give, were satisfied with what he thought proper to afford them; and, as Mr. Park could not reckon himself a monied man, he took up his lodging in the same hut with seven poor fellows who had arrived from Kanaaba in a canoe; their landlord, however, indulged them with some provision.

On the 22d Mr. Park was misled, either from ignorance or design, by relying on an erroneous direction; and the mistake was not discovered till the day was far advanced, when coming to a

it with the trenches that he had now seen. After a siege of two months, the people of the town were oppressed with famine; and the king's army, feasting in the trenches, saw the wretched inhabitants of Sai devour the leaves and bark of the bentang tree, that stood in the middle of the town. Finding, however, that the besieged would rather perish than surrender, recourse was had to treachery. The king assured them that if they would open the gates, no person should be slain or injured but the Dooty. The poor old man, willing to sacrifice himself for his fellow citizens, calmly walked over to the king's army, where he was instantly put to death. His son, attempting to escape, was taken and murdered in the trenches, and the people of the town were sold to the different Negro traders.

* Passing the town of Jeba on the 20th, he stopped at a village named Sominoo, where he procured some coarse food, prepared from the husks of corn, called Boo. About two he arrived at Sooha, where the Dooty refused either to give or sell him provisions. Mr. Park had the curiosity to stop a short time, to survey the countenance of this inhospitable man, to learn the cause of his malignity. The Dooty ordered his slave to dig a hole in the ground, and while he was performing this task, the Dooty kept muttering and talking to himself, repeatedly pronouncing the words, "good for nothing,"—"a real plague," &c. Our traveller, supposing these expressions could only be applied to himself, and as the pit resembled a grave, he thought it prudent to mount his horse; and was preparing to decamp, when the slave, who had just repaired to the village, returned with the dead body of a boy about nine years of age, holding it carelessly by a leg and an arm, and with a savage indifference threw it into the pit. While he was covering the body, the Dooty often repeated, "money lost," which induced our traveller to suppose that the boy had been one of his slaves.

Departing from this strange scene, Mr. Park arrived at Kollikorri, a large town, and a considerable market for salt. Here he was admitted into the house of a Bambarran, who had formerly been the slave of a Moor, and in that character had travelled through many parts of Africa. His knowledge of the world had not banished all the superstitious notions respecting saphies and charms; for, when he heard that his guest was a christian, he brought out his writing board, and promised to dress Mr. Park a delicious supper of rice, if he would write him a saphie to protect him from wicked men. Our traveller instantly began to write, and completely filled the board with the composition; and the landlord, to entitle himself to the whole force of the charm, washed the writing off into a calabash with some water, and having repeated several prayers over it, drank this potent draught, licking the board quite dry after this wonderful beverage. As saphie writing was of too much consequence to be long concealed, information was conveyed to the Dooty that such a man was in town, in consequence of which he dispatched his son with half a sheet of writing paper, requesting Mr. Park, to write him a charm to procure wealth. He brought as a present, some meal and milk; and when the saphie was finished, and read aloud to him, he appeared much delighted with his bargain, and furnished our traveller with milk for breakfast the next morning.

deep

deep creek, and foreseeing that he could not possibly reach Bammacoo before night, he resolved to cross it; and, leading his horse to the brink, he pushed him into the water, having first taken the bridle between his teeth, and swam to the other side. He continued travelling, through high grass, and without any regular road, till he came to the river, the banks of which were rocky, and the roar of the water tremendous. The king of Bambarra's canoes, however, frequently pass by, keeping close to the bank, where persons on shore are stationed with ropes fastened to the canoe, and others push it forward with long poles. Quitting the banks, and passing on towards the mountains, our traveller arrived at Frookaboo, where he slept.

The next day he reached Bammacoo, a small town, but inhabited by wealthy persons: when the Moors bring their salt through Kaarta and Bambarra, they usually stop at this place, and the Negro merchants purchase it in large quantities, deriving great profits from retailing it. Here Mr. Park slept at the house of a Sera-Woolli Negro, and was visited by several Moors, who treated him with great civility. One of them, who had travelled to Rio Grande, spoke very respectfully of the christians, and in the evening sent our traveller some boiled rice and milk; he was also very communicative respecting the road, and enumerated several places that lay in the way to the Gambia; but positively asserted that the road was impassable at this season of the year, and as there were no canoes large enough to receive our adventurer's horse, he could not possibly get him over for some months to come.

This was very unwelcome intelligence to Mr. Park, who had no money to maintain himself even for a few days. He consulted with his landlord on the disagreeable dilemma to which he was reduced; his host informed him there was another road, deemed almost impassable, through Sibidooloo, which might be ventured upon with a careful guide. Being afterwards informed that a singing man was about to set out for Sibidooloo, our traveller agreed to accompany him. But the musical fellow-traveller conducted him a wrong way, the horse-road being on the other side of the hill; Mr. Park therefore rode back to the level ground, leaving his singing guide to proceed to Sibidooloo by the rocky foot-path.

Soon after Mr. Park had returned to the place of starting, and entered upon what he supposed to be the proper road, some shepherds confirmed him in his opinion, that he was in the regular road to Sibidooloo. In the evening he arrived at a romantic village called Kooma, situated in a delightful valley; and is the sole property of a rich Mandingo merchant. The harmless villagers surrounded Mr. Park, proposing a number of questions about his country, and supplied him with milk and corn for himself, and grass for his horse; their kindness was so boundless, that they even kindled a fire in the hut destined for his repose. On the 25th he left Kooma, accompanied by two shepherds, who were pursuing the same route; but as his horse was slow and feeble, the shepherds walked forward, and were considerably advanced. At about eleven o'clock, as Mr. Park stopped to drink a little water at a rivulet, he heard some people calling to each other, and afterwards a loud screaming, as from a person in extreme distress: he directed his course to the spot whence the noise proceeded, and saw one of the shepherds lying near the road, on the long grass. When our adventurer came close to him, he informed him, in a whisper, that an armed party had seized upon his companion, and two arrows had been levelled at him as he was attempting to make his escape.

Under these circumstances, Mr. Park began to consider what course it would be prudent for him to take; and, looking round, saw a man sitting on the stump of a tree, and near him six or seven persons more on the grass, with musquets in their hands. Seeing no chance of escaping, he rode towards them, hoping they were elephant hunters. Without seeming to be alarmed, he asked if they had shot any thing? Instead of answering this interrogation, one of them ordered him to dismount, but suddenly recollecting himself, permitted him to proceed. He accordingly rode on, but was soon followed by those whom he had taken for elephant-hunters, who summoned him to stop, and informed him that the king of the Foulahs had sent them to convey him, his horse, and all that belonged to him to Fooladoo. Without hesitation, Mr. Park committed himself to their custody, and they travelled together for some time before a syllable was spoken. When they came to a gloomy part of the wood, one of them said, in the Mandingo language, "This

place will do," at that instant snatching the hat from his head; another seized upon a metal button which remained upon his waistcoat, cut it off, and conveyed it to his pocket. Their intentions were now obvious: they searched Mr. Park's pockets, and examined every part of his apparel; and, to complete the business, stripped him quite naked. Whilst they were examining the plunder, he earnestly entreated them to return his pocket compass; but when he pointed it out to them on the ground, one of the banditti cocked his musket, and swore he would instantly kill him if he presumed to touch it.

One of them departed with his horse, and the remainder held a consultation whether they should leave him absolutely naked, or allow him something to shelter him from the sun. Humanity at length prevailed, they returned a pair of trowsers, and the worst of the two shirts; and, on their departure, one of them threw back his hat, in the crown of which his memorandums were contained *.

Mr. Park, without regarding hunger and fatigue, cheerfully travelled forwards, confident that relief was at hand: and he was not disappointed. Arriving at a small village, he overtook the two shepherds who had set out with him from Kooma. They were much astonished at seeing him, not doubting that the Foulahs had murdered as well as robbed him. From this village the travellers passed over some rocky ridges, and arrived at Sibdiooloo about sun-set.

SECTION XI.

Government of Manding—The Author's Reception by the Mansa—Recovers his Horse and Clothes—Journey to Kamalia—The Author's kind Reception by Karfa Taura—Determines to remain and accompany Karfa.

SIBIDOOLOO, the frontier town of Manding, is situated in a fertile valley, environed with rocky hills. When Mr. Park entered the town, the people gathered round him, and he was presented to the Dooty, or chief man, who is here called Mansa. He related to him the circumstances of the robbery, and the story was confirmed by the two shepherds. The Mansa, after attentively listening to the particulars of this charge, desired our traveller to sit down, and he should have every thing restored to him—I have sworn it. Then addressing himself to an attendant, he said, "Give the white man a glass of water; and at the dawn of day go over the hills, and inform the Dooty of Bammakoo, that a poor white man, the king of Bambarra's stranger, had been robbed by the people of Fooladoo."

He thanked the Mansa for his kindness, and accepted his invitation to remain with him till the return of the messenger; but receiving no intelligence of his horse or clothes in the course of two days, and provisions being extremely scarce, he was unwilling to be any longer an incumbrance to his host, and begged permission to depart. The Mansa advised him to go to a town called Wonda, and remain there till he had heard some account of his horse and his other property. He accordingly repaired to Wonda, which is a small town surrounded with a high wall, and containing a mosque. Here he obtained a lodging in an open shed; which served also as a school for the Mansa, who was himself a Mahometan teacher †.

On the 5th of September our adventurer received

* After the banditti disappeared, our adventurer sat for some time in silent terror and amazement. Nothing but dangers and difficulties now presented themselves. He saw himself in the midst of a vast wilderness, in the rainy reason, naked and alone, encompassed by savage animals, and men still more savage. To heighten his distress, he was five hundred miles from the nearest European settlement: all these circumstances at once crowding upon his imagination, his spirits began to fail him. He could not perceive a glimpse of consolation; he considered his fate as certain, and that he had no alternative but to lie down and perish. The influence of religion, however, supported him. Though a stranger in a strange land, he was still under the protecting eye of that providence who has declared himself the stranger's friend.

† All the little apparel that he was possessed of, would not protect him from the sun by day, nor the dews and musketoes by night. His fever returned with great violence, ac-

ceived his horse and clothes, from two persons arrived from Sibidooloo; but the compass was broken to pieces. As the horse was grazing near the brink of a well, the ground gave way, and he fell in; but, by the assistance of the inhabitants of the village, he was recovered, and restored to the owner. The poor annimal was now a mere skeleton, and incapable of further labour; he therefore presented him to his landlord, requesting him to send the saddle and bridle to the Mansa of Sibidooloo, as an acknowledgment for his kindness and attention. On the 7th, he thought it necessary, infirm as he was, to take leave of his hospitable landlord, who presented him with a spear, as a token of remembrance, and a leather bag to contain his clothes.

Converting his boots into sandals, being more suitable to his pedestrian journey, he slept that night at a village named Ballanti. On the 9th he reached Nemacoo, where no provision was to be obtained, the inhabitants themselves being actually on the point of starving. On the 10th a Negro trader, named Modi Lemina Taura, brought him some food, and promised to conduct him to his residence at Kennyetoo, the following day. In the journey to Kennyetoo, Mr. Park sprained his ancle, and was unable to proceed; in consequence of which the trader kindly invited him to stop a few days with him. He accordingly remained at his house till the 14th, when he found himself considerably relieved: On the 15th he arrived at Dosita, where he remained one day; and on the 17th proceeded to Mansia, a town of some importance, where small quantities of gold are sometimes collected. The Mansa of this town, though reputed to be inhospitable, sent him a supper of corn; from whom, however, he demanded a present in return; and on Mr. Park's assuring him he had nothing valuable in his possession, he jocularly replied, that his white skin should not protect him if he told him lies. He then conducted him to a small hut, in which he might repose for the night; but, taking away his spear, promised it should be returned in the morning.

This circumstance giving birth to our traveller's suspicion, he secretly prevailed upon one of the inhabitants to sleep with him, and bring his bow and arrow. The request was complied with, and about midnight several attempts were made to enter the hut; but were prevented by Mr. Park and the Negro; the latter, on looking out, saw it was the Mansa himself. In the morning, as soon as it was light, the Negro went to the Mansa's house, and brought away the spear; after which, fearing the Mansa should devise some means to detain him, he departed before he was awake.

About two on the 16th, Mr. Park reached Kamalia, a small town, in the neighbourhood of which gold is collected in considerable quantities. The Bushreens live apart from the Kafirs, and have built their huts in a scattered manner at some distance from the town. The mosque, or missura, is nothing more than a square piece of ground, levelled, and surrounded with trunks of trees projecting towards the east, where the Marraboo, or priest stands when he calls the people to prayers. Such mosques are common among the converted Negroes; but, having neither walls nor roof, can only be used in fine weather.

Mr. Park proceeded to the house of a Bushreen, named Karfa Taura, the brother of his hospitable landlord at Kennyetoo, who was employed in collecting slaves to sell on the Gambia; to whom he was reading from a book written in the Arabic tongue. He asked our traveller if he understood it, and being answered in the negative, desired one of the slatees to fetch the little curious book, which had been conveyed thither from the western

accompanied by many alarming symptoms, and he could procure no medicine to impede its progress. He remained at Wonda nine days, and endeavoured to conceal his illness and distress from his landlord, and frequently lay down the whole day, yet he knew that the Mansa was no stranger to his situation; for one morning, when he pretended to be asleep as he sat by the fire, he heard the Mansa say to his wife, that they should probably find him a very troublesome guest; for that, in his present deplorable state, they must be obliged to maintain him till he recovered or died, or forfeit their good name.

The scarcity of provisions was now severely felt by the poor: the Mansa was generally attended by five or six women in an evening, who came to receive a certain quantity of corn, which Mr. Park at first imagined was delivered out from motives of charity. He enquired of the Mansa whether he supported these women from pure bounty, or whether he expected a return after the next harvest. "Observe that boy," replied the Mansa; pointing to a child, who appeared to be about five years of age, "His mother has sold him to me for forty days' provision, for herself and the rest of the family, and I have purchased another boy on the same terms." Our traveller was much affected with this melancholy circumstance; but afterwards observing, that when the mother came to receive her corn, she conversed with her boy with as much cheerfulness as if he had still been the sole object of her tenderness, his astonishment abated.

country.

country. The man accordingly obeyed, and our traveller was equally surprised and delighted to find this little volume, the "Book of Common Prayer," which is used in the English establishment. Kafir expressed much satisfaction at Mr. Park's being able to read it, as some of the slatees who had seen Europeans on the coast, observing a yellow tinge upon his skin (which was merely the effect of illness) would not admit that he was a white man, but suspected him to be some Arab in disguise. Karfa, however, was perfectly convinced that our traveller was no impostor, and promised him every assistance in his power: at the same time he thought it necessary to inform him, that it would be impossible to cross the Jalonka wilderness for some months, as no less than eight rapid rivers lay in the way.

He added that he himself intended to set out for Gambia with a caravan of slaves, as soon as the rivers were fordable, and the grass burnt; and invited Mr. Park to stay and accompany him, observing that when a caravan could not travel through the country, it would be an act of insanity for a single man to attempt it. Our traveller admitted the propriety of his remark, but assured him he had no alternative; for, being destitute of money, he must either support himself by asking alms of the benevolent from place to place, or absolutely perish for hunger.

Karfa now looked earnestly upon him, and asked him if he could eat the common food of the country? Humanely adding, that if he would continue with him till the rains were over, he would safely conduct him to the Gambia, and procure him food and lodging: and after their arrival there, he would be satisfied with any return he might be able to make. Mr. Park readily agreed to give him the value of one prime slave. Karfa then ordered a hut to be immediately swept for his accommodation. Thus was he delivered, by the benevolent attention of this Negro, from a situation truly deplorable. In the hut, destined for the repose of our traveller, a mat was provided to sleep on, an earthen jar for holding water, and a small calabash to facilitate his drinking: Karfa regularly supplied him with two meals a-day from his own habitation; and ordered his slaves to furnish him with fire-wood and water. A return of his fever, however, alarmed him considerably, and even his life was rendered precarious for about six weeks; during which time, his benevolent landlord came daily to enquire after his health, and to console him.

When the rains became less frequent, the fever left him; but in so debilitated a state, that he could hardly stand upright. With great difficulty indeed he carried his mat to the shade of a Tamarind-tree, not far from his abode, where he enjoyed the refreshing fragrance of the corn-fields, and delighted his eyes with a prospect of the country. At length he found his health gradually recovering, for which he was materially indebted to the generosity and kind endeavours of his host, and his attendants*

About the middle of December, Karfa went to collect the money due to him in his own country, to enable him to complete his purchase of slaves. For this purpose, he departed for Kancaba, a large town on the banks of the Niger, and a great slave-market. When Karfa quitted Kamalia, he proposed to return in the course of a month, and during his absence, Mr. Park was left to the care of a good old Bushreen, who was school master to the youth of Kamalia.

Mr. Park being now left alone, and at leisure to indulge his own reflections, embraced the convenient moment of extending and augmenting the observations he had before made, on the climate and productions of the country; for, having become stationary among them, he had acquired a more perfect knowledge of the natives, than it was possible for him to obtain during a transient survey in his perilous journey. He intended also to collect what information he could, respecting those im-

* Many of the slatees who resided at Kamalia, having dissipated their wealth by extravagance, became now dependent upon Karfa's bounty; in consequence of which they beheld our adventurer with an envious eye, and fabricated ridiculous and degrading stories to lessen him in Karfa's esteem; but the hospitable landlord, wisely conceiving from what source these malicious calumnies proceeded, treated them with contempt, and pursued his plan with unabated kindness. Being one day conversing with some slaves which this slatee had brought, one of them asked Mr. Park to give him some victuals. The latter replied, that he was a stranger, and had none to give. "I gave you food," says the slave, "when you was hungry. Have you forgot the man who brought you milk at Karrankalla. But (added he with a sigh), *the irons were not then upon my legs!*" Mr. Park immediately recollected him, from this circumstance, and procured some ground nuts for him from Karfa, as a poor acknowledgment of his former kindness. The wretched captive informed our traveller that he had been taken by the Bambarrans, after the battle at Joka, and sent to Sego; where he had been purchased by his present master, who was conveying him to Kaajaga.

portant

portant branches of African commerce, the trade for gold, ivory, and slaves. Such was his employment during the remainder of his residence at Kamalia, the result of which he has faithfully communicated in the following pages.

SECTION XII.

The Climate, and Seasons—Winds, Vegetable Productions—Population—Character and Disposition of the Mandingoes—Their Manners, Customs, Marriages, &c.

IN Mr. Park's route, both in going and returning, he found the climate extremely hot, but no where did he find it so intense as in the camp of Benown, though the very northern extremity of his travels in Africa. In some parts, indeed, where the country rises into acclivities, the air is comparatively cool; but none of the regions he visited could properly be called mountainous. About the middle of June, the sultry atmosphere is agitated by violent gusts of wind, called Tornadoes, accompanied with rain and thunder. *The rainy season* is thus ushered in, which continues till the month of November; the diurnal showers being very heavy, and the prevailing winds are from the south-west. The termination of this season also experiences these violent Tornadoes; after which the wind shifts to the north-east, and blows from that quarter during the remainder of the year. When the wind sets in for the north-east, a wonderful alteration is rapidly produced in the face of the country; the rivers quickly subside, and many of the trees are stripped of their verdant foliage *.

Though many species of the edible roots which grow in the West-India Islands, are found in Africa, our traveller declares, that he never saw the sugar-cane, coffee, or cocoa-tree; with the pine-apple, and other delicious fruits. A few orange and banane trees were observed near the mouth of the Gambia, which were probably introduced by the Portuguese.

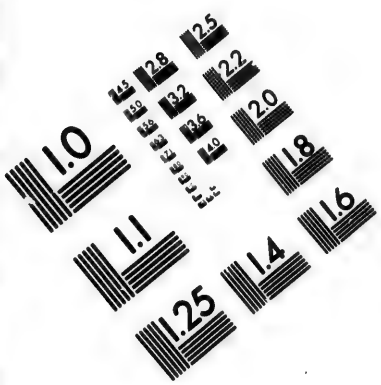
The banks of the Gambia, Senegal, and many

* The *Harmatan*, a dry parching wind, is usually the consequence of this season, attended with a smoky haze, through which the colour of the sun appears as a cloudy red. In passing over the Great Desert this wind parches up all the moisture which lies within its current. It is, however, found extremely salutary, particularly to Europeans. Mr. Park found considerable relief, both at Dr. Laidley's, and at Kamalia, during the *Harmatan*. The air, during the rainy season, has so much humidity, that clothes, trunks, and every article at any distance from the fire, becomes damp and mouldy: but this extraordinary wind braces up relaxed solids, produces a cheerful flow of spirits, and facilitates respiration. It is, indeed, accused of occasioning chaps in the lips, and of afflicting many of the natives with sore eyes.

Whenever the grass is sufficiently dry, the Negroes usually set it on fire: but in Ludamar, and some other Moorish countries, this practice is prohibited; for on this withered stubble the Moors feed their cattle till the return of rain. In the Negro countries, the grass in flames exhibits a sublime and terrific scene. In the middle of the night, which being in that latitude very dark, it represents the plains and mountains as far as the eye can reach, variegated with lines of fire; and the light reflected upon the sky, exhibited the vault of heaven as in a blaze. In the course of the day, pillars of smoke were seen in every direction; while the birds of prey, hovering around, pounced upon the lizards, snakes, and other terrified reptiles, which strove to escape from the terrors of the conflagration. By this annual burning, the air is greatly purified, a fresh verdure succeeds, and the country is rendered salubrious.

The property in the soil belongs to the king, or, in a republic, to the state. When any free individual is able to cultivate more land than he possesses, he applies to the chief man of the district, to be allowed a further quantity, who readily complies with his request, on condition that the grant shall be forfeited, if the lands are not properly cultivated within a limited time: if the condition is fulfilled, the land becomes vested in the possessor, and probably descends to his heirs. The population of Africa is inconsiderable, considering the extent and fertility of the soil, and the ease with which the land may be acquired: many extensive and beautiful districts are destitute of inhabitants. The frontiers of many of the kingdoms are either thinly inhabited, or almost in a state of desolation. The insalubrity of the air occasions many districts to be avoided.

The Negroes, though of various nations, are remarkably similar in their dispositions: The Mandingoes are a gentle race, cheerful, credulous, simple, inquisitive, and delighting in flattery: but their character is materially blemished by their propensity to stealing; they are, however, generally honest among themselves. For this part of their conduct, little can be said in extenuation, because theft is a crime in their own estimation. Let it not be forgotten, however, that the laws of the country afford no protection to *strangers* from these peculations. On this article of the Mandingan code, Mr. Park makes the following judicious remark—"If a black merchant of Hindostan were, with a box of jewels, to travel through the heart of England, and if the *laws did not protect the property of the stranger*, the wonder would not be that he was robbed of any part of his riches, but that *the first who robbed him did not rob him of all.*"



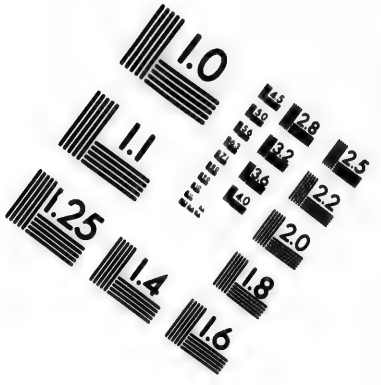
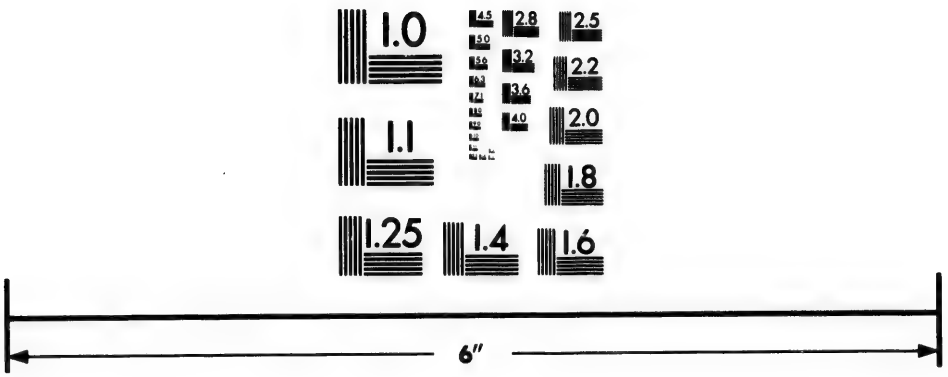
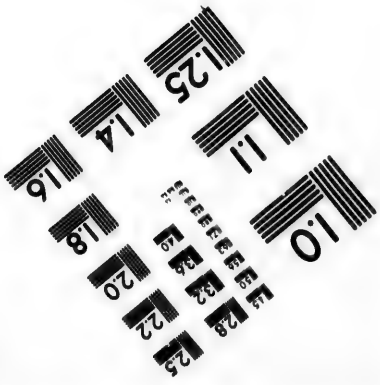


IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)





Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

other rivers are peculiarly noxious by the swamps adjoining. The interior countries are better inhabited than the maritime.

Though our traveller suffered, in many instances, from the peculations of these people, he kindly considers them to be less a departure from their natural sense of justice, than a want of resolution to resist so very powerful a temptation*. To counterbalance this seeming depravity in their nature, he says, "It is impossible for me to forget the disinterested charity, and tender solicitude, with which many of these poor heathens sympathized with me in my sufferings, relieved my distresses, and contributed to my safety."—This last acknowledgment he admits to be "more particularly due to the female part of the nation."

The men were generally kind, though sometimes otherwise: Avarice in some, and bigotry in others, had closed up the avenues to compassion; but our traveller remembers not a single instance among the women, of unfeeling attention to the recital of his woes. In all his wretchedness, he found them uniformly kind and compassionate. He repeats what Mr. Ledyard had often said before him —"To a woman I never addressed myself, in the language of decency and friendship, without receiving a decent and friendly answer. If I was hungry, or thirsty, wet, or sick, they did not hesitate, like the men, to perform a generous action. In so free and so kind a manner did they contribute to my relief, that, if I was dry, I drank the sweetest draught, and, if hungry, I ate the coarsest morsel with a double relish."

Such amiable qualities operate, as may be imagined, more forcibly in the exercise of maternal feelings. Maternal affection is every where conspicuous among them, and ensures a correspondent return of tenderness in the child. The system of Polygamy, while it weakens the father's attachment, by dividing it among the children of several wives, concentrates all the mother's tenderness to the protection of her own offspring. Mothers are attentive to the growth, security, and vigour of the child's person; and, as far as their ideas will permit, to the improvement of its mind and heart. One of the first lessons in which the Mandingo women instruct their children, is the *practice of truth*. We have noticed the mother's consolation, on the murder of her son by a banditti, that, the poor boy in the course of his blameless life, had *never told a lie*." Such testimony, on such an occasion, must have had a powerful operation on the youthful part of the auditors †.

If, during the celebration of circumcision, or at any other time, a youth should be enamoured of one of the young damsels, his first business is to apply to her parents, and agree with them respecting the recompence to be given for the loss of their child, whose company and services they have hitherto enjoyed. The value of two slaves is a common price upon these occasions, but if the ladies should be transcendantly beautiful, the demands of the parents will proportionally increase. If the lover is able and willing to afford the sum required, he addresses the maiden with the soft accents of love, and declares his approbation of the proposed union; but her consent, on these occasions, is not required; for if her parents, in token of agreement, eat a few kolla-nuts, presented by the intended son-in-law as a ratification of the bargain, the daughter must either have the man of their choice, or endure a life of perpetual celibacy. The parents cannot even give her to any other person; should such an attempt be made, the first lover is permitted to seize her as his slave, by the laws of the country.

When the wedding-day is appointed, a select party

* Should the reader be inclined to laugh at the temptation of brass buttons, tell him it will be a difficult task to prove that pearls and diamonds are intrinsically more valuable than brass buttons. They are merely articles of glare and gaudiness, affording no solid gratification.

† The Negro women suckle their children till they are able to walk: three years nursing is not uncommon among them; during which period the husband devotes his attention to his other wives. To this cause it may perhaps be attributed, that the family of each wife is not often numerous, rarely exceeding five or six children. The mother is not remarkably solicitous to preserve her offspring from slight falls or trivial accidents: practice soon enables the child to take care of itself, and experience supplies the place of a nurse. As the children advance in years, the boys are instructed in the labours of husbandry, and the girls are taught to spin cotton, to beat corn, and to perform all the other domestic duties. On attaining the age of puberty both sexes are circumcised, whether they are Bushreens or Cafers. The Pagans consider this painful operation less as a religious ceremony, than as an useful operation, contributing to render the marriage state prolific. A number of young persons usually submit to the performance of this rite at the same time, who for two months afterwards are exempted from all labour, and unite themselves in a society called Solimana. Parties belonging to that society visit the neighbouring towns and villages, where they enjoy themselves in festive amusements, and are regaled by the inhabitants. Mr. Park saw frequent parties of this description, who were all males; but he once beheld a female *Solimana* at Kamalia.

party are invited to be present at its celebration; when a goat or bullock is killed, and abundance of other food provided upon the occasion. At the approach of darkness, the bride is conducted into a hut, where a company of matrons assist in the arrangements of the wedding-dress, which is composed of white cotton, in such a manner, as completely to conceal the form of her whole person. Thus arrayed, she is seated upon a mat in the centre of the floor, surrounded by these friendly assistants, who instruct her, with great gravity and propriety, in the duties of the state into which she is about to enter. But this scene of instruction is frequently interrupted by girls, who entertain the company with singing and dancing, in strains and attitudes more applicable to the special occasion of their meeting, than to delicacy, chastity, and propriety.

When the bride is engaged with the matrons, the bridegroom is hospitably employed in performing offices of civility and kindness to his guests of both sexes without doors; and particularly in distributing among them small presents of *kolla-nuts*. About midnight the new-married lady is privately led by her companions, to the hut intended for her future abode; and the bridegroom, on an appointed signal, withdraws from the circle of his friends. In the morning the new-cemented pair are disturbed by the women, who assemble to inspect the nuptial sheet, and dance around it. This ceremony is so indispensably necessary, that a marriage without it is deemed invalid *.

The children of the Mandingoes are not always named after their relations, but often in consequence of some particular quality, or remarkable occurrence. A child is named when he is seven or eight days old, the ceremony of which commences by shaving the infant's head; and a dish called dega, composed of pounded corn and sour milk, is prepared for the company; if the relatives are opulent, a goat or sheep is usually added. The feast is called *Ding koon lee*. "The child's head shaving." Mr. Park was present at four feasts of this kind during his stay at Kamalia, and the ceremony was the same in each, whether the father was a Bushreen, or a Kafir. The school-master, who acted as priest on this occasion, and was a Bushreen, said a preliminary prayer over the *dega*, every person taking hold of the brim of the calabash at the same time, with his right hand; the schoolmaster then, taking the child in his arms, preferred a second prayer, imploring the blessing of God upon the child, and every person present. At the conclusion of this earnest and solemn request, he whispers a few sentences in the child's ear, spits thrice on its face, proclaiming its name with an audible voice, and returns the infant to the mother. After this ceremony was ended, the father of the child divided the dega into little balls, which he distributed among the persons present.

Besides his own proper name, every individual among the Negroes has a surname, to denote the tribe or clan to which he belongs. Salutations among the Negroes, when they meet, are punctually observed, as *are you well? good morning—my friend, &c.* and many other synonimous terms.

* The Pagan Negroes are not limited in the number of their wives. The Mahometans are, by their religion, confined to four, independent of concubines: as the husband purchases them, he generally treats them like hired servants, and exacts from them the utmost deference and submission. But though African husbands have great power over their wives, they seldom treat them with cruelty. Though the female Negroes are cheerful and unreserved, instances of infidelity among them are extremely rare. Quarrels sometimes arise among the wives, when the husbands find it necessary perhaps to administer a little corporal chastisement; but if the lady supposes herself unjustly punished, she may appeal to the chief of the town. A public trial is the consequence, on which the husbands compose the jury, who having different ideas of severity from the woman, generally make a partial award, and frequently convict the appellant of contention and strife. If she murmur at the decision of the court, recourse is had to *Mumbo Jumbo*.

SECTION XIII.

Account of the Mandingoes continued—Their Ideas respecting the Planetary Bodies—Of their religious Tenets, and particularly on a Future State—Their Diseases, and Methods of Treatment—Funeral Ceremonies—Employments—Amusements—Food—Arts, Manufactures, &c.

THE differences of the climate not inducing the natives to divide the year into four quarters, they divide it into the *dry* and *rainy seasons*, subdivide it into *moons*, and reckon the days by so many *suns*; and these are again divided into *morning*, *mid-day*, and *evening*. They declined entering upon the consideration of the sun, considering that subject beyond the reach of human investigation. But the moon, by varying her form, has much attracted their attention. On the first appearance of a new moon, both Pagans and Mahometans whisper a short prayer, the party holding up his hands before his face, implying a thanksgiving to God for his kindness during the last moon, and soliciting a continuation of it during the existence of the new one. This ceremony ended, they spit upon their hands, and rub them over their faces. The Negroes pay particular attention to the changes of the moon, and never undertake a journey, or any matter of importance in the last quarter. Eclipses they suppose to be produced by witchcraft, and that astronomy can only be studied for magical purposes. Their notions of geography are puerile; but of all countries in the world, they believe their own the best, and of all people, themselves the happiest. They lament the state of those who inhabit other less fortunate climes.

The belief of one God, and of a future state of reward and punishment, Mr. Park affirms, is universal among them. They represent the Deity as the creator and preserver of all things, but of too exalted a nature to attend to the feeble supplications of insignificant mortals. The affairs of this world they suppose are committed by him to the care of subordinate spirits, over whom certain magical ceremonies are supposed to have great influence. A white fowl, exhibited on the branch of a particular tree, a snake's head, or a small quantity of fruit, are offerings frequently presented by superstition to deprecate the wrath, or conciliate the favour of these inferior agents.

Religion is seldom the subject of their discourse, and if their opinion is requested, respecting the ideas of a future state, the question is generally evaded by the following observation, "no man knows any thing about it." The Mandingoes seldom attain a very advanced age; few among them live longer than fifty-five or sixty years; many of them are grey and wrinkled at forty. But though their lives are comparatively short, they are not subject to many diseases; simple diet and active life prevent the approaches of those disorders which are bred by luxury and idleness. Fevers and fluxes are the most common, and the most fatal. For the cure of which they apply saphies and perform superstitious ceremonies. The cure of the dysentery is usually attempted by the bark of various trees, which is pounded, and mixed with the patient's food. But this practice is seldom attended with success.

The yaws, the elephantiasis, and a horrid species of leprosy are also prevalent in this country; the latter disease commencing by scurfy spots on various parts of the body, which finally settle upon the hands or feet, occasioning the skin to wither and crack; the ends of the fingers swell and ulcerate, producing a fetid discharge, the nails drop off, the finger bones putrify, and separate at the joints; the disease frequently extending till the patient loses all his fingers and toes. This malady, which sometimes deprives the unhappy sufferer of even his hands and feet, is called by the Negroes, *balla jou*, "incurable."

The *Guinea-worm* is common in several places, at the beginning of the rainy season. It is a glandular swelling of the neck, supposed by the Negroes to originate from drinking bad water; those who drink from wells are more subject to it than those who make river-water their beverage. In the interior countries Mr. Park saw a few instances of simple *gonorrhea*, but never the confirmed *lues*.

The Negroes in general, are better surgeons than physicians, often managing dislocations and fractures with skill and success; their splints and bandages are simple, and may be easily removed.

In the case of fracture, the patient is laid upon a soft mat, and the limb repeatedly bathed with cold water. They open all abscesses with the actual cautery, and the dressings consist of either a composition of soft leaves, shea-butter, or cows' dung. Towards the coasts, where lancets can be procured, they also practise plebotomy, and occasionally perform a kind of cupping *.

The domestic amusements, occupations, diet, and other subordinate particulars, are next entitled to attention. Their principal musical instruments are, the *koonting*, a kind of guitar with three strings; the *korro*, resembling a large harp, furnished with eighteen strings; the *simbling*, a sort of small harp, with seven strings; the *balafou*; the *tantang*; and the *tabula:* the two last resemble drums. They also use bow-strings, elephant's teeth, and bells. Clapping of hands seems to be essentially necessary to the full chorus of their dances or concerts. With the love of music, a taste for poetry is naturally connected. Two classes of singing men are to be met with in Africa. The first of which are itinerant Mahometans, traversing the country, and singing their pious effusions in honour of the prophet. The other class may be found in every town: they sing extempore songs in honour of their chief men, or others who are willing to give solid encouragement to empty flattery.

The diet of the Negroes is not entirely the same in different districts, but the free natives usually breakfast upon gruel made of mead and water, with a little of the fruit of the tamarind to give it an agreeable acid flavour; this meal generally commences about the dawn of day. Dinner, which is usually served about two o'clock, consists of a sort of hasty pudding, meliorated with shea-butter; but supper, which is their principal repast, is seldom prepared till night, when they universally feed on kouskous, with some animal food, or shea-butter. In eating, the Negroes use only the right-hand. Beer, or mead, is the usual beverage of the Negroes, in each of which they often indulge to excess. The Mahometans drink nothing but water. Snuff and tobacco are used indiscriminately by Pagans and Mahometans; their pipes are formed of wood, having an earthern bowl curiously ornamented †.

During the rains the Mandingoes are employed in agricultural labours; and in the dry season, those who inhabit situations near the rivers, employ themselves in fishing: the fish, when taken, are dried in the sun, and afterwards rubbed with shea-butter, to prevent their imbibing fresh water. Many of the Negroes engage in the pursuit of hunting, and are deemed excellent marksmen. Their weapon is the bow and arrow, but the arrows generally used are not poisoned. While the men are occupied in their pursuits, the women are industriously engaged in manufacturing cotton cloth. The women prepare the cotton for spinning, and spin it with the distaff; though the thread is not fine, it is well twisted, and durable cloth is made from it. The weaving part is performed by the men, with a loom on the European principles; the shuttle is also of European construction, but the thread being coarse, the chamber is rather larger. The women dye the cloth of a rich durable blue colour, by the following simple process. The leaves of indigo, when fresh gathered, are bruised in a wooden mortar, and then mixed with a strong ley of wood-ashes and chamber-ley in an earthen vessel; the cloth is then steeped in this mixture till it acquires a proper shade. Where the indigo is not plentiful, they dry the leaves in the sun, and when wanted for use, the necessary quantity is reduced to a powder, and mixed with the ley. Garments of this cloth are sewed with needles of African manufacture.

The arts of weaving, dying, &c. being easily acquired, they are not considered as distinct

* On the death of a respectable person, his relations and neighbours assemble, and express their grief by loud and dismal howlings. The funeral ceremony generally takes place on the evening of the day on which the person expired; when all those who assist upon the solemn occasion, are feasted on a goat or bullock slain for that express purpose. The Negroes, having no appropriate burying-places, sometimes dig a grave beneath some favourite tree; and the body, clad in white cotton, and wrapped up in a mat, is conveyed to the grave by the relations. If buried at some distance from the town, and on that account thought necessary, the spot is covered with prickly bushes, to defend the body from the wolves; but our traveller never saw any monumental stone placed over a grave, as a memorial of the deceased.

† Salt, however, appears to be the greatest luxury in Africa; Mr. Park says he has frequently seen a child suck a piece of rock-salt as if it had been sugar. So highly is it estimated in Africa, and so difficult to procure, that to say *a man eats salt with his victuals*, amounts to an affirmation, that he is an opulent man. Our traveller suffered great inconvenience from the scarcity of this article.

professions; every slave can weave, and every boy can sew. The manufacturers of *leather* and *iron* are indeed considered as professional artists. They are found in almost every town, and frequently travel through the country, in the exercise of their calling. Leather is dressed or tanned with great expedition; they steep the hide in a mixture of woodashes, till the hair separates from the skin, and then apply the bruised leaves of the goo tree as an astringent; after which it is repeatedly rubbed between the hands, and beaten upon a stone, to render it soft and pliant. Of the hides of bullocks they usually form sandals, less attention is therefore required in their manufacture, than in those of sheep or goats, which furnish coverings for quivers and saphies, sheaths for swords and knives, cases, &c. These skins are usually died of a red or yellow colour.

The manufacturers in iron are expert in their business; the European traders supply the Negroes of the coast with that valuable metal; but in the interior of Africa the natives smelt in an extensive way, as well as form, for their own use, every necessary instrument or weapon, making it a principal article of trade with the different states. During Mr. Park's residence at Kamalia, he visited a smelting furnace there, and amused himself with observing their process. Various instruments of the metal, when melted, are formed, by means of a forge, which is actuated by a pair of double bellows of very simple construction; as are the hammer, forceps, and anvil. In the formation of the knives and spears, the workmanship is not destitute of merit. Let it be noticed, however, that the iron is hard and brittle, and requires much labour to render it properly malleable.

Many of the African blacksmiths are acquainted with the method of smelting gold: they also draw the gold into wire, and form it into a variety of ornaments, with great taste and ingenuity. Many useful and ornamental articles are manufactured from rushes in Africa, particularly in Bambarra and Kaarta; among these are a variety of baskets and hats, beautifully stained of different colours. They also cover their calabashes with interwoven cane, executed with great taste, and died in a similar manner.

It is worthy of remark, that in all the occupations above enumerated, the master and his slaves labour together, without distinction of superiority. Hired servants or labourers, including all such as voluntarily work for pay, are unknown in Africa.

SECTION XIV.

Sources of Slavery, &c.

WHEN the persons and services of one part of the community, are entirely at the disposal of another part, they are certainly in a state of slavery; and in this condition of life, a great body of the Negro inhabitants of Africa have continued from the most early period of their history; and their state has at all times been aggravated with this reflection, that their children are born to no other inheritance.

The slaves in Africa are nearly in the proportion of three to one to the free men: they claim no reward for their services but food and cloathing; and, according to the disposition of their masters, kindness or severity becomes their lot. Custom, indeed, has established certain rules for the regulation of the conduct of those who possess slaves, which it is thought dishonourable to violate. Domestic slaves, for instance, such as are born in the house of their master, receive kinder treatment than those which have been purchased: the master's authority over such a man extends only to moderate correction; nor can he sell him till he has been tried before the chief men of the place. But such unhappy creatures as are purchased or taken captive in war, must be subject to the caprice of their owners, and may be sold by them to any foreign master. Regular markets are established for this inhuman traffic. A slave is more or less valuable to an African, as he is more or less distant from his native country. If the distance from his native spot is very considerable, there is less danger of his attempting to run away, and thus rob his master of himself, who is indeed his property.

Slaves may, with some few exceptions, be divided into two classes; first, such as were born slaves, being the children of enslaved mothers: secondly, such as were born free, but became slaves

slaves by some accidental occurrence. Prisoners taken in war are, indeed, principally those who are born slaves, for the following reason; freemen are better armed than slaves, and well-mounted, and consequently can fight or escape with a greater chance of success; but slaves, who have only their spears and bows, and many who are loaded with heavy baggage, fall an easy prey; besides, when a freeman is taken prisoner, his friends may ransom him for two slaves; but a slave has not the most distant hope of redemption. It is also certain that the Slatees, who purchase slaves in the interior, give a preference to those who have been so from their birth; for, having been long enured to hunger and fatigue, they are more capable of performing the tedious journey to the coast; and, till an opportunity offers of selling them advantageously, they can more easily support themselves, and are much less likely to make their escape, than men who have once enjoyed the blessings of liberty.

Men who are born free may become slaves from the following causes. Captivity, famine *, insolvency, crimes. War † was probably the origin, and certainly the most productive source of slavery. Prisoners of war, however, are at present the slaves of their capturers; and if the weak or unsuccessful warrior asks for mercy beneath the up-lifted spear of his conqueror, if his life is granted he forfeits every claim to liberty, purchasing his existence at the expence of his freedom.

An African having once subdued his enemy, will seldom give him an opportunity of lifting up his hand against him at a future period. Prisoners are generally disposed of according to the rank they held in their native kingdom. Such domestic slaves as are of a mild disposition, and particularly docile young women, are retained in the house of the conqueror; but those who appear uneasy and dissatisfied are disposed of in a distant country. Not only the slaves, but even the freemen, who have been active in the war, are either sold to the Slatees or put to death: war is therefore incontestibly the most productive source of slavery ‡.

The commission of crimes is the fourth cause of slavery. The crimes which incur this heavy penalty, are murder, adultery, and witchcraft. Offences not very common, as Mr. Park supposes. In cases of murder, the next of kin to the deceased may either kill the offender, or dispose of him for a slave. For adultery, the injured person may either sell the culprit, or accept of an equivalent ransom for the offence, according to his own estimation of the injury he has sustained.

Witchcraft is classed among the causes of slavery; but Mr. Park assures his readers, that no trial for this offence took place during his residence in Africa. When a freeman has become a slave from any of the causes above-mentioned, he usually continues so for life; and his children, if born of an enslaved mother, are also destined to servitude. But where a slave has performed signal services, or taken two captives in battle, his master rewards him with his liberty. Escape is, however, the more common way of regaining freedom; for when slaves have formed a resolution to abscond, they frequently succeed; some of them will wait for years, with apparent satisfaction and content, till a favourable opportunity shall present itself, which they eagerly embrace §.

SECT.

* In times of scarcity or famine the master may sell one or more of his domestic slaves, to enable him to purchase provisions for his family; and if the master becomes insolvent, the domestic slaves may be seized and sold by his creditors; but they are not liable to be sold in any other instance, unless for their own demerits.

† As the greater number of persons captured in war have been originally slaves, and as prisoners at all times find purchasers, it is, on the whole, an advantage, that the trade with Europe affords such powerful motives to conquerors to restrain their sanguinary dispositions, and spare the lives of their fellow creatures. However paradoxical the assertion may appear, the slave-trade really promotes the purposes of humanity, as it preserves many lives which would otherwise be destroyed.

‡ Famine may be considered as a second cause of slavery, when it induces a free man to become a slave to avoid a greater calamity. A philosopher may prefer death to slavery, but the poor Negro who will not adopt the generous sentiments of Greece or Rome, has very different feelings. Instances are common of free men surrendering their liberty to preserve their lives. During a scarcity of provision for three years, in the countries near the Gambia, many free men petitioned Dr. Laidley to be *admitted upon his slave-chain*, that they might not perish of hunger. When large families in Africa are reduced to absolute want, some of the children are usually sold to procure subsistence for the rest of the family.

Insolvency is the third cause of slavery, according to African laws: if an African trader, on some mercantile speculation, contracts debts, agreeing to make payment in a limited time; if he should be unable to fulfil his engagements, his person and services are at the disposal of another; for in Africa, not only the effects of the insolvent, but even the insolvent himself, is sold to satisfy the lawful demands of his creditors.

§ The doctrine of Mr. Park is totally different from that of Mr. Wilberforce in the House of Commons: He says, the

SECTION XV.

Of Gold Dust—Ivory—Hunting the Elephant.

GOLD and ivory have probably been found in Africa from the most remote periods of its history; and they are reckoned among the most important of its productions. Gold is found in considerable quantities throughout Manding and Jallonkadoo. It is collected, nearly in a pure state, from the size of a pin's head to that of a pea, among masses of sand or clay, which the Mandingoes call *gun powder*. It is supposed to have been washed down from the mountains by successive rains, and is thus collected: The harvest being over, and the waters having subsided, the Mansa appoints a day to begin "gold washing" when the women attend for that purpose. On the morning of their departure a bullock is killed, and prayers and charms resorted to, in order to ensure success. A failure of success on the first day is considered as an evil omen. Mr. Park informs us the Mansa of Kamalia, and his people, were so much disappointed on their first day's washing, that few of them would persevere. The implements required for this employment are, a hoe, two or three calabashes, and a few quills for containing the gold dust.

To wash the sands of the streams is the most effectual method of procuring gold; but this practice is so frequently adopted, that many are of opinion it is more advantageous to employ themselves farther up the torrent, where the rapidity of the stream has carried away the clay, sand, &c. and left only small pebbles. This search is attended with much trouble, and the women often get the tops of their fingers lacerated in the employment. Sometimes, however, they discover pieces of gold, denominated "gold stones," which amply reward them. A very profitable method of washing is also effected by digging a deep pit like a draw-well, near some hill which is reputed to contain gold. A person, with moderate application, may collect, during the season, as much gold as is equivalent to the value of two slaves.

M. Park very properly observes, that, "were the gold-bearing streams to be traced to their fountains, and the hills from whence they spring properly examined, the sand in which the gold is there deposited would, no doubt, be found to contain particles of a much larger size; and even the small grains might be collected to considerable advantage by the use of quick-silver, and other improvements, with which the natives are at present unacquainted*.

The ornaments made of this valuable metal are massy and inconvenient, particularly the earrings, the weight of which pull down and lacerate the lobe of the organ of hearing; to avoid which, a leather thong extends over the crown of the head, from one ear to the other. More elegance, as well as fancy is displayed in the necklace. The golden ornaments of a lady of consequence, when in full dress, is estimated from fifty to eighty pounds sterling in England.

The Slatees, in defraying the expences of their journies, consume but a small quantity of gold: a considerable part is carried away by the Moors, in exchange for salt, and other merchandize. During Mr. Park's stay at Kamalia, the gold collected by the traders of that place, for salt alone, exceeded in value one hundred and ninety pounds, sterling. And as Kamalia is but a small town, and has no extensive traffic with the Moors, this must have borne but a very small proportion to the gold collected at Kancaba, Kankaree, and several other large towns.

The Negroes weigh the gold in small balances, which they always carry about them; and gold-dust is held by them in equal estimation with the wrought gold. In bartering, the person who receives the gold, weighs it with his own *teele-kissi*, or bean, six of which make one minkalli. These beans, however, are sometimes fraudulently soaked in the shea-butter to make them more ponderous. Mr. Park once saw a pebble, which had been

"the abolition of the slave-trade would produce great carnage and cruelty, which its existence most frequently prevents, by affording the strongest motives to conquerors to exercise mercy towards their vanquished enemies."

* The gold mine near Wicklow, in Ireland, which was discovered in 1795, is near the top, and upon the steep slope of a mountain. Here pieces of gold, weighing several ounces, were frequently discovered. What would have been gold-dust two miles below, was here golden gravel; each grain being equal to the size of a small pebble. One piece was found which weighed near twenty-two ounces troy.

been formed into an exact resemblance of one of them, probably for the purpose of deception; but such wily tricks are not often practised.

In the dry season the elephants traverse the country in large herds, in search of food and water, and when they cannot find a supply of the latter in the pools of the woods, they approach the banks of the Niger, where they remain till the commencement of the rainy season; and during this time they are frequently hunted by the Bambarrans. The hunters usually go out in small parties of four or five persons, furnished with powder and ball, and provisions for five or six days. They penetrate the unfrequented parts of the wood with great care, and examine the foot-marks, and scattered dung of the animal, as well as the broken branches, or any other particulars which may lead to a discovery of his haunts. When a herd is discovered, the hunters follow them at a distance, till one of the animals is observed to stray from the rest, in a situation where he can conveniently be fired at: then, cautiously approaching till they are sure of their aim, the hunters discharge their pieces, and throw themselves upon their faces in the high grass. The elephant applies his trunk to his numerous wounds, but being unable to extract the balls, he becomes furious, and runs about among the bushes, till faint and fatigued with the loss of blood; when his pursuers again fire at him and terminate his life*.

The skin, when stripped off, is extended on the ground with pegs, that it may be properly dried; while several parts of the flesh which are most esteemed are cut into slices, and dried in the sun: the teeth are struck out with a light hatchet, with which the hunters always furnish themselves, as well for that particular purpose, as to enable them to cut down such trees as contain honey. When the hunters are successful, they continue in the woods for some months, subsisting wholly on the flesh of elephants and wild honey. The ivory is generally sold to itinerant merchants, who come annually to the coast, to purchase arms and ammunition with this commodity. Considerable quantities of ivory are also brought by the slave-coffles; but some Mahometan Slatees, from superstitious prejudices, will not traffic in ivory, nor eat of the flesh of an elephant, if killed in any other manner than by a spear.

After this interesting digression, Mr. Park returns to his situation at Kamalia.

SECTION XVI.

Occurrences at Kamalia resumed—Arabic MSS. used by the Mahometan Negroes—Conversion of Negro Children—Return of Karfa—Farther Observations on Slaves and Slavery—Fast of Ramandan—The Author's Anxiety to depart—Account of the Caravan, and its Departure—Proceedings on the Road to Kinytakoora.

TO return to the narrative of Mr. Park, we must recollect, that the school-master, his protector, to whose care he was committed during the absence of his host, was of a gentle disposition, and amiable manners; and, though a Mahometan, not intolerant in his principles; his name was Fankooma. Much of his time was devoted to literary studies, and he derived great satisfaction in communicating knowledge to his pupils. Seventeen boys, and two girls composed his little seminary. The girls received their instruction by day-light; the boys early in the morning, or late

* The Negroes express great astonishment at the eagerness manifested by Europeans for elephant's teeth, as they cannot form an adequate idea of their use. Though they have seen articles made of ivory, and been convinced that they were parts of a tooth, they suspect that this commodity must be taken to Europe for more important purposes. They cannot be induced to believe that such long voyages would be undertaken merely for procuring handles to knives, combs, and toys, when pieces of wood would answer all these purposes as well. Elephants are numerous in Africa, but apparently of a distinct species from those of Asia, the former of which are said to be untameable: but the barbarous practice of hunting the elephants for the sake of their teeth, has rendered them more untractable and savage than they were in former ages. The interior districts produce the principal part of the ivory, which is sold on the Gambia and Senegal. Scattered teeth, indeed, are often found in the woods: The animal thrusts his teeth between the roots of bushes, and raises the plants from the earth, that he may select the most tender and juicy parts to feed upon; but when the roots are permanently fixed, or age has decayed his teeth, they are often broken. When an elephant is killed in hunting, where his death is not occasioned by a fall from a precipice, his teeth are always extracted entire.

in the evening; for being considered, while they were pupils, as slaves of the master, they were employed by him throughout the day in various avocations, as planting corn, bringing fire-wood, &c. *

On the 24th of January, Karfa, accompanied by a number of people, returned to Kamalia, with fifteen slaves whom he had puschased. He also brought, as a fourth wife, a young girl whom he had married at Kancaba; having purchased her for three prime slaves. She was kindly received at the door of the baloon by Karfa's other wives, who had swept and white-washed one of the best huts for her accommodation †.

The slaves are constantly kept in irons, and closely watched to prevent their escape. The better to secure them, the right leg of one, and the left of another, are usually secured by the same pair of fetters: every four slaves are also fastened together by twisted thongs: and during the night their hands are fettered, and their necks encircled by a chain. Greater severities, and more cruel precautions, are exercised against those who are suspected of harbouring an idea of escaping.

In other [illegible]ts, the treatment of the slaves at Kamalia [illegible]ar from being harsh or cruel: they were led every morning to the shade of the Tamarind tree, where they were encouraged to sing and be cheerful, and to amuse themselves at certain games of hazard. But though some of them sustained their fate with fortitude, the greater part of them were much dejected, and with a sullen melancholy fixed their eyes upon the ground. In the evening, after examining their irons, and pursuring other methods of securing them, they were conducted into two large huts, and guarded by Karfa's domestic slaves during the night. But, notwithstanding their vigilance and care, one of the slaves had the address to procure a small knife, with which he opened the rings of his fetters, cut the rope, and effected his escape: many more of them would probably have got off, had not the slave, who had thus procured his own liberty, refused to stop to liberate his companions.

All the merchants and slaves who composed the coffle were now assembled at Kamalia, or the neighbouring villages: the day of their departure for Gambia was frequently fixed, and afterwards postponed. Some of the people had not prepared their dry provisions, others were visiting their friends, or collecting their trifling debts; and, last of all, it was thought necessary to consult whether the day would be a lucky one. The departure was thus delayed till February was far advanced; when the Slatees came to a determination to wait till the *Fast Moon was over*. Here let it be observed, that the loss of time is a matter of no importance to a Negro. If he has any thing of consequence to perform, it is indifferent to him whether he does it to-day, to-morrow, or a month or two hence: while he can enjoy the present moment, he thinks nothing of the future.

The fast of *Rhamadan* was strictly observed by the Bushreens: instead of compelling Mr. Park to follow their example, Karfa said he was at liberty to pursue his own inclination; but, to shew

* Exclusive of the Koran, and a few books of Commentaries thereon, the school-master possessed many curious manuscripts, and he was careful to stimulate his scholars by emulation. When the pupil has read through the Koran, and repeated a stated number of devotions, he is examined by the Bushreens, who, when satisfied of his learning and abilities, desire him to read the last page of the Koran; and on this occasion, a feast is prepared by the school-master. When the boy has finished this lesson, he presses the paper against his forehead, and pronounces the word *Amen;* on which the Bushreens instantly rise, affectionately shake him by the hand, and bestow on him the title of Bushreen. The parents then complete his education, by redeeming their son, that is, by paying his master the stated value of a slave: if they cannot afford to compass this desirable purpose, the boy remains the domestic slave of the schoolmaster, till he can ransom himself by his own industry.

† On the day after his arrival, Karfa, observing Mr. Park's apparel extremely out of repair, he presented him with such a garment, &c. as was generally worn in that country. The slaves which Karfa had brought with him were all prisoners of war, who had been taken by the Bambarra army: some of them had been conveyed to Sego, where they had remained three years in irons; whence they were sent, with other captives, to Yamina, Bammacoo, and Kancaba, and bartered for gold-dust. Eleven of them acknowledged to Mr. Park that they had been slaves from their birth, but the other two declined giving any account of their former condition to Mr. Park, whom they beheld with looks of horror. They were remarkably inquisitive, and repeatedly and anxiously asked him if his countrymen were cannibals? They wished to know what became of the slaves after they had crossed the salt-water: he assured them they were employed in cultivating the land, but they disbelieved this assertion; and, one of them placing his hand upon the ground, with much simplicity said, "Have you really such ground as this to set your feet upon?" A fixed idea that the whites purchase Negroes for the purpose of devouring them, or for selling them to others, that they may be devoured hereafter, induces the slaves to regard with terror the idea of a journey towards the coast.

his respect for their religious observances, he voluntarily fasted three days; a circumstance which exempted him from the reproachful title of Kafir. During the fast, all the Slatees assembled every morning at Karfa's house, to hear the school-master recite some lessons from a large folio volume, the author of which was Sheiffa, an Arab. In the evening, the women who had embraced Mahometanism performed prayers at the Misura, all in white apparel. During the fast, the meekness and humility of the Negroes, formed a striking contrast to the bigotry and savage intolerance of the Moors.

Towards the conclusion of the Rhamadan, the Bushreens met at the Misura to watch for the new moon; but as the evening was cloudy, they were at first disappointed, and several of them had returned home with a resolution to fast another day. The clouds, however, suddenly disappearing, the object of their wishes appeared, and was welcomed by clapping of hands, beating of drums, and other demonstrations of joy. This moon being thought extremely lucky, Karfa ordered the people of the Coffle to prepare immediately for their journey; and the Slatees held a consultation, when they determined on the 19th of April as the day of their departure.

An event, however, took place which was wholly unexpected. On the morning of the 17th, the three trading Moors, who had lodged under Karfa's protection, suddenly packed up their effects, and marched over the hills to Bala. The same evening their creditor for the salt, a Fezzan merchant, who resided at Kancaba, arrived at Kamalia, and informed Karfa that these Moors had sent him to receive payment for the salt. Receiving intelligence that they were fled to the westward, he wiped a tear from each eye, with the sleeve of his coat, and exclaimed, "These robbers are Mahometans, but they are not men; they have robbed me of two hundred minkallies."

On the 19th of April, as agreed on, the coffle commenced its journey: on its departure from Kamalia, it consisted of twenty-seven slaves for sale, the property of Karfa, and four other Slatees; but they were afterwards joined by several persons at Maraboo, and three at Bala; making in the whole seventy-three persons, thirty-five of whom were slaves for sale. The number of freemen was fourteen; but several of them had wives and domestic slaves; and the school-master, who was now returning to Woradoo, the place of his nativity, had with him eight of his pupils. Several of the inhabitants of Kamalia accompanied them about half a mile out of the town, some crying, others shaking hands with their relations who were on the point of leaving them. Reaching a rising ground, from whence they had a prospect of the town, all the people of the coffle were ordered to sit down, with their faces towards the west; and the people of the town with their faces towards Kamalia. The school-master, and two of the principal Slatees, then placed themselves between the two parties, pronouncing a long and solemn prayer, at the conclusion of which they walked three times round the caravan, pressing the ground with the end of their spears, and muttering a secret charm. All the travellers then arose, and proceeded on their journey, without taking a formal leave of their relations and friends.

The slaves had heavy loads upon their heads; and many of them having been long in irons, the exertion of walking quick occasioned spasmodic complaints in their legs. Having advanced about a mile, two of them were obliged to be taken from the rope, and permitted to walk slowly. The coffle, after resting two hours at Maraboo, proceeded to Bala, which town they reached about four in the afternoon; and thence on the 20th to Worumbang, the frontier village of Manding, towards Jallonkadoo. Here they procured a stock of provisions, intending shortly to enter the Jallonka Wilderness. The road to Kinytakooro, a town in Jollonkadoo, was agreed on; and this being a long day's journey distant, they halted to refresh themselves. Every one conveyed a handful or two of meal from his provision bag, to the place where Karfa and the Slatees were sitting, and the whole was arranged in small gourd-shells; the schoolmaster then pronounced a short prayer, that God and the Holy Prophet might preserve us from robbers, and all wicked people; that our provisions might never fail us, nor our limbs become fatigued.

This ceremony being ended, each partook of the meal, and drank a little water; after which they expeditiously set forward till they came to the river Kokoro, a branch of the Senegal, and in the evening arrived at Kinytakooro, a large square town, situated in the middle of an extensive cultivated plain. In this day's journey a woman and a girl, two slaves belonging to a Slatee of Bala, were so greatly fatigued that they could not keep up with the coffle. They were whipped and

and dragged along till about three in the afternoon, when the severity, added to the fatigue, brought on a vomiting; and by the discharge from the stomach, it was discovered that they had *eaten clay*. This practice is frequent among the slaves, but whether it proceeds from a vitiated appetite, or from a resolution to destroy themselves, is uncertain. Guarded by three people, the slaves were permitted to lie down in the woods, till they were a little recovered; but they did not arrive at the town till midnight, and were then so much exhausted, that their master resolved to return with them to Bala, and wait for another opportunity.

As Kinytakooro was the first town beyond the limits of Manding, great etiquette was required on entering it. The coffle marched towards it in a sort of procession, as follows: Five or six singing men in front, all belonging to the coffle; the other free people followed next; then came the slaves, ignominiously fastened in the usual way; a man with a spear taking his station between every four. Next came the domestic slaves, the women of free condition, the wives of the Slatees, &c. Arriving within a hundred yards of the gate, the singing men began a loud song, extolling the hospitality of the inhabitants to strangers, &c. When they arrived at the Bentang, the people were assembled to hear their history, which was pronounced by two of the singing men. They began with the events of the day, and related every thing in a backward series, till they reached Kamalia. When this recital was ended, the chief man of the town gave them a small present; and every individual of the coffle, whether free or enslaved, received an invitation from some person or persons, to accept of provisions, and an accommodation for the night.

SECTION XVII.

The Coffle crosses the Jallonka Wilderness—Deplorable Fate of a Female Slave—Sooseta, Manna—Some Account of the Jallonkas—Crosses the Senegal—Remarkable Bridge—Arrives at Malacotta—Conduct of the King of the Jalluffs.

SOON after day-break on the 23d, the coffle entered the Jallonka wilderness, and passed the ruins of two small towns which the Foulahs had lately burnt: the fire which consumed these premises must have been extremely intense, as the walls of the huts were vitrified. About ten o'clock they came to the river Wonda, a larger stream than that of the Kokoro, but rather muddy, on account of the amazing shoals of fish which it contained; they were indeed seen in all directions, and in the greatest abundance. Having crossed this river, Karfa ordered the guides and young men to place themselves in the front, the women and slaves in the centre, and the freemen in the rear; and in this order they travelled through a beautiful woody country, abounding with deer, partridges, and Guinea fowls, till sunset; when they arrived at the romantic stream of Co-meissang.

Mr. Park, in the course of the day, had been so much exposed to the sun, that blisters appeared on his skin; and, to diminish the inflammation, he came to a resolution of bathing himself in this river, while the coffle rested on its bank. About three miles to the westward of the Co-meissang, they halted in a thick wood, and kindled their fires for the night: the company were greatly fatigued, having travelled about thirty miles, but not a person was heard to complain. Whilst supper was preparing, Karfa ordered one of his slaves to prepare a bed for Mr. Park, from some of the branches of the trees. Having supped upon Kouskous, and secured the slaves in irons, they all laid down; but were very much disturbed in the night by the howling of wild beasts, and the biting of little brown ants.

The next morning many of the free people regaled themselves with *moening*; some of which was also given to those slaves who appeared least able to endure fatigue: but one of Karfa's female slaves named Nealee, refused to partake of this refreshment, and was extremely sullen. The coffle proceeded over a wild and rocky country, when Nealee, the woman slave, soon overcome by fatigue, began to lag behind, complaining dreadfully of pains in her legs; her load was therefore taken

taken from her, and given to another slave, and she was enjoined to keep in the front.

While the coffle rested near a small rivulet, a large hive of bees was discovered in a hollow tree, and some Negroes were active in endeavouring to obtain the honey; when an enormous swarm flew out, and attacking the people of the coffle, obliged them to fly in all directions. Mr. Park took the alarm, and was almost the only person who escaped with impunity. The Negroes who had been dispersed by the attack of these insects, collected together at some distance from this distressing scene; but Nealee was not to be found, and many of the bundles were missing. To recover these with safety, they set fire to the grass eastward of the hive, and the wind driving the flames furiously along, they passed through the smoke, and regained the bundles. They also brought with them poor Nealee, whom they found lying by the rivulet, much exhausted. She had with great difficulty crept to the stream, hoping to protect herself from the bees by throwing water over her person; but she was stung most dreadfully. The stings were carefully picked out, and she was washed with water, in which bruised leaves had been steeped; but she refused to proceed any farther, declaring she would rather die than walk another step.

Entreaties and threats being no longer regarded, the whip was applied by the Slatees: after bearing patiently a few strokes, she started up, and walked a tolerable pace for four or five hours longer, when attempting to run away, she fell down in the grass through extreme weakness. Again was the whip applied, but in vain. They placed her on an ass which carried their dry provisions, but she could not sit erect, and the ass was refractory. A litter of bamboo canes was then made for her, and she was carried on the heads of two slaves for the remainder of the day. In this manner the unhappy woman was conveyed forward till it was dark, when they halted at the foot of a hill called Gankaran-kooroo. The travellers had only ate a handful of meal each, during the day's journey in a hot sun, and many of the slaves had heavy loads upon their heads; they were, indeed, so much dissatisfied, that some of them *snapt their fingers*, which among the Negroes is a certain sign of desperation. They were all immediately secured in irons, and those who had displayed the most unequivocal proofs of despondency, were separated from the rest.

In the morning many of them were much recovered, but poor Nealee was unable to walk or stand: she was therefore lifted, like an inanimate creature, upon the back of an ass, her hands being fastened together under the neck, and her feet under the belly: the ass, however, was so unruly that he could not be induced to proceed with his load; the wretched slave was instantly thrown off, and one of her legs much bruised. Every attempt to carry her being found ineffectual, many of the coffle exclaimed aloud, *kang-tegi! kang-tegi! cut her throat! cut her throat!* an operation which Mr. Park had no inclination to see performed; he therefore marched onwards with the foremost of the coffle; but he had not proceeded above a mile, when one of Karfa's domestic slaves came to him, having Nealee's garment upon the end of his bow, and exclaimed *Nealee affeeleeta* (Nealee is lost!) Our traveller asked him if the Slatees had rewarded him with the garment for cutting the unfortunate woman's throat? he replied that Karfa and the schoolmaster would not consent to have her killed, but ordered her to be left upon the road, where she must shortly perish, or become a prey to ferocious animals.

Her fate was lamented throughout the whole coffle, notwithstanding the unfeeling outcry which preceded it; the schoolmaster fasted the whole day in consequence of it. The coffle soon after crossed the river Furkoomah, and travelled so expeditiously that Mr. Park found it difficult to keep pace with it. About noon they saw a large herd of elephants, but they were suffered to pass unmolested; in the evening they halted near a thicket of bamboo, but, finding no water, they proceeded four miles further to a small stream, after having travelled twenty-six miles that day.

On the 26th of April the coffle ascended a rocky hill, called Boki-kooro, and, entering a valley in the afternoon, forded the Boki, a smooth transparent river. About a mile to the westward of the river, observing the marks of many horses' feet on the soft sand, the Slatees apprehended that a party of plunderers had lately been in that quarter; and, to avoid discovery and pursuit, the coffle separated, and travelled irregularly

through the high grass and bushes. When it was almost dark, they crossed a ridge of hills to the westward of the river Boki, and rested for the night at a well called *cullong qui*. On the following day they passed expeditiously through extensive thickets of dry bamboos. At a stream called Nunkolo, about two o'clock, each of them were regaled with a handful of meal, moistened with water from this stream, in compliance with a superstitious custom; in the afternoon they reached Sooseeta, a village in the district of Kulla, a tract of country extending along the banks of the black river, or principal branch of the Senegal. These were the first human habitations they had seen in the course of five successive days, in travelling upwards of a hundred miles. Here, after much entreaty, they were provided with huts to sleep in, but they could procure no provisions, a great scarcity having taken place before the crops were gathered in; during which time the inhabitants of Kulla had lived on the yellow powder of the *nitta*, and the seeds of the bamboo *.

On the 28th of April the coffle arrived at Manna, where they found the inhabitants employed in gathering the fruit of the nitta-trees. The pods, which are long and narrow, contain a few black seeds, enveloped in a mealy yellow powder, which, when mixed with milk or water, is a pleasant and nourishing food. The language at Manna resembles the Mandingo; but the natives themselves consider it as a distinct language. The Jolonkas, like the Mandingoes, are governed by several petty chiefs, nearly independent of each other.

The chief of Manna, with several of his people, accompanied the coffle to the banks of the basing, or black river (a principal branch of the Senegal) which they crossed upon a bridge of bamboos, of a very singular construction. Several tall trees are fastened together by the tops, which float on the water, the roots resting on the rocks on each side of the river; these are covered with dry bamboos, and the whole forms a passage sloping from each end towards the middle, so as to resemble an inverted arch. The swell of the river, at the rainy seasons, annually destroys this convenience; but the inhabitants of Manna constantly rebuild it, to defray the expences of which, a small tribute is exacted from every passenger.

Being informed that two hundred Jallonkas had assembled near Melo, to intercept and plunder the coffle, they altered their course, and proceeded to a town called Koba. Before they entered Koba, the names of the coffle were called over, by which a discovery was made that a freeman and three slaves were missing; hence it was generally concluded that the slaves had murdered the freeman, and effected their escape; and six persons were ordered to go back to the last village, to endeavour to procure certain information. The people of the coffle were, in the mean time, ordered to lie concealed in a cotton-field, and no person permitted to speak but in a whisper; towards morning the six messengers returned, but had obtained no satisfactory information. The coffle then entered the town, and purchased a considerable quantity of ground nuts, which were roasted for breakfast; they were then provided with huts, and continued there during the remainder of the day *.

The slaves being much fatigued, the coffle only proceeded nine miles on the following day; where at a small village, they procured some provisions through the interest of the schoolmaster, who sent a messenger forward to Malacotta, his native town, to inform his friends of his arrival, and

* The dry provisions not being yet exhausted, a sufficient quantity of kouskous was dressed for supper, and many of the villagers invited to the repast; but they made a very improper return for this kindness, for in the night they seized on one of the schoolmaster's boys, when asleep, and carried him away; the youth fortunately awoke, and screamed aloud, but the man placing his hand upon his mouth, ran with him into the woods; finding afterwards that he belonged to the schoolmaster, and that he could not detain him without his knowledge, he only stripped the boy of his apparel, and permitted him to return naked.

† At length the companions that had been missing entered the town, and were joyfully received; it now appeared, that one of the slaves had bruised his foot, and from the darkness of the night they lost sight of the coffle. The freeman, finding himself alone with the slaves, was aware of his own danger, and insisted on putting them in irons; finding them refractory, and unwilling to submit to this restraint, he threatened to stab them with his spear, when they at last complied, and in the morning followed the coffle to Koba. In the course of the day, the information respecting the Jallonka plunderers was confirmed; and Karfa, after remaining at Koba till the 30th, hired a number of persons as protectors, and proceeded to Tinkingtang, a small village. Departing from thence the following day, they crossed a high ridge of mountains, and, at sun-set arrived at Lingicotta, a small village of Woradod. Here they shook out the last handful of meal from their provision bags, this being the second whole day that they had travelled without tasting a single morsel of sustenance.

request them to collect provisions for supporting the coffle for two or three days. They stopped at another village farther on, waiting for the return of the messenger from Malacotta: here is a considerable stream, which flows to the westward; and, as the natives assured Mr. Park there were no crocodiles in it, he ventured to bathe himself in it. Very few people in this part of the country can swim; and the natives earnestly entreated him not to venture into a pool where the water would come over his head. About two o'clock the messenger returned from Malacotta, accompanied by the elder brother of the schoolmaster. The interview between the two brothers, after an absence of nine years, was truly affecting, and such as might naturally be expected; some moments elapsed before either of them was able to speak. The schoolmaster having a little recovered himself, he took his brother by the hand, and turning round, "this is the man," said he, pointing to Karfa, "who has been my father in Manding: I would have pointed him out sooner to you, but my heart was too full."

Reaching Malacotto in the evening, they met with a very favourable reception, and were splendidly entertained for three days; a bullock being each day presented by the schoolmaster. Malacotto is an unwalled town, the huts of which are formed of split cane, twisted in imitation of wicker-work, and plastered over with mud. The inhabitants are industrious, and make very good soap by boiling ground-nuts in water, and adding a ley of woodashes. They also manufacture iron, which they barter for salt at Bondou. Returning from an expedition of this kind, a party of traders brought intelligence of a war between Abdulkader king of Foota-Torra, and Damel, king of the Jaloffs, which soon became the general topic of conversation in all the kingdoms bordering on the Senegal and Gambia *.

Abdulkader instantly invaded Damel's dominions with a very powerful army; at his approach the towns and villages were abandoned, the wells filled up, the provisions destroyed, and the effects carried off by the inhabitants. He proceeded three days into the country of the Jaloffs, without having been opposed, but his army had suffered so severely from the scarcity of water, that many perished daily from the absence of that salutary fluid. This consideration induced him to march to a watering-place in the woods, where his men, after allaying their thirst, carelessly laid down to repose among the bushes, to recruit their exhausted strength. In this incautious situation they were attacked by Damel's forces in the night, and completely routed; king Abdulkader himself, with a great number of his followers, were taken prisoners. The behaviour of Damel, on this occasion, was mentioned by the singing men in terms of the highest approbation. The magnanimous Damel, instead of setting his foot upon his neck, and piercing him with his spear, according to the usual practice, addressed him as follows,—"Abdulkader, answer me this question.—If the chance of war had reduced me to your situation, how would you have treated me?" "I would have thrust my spear into your heart," replied Abdulkader, with great firmness, "and I know that a similar fate will be my portion."—"Not so," resumed Damel, "my sword indeed is red with the blood of your subjects slain in battle; and I could give it a deeper tinge by dipping it in your own; but this would not rebuild my towns, nor restore to life the thousands who fell in the woods. I will not therefore kill you in cold blood; but I will retain you as my slave, till I perceive that your presence in your own kingdom will be no longer dangerous to your neighbours; and I shall then determine on some proper method to dispose of you."

Damel, as he proposed, retained the captive prince, and employed him in the character of a slave for about three months; at the expiration of which period Damel lent a favourable ear to the solicitations of the inhabitants of Foota Torro, and restored to them their king.

* The circumstances may be thus related,—Almami Abdulkader, king of Foota Torra, zealous in the propagation of the religion of the prophet, dispatched an ambassador to Damel, king of the Jaloffs. The ambassador, on this occasion, was accompanied by two of the principal bushreens, each carrying a large knife fixed upon the top of a long pole. As soon as he had procured admission into the presence of Damel, the ambassador ordered the bushreens to present the emblems of his mission. The two knives were then laid before Damel, and the ambassador thus explained himself. "With this knife," said he, "Abdulkader will condescend to shave the head of Damel, if Damel will embrace the Mahometan faith; and with this other knife Abdulkader will cut the throat of Damel, if Damel refuses to embrace it;—take your choice." Damel coolly informed the ambassador that he had no choice to make; he was not inclined either to have his head shaved, or his throat cut, and the ambassador was civilly dismissed.

SECT.

SECTION XVIII.

The Caravan to Konkadoo, crossing the Falemé River—Proceeds to Baserile, Kirwani, &c.—A Matrimonial Case—The Caravan arrives on the Banks of the Gambia—The Traveller accompanied by Karfa, proceeds to Pasania—Takes his Passage in an American Ship—Voyage to Great Britain.

THE coffle departed from Malacotta on the 7th of May, and, having crossed the honey river, which is a branch of the Senegal, arrived at Bintingala, a walled town, where they rested two days. From thence they proceeded to Dindikoo, a town at the bottom of a ridge of hills, which produces considerable quantities of gold. Here was to be seen a Negro, whose hair and skin were of a dull white; he was one of those who in the Spanish West-Indies are called white Negroes. He had a cadaverous unpleasant complexion, which our traveller supposed to be the effect of disease.

After a toilsome journey, the coffle arrived at Satadoo on the 11th of May; it had been a town of considerable extent, but many inhabitants had quitted it on account of the rapacious incursions of the Foulahs of Foota Jalla, who made it their common practice to carry off people from the corn-fields and wells in the vicinity of the town. Crossing the Falemé river on the 12th, the coffle halted at Medina, an elegant village built in the European taste, and the sole property of a rich Mandingo merchant. The next morning they departed, in company with another coffle of slaves belonging to some traders of Serawoolli; they travelled with great expedition through the woods till noon, when one of the Serawoolli slaves dropped the burthen from his head, for which he suffered a severe whipping, and the load was instantly replaced. He had not proceeded above a mile further, when he let his load fall to the ground a second time, when the same punishment was repeated. After this he travelled in great anguish till about two; and when the cofile rested near a pool of water, the poor captive was so completely exhausted, that he lay motionless on the ground; he was therefore released from the rope, and a Serawoolli ordered to remain with him, to bring him to the town during the cool of the night. Proceeding on their route, in the mean time, they arrived at Beniserile*.

In the evening the Serawoolli who had been intrusted with the care of the exhausted slave, brought intelligence that he was dead; but as the Serawoollies are stigmatized for their cruelty to slaves, it was generally supposed that he had either killed him, or left him to perish on the road. The coffle remained at Baniserile two days, to purchase iron, shea-butter, and other articles of general consumption for sale on the Gambia; but Mr. Park's friend, the Slatee, who was anxious to complete his nuptials with the damsel already mentioned, resolved to proceed no further. He had been informed that the price of slaves on the Gambia was extremely low, and declared he would remain, with his three slaves, where he was, till he could part with them on more advantageous terms.

Departing from Baniserile, they proceeded to a large town named Kirwani, where they arrived about four in the afternoon It is situated in a well-cultivated valley, and the inhabitants have shewn more knowledge of agricultural labour than in any part of Africa which our traveller had seen; they collect the dung of their cattle into large heaps, during the dry season, to manure the land at a proper time; he saw no other specimen of this mode of husbandry in any other part of Africa. This town is also supplied with several large furnaces from which the natives obtain good iron.

A Slatee of this place having purchased, among

* One of the Slatees, who was a native of this place, from which he had now been absent about three years, invited Mr. Park to his residence, at the gate of which he was met by his friends with many expressions of joy, embracing him, and singing and dancing before him. Having seated himself on a mat, near the threshold of his door, a young woman (his intended bride) brought him some water in a calabash, and, kneeling before him, requested he would wash his hands. This operation being finished, the girl drank the water, while the tear of affectionate joy trembled in her eye, testifying the most unequivocal proof of her fidelity and attachment.

other

other slaves, a native of Foota Jella, was apprehensive, as that country was at war, of his effecting his escape, and therefore proposed to exchange him for another slave, and offered liberal terms. The slatee accordingly sent for the slave, who, finding what sort of bargain was in agitation, attempted to escape, but was overtaken by the Slatees, who safely secured him in irons: after which one of Karfa's slaves was released, and delivered in exchange. The unfortunate captive was at first extremely dejected, but his melancholy gradually subsided, and in the course of a few days he became as cheerful as any of his companions.

Departing from Kirwani, they entered the Tenda Wilderness, the woods of which were thick, and the country extremely rocky. About ten o'clock they met a coffle returning from the Gambia, consisting of twenty-six persons, and seven loaded asses. The men had musquets, broad belts of scarlet cloth over their shoulders, and wore European hats. They remarked that there was little or no demand for slaves on the coast, as no vessel had arrived for a considerable time. Attending to this conversation, the Serawoollies deserted the coffle, and took their course for Kajaaga. Karfa, and his followers, continued their route through the Wilderness, and at sunset arrived at a pool of water, named Tabba-gee, where they rested a few hours. The days being immoderately hot, Karfa proposed to travel during the night; in consequence of which they proceeded about ten o'clock, with strict orders for the coffle to keep close together, as well to hinder the slaves from escaping, as for a preservation from the attack of wild beasts. They travelled with great alacrity till day-break, when it was discovered that a free woman was missing: her name was called till the woods resounded, but no answer being given, it was conjectured that she had either mistaken the road, or that a lion had seized her unperceived.

Four persons, however, were sent back in search of her, the coffle waiting till their return. She was found, lying fast asleep, near a rivulet where the coffle had stopped to refresh, and was arrived in safety. Pursuing their journey, they reached the walled town of Tambacunda, where they were favourably received, and where they were amused by a *palaver*, which continued four days. The particulars may be thus related:—Modi Lemini, one of the Slatees belonging to the coffle, had formerly married a woman of this town, by whom he had two children: he then repaired to Manding, where he resided eight years, without acquainting his deserted wife with any particulars relating to himself. After the expiration of three years, the lady married another man, by whom she also had two children. Lemini now claimed his wife, but the second husband refused to relinquish her; insisting, that according to the laws of Africa, a man who has been three years absent from his wife, without acquainting her that he is still living, the wife so deserted is at liberty to marry again. All the circumstances being investigated by the chief men, it was decided that the woman should take her choice, whether she would return to the first husband, or continue with the second. Favourable as this determination appeared, the lady required time to deliberate on this important business.

Leaving Tambacunda early on the 26th, they reached the village of Sibikillin about noon, but did not enter the gate, having been informed that the inhabitants were not only inhospitable, but had also a strong propensity to pilfering. After resting a short time under a tree, they continued their route, and at night halted by the side of a stream which was conveying its tributary aid to the Gambia. Next day, after a fatiguing journey over a wild and rocky country, much infested with monkeys and wild beasts, they approached the village of Koomboo; but as the inhabitants were reputed to be of a disposition allied to that of the natives of Sibikillin, they rested for the night in the fields, having first erected temporary huts for their protection from the rain*.

* In the morning they proceeded to a Foulah town; and the following day, crossing a branch of the Gambia, reposed at Koba Tenda, where they procured provisions for supporting themselves while they were traversing the Simbani woods. On the 30th of May the coffle arrived at Jalacotta, a large town which had been often plundered by Foulah banditti, who had lately stolen twenty head of cattle; but, on making a second attempt the following day, they were overcome, and one of them taken prisoner. Here one of the singing men, who had a slave in the coffle so exhausted with fatigue as to be unable to proceed, exchanged him for a young female slave. The poor girl was ignorant of her fate till the coffle was on the point of departing, when the master, taking her by the hand, delivered her to the singing man: a face of perfect serenity was instantly clouded with unutterable distress: the manner of her submitting to have a ponderous load placed upon her head, and to have the rope unmercifully fastened round her yielding neck; with the genuine sorrow expressed to her friends on their taking a final adieu, were truly affecting.

The coffle proceeding on its journey, crossed the river Nèrico, a branch of the Gambia: at this moment the stream was small and gently flowing, though in the rainy season it is rapid and violent, and often dangerous to travellers. Having crossed the current, the singing man vociferated a song, expressive of their joy on their arrival in the west country, or, as they emphatically expressed it, the land of the setting sun. As the rain fell with violence in the afternoon, the travellers had recourse to the Negro umbrella, a large Ciboa leaf, one of which, being placed upon the head, protects the whole body from the rain.

The coffle rested, during the night, under the shade of a large tabba tree, near a village: in the morning they reached the banks of the Gambia, in a place where it was deep, smooth, and navigable. Opposite to this place, a large plain presents itself to view, being a sort of morass, in crossing which travellers are sometimes lost; it is called Toombi Toorila. In the evening, a little before it was dark, they arrived at Seesukunda, a village in the kingdom of Woolli. The slaves, in passing along, here saw plenty of nitta trees, and gathered large bunches of the fruit; but the inhabitants, from superstitious motives, would not suffer any of this fruit to be brought into the village; prepossessed that some dire catastrophe would befal the place, if the people subsisted upon nittas, and neglected the cultivation of the corn.

On the 2d of June they quitted Seesukunda, and passed through several villages; and, in the afternoon, reached Baraconda, where they halted a day. Departing from Baraconda, they reached Medina on the 4th. Here Mr. Park enquired immediately concerning the health of his good old benefactor king Jatta; and heard, with great concern, that he was dangerously ill. As the coffle did not stop here, Mr. Park could not personally pay his respects to the king, but informed him by an officer of his majesty's customs, that his prayers for the white man's safety had not been ineffectual. On the following day the coffle reached Jindey, where, eighteen months before, Mr. Park separated from his friend Dr. Laidley; during which interval he had not beheld the face of a Christian, nor been delighted with the accents of his native language*.

Anxious to get forward, Mr. Park and his companions reached Tendacunda in the evening, and were hospitably received at the house of Signiora Camilla, an aged black female who understood English, and with whom our traveller was acquainted; but his dress and figure were now so different from what she had hitheto seen of Europeans, that she at first mistook him for a Moor, and could not immediately recollect him. At last, giving credit to the testimony of her senses, she assured him that none of the traders on the Gambia ever expected to see him again, hearing he had been long ago murdered by the Moors at Ludamar; and when he enquired for Johnson and Demba, his two attendants, he had the mortification to be informed that neither of them had returned.

Karfa listened attentively to hear Mr. Park and his hostess converse in English; the furniture, beds, curtains, chairs, &c. were objects of his admiration. His astonishment was excited at every thing he saw. He asked a thousand questions on the utility of almost every thing that presented itself, concerning which it was difficult to give a satisfactory answer.

Mr. Robert Ainsley having been informed that Mr. Park was at Tendacunda, came to meet him, and politely offered him the use of his horse. He informed him that Dr. Laidley had removed to a place called Kaye, a little further down the river, and that he was then gone to Doomasansa to purchase rice, but would return in the course of a day or two: our traveller was therefore invite

* Finding that his friend Karfa had but little chance of selling his slaves on the Gambia, he suggested to him that it would be his most prudent measure to leave them at Jinkey till a proper opportunity should occur. Karfa, approving of this advice, hired a piece of ground of the chief man of Jindey, to employ his slaves in raising corn, and other provisions till such an event should take place. The good old man assured our traveller that he would not quit him till his departure from Africa; and accordingly Mr. Park, Karfa, and a Foulah belonging to the coffle, left Jindey on the morning of the 9th. But though Mr. Park was drawing near the conclusion of a toilsome journey, and shortly expected to meet with his countrymen and friends, he could not take a last farewel of his unfortunate fellow travellers, devoted as many of them were to captivity and slavery, without great emotion. Though exposed to the burning rays of a tropical sun, these poor slaves commisserated his sufferings, regardless of their own which were infinitely greater, frequently bringing water to quench his thirst, and at night collected branches and leaves to make a bed comfortable for him in the wilderness. Hence they parted with reciprocal expressions of regret and benediction. Mr. Park had nothing to bestow on them but his prayers and good wishes, and it afforded him some consolation to be assured, that they knew he had no more to give.

to

to reside at Pisania till the doctor returned: he accepted the invitation, and, accompanied by his friend Karfa, repaired to Mr. Ainsley's mansion.

Here that gentleman's schooner was lying at anchor before the place, which astonished Karfa more than any thing he had before seen. He could form no adequate idea of the masts, sails, and rigging; nor could he suppose it possible by any sort of contrivance, to move so large a body forwards by the force only of the wind. He carefully inspected the construction of the vessel, and the filling up the seams to exclude the water; which, added to his surprise on viewing the cable and anchor, kept him in deep meditation for the remainder of the day.

On the 12th about noon, Dr. Laidley returned from Doomasansa, and received Mr. Park with equal astonishment and pleasure. Finding his wearing apparel had not been sent to England, our traveller now resumed his English dress, and caused his chin to be deprived of its venerable incumbrance. Karfa surveyed him with delight in his British apparel, but appeared chagrined at the loss of his beard, which he said had transformed him from a man to a boy. Mr. Park had before given this worthy old man a bill upon Dr. Laidley for the value of one prime slave, before they left Kamalia, to prevent his being a loser by his kindness if he should die on the journey. But our traveller now thought double that sum almost too poor a recompence: Dr. Laidley therefore undertook to deliver him goods to that amount, whenever he thought proper to send for them; and also to discharge all the other pecuniary engagements Mr. Park had entered into since his departure from the Gambia; taking his draft upon the African Association for the amount of the whole. Mr. Park also committed to the care of Karfa a handsome present intended for the good old schoolmaster, Fancooma at Malcotta; and Dr. Laidley promised to assist him in the advantageous disposal of his slaves.

These, and many other instances of kindness and attention, shewn by Dr. Laidley, were not thrown away upon Karfa. Often did he declare to our traveller, "My journey has indeed been prosperous." Observing the excellence of our manufactures, and our wonderful superiority in the arts of civilized life, he would sometimes exclaim, with an involuntary sigh, "Black men are nothing!" On other occasions he frequently expressed his surprise that any consideration could have induced Mr. Park, who was no trader, to think of visiting so wretched a country as Africa? Intimating, that, after what he must have known of his country, nothing in Africa could deserve a moment of his attention. These little traits of character in the worthy Negro are thus minutely given, to demonstrate that he possessed a mind above the sphere of his condition. To such as delight in contemplating human nature in all its varieties, and to deduce its progress from rudeness to refinement, it is presumed, the account of this progress of the poor African will not be unacceptable.

As the rainy season was now setting in, Mr. Park persuaded Karfa to return to his people at Jindey; and they parted from each other on the 14th with unaffected tenderness, but as our traveller had little hopes of quitting Africa during the remainder of the year, he informed him, as the fact really was, that he expected to see him again before his departure. In this, however, he was fortunately disappointed; a circumstance happening which hastened our traveller's narrative to a conclusion; for on the 15th the ship Charles-Town, an American vessel, commanded by Mr. Charles Harris, entered the river; and on the 17th of June, he embarked on board that vessel at Kaye, to return by a circuitous route to his own country. She came for slaves, intending to touch at Goree to fill up; and to proceed from thence to South Carolina. As the European merchants on the Gambia, had now a great many slaves on hand, they agreed with the captain to purchase the whole of his cargo, consisting principally of rum and tobacco; and deliver him slaves to the whole amount in the course of two days. This afforded him such an opportunity of returning, (though by a circuitous route) to his native country, as he could not think of neglecting; he therefore immediately engaged his passage in this vessel for America; and having taken leave of Dr. Laidley, to whose kindness he was largely indebted, as well as his other friends on the river, he embarked at Kaye on the 17th of June.

The passage down the river was tedious and fatiguing, the weather hot and unhealthy: before the ship arrived at Goree, the surgeon, four of the seamen, and three of the slaves were taken off by fevers; and six or eight while it continued there, having waited till the beginning of October to take in provisions, and more slaves on board. The whole number was one hundred and thirty; among

among whom twenty-five had probably been of free condition, as most of them could write a little Arabic: nine of them were captives taken in the religious war between Abdulkader and Damei; two of them had seen Mr. Park at Bondou, and many others had heard of him in the interior.

The surgeon being dead, Mr. Park occupied his place; and his humane treatment, with the additional advantage of being able to converse with them in their native language, afforded the poor captives the greatest consolation. They certainly required every consolation in his power to bestow; not that he observed any acts of wanton cruelty practised, either by the master or the seamen, towards them; but the mode of confining and securing the Negroes in the* American slave ships, being abundantly more rigid and severe than in British vessels employed in the same traffic, occasions a general sickness among the poor creatures. Beside the three who died on the Gambia, and six or seven while they remained at Goree, eleven perished at sea, and many of the survivors were reduced to a weak and emaciated condition. After having been three weeks at sea, the vessel became so leaky that constant exertion was required at the pumps. The ablest of the Negroes were exonerated of their irons, and indulged with this employment, in which they frequently laboured to excess, and far beyond their strength. The leak increasing, notwithstanding their utmost efforts to clear the vessel, the seamen insisted on bearing way for the West Indies, as the only method to be taken for the preservation of the lives of the crew. Accordingly, after some objections on the part of the master, they directed their course for Antigua, and fortunately made that island, in about thirty-five days after their departure from Goree; yet, even in this trip, they narrowly escaped destruction; for, on approaching the north-west side of the island, they struck on the Diamond rock, and it was with the utmost difficulty that they got into Saint John's Harbour. The vessel was afterwards condemned as unfit for sea, and the slaves were ordered to be sold for the benefit of the owners.

Here our traveller remained ten days, when the Chesterfield packet, homeward bound from the Leeward Islands, touching at Antigua for the mail, he took his passage in that vessel, and sailed on the 24th of November; and, after a short tempestuous voyage, arrived at Falmouth on the 22d of Decem[illegible]er 1797, after an eventful absence of two years and seven months.

* The continuation or abolition of the slave trade has occasionally, for a series of years, been a theme of discussion for the members of the two British houses of parliament. Each side of this question has hitherto had a number of advocates, but the present moment seems to countenance the idea of an annihilation of that long-tolerated practice. Its advantages and disadvantages have frequently been enumerated, but many of the haranguers on that subject are to be suspected of interested motives.

THE END OF MUNGO PARK'S TRAVELS IN AFRICA.

STRICTURES

STRICTURES ON THE LIFE

OF

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK;

AND ON

HIS FIRST AND SECOND VOYAGES

TO THE

SOUTHERN HEMISPHERE.

Undertaken chiefly with a View of exploring that Hemisphere, and to observe the Transit of Venus over the Sun's Disk.

THIS celebrated circumnavigator was born at Marton, near great Ayton, in Yorkshire, on the 27th of October, 1728. His father, who moved in the humble sphere of a farmer's servant, married a young woman in a similar situation, and both were highly respected by their neighbours, for their honesty, industry, and sobriety. About the time that our navigator had completed the second year of his age, his father was appointed superintendent of a considerable farm named Airyholm, at Great Ayton, belonging to Thomas Scottowe, Esq. The terms of his new appointment being thought advantageous to the agriculturist, he quitted Marton, and repaired to Great Ayton, taking his family with him.

As his father continued long in this employment, his son naturally acted under his directions, with as much ability as his tender years would permit him; but the early part of his education appears to have been very inconsiderable. At the age of thirteen, however, he was under the tuition of Mr. Pullen, schoolmaster at Ayton, where he received the rudiments of Arithmetic and book-keeping, and is said to have made a very rapid progress in the science of numbers.

Early in the year 1745, when our young navigator was seventeen years of age, his father bound him an apprentice to William Sanderson, at Snaith, near Whitby, for the term of four years, to learn the grocery and haberdashery business. But this situation not suiting his natural propensity, and having a strong predilection for a maritime life, a year and a half's servitude terminated his engagement as a shopkeeper; and a trivial disagreement with his master occasioned the indentures to be cancelled. A circumstance that gave the young man great satisfaction, as it enabled him to follow the bent of his inclination.

In July 1746 he engaged in the service of Messrs. Walker of Whitby, for the term of three years, which he faithfully served to the perfect satisfaction of his masters. His first voyage was on board the Freelove of four hundred and fifty tons, principally employed in the coal trade from Newcastle to London.

In May 1748, his master employed him in rigging and fitting for sea, a new ship of six hundred tons, named the Three Brothers. This was done on the generous principle of improving him in his profession, and to qualify him for a better birth, when his articles of agreement should expire. Two coal voyages having been performed in this vessel, she was engaged in the service of government, and sent as a transport to Middleburgh, to convey troops to Dublin. These being landed at their destination, another corps was taken on board, and conveyed to

Liverpool. The ship then proceeded to Deptford, where she was paid off in April 1749. The remaining part of the season our navigator served on board her in the Norway trade.

Having honourably performed his engagements, he entered on board a ship in the Baltic trade, in which he continued about two years. In 1752, his old master appointed him mate of one of his ships, called the Friendship, in which he conducted himself for some time so much to the satisfaction of his owners, that he was offered the situation of captain, which he thought proper to decline.

In 1755, when hostilities commenced between Great Britain and France, Mr. Cook lay in the Thames. As press-warrants were then issued, he, at first, conceived an idea of endeavouring to conceal himself; but afterwards reflecting on the difficulty of adopting such a measure, he formed the resolution of entering as a volunteer in the royal navy. He went to a house of rendezvous at Wapping, and engaged in the king's service on board the Eagle, a sixty-gun ship then commanded by Captain Hamer. Captain, afterwards Sir Hugh Palliser, being appointed in the October following. Cook's extraordinary merit could not escape the attention of that intelligent commander, and he speedily advanced him to the quarter deck.

Cook's great merit having been frequently mentioned in the highest terms of panegyrick, several persons interested themselves in his behalf, and procured a letter of recommendation to his captain, from Mr. Osbaldeston, member for Scarborough, in which it was requested that he would point out in what manner they could contribute to his promotion. In consequence of Captain Palliser's recommendation and support, interest was made for a master's warrant, which he obtained to the Grampus sloop, in May 1759; but this appointment did not take place, the master having unexpectedly returned. In a few days, however, he was made master of the Garland, but in this he also met with a disappointment; for, on enquiry, it appeared that the ship had already sailed. At last he was appointed to the Mercury, destined for North America, under the command of Sir Charles Saunders, who, in conjunction with General Wolfe, was then engaged in the memorable siege of Quebec.

At the siege of Quebec he was intrusted by Sir Charles Saunders with the execution of important services, in the naval department. He was the pilot who conducted the boats to the attack of Montmorency; managed the embarkation to the heights of Abraham; and pointed out, by buoys, how the large ships might securely proceed up the river. The manner in which he acquitted himself in these important services, procured him the esteem and friendship of Sir Charles Saunders, and Lord Colville, who continued his zealous patrons during the remainder of their lives *.

Before this period Mr. Cook was supposed to be wholly unacquainted with the principles of drawing; but such was the vigour of his mind, and so great his aptitude to acquire knowledge, that he presently mastered every object to which he applied; and notwithstanding the disadvantages under which he laboured, he furnished the admiral with a very accurate and complete draught of the channel and its soundings.

When he was appointed master of the Northumberland, Lord Colville's flag-ship, who then commanded the squadron stationed on the coast of America, he devoted his leisure hours to the study of the mathematics. At Hallifax he first read Euclid's Elements, and studied astronomy. With the assistance of only a few books, and his own industry, he found means to cultivate his understanding, and supply, in some degree, the deficiencies of an early education.

On the 1st of April, 1760, he received a lieutenant's commission, and daily advanced in the career of glory. In September 1762, he assisted at the recapture of Newfoundland; after which the English fleet continued some time at Placentia, to restore that place to a better state

* During the siege of Quebec, the soundings of the river St. Lawrence were required to be taken, opposite to the French camp of Montmorency and Beauport. As this was a very difficult and a very dangerous service, and as Cook's sagacity and intrepidity were well known, Captain Palliser recommended him for the arduous task; and he executed his office in the completest manner, much to the satisfaction of his superiors, but not without encountering the most imminent danger. Being engaged in this pursuit for several successive nights, he was at length discovered by the enemy, who caused him to be surrounded with canoes, filled with Indians, when he had no other alternative than to make for the Isle of Orleans, where he was so closely pursued, that he had hardly leaped from the bow of the boat, before the Indians entered the stern, and carried her off in triumph.

of

of defence. Here our navigator had another opportunity of displaying his diligence and zeal in the service of his country. By surveying the harbour and heights of that place, he attracted the notice of captain, afterwards admiral Graves, at that time governor of Newfoundland. By entering into conversation with him, he found him possessed of so much judgment and intelligence, that he conceived a very high opinion of his abilities in general, and particularly of his nautical skill; and by cultivating a longer acquaintance with him, he daily became more prepossessed in his favour.

His frame and constitution were robust, and qualified him for the severest hardships. When necessity required it, he could feed on the coarsest and most unpalatable food; and submit to every kind of self denial with the greatest composure and indifference. Nor were the qualities of his mind less vigorous than those of his body. His understanding was strong and perspicacious: his judgment, especially in those matters in which he was more particularly engaged, quick, and infallible. His designs and operations were the natural result of a great original genius. His valour was cool, deliberate, and determined; accompanied with a most astonishing presence of mind on the approach of danger. His manners were plain, easy, and unaffected. His temper was, however, too much under the influence of hastiness and passion; but it must also be remembered, that his disposition was the most benevolent and humane.

These are a few outlines of the character of Captain Cook; but its distinguishing feature was, the most unremitting perseverance to accomplish his design, in opposition to dangers, difficulties, and discouragements. During all his long and perilous voyages, his eagerness and activity were never in the least abated. No alluring incitement could detain him for a moment: even those intervals of recreation, which unavoidably occurred in the course of his services, and were gladly embraced by many of his officers, were submitted to by him with indifference, if they could not be made subservient to the more effectual prosecution of his designs.

The result of his services we shall briefly touch upon, under two principal heads, *viz.* Geography and Navigation, placing each in a distinct and separate point of view. No science, it is presumed, has ever received greater additions from the labours of one man, than geography has done from those of Captain Cook.

His *First Voyage* was undertaken chiefly with a view of exploring the Southern Hemisphere, and to observe the transit of Venus over the Sun's Disk. It having been long calculated that the planet Venus would pass over the Sun's Disk in 1769, it was the general opinion of the scientific world, that the most proper place for observing this phenomenon, would be either at the Marquesas, or at one of those islands to which Tasman has given the several appellations of Amsterdam, Rotterdam, and Middleburgh; but which are now better known under the general title of the Friendly Isles. This being a matter of much importance in the science of Astronomy, the Royal Society, with a laudable zeal for its advancement, presented a memorial to his Majesty, requesting, among other things, that a vessel might be fitted out at the expence of government, to convey proper persons to observe this transit at one of these places.

Mr. Stephens having recommended Lieutenant Cook to superinted this expedition; and that recommendation being strengthened by the testimony of Sir Hugh Palliser, who was well acquainted with Mr. Cook's merit and abilities for the discharge of such a trust, he was appointed to this distinguished post by the lords commissioners, and promoted to the rank of lieutenant of the Royal Navy.

This appointment having taken place, Sir Hugh Palliser was commissioned to provide a vessel adapted for such a voyage. After examining several ships then lying in the Thames, in conjunction with Mr. Cook, he at last fixed on the Endeavour, a vessel of three hundred and seventy tons, which had been built for the coal trade.

Captain Wallis returned, about this time, from his voyage round the World; and, having signified to the Royal Society, that Port Royal Harbour in King George's Island, now called Otaheite, would be the most convenient place for observing the transit, his opinion was adopted, and the observers were ordered to repair thither.

Mr. Charles Green, the coadjutor of Dr. Bradley, the Astronomer Royal, was nominated to assist Captain Cook, in conducting the astronomical part of the undertaking. He was also accompanied by Joseph Banks, Esq. whose elevation to a baronetage, has since reflected honour on his sovereign and the order. This friend of science,

science, at an early period of life, possessed of an opulent fortune, and zealous to apply it to the best purposes, embarked on this hazardous enterprize, animated with the wish of improving himself, and extending the bounds of knowledge: two draughtsmen, a secretary, and four servants composed his retinue. Dr. Solander, an ingenious and learned Swede, also joined the expedition. The complement of the Endeavour consisted of eighty-four persons: she was victualled for eighteen months, and ten carriage and twelve swivel guns, with abundance of ammunition, and all manner of stores were taken on board.

In this First Voyage, Captain Cook discovered the Society Islands; ascertained the insularity of New Zealand; and discriminated the straits which separate the two islands, and are called after his name. He explored the eastern coast of New Holland, till then unknown; an extent of twenty-seven degrees of latitude, and upwards of two thousand miles.

The *Second Voyage* of Captain Cook, was to complete the discovery of the Southern Hemisphere; which had for ages been considered, by some of the ablest geographers, as containing another continent. To ascertain this fact, two ships were fitted; and that nothing might be omitted which could facilitate the enterprise, they were furnished with every requisite, which a liberal attention to the health and happiness of the crew could devise.

These vessels, which were built upon a particular construction, were purchased of Captain Hammond of Hull. The largest was named the Resolution, of four hundred and sixty-two tons burthen, Captain James Cook, commander: the other was named the Adventure, of three hundred and thirty-six tons, Captain Tobias Furneaux, who had been promoted from the rank of lieutenant. The Resolution had one hundred and twelve persons on board, officers included; and the Adventure eighty one. Mr. Forster, and his son, both eminent naturalists; and Mr. Wales, mathematical master of Christ's Hospital, accompanied them. On the 13th of June 1772, the two ships sailed from Plymouth Sound; and on the evening of the 29th, anchored in Fanchiale Road, in the island of Madeira.

In this *Second Expedition*, Captain Cook gave a resolution to the great problem of a southern continent; having so completely traversed that hemisphere, as not to leave a possibility of its existence, unless it is so near the pole, as to be beyond the reach of navigation. New Caledonia, the largest island in the Southern Pacific, except New Zealand, was discovered in this voyage. Also the island of Georgia; and an unknown coast, on which the captain bestowed the appellation of Sandwich land; and, having twice visited the tropical seas, he settled the situations of the old, and made several new discoveries.

Captain Cook judiciously concludes his account of this second voyage round the World, in the following words, "It doth not become me to say how far the principal objects of our voyage have been obtained. Had we found out a continent there, we might have been better enabled to gratify curiosity; but we hope our not having found it, after all our persevering researches, will leave less room for future speculation about unknown worlds remaining to be explored.

"But, whatever may be the public judgment about other matters, it is with great satisfaction, and without claiming any merit but of attention to my duty, that I can conclude this account with an observation, which facts enable me to make, that our having discovered the possibility of preserving health amongst a numerous ship's company, for such a length of time, in such varieties of climate, and amidst such continued hardships and fatigues, will make this voyage remarkable in the opinion of every benevolent person, when the disputes about a southern continent shall have ceased to have engaged the attention, and to divide the judgment of philosophers."

As the first and second voyages of Captain Cook were undertaken chiefly to explore the Southern Hemisphere, and to observe the transit of Venus over the Sun's Disk, objects which are now accomplished; and as those subjects, though fully investigated and explained, are not sufficiently interesting to be entitled to a circumstantial repetition at this period, a minute detail has been purposely avoided, in conformity to the necessary brevity of our proposed plan: but

THE THIRD VOYAGE OF CAPTAIN COOK,

For making Discoveries in the Northern Hemisphere,

Will be fully and circumstantially narrated, as its importance deserves.

MAKIN

Captains Cook an
from Deptford
Resolution pro
Road—Supplie
Agriculture—

ON the 10th o
hoisted the
sloop the Resol
mission to comm
Captain Clerke w
to the command
dred tons, prepa
not be unnecessar
had been captai
board the Resolu
the World.

Both ships b
every thing req
on the 29th of
day at Long Re
powder and sh
On the 8th of J
visit from the es
liser, and others
examine whethe
complied with in
able party also d
day, and were s
parture, with se

* They also rece
and nautical instrum
trusted to captain C

A

VOYAGE

TO THE

PACIFIC OCEAN,

FOR

MAKING DISCOVERIES IN THE NORTHERN HEMISPHERE.

PERFORMED UNDER THE DIRECTION OF

CAPTAINS COOK, CLERKE, AND GORE.

In the Years 1776, 1777, 1778, 1779, and 1780.

SECTION I.

Captains Cook and Clerke appointed to the Resolution and Discovery—Prepare for the Voyage—Sail from Deptford—Proceed to Plymouth—Employment there—Departure of the Resolution—The Resolution proceeds to Teneriffe—Captain Cook visits the Governor—Some Account of Santa Cruz Road—Supplies to be procured in Abundance—The Cities of Santa Cruz and Lagana described—Agriculture—Natural History, Climate, Produce, &c.

ON the 10th of February 1776, captain Cook hoisted the pendant on board his Majesty's sloop the Resolution, having received a commission to command her the preceding day. Captain Clerke was at the same time appointed to the command of the Discovery, of three hundred tons, prepared for that purpose. It may not be unnecessary to observe, that captain Clerke had been captain Cook's second lieutenant on board the Resolution, in his second voyage round the World.

Both ships being abundantly supplied with every thing requisite for such a voyage, sailed on the 29th of May, and arrived the following day at Long Reach, where they received their powder and shot, and other ordnance stores. On the 8th of June, they had the honour of a visit from the earl of Sandwich, Sir Hugh Palliser, and others of the board of Admiralty, to examine whether their orders had been strictly complied with in the equipment. This respectable party also dined with captain Cook on that day, and were saluted, on their arrival and departure, with seventeen guns and three cheers.

To afford permanent benefit to the inhabitants of Otaheite, and other islands, his Majesty commanded some useful animals to be taken out. On the 10th they took on board a bull, two cows accompanied with their calves, and several sheep; with hay and corn for their support. They were also supplied with a sufficient quantity of valuable European seeds, to add to the vegetable productions of the newly-discovered islands. Both ships were also amply provided with a general assortment of iron tools and trinkets, to enable them to carry on a friendly commerce and intercourse with the inhabitants, to their mutual advantage and convenience*.

Mr. Anderson, surgeon to captain Cook, added to his professional abilities, a competent knowledge of natural history. The necessary preparations being completed, captain Cook was ordered to proceed to Plymouth, and to take the Discovery under his command; in consequence of which he directed captain Clerke to take his ship also round to Plymouth.

The Resolution and Discovery sailed from Long Reach on the 15th of June, and anchored

* They also received on board a variety of mathematical and nautical instruments, which the board of longitude intrusted to captain Cook and Mr. King. The board likewise furnished them with the time-keeper, which captain Cook had taken out in his last voyage, and which had performed so well.

at the Nore the same evening. The Discovery proceeded the next day, and the Resolution continued at the Nore till captain Cook, who was then in London, should join her. As they intended to touch at Otaheite, and the Society Islands, they engaged to take Omai back to his native country: accordingly captain Cook and he set out from London on the 24th, and proceeded to Chatham; from whence commissioner Proby ordered his yacht to convey them to Sheerness, where the captain's boat was ready to take them on board the Resolution*.

On the 25th they weighed anchor, and made sail for the Downs; in the evening they anchored, with the North Foreland bearing south by east, and Margate point south-west by south. On the 26th they weighed, and anchored in the Downs in the forenoon; when Captain Cook received two boats on board, which had been built for him at Deal. At ten in the evening they weighed again, and proceeded down the Channel.

In the afternoon of the 30th they anchored at Plymouth Sound: the Discovery having arrived there three days before. They saluted Admiral Amherst, whose flag was flying on board the Ocean, who instantly returned the compliment. Having taken in an additional quantity of water and provisions to supply what had been expended, Captain Cook received instructions to proceed to the Cape of Good Hope with the Resolution; after having left directions for Captain Clerke to follow him, as soon as he should join his ship, he being at that time in London. The number of men on board the Resolution, (including officers and marines) was one hundred and twelve; the Discovery had only eighty men. On the 10th of July the officers and crew were paid up to the 30th of the preceding month: the petty officers and seamen also received two months wages in advance.

In the morning of the 11th, Captain Cook delivered to Mr. Burney, first lieutenant of the Discovery, Captain Clerke's sailing orders; a copy of which was also left at Plymouth to be delivered to the captain on his arrival. In the afternoon they weighed, and got out beyond all the shipping in the Sound, where they were detained the greater part of the following day. In the evening they weighed again, and stood out of the Sound, with a gentle breeze at north-west by west.

Proceeding from Plymouth Sound, they were off the Lizard at eight in the evening on the 14th. On the 16th at noon, the light-house of St. Agnes, on the isles of Scilly, bore north-west by west, and on the 17th and 18th they were off Ushant. On the 22d in the morning, they saw Cape Ortegal about four leagues distant; and passed Cape Finisterre, with a fine gale at north north-east. They saw Teneriffe on the 31st of July in the afternoon; and on the 1st of August they anchored on the south-side, in the road of Santa Cruz.

Soon after they had anchored, they were visited by the master of the port, who asked the name of the ship. Captain Cook having presented his respects to the governor, and solicited his permission to take in water and other necessaries, the governor politely complied with his request, and sent an officer on board to compliment him on his arrival. Captain Cook waited personally on the governor in the afternoon; and before he returned to the ship, contracted for some corn and straw, and a quantity of wine; he also made an agreement for a sufficient supply of water. The water for the shipping, and for the use of the inhabitants of Santa Cruz, is derived from a rivulet running from the hills, which is conveyed into the town in wooden troughs; and as those troughs were at that time repairing, fresh water was procured with additional difficulty and expence.

From the appearance of the country near Santa Cruz, it might be taken for a very barren spot; but ample supplies were produced to furnish the inhabitants with provisions, and other necessaries, and to answer the demands of visitors. Though wine is the principal produce of the island, beef might be purchased at about three pence sterling per pound; but the oxen are small,

* Though Omai left London with some regret, reflecting on the indulgences he had received there; yet when any mention was made of his own islands, his eyes sparkled with joy. Though he entertained the highest idea of this country and its inhabitants, he enjoyed the more pleasing prospect of returning home, fully expecting to obtain a most distinguished superiority among his countrymen: he appeared to be extremely happy on his entrance into the ship which was destined to convey him to his native wilds. He was furnished by his majesty with every article, that could be supposed to be held in estimation at Otaheite, and lord Sandwich and Mr. Banks made him presents of many others.

lean,

lean, and bony. Sheep, goats, hogs, and poultry may be had on reasonable terms, and great variety of fruits are plentiful and cheap. The potatoes, pumpkins, and onions produced here, are remarkably excellent. Indian corn, the produce of this island, was sold at about three shillings and six-pence per bushel. The road of Santa Cruz is situated on the south-east side of the island, before the town of the same name; and is reputed to be the principal road to Teneriffe for shelter, extent, and the goodness of its bottom.

Teneriffe is a much more eligible place than Madeira, for ships to touch at which are destined to long voyages; but the wine of the latter greatly excels that of the former; their qualities may indeed be estimated from the difference of the respective prices: the best Teneriffe wine was sold for twelve pounds a pipe; when a pipe of the best Madeira produced more than double that sum.

Behind the town of Santa Cruz, the country at first rises gradually, and afterwards continues to rise towards the celebrated pic of Teneriffe*. Santa Cruz is a well-built city, but not large. Their churches are not magnificent externally, but they are neat and tolerably handsome within. Almost facing the stone pier, which extends from the town to the sea, a marble column has lately been erected, enriched with human figures which reflect honour on the statuary.

The city of Laguna, situated at the distance of four miles from Santa Cruz, hardly deserves the dignified appellation of city; though it is extensive, and contains some good houses: the disposition of the streets is extremely irregular. The corn in the neighbourhood is not produced without great labour, the soil being so much encumbered with stones: hardly any thing else is to be perceived, except a few aloe plants in flower on the side of the road.

Laborious work is chiefly performed here by mules, horses being generally reserved for the use of officers. Oxen are much employed. Hawks and parrots, which were natives of the island, were sometimes seen; as well as sea-gulls, partridges, swallows, black-birds, and canaries. Lizards, locusts, and several sorts of dragon flies were also observed. A shrub is common here, corresponding exactly with the description given by Linneus, of the tea-shrub growing in China and Japan. It is considered as a weed, large quantities of which are annually rooted out of the vineyards. The Spaniards, however, who inhabit the island, often use it, and ascribe to it all the qualities of the tea imported from China†.

The trade at Teneriffe is considerable, forty thousand pipes of wine being annually made there. The inhabitants found here, when the Spaniards first discovered the Canaries, are no longer a distinct race, having uniformly intermarried with the Spanish settlers; their descendants, however, are recognised by their being remarkably tall, strong, and bony. The men are tawny, and the women pale. The inhabitants of Teneriffe, in general, are decent, grave, civil, and solemn.

* A modern traveller, (the Chevalier de Borda) who measured the height of this mountain in August 1776, makes it 12340 English feet.

This celebrated mountain cannot be ascended, on account of the snows, except from the middle of July to the end of August. First occur pumices, interspersed with obsidian of beautiful and various colours, followed by broken lava. The summit resembles a cone placed on a table, or rather small base, and can only be ascended by a zig-zag path on the south. The cold is extreme, the nails become black, and the hands and feet swell. In the middle of the summit is a deep reversed cone, called a cauldron, about fifty fathoms in diameter, and bordered with hideous calcined rocks, mostly red or white, the perpendicular depth being one hundred and fifty feet: at the bottom are perceivable reddish spots, upon a kind of white earth like plaster, and mingled with sulphur, which is sometimes so volatile as to evaporate from paper, and if folded up will escape, after burning the paper and the pocket. Around are many little mouths, from one to four inches in diameter, which at short intervals respire, as it were, a thick hot fetid smoke. The largest hole, about eight inches in diameter, is within the crater, exhaling with a sound like the bellowing of a bull; and the smoke is so hot as instantly to burn the hair of the hand. *Pinkerton's Mod. Geo.* II. 765.

† A sort of grape is produced here which is deemed an excellent remedy in phthisical complaints. The air and climate are particularly salutary for persons afflicted with such maladies. By the choice of different heights in the island, a rational person may procure a temperature of air adapted to his constitution: he may select a mild and salubrious air, or ascend progressively higher till the climate becomes intolerably cold. No one, it is said, can exist comfortably within a mile of the perpendicular height of the pic, after the month of August. Smoke continually issues from near the top of the pic, but no earthquake or eruption has happened since 1704, when the port of Garrachia was destroyed. Rivers of burning lava then flowed into it, and houses are now erected where ships formerly lay at anchor.

SECT.

SECTION II.

Departure from Teneriffe—Danger apprehended from sunken Rocks—Isle of Mayo—Precautions against Rain and Heat near the Equator—Coast of Brazil—Arrival at the Cape of Good Hope—Captain Cook loses some Sheep—Joins the Discovery—Mr. Anderson's Excursion up the Country—Leave the Cape of Good Hope—See Prince Edward's Islands—Some Account of them—Visit Kerguelen's Land—Christmas Harbour—Description of Christmas Harbour.

HAVING taken a supply of water and other articles on board, they weighed anchor on the 4th of August, departed from Teneriffe, and proceeded on the voyage. On the 10th in the evening, they saw the island of Bonavista at the distance of about a league: they supposed indeed they were further off, but after hauling to the eastward, to avoid the sunken rocks near the south-east point of the island, they found themselves so close upon them that it was with difficulty they weathered the breakers. Their situation was for some minutes so alarming, that Captain Cook did not choose to sound, as it might have increased the danger without a possibility of lessening it.

The rocks at length being cleared, they steered between Bonavista and the island of Mayo, intending to look into Port Praya for the Discovery, as Captain Cook informed Captain Clerke he should touch there. On the 12th, at six in the morning, the isle of Mayo bore south south-east, distant about four leagues; on sounding, they found ground at sixty fathoms. They saw nothing on this island that had the appearance of vegetation; a lifeless brown only presented itself to their view, the uniform vesture of unwooded countries under the torrid zone. While they continued among these islands, they experienced gentle breezes of wind, and some calms: on the 13th they arrived at Port Praya, in the island of St. Jago; but the Discovery not being there, they declined going in, and stood to the southward.

The wind, during this interval, was principally in the south-west quarter: it generally blew a gentle breeze, but sometimes fresh and squalli; calms were rather uncommon. Sometimes the weather was very gloomy, and so rainy, that they were enabled to fill the greatest part of their empty casks with water. Disagreeable consequences are to be apprehended from these rains, when they are accompanied with sultry weather. Commanders of ships should carefully purify the air between decks, with fire and smoke, and cause the people to change their clothes as often as possible*.

A fresh gale from the north-west arose, and continued two days: this was succeeded by variable light airs for about twenty-four hours, when the north-west wind again blew fresh. On the 17th they saw the Cape of Good Hope, and on the 18th anchored in Table-Bay. After the usual visit from the master-attendant and the surgeon, Captain Cook dispatched an officer to Baron Plettenberg, the governor. Reciprocal salutes having been given and received with thirteen guns, from the ship and the governor, Captain Cook went on shore, properly attended, and waited on the governor, the lieutenant-governor, the fiscal, and the commander of the troops; from whom he received a voluntary promise of their best services.

On the 31st of October it blew extremely hard at south-east, and continued for three successive days. The storm, however, ceased on the 3d of November, and in the morning of the 10th the Discovery arrived in the bay. As that ship required caulking, Captain Cook sent all his workmen on board her, and lent every assistance to expedite a supply of provisions and water,

* On the 1st of September they crossed the equator, and in the afternoon performed the accustomed ceremony of ducking those who had not crossed it before. On the 8th they were a little to the southward of Cape St. Augustine. Proceeding on their voyage, nothing remarkable occurred for a considerable time; they had before seen albatrosses, and pintadoes, and they then observed three penguins; on sounding, they found no ground with a line of a hundred and fifty fathoms. On the 8th a bird called a noddy settled on the rigging, and was taken. It was larger than the common blackbird, and nearly of the same colour, except on the upper part of the head, which was white; it had black legs, and a long black bill; it was also web-footed.

The

The governor having permitted them to take their cattle on shore, on the night preceding the 14th, some dogs were tempted to visit the ship; and, forcing them out of the pen, killed four of them, and dispersed the rest. Six of them were restored the next day, but among those which were missing were two rams, and two of the finest ewes. At length, after much trouble and expence, they recovered all but the two ewes; but one of the rams was so miserably torn by the dogs, that his preservation was extremely doubtful.

While the ships were refitting for the prosecution of the voyage, Mr. Anderson, and some of the officers, took an excursion to survey the adjacent territory, the result of which is related by Mr. Anderson to the following effect: In the forenoon of the 16th of November, he, and five others, set out in a waggon to take a transient view of the country; they crossed a large plain to the eastward of the town, consisting wholly of white sand. At five in the afternoon they passed a large farm-house, some corn fields, and several vineyards, situated beyond the plain where the soil appeared to be worth cultivating; at seven they reached Stellenbosh, a colony next to that of the Cape in point of importance. The village is situated at the foot of a range of mountains, twenty miles to the eastward of Cape-Town, consisting of about thirty decent houses; a rivulet, and the shelter of some large oaks planted at the first settling, form a rural prospect.

Few plants appeared in flower, and insects were extremely scarce. Mr. Anderson and his companions left Stellenbosh the next morning, and repaired to the house of Mr. Cloeder, who had sent them an invitation to visit him, and treated them with the greatest politeness and hospitality. A band of music attended at their reception, and a concert entertained them while they were at dinner; the whole constituting an elegant repast in that remote situation.

Crossing the country in the afternoon, they passed some large plantations, and in the evening arrived at a farm-house called the *pearl*. From hence they had a view of Drakenstein, the third colony of the country, containing several little farms. Plants and insects were not more abundant here than at Stellenbosh, but shrubs or small trees were more numerous *.

On the 20th they set out from the Pearl, and, pursuing a different road, passed through an uncultivated country to the Tyger Hills, where several corn fields presented themselves. Stopping about noon in a valley for refreshment, they were tormented with myriads of musquitoes, and in the evening arrived at the Cape-Town.

Fearing a second disaster, Captain Cook got his sheep, and other cattle, on board as soon as possible: he also purchased two additional bulls, and the same number of heifers, stone-horses, mares, and rams. He also increased his stock with some goats, rabbits, and poultry. Both ships were supplied with a sufficient quantity of provisions, and water for the consumption of two years; and Captain Cook having furnished Captain Clerke with a copy of his instructions, they went on board on the 30th. At five o'clock they weighed and stood out of the bay, but a calm happening at nine, they anchored. At three the next morning they weighed and put to sea, with a light breeze at south, but did not get clear of land till the 3d of December.

On the 5th a squall of wind carried away the mizen top-mast of the Resolution, but they fortunately had another to supply its place; on the 6th they observed several spots of water of a reddish hue, which, on examination, appeared to be a number of very small animals resembling cray-fish. Continuing to the south-east, they were followed by a mountainous sea, which agitated the ship so exceedingly, that the cattle became troublesome: and several of the goats and sheep died in consequence of it; the cold now began to be intense.

Land was perceived about noon on the 12th, which was afterwards discovered to be two islands; one was about fifteen leagues in circumference, and the other hardly exceeding

* On the 19th they were conducted to survey a remarkable large stone, named by the inhabitants, the Tower of Babylon, or the Pearl Diamond. It stands upon some low hills, and is of an oblong shape, lying nearly south and north; the east and west sides are almost perpendicular. The south-end is its greatest height, whence it declines gently to the north part, by which this party ascended, and enjoyed an extensive prospect of the whole country. The circumference of this stone is about half a mile, and its height appears to be about equal to the dome of St. Paul's; it is one uninterrupted mass of stone, with the exception of some few fissures. It is of that sort which the mineralogists call *Saxum Conglutinatum*.

nine. Passing at nearly an equal distance from both these islands, they could not discover a tree or shrub in either of them; they seemed to have a rocky shore, and on every side except towards the south-east parts, a number of barren mountains, whose sides and summits are covered with snow, present their hoary heads to the observing traveller. These two islands, and four others farther to the east, were discovered by Captains Marion du Fresne and Crozet, in January, 1772, on their passage from the Cape of Good Hope to the Philippine islands. As they are not named in the French chart of the southern hemisphere, Captain Cook called two of them Prince Edward's islands, and the other four he denominated Marion's and Crozet's islands.

After leaving Prince Edward's islands, they shaped their course to pass to the southward of the four others, to get into the latitude of the land discovered by Kerguelen. On the 16th they saw plenty of penguins and divers, and a quantity of rock-weed floating upon the sea: on the 21st they perceived a large seal, though the weather was then so foggy, that they were hourly apprehensive of falling in with the land, and their navigation was as tedious as it was dangerous.

In the morning of the 24th the fog began to clear away, and land was seen bearing to the south-east, which afterwards proved to be an island of considerable height, and three leagues in circumference. Another of nearly equal magnitude, was perceived about a league to the eastward; and between these two, some smaller islands were scattered. Another high island was also observed, in the direction of south by east; the navigators only just weathered the island last mentioned, which was a round exalted rock, denominated Bligh's Cap. Captain Cook supposed this to be the same that Kerguelen called the Isle of Rendezvous; though he admitted that nothing could rendezvous at it but the fowls of the air, it being inaccessible to every other animal.

The weather clearing up about eleven, they tacked, and steered in for the land; they saw it soon after, and at four o'clock it seemed to extend from south-east to south-west, distant about four miles. Towards the middle of the land they thought they perceived an inlet, but on their approaching, they found it was only a bending on the shore. The coast to the southward was very much indented by points and bays, which seemed to indicate that a good harbour might be found among them; they had discovered one, into which they had began to ply, but as the weather became calm, they anchored in forty-five fathom water; the Discovery anchored there soon after. Early on the 25th they weighed, and having wrought into the harbour, anchored in eight fathoms water; the Discovery got in at two in the afternoon.

After they had anchored, captain Cook ordered the boat to be hoisted out, and the empty water-casks to be produced. He then landed to search for a commodious spot where they might be filled, and to make other necessary observations. Vast quantities of penguins, and other birds, as well as seals, were found on shore. The latter, though not numerous, were so insensible of fear, that they killed them without difficulty, appropriating their fat and blubber to feed their lamps with oil. Fresh water was extremely plentiful, but not a tree or shrub was to be perceived. In the evening they hauled the seine, but had very indifferent success. The experiment was again adopted the succeeding day, but it was equally unproductive; their only resource, therefore, for fresh provisions, was birds, which were indeed innumerable*.

This

* On the 26th they began to fill water, and to cut grass for the cattle, which they found at a little distance from the head of the harbour. The people having laboured hard for two successive days in procuring water, Captain Cook indulged them with the 27th of December, as a day of rest for the celebration of Christmas. In consequence of which many of them repaired to the shore, and made different excursions into the country, which they found extremely desolate and barren. In the evening one of them presented a quart bottle to Captain Cook, which they had found in the harbour, fastened with wire to a projecting rock: this bottle contained a slip of parchment, on which was written

Ludovico XV. *Galliarum*
Rege, et d de Boynes,*
Regi a Secretis ad res
aMritima Annis, 1772, *et*
1773.

It appears from this inscription, that they were not the first Europeans who had visited this harbour. It was supposed

* This is perhaps a contraction of the word *Domino*.

This is the first inlet on the south side of Cape François, which forms the northern side of the harbour; the head of it lies open to only two points of the compass, which are covered by islands in the offing, so that a sea cannot fall in to hurt a ship.

In the afternoon Captain Cook, accompanied by his second lieutenant, went upon Cape François, expecting from that elevation to have a distinct view of the coast, and the adjacent islands; but every object below them was enveloped in an impenetrable fog. They had a perfect view of what was even with them, or of a greater height, which had indeed a very naked and desolate appearance. On their return to the ship they found her unmoored, and ready to put to sea, but they did not weigh anchor till the morning.

SECTION III.

Leave Christmas Harbour—Cape Cumberland—Howe's Foreland—Remarkable Beds of Rock Weed—Shoals—Arrive at Port Palliser—Cape George—Natural History of Animals, Plants, &c.—Kerguelen's Land—Passage of the Ships to Van Diemen's Land—Arrival in Adventure Bay—Different Interviews with the Inhabitants—Manners, Customs, and Dress—Remarks on the Language and Natural Productions of the Country.

THEY sailed out of Christmas Harbour on the 29th of December, with a fine breeze and clear weather, though fogs had generally prevailed for several days before. They were off a promontory, afterwards called Cape Cumberland, about eight o'clock. Off Cape Cumberland, a small island presents itself, on the summit of which a rock is conspicuous, resembling a sentry box, whence the island obtained the appellation of Sentry-Box island. A group of small islands and rocks appear about two miles farther to the eastward; they sailed between these and Sentry-Box island, the breadth of the channel being about a mile.

The land which first opened off Cape François, was at first supposed to be an island, but they afterwards found it to be a peninsula, joined to the coast by a low isthmus. The bay formed by this peninsula was named Repulse Bay, and the northern point of the peninsula obtained the name of Howe's Foreland, in honour of Lord Howe. The land of this peninsula is of a tolerable height, and of a rocky substance: the coast is low, and much resorted to by sea-birds. Several seals were also observed upon the beaches*.

Seeing some inlets, Captain Clerke, by the directions of Captain Cook, discovered a harbour, in which they anchored in fifteen fathoms water. As soon as the ships were secured, the

posed by Captain Cook to have been left by M. de Boisquehenneu, who went on shore the 13th of February, 1772, the day on which Kerguelen discovered this land; but in this respect the captain appears to have been mistaken, for how could Boisquehenneu, in 1772, leave an inscription which commemorates a transaction of the following year? Captain Cook, willing to give evidence of his having been at this harbour, wrote the following memorial on the other side of the parchment:

Naves Resolution
et Discovery,
De Rege Magnæ Britanniæ,
Decembris, 1776.

Depositing the parchment again in the bottle, accompanied with a silver two-penny coin of 1772, the captain covered the mouth of it with a piece of lead, and the next day placed it in a pile of stones on an eminence, near the place where it was found. Here he also displayed the British flag, proclaiming the place Christmas Harbour, having arrived in it on that festival.

* Having cleared the rocks and islands, the sea before them seemed chequered with large beds of rock-weed which adhered to the bottom. There is frequently great depth of water upon such shoals; though the lead was continually going, they never struck ground with a line of sixty fathoms. At length they discovered a lurking rock, in the middle of one of these beds of weeds, and even with the surface of the sea, which was sufficiently alarming to render them extremely cautious. They were now about eight miles to the southward of Howe's Foreland, across the mouth of a large bay, in which there were several rocks, low islands, and beds of sea-weed, but there were several winding channels between them. They were so exceedingly embarrassed with these shoals, that they sailed off to the eastward, in hopes of extricating themselves from their difficulties, but they soon perceived that they had plunged themselves in greater, and found it necessary to secure the ship, if possible, before night, the weather being hazy, and a fog reasonably apprehended.

wind

wind blew so strong, that it was thought necessary to strike the top-gallant yards. When the weather became fair and clear, Captain Cook ordered two boats to be hoisted out, in one of which he dispatched Mr. Blith, the master, to survey the harbour, and look out for wood. Orders were also given to Captain Clerke, to dispatch his master to sound the channel south of the small isles. Mr. Gore and Mr. Bailey landed on the north point to make a further survey.

From a hill over the point they saw the coast as far as Howe's Foreland: several small islands and rocks were scattered along the coast; but they could find no better channel to convey them out of the harbour, than that by which they had entered it. While Captain Cook and Mr. Bailey were making these observations, Mr. Gore joined them where the boat was waiting for them, and saw a country as desolate as that in the neighbourhood of Christmas Harbour; there was neither food nor shelter for any kind of cattle.

In the little cove (which Captain Cook distinguished by the appellation of Penguin cove, from its being much frequented by those birds) an excellent stream of fresh water delights the eye. Some large seals, shags, and a few ducks were observed here; and a very small land bird, having acquired a transient glance from Mr. Bailey, fled among the rocks for security and vanished.

About nine they got on board, and the next morning they weighed anchor and put out to sea. They generally steered through the winding channels among the shoals, though they sometimes presumed to run over some of them, on which they never found less than eighteen fathoms water.

When they were about three or four leagues from the coast, they found a clear sea, and about nine in the morning perceived a hill strongly resembling a sugar-loaf in form, and a small island to the northward of it, distant about four leagues. This conical hill was named Mount Campbell, by Captain Cook. Most of the land here is low and level. The mountains end about five leagues from the low point, leaving a considerable extent of low land, on which Mount Campbell is situated. These mountains are composed of naked rocks, whose summits are covered with snow; the valleys display nothing but sterility.

At noon they perceived low land in the direction of south-east, which was named Cape Digby. Between Howe's foreland and Cape Digby, the shore forms an extensive bay; abundance of sea-weed grows over it, the stem of which is not much thicker than a man's thumb, though some of it grows to the astonishing length of sixty fathoms. In the direction of south south-west, distant from Cape Digby about six leagues, a high projecting point obtained the name of the Prince of Wales's Foreland; and six leagues beyond that, in the same direction, is the most southerly point of the whole coast, now distinguished by the name of Cape George. From Cape Digby the coast trends nearly south-west by south to a low point, now dignified with the name of Point Charlotte, in honour of George's amiable consort.

Between Point Charlotte and the Prince of Wales's Foreland, they saw a deep inlet, named the Royal Sound; and advancing to the south, they saw another inlet into the Royal Sound. On the south-west side of the Royal Sound, the land to Cape George consists of hills, rising progressively to a considerable height; but they were barren, and their summits blanched with snow; not a tree or shrub was to be seen. Part of the land in the environs of Cape Digby was covered with a verdant turf, the other part was in a state of nakedness. Penguins and oceanic birds frequented the beaches, and shags innumerable paid their aerial visits *.

Another plant, growing nearly to the height of two feet, was plentifully scattered about the boggy declivities, resembling a small cabbage shot into seeds. Near the brooks two other plants presented themselves, which were eaten as

* The French navigators have supposed Cape François to be the projecting point of a southern continent; the English c[illegible]he existence of such a continent, the land in question being only an island of small extent, which from its sterility was clearly entitled to the name of the Island of Desolation. "No place hitherto discovered," says Captain Cook, "affords so scanty a field for the naturalist as this steril spot. Some verdure indeed appeared, when at a small distance from the shore, which might raise the expectation of meeting with a little herbage; but all this lively appearance was occasioned by one small plant, resembling saxifrage, which grew up the hills in large spreading tufts, on a kind of rotten turf, which, if dried, might serve for fuel, and was the only thing seen here that could possibly be applied to that purpose."

salad,

salad, one of which was hot, and the other extremely mild; the latter is a curiosity, having not only male and female, but also androgynus plants. Some coarse grass grew luxuriantly on a few spots, which they cut down for their cattle; but their whole catalogue of plants did not exceed eighteen; not a tree was visible in the whole country.

Among the animals, seals appear tc be the most considerable: they are denominated sea-bears, being the sort that are called the ursine seal; they resort to the shore to repose and breed, and are so remarkably tame when they are shedding their hair, that they may be taken without difficulty. No other quadrupeds are seen, but oceanic birds are numerous; the ducks were small, resembling widgeons both in size and figure, and were pronounced delicious. Petrels of various sorts are found in abundance; that which the seamen call Mother Carey's goose, is as large as an albatross, and is carnivorous. The penguins, which are abundant, consist of three sorts: the head of the largest is black, and the upper part of the body of a leaden grey, the bill is of a reddish colour, and longer than in the other sorts. The second is about half the size of the former, being of a blackish grey on the upper part of the body; the bill and feet are of a yellowish hue. In the third sort, the upper part of the body and throat is black; the rest being white except the top of the head, which is decorated with a yellow arch, that it can occasionally erect as two crests. The sea-swallow, the common sea-gull, the tern, and the Port Egmont hen were also found here. A singular kind of white bird was common here, somewhat larger than a pigeon. It had a black bill and white feet, and the flesh had the flavour of that of a duck. On hauling the seine, only a few small fish were taken, about the size of a small haddock. Limpets and muscles were the only shell-fish that our navigators saw here.

Rain is supposed to be abundant and frequent here, the marks occasioned by vast torrents being evidently conspicuous.

Captain Cook, intending to proceed next to New Zealand, to take in wood, water, and hay, steered east by north for Kerguelen's Land. Till the 3d of January the weather was tolerably clear, with fresh gales from the west and south-west; but the wind at length veered to the north, where it continued almost eight days; during which time they ran upwards of three hundred leagues, chiefly in the dark, a thick fog prevailing almost the whole time. On the 7th, Captain Cook dispatched a boat to Captain Clerke, appointing a rendezvous at Adventure Bay, in Van Diemen's land, if the ships should happen to separate before they had reached that destination. On the 12th the northerly winds were succeeded by a calm, and afterwards a southerly wind predominated.

On the 19th a sudden squall carried away the Resolution's fore-top-mast, and main-top-gallant-mast, which occasioned some delay. On the 24th, however, they discovered the coast of Van Diemen's Land. Several islands and elevated rocks were observed along the coast, the most southerly of which was the Mewstone. Captain Cook bestowed the appellation of Eddystone to a rock lying to the eastward of Swilly, from its striking resemblance to Eddystone light-house. On the 26th a breeze sprung up at the south-east, which conveyed the ships into Adventure Bay, where they anchored at four in the afternoon, about three quarters of a mile from the shore. The captains of the two ships went in separate boats in search of commodious places for wooding, watering, and making hay. Plenty of wood and water might have been procured, but very little grass.

Parties were sent the next morning, under the conduct of lieutenant King, to the east side of the bay, to cut wood and grass, attended by some mariners to protect them. Captain Cook also sent a launch to provide water for the ships, and afterwards visited the parties he had thus employed. In the evening they drew the seine, and procured a large quantity of fish; every one now came on board with the supplies they had obtained, and the wind proving unfair for sailing the next morning, they were again dispatched on shore upon the same duty.

They had seen columns of smoke in different parts, as they approached the coast, but none of the natives had been observed till the afternoon of the 28th, when eight men and a boy favoured them with a visit at their wooding place, all unarmed; except one who had a short stick, pointed at one end: they were slender, of a middling stature, had black woolly hair, and a black skin. They were entirely naked, and had large punctures or ridges on different parts of their bodies; their lips were not particularly

thick, nor their noses remarkably flat. Their features were pleasing, their eyes tolerably good, and their teeth even and regular, though extremely dirty. The faces of some of them were smeared with a red ointment, and the hair and beards of many of them shone with the same composition. When they were offered presents, they received them with indifference, and frequently returned them, or threw them away. When birds were given them, however, they kept them. Two pigs having been brought on shore, for the purpose of leaving them in the woods, they instantly seized them by the ears, and seemed desirous of forcing them away with them.

Captain Cook desiring to know the use of the stick which was carried by one of the savages, a piece of wood was aimed at as a mark, at the distance of about twenty yards, which was missed in repeated essays. To shew the superiority of European weapons, Omai fired his musquet at it; the unexpected noise of which so alarmed the savages, that they ran precipitately into the fields; one of them was so terrified that he dropped two knives and an ax that he had received from the Europeans.

After they had retired, Captain Cook ordered the two pigs (one being a male and the other a female) to be taken about a mile within the woods; and he attended personally to see them properly conducted there, that the natives might be wholly unacquainted with the transaction. He intended also to have left a bull, a cow, some goats, and some sheep; but was apprehensive the natives would destroy them, which he supposed would be the fate of the pigs, should they happen to be perceived; but as swine became wild, they would prefer an existence in the woods to any other situation in life, which would probably tend to their preservation; the other cattle could not have remained long concealed from the savages, as they must have been exposed in an open place*.

Captain Cook having surveyed the proceedings of the wood and grass parties, returned on board. He had hardly quitted the shore, when several women and children were introduced to lieutenant King, by the men who accompanied them. These female natives had a kangooroo skin fastened over their shoulders, seeming principally intended to support their children on their backs, as it left uncovered those parts which delicacy wishes to conceal. Their bodies were black, and marked with scars like those of the men, from whom they differ in the management of their heads; some of them are completely shaved or shorn, others only on one side. Some have the upper part of their heads shaved, leaving a narrow circle of hair all round. Though their figures were far from being captivating, several of the gentlemen paid their addresses to them, and offered liberal gratuities in vain. Plenty of excellent grass having been procured on Penguin island, and the different parties supplied with what their exigences demanded, they returned on board.

This country was discovered in November, 1642, by Tasman; and Captain Furneaux touched at it in March, 1773. It is the southern point of New Holland, which is much the largest island in the known world, and is almost entitled to the name of a continent. Mr. Anderson, surgeon of the Resolution, examined the country during their continuance in Adventure Bay, and his remarks on it are to the following effect. There is a handsome sandy beach, about two miles in length, at the bottom of Adventure Bay; behind which a brackish lake presents itself, out of which the Europeans caught some bream and trout by angling; the adjacent parts are hilly, consisting of a forest of tall trees, rendered almost impassable by innumerable brakes of fern and bushes. The forest trees are principally of one kind, and remarkably straight, exhibiting clusters of small white

* A dead calm prevented their sailing on the 29th, which induced Captain Cook to send parties on shore to procure wood and grass, and accompany them in their expedition. Soon after their landing they were joined by about twenty of the natives, one of whom was distinguished by his deformity, the drollery of his gesticulations, and the apparent humour of his speeches; though they were not understood by the Europeans. Many of the savages they now saw, differed from the natives which Captain Cook saw in his first voyage, in the more northerly parts of this country. Some of these had a slip of the kangooroo skin round their ancles, and a cord made of fur encircled their necks. Iron was not held in estimation among them, but they were highly delighted with the medals and beads that were given them. Their habitations were sheds composed of sticks, and covered with the bark of trees. From several circumstances, it also appeared probable, that many of them formed a residence in the trunks of large trees, hollowed for that purpose by fire.

flowers.

flowers. Among the plants were observed wood-sorrel, milk-wort, and several varieties of fern*.

Among a variety of fish, they caught rays, nurses, bream, soles, flounders, and elephant fish; and upon the rocks they found muscles, and other shell-fish. The most troublesome of the insects were the musquitoes, and a large black ant; the bite of the latter inflicts extreme torture.

The inhabitants were mild and cheerful, and have not that ferocity of appearance which generally characterizes savages: they have little genius, or personal activity, though some contrivance in forming different lines and figures on their bodies, raised above the surface of the skin. Their indifference respecting the presents which were offered them, and their general want of curiosity, manifested no acuteness of understanding. Their complexion is a sombre black, and their hair woolly, clotted with grease and red ochre; their noses are broad and full, and the lower part of the face projects considerably; their eyes are of a moderate size, and not remarkable for expression; their teeth have no great pretensions to whiteness, and their mouths are too wide for symmetrical proportion: their beards are worn long, and clotted with paint. Their persons are tolerably proportioned, though rather too protuberant about the belly.

The natives of Van Diemen's land are clearly of the same stock of those who inhabit the northern parts of New Holland. It even seems probable, that they may have originally come from the same place with all the natives of the Pacific Ocean, from the affinity of languages eastward to Easter Island.

SECTION IV.

Course to New Zealand—Queen Charlotte's Sound—Some Account of the New Zealanders—Massacre of Captain Furneau's People—Violent Storms—Account of Kahoora—Observations on New Zealand—The Vicinity of Queen Charlotte's Sound described—Soil, Climate, Plants, and Animals—Description of the Inhabitants—Dress—Food and Cookery—Arts, Weapons, their extreme Cruelty, and various other Practices.

ON the 30th of January they weighed anchor with a light westerly breeze, from Adventure Bay. The wind soon after becoming southerly, a perfect storm arose, which in the evening abated. During the night on the 6th of February, a marine belonging to the Discovery fell overboard, and was drowned. On the 10th the coast of New Zealand was perceived, at the distance of about nine leagues. Several canoes came along-side of the ships, but very few of the natives would venture to come on board; this shyness was the more extraordinary, as Captain Cook was well known to many of them, and had treated one of them with distinguished kindness in a former voyage. It was supposed, however, that these people were apprehensive of their revenging the death of Captain Furneau's people, who had been killed here. But on the captain's assuring them of his friendship, they banished all appearance of suspicion and distrust. The next day Captain Cook ordered two tents to be pitched, and the observatories to be erected.

In the course of the day, many families came from different parts of the coast, and erected their huts near the encampment of the Europeans. They were extremely expeditious in building these temporary habitations, which are well calculated to afford shelter from the rain and wind. The same family generally associate and build together, so that their villages are usually divided by palisadoes into separate districts. They were occasionally visited by other natives, whose usual residence was more remote; their articles of traffic were fish, curiosities, and women; the two first were readily disposed of,

* The only quadruped they saw was a species of opussum, about twice the magnitude of a rat. The kangooroo may probably be a native of this region, some of the inhabitants possessing pieces of the skin of that animal. The birds in the woods are hawks, eagles, crows, pigeons, yellowish paroquets, and a species which they called *motacilla cyanea*, from the azure brightness of its head and neck. Large snakes of a blackish colour were observed, and a lizard was killed that measured fifteen inches in length, which was beautifully clouded with yellow and black.

but

but with respect to the latter, few dealers were to be found, the crew having been strongly prejudiced against them.

Among the occasional visitors, was a chief called Kahoora, who headed the party that cut off Captain Furneau's people; he was much disliked by his countrymen, many of whom importuned Captain Cook to kill him *.

Early on the 16th the Captains Cook and Clerke, with several of the officers and sailors, accompanied by Omai and two New Zealanders, set out, in five boats, to procure fodder for the cattle; they landed on the east side of the Sound, and cut a sufficient quantity of grass to load the two launches; on their return down the Sound they visited Grass Cove, where Captain Furneau's people had been massacred. Here they met with Captain Cook's old friend Pedro, who mentions him in the narrative of his second voyage. He, and another New Zealander received them on the beach, armed with the spear and patoo, though not without manifest symptoms of fear. A few presents, however, dispelled their apprehensions, and brought down to the shore two or three others of the family.

Desirous of enquiring into the particular circumstances of the massacre of his countrymen, Captain Cook fixed upon Omai as an interpreter for that purpose; his language being a dialect of that of New Zealand. Pedro, and some other natives who were present, none of whom had been concerned in that transaction, answered every question proposed to them without reserve. Their information imported, that while the Europeans were at dinner, some of the natives snatched from them some fish and bread, for which they received several blows; a quarrel ensued, and two of the savages were shot dead by two musquets; but, before a third was discharged, a number of the natives rushed furiously upon the Europeans, and destroyed them all. Pedro, and his companions, also pointed out the identical spot on which the affray, and the subsequent tragedy had happened †.

On the 21st a tribe of about thirty persons came from the other part of the Sound to visit the Europeans. The name of their chief was Tomatongeauooranuc; he appeared to be about forty-five years of age, and possessed an open cheerful countenance. By this time, about two-thirds of the natives of Queen Charlotte's Sound had taken their residence near the Europeans; many of whom resorted daily to the ships, and to the encampment on shore. The latter, however, was most frequented while the people were employed in the management of their seal blubber. The savages were so extravagantly fond of train oil, that they relished the very dregs of the cask, and feasted on the skimmings of the kettle.

A competent supply of hay, wood, and water being obtained, the tents were struck the next morning, and on the 24th they weighed out of the cove; but the wind being unfavourable, they cast anchor again near the Isle of Motuara. While they were getting under sail Tomatongeauooranuc, Matahouah, and several of the natives, came to take leave of the Europeans. These two chiefs having requested Captain Cook to oblige them with some hogs and goats, he gave Tomantongeauooranuc two pigs, a boar and a sow; and two goats, a male and female, to Matahouah, after demanding a promise from them not to destroy them. With respect to the animals which Captain Furneau had left here, they were all reported to be dead; but Captain Cook was informed by the two New Zealand youths, that Tiralou, a popular chief, had a sow, and several cocks and hens in his possession.

They had not been long at anchor near Motuara, before several canoes, filled with natives, approached them, and began to traffic

* On the 15th the Captain went in a boat to search for grass, and visited the Hippah, or fortified village, at the south-west point of the island of Motuara. He saw no inhabitants at this village, though evident marks appeared of its having been lately occupied. Not a vestige remained of the English garden seeds, which had been sown at this Hippah, in 1773, during Captain Cook's second voyage. They had probably been all destroyed to make room for buildings; for at the other gardens then planted, they found radishes, onions, purslain, potatoes, &c.

† Another account of the quarrel is also related in Captain Cook's narrative, but that which we have given above being corroborated by the testimony of many other natives, who could have no interest in disguising the truth, appears to be best entitled to belief: the party continued at Grass Cove till the evening, and then embarked to return to the ship; soon after they had quitted the shore, the wind began to blow so violently at north-west, that it was not without great difficulty that they reached the ships. It was a fortunate circumstance that they came on board when they did, for soon afterwards a perfect storm arose, though towards evening it again became fair. On the 20th they had another storm, which was more violent, but of shorter duration.

with

View of a HIPPAH *or Village in* NEW ZEALAND.

with them. In
made his appea
to Captain Coo
him; he also de
his executioner,
them another vi
had so little effe
again the follow
his whole family
tain Cook's perm
introduced him
"There is Kahoo
ly retired." Ret
the chief remain
strated with Capt
if a man murder
hanged for it"; a
times committed
be punished with
These argume
little effect upo
Omai to ask the
killed Captain
alarmed at the q
and seemed in ex
but, being promi
Unwilling, howe
tions which had
sured that no viol
on that account.
nate transaction,
circumstances as
naturally have rec
to his defence."
Before their ar
had expressed a de
tives with him t
equence of which
the only son of a
company him, a
board. Though
friends, that if he
never return, he w

* Most of the nati
ave taken vengeance
massacre; and many o
xpressed their surpris
moderation. As the c
his, it was astonishing
power of that comm
courage, and was plea

with them. In one of these canoes Kahoora made his appearance, whom Omai pointed out to Captain Cook, and requested him to shoot him; he also declared that he himself would be his executioner, if he should ever dare to pay them another visit. But the menaces of Omai had so little effect on Kahoora, that he came again the following morning, accompanied by his whole family. Omai, having obtained Captain Cook's permission to invite him on board, introduced him into the cabin, exclaiming, "There is Kahoora, dispatch him," and instantly retired.* Returning soon after, and seeing the chief remain unhurt, he earnestly remonstrated with Captain Cook on the subject, saying, if a man murdered another in England, he was hanged for it; and that Kahoora, who had ten times committed that crime, ought certainly to be punished with death.

These arguments, however plausible, had little effect upon Captain Cook, who desired Omai to ask the New Zealand chief why he had killed Captain Furneau's people? Kahoora, alarmed at the question, hung down his head, and seemed in expectation of immediate death; but, being promised safety, he became cheerful. Unwilling, however, to answer several questions which had been asked him, he was assured that no violence should be offered to him on that account. He then related the unfortunate transaction, with such strained palliative circumstances as an atrocious offender would naturally have recourse to; little credit was given to his defence.

Before their arrival in New Zealand, Omai had expressed a desire of taking one of the natives with him to his own country; in consequence of which a youth named Taweiharooa, the only son of a deceased chief, offered to accompany him, and took up his residence on board. Though Captain Cook informed his friends, that if he departed with them he would never return, he was not to be intimidated from his purpose. The day before the Europeans quitted the cove, Tiratoutou, his mother, came to receive her last present from Omai, soon after which they parted from each other with all the marks of the tenderest affection. But the mother declared she would weep no more, and faithfully observed her promise; for, when she returned the next morning to take the last farewel of her son, she was extremely cheerful while she continued on board, and retired with seeming unconcern. Kokoa, a boy of about ten years of age, accompanied Taweiharooa as a servant, and was presented to Captain Cook by his own father, who parted from him with such indifference as to strip him, and leave him entirely naked.

The inhabitants of New-Zealand are under continual apprehensions of being destroyed by each other, most of their tribes conceiving they have sustained injuries from some other tribe, which they are eager to revenge; and perhaps the desire of a delicious meal may frequently be a great incitement. They usually steal upon their supposed enemies in the night, and if they find them unguarded, which is not often the case, they kill the whole of them, men, women, and children; when the inhuman massacre is completed, they feast themselves on the spot, or carry off as many dead bodies as they can, with which they regale at home with the most horrid acts of brutality. If they are discovered and attacked, they never give quarter, or take prisoners, so that the vanquished have no safety but in flight. From their perpetual hostility, and this destructive mode of conducting it, a New-Zealander acquires such habitual circumspection that he is seldom off his guard. They have indeed the most powerful motives to be vigilant, the preservation of both soul and body depending upon it; it is a part of their creed, that the soul of the man whose flesh is eaten by his enemies, is condemned to incessant fire; while the soul of one whose body has been res-

* Most of the natives expected Captain Cook would have taken vengeance on Kahoora, for his concern in the massacre; and many of them not only wished it, but even expressed their surprise at the Captain's forbearance and moderation. As the chief could have been no stranger to this, it was astonishing that he so often put himself in the power of that commander. The captain admired his courage, and was pleased with the confidence he reposed in him; for he placed his whole safety in the uniform declarations of Captain Cook, that he always had been, and would continue to be a friend to the natives; that he should think no more of their barbarous treatment of the Europeans, as that transaction had happened long ago; but if they should ever attempt a repetition of the same perfidious conduct, they might depend upon meeting with an adequate punishment.

cued from those that slew him, as well as of those who die a natural death, ascend to the mansions of the gods.

Their usual method of disposing of their dead *, is to inter their bodies in the earth; but if they have more of their slain enemies than they can conveniently eat, they throw the surplus into the sea. They have no *morais*, or other places of public worship; but they have priests who supplicate the gods to prosper their temporal affairs.

Though the natives are generally hostile to each other, travelling strangers, whose designs are honourable, are well received and entertained; but they give offence if they remain longer than their business seems to require.

The New-Zealanders having adopted polygamy, it is not uncommon for a man to have two or three wives. These people are perfectly satisfied with the little knowledge they possess, and are not solicitous to improve it. On enquiring of Taweiharooa, how many ships resembling those of the Europeans had ever arrived in the neighbourhood of Queen Charlotte's Sound, he mentioned one entirely unknown to them: he added, that this ship first introduced the venereal disease among the natives of New-Zealand; a malady now unfortunately too common among them. Another piece of information was communicated to them by Taweiharooa, importing that snakes and lizards were found here of an enormous size. Mention has been made respecting this country and its inhabitants, in the accounts of Captain Cook's two former voyages; yet the remarks of Mr. Anderson, the substance of which is given in the succeeding pages, are not to be considered as superfluous.

The land in the neighbourhood of Queen Charlotte's Sound is extremely mountainous, gradually advancing from the sea into large hills. At remote distances are vallies, terminating each towards the sea in a small cove, with a sandy beach; behind which are flat places where the natives usually erect their huts. A brook of fine water passes through every cove, and loses itself in the sea. The luxuriant growth of the productions here, sufficiently indicates the quality of the soil. The hills, except a few towards the sea, are a continued forest of lofty trees, flourishing with uncommon vigour. The extraordinary strength in vegetation, is doubtless much assisted by the fostering temperature of the climate.

Though the weather is generally good, it is sometimes windy, with heavy rain; which, however, is never excessive, nor continues longer than a day. The large trees on the hills consist principally of two sorts: one of them resembles our largest firs in size, and grows nearly after the same manner. The other sort of tree, which often becomes very large, is like a maple, and fit only for fuel: the wood of that, as well as of the preceding being too hard for masts, &c.

Several trees grow on the flats behind the beaches; two of these bear a small plum; one of them, which is called karraca, is yellow; the other, named maitao, is black; but neither of them is entitled to much praise. On eminences jutting into the sea, a species of philadelphus is found, bearing flowers almost like a myrtle. The leaves of it were used as tea, and were thought an excellent substitute for the oriental sort.

Here are a great variety of plants, as night-shade, bindweed, nettles, sow-thistles, virgin's bower, French willow, euphorbia, rushes, bul-rushes, flax, brambles, groundsel, &c. but the species of each are different from what we have in Europe. There are a great many other plants; but one, in particular, claims the attention of the curious, as the garments of the natives are made from it. A fine silky flax is produced from it, superior to any thing in this country, and perhaps as durable. It often grows near the sea, and sometimes a considerable way up the hills, in bunches or tufts, bearing yellowish flowers on a long stalk.

* Mr. Collins, to his interesting account of the English Colony in New South-Wales, has subjoined some information concerning New Zealand.—"The New Zealanders," says he, inter their dead; they also believe that the third day after the interment, the heart separates itself from the corpse, and that this separation is announced by a gentle breeze of wind, which gives warning of its approach to an inferior Ea-too-a (or divinity) that hovers over the grave, and who carries it to the clouds. Suicide is very common among the New Zealanders, and this they often commit by hanging themselves on the slightest occasions; thus a woman, who has been beaten by her husband, will perhaps hang herself immediately. It could not be discovered that they have any other division of time than the revolution of the moon, till the number amounted to one hundred, which they term "ta-lee etow," that is one etow, or hundred moons; and it is thus they count their age, and calculate all other events. *Collins*, p. 424.

The

A Man of NEW ZEALAND.
A Woman of NEW ZEALAND.

The birds, which are extremely numerous, are most of them peculiar to the place. It would be difficult to follow them, on account of the underwood, and the climbing plants; but any person by continuing in one place, might shoot as many in a day as would support seven or eight persons. Among them are large brown parrots with grey heads, green parroquets, wood-pigeons, and cuckoos. A gross-beak of about the size of a thrush, is common; as well as a small green bird, which is the only musical one to be found here: his melody is so sweet, and his notes so varied, that any one would suppose himself to be surrounded with a hundred different sorts of birds, when the little warbler is exerting himself. From this circumstance he has obtained the name of the Mocking Bird. There are also three or four sorts of smaller birds; and, among the rocks, some sea-pies with red bills, and crested shags of a leaden colour. About the shore were seen a few sea-gulls, blue herons, wild ducks, plovers, and sand-larks.

The fish caught by the seine, were chiefly mullets, soles, flounders, and elephant fish; but the natives supplied the Europeans with a sort of sea-bream, conger-eels, and a large fish called a mogge. The natives furnished them with several other sorts of fish; but the small salmon, colefish, and mogge, were superior to the others. Muscles, in abundance, inhabit the rocks; a sort of which exceeds a foot in length. Cockles are found buried in the sand of the small beaches. Small oysters, perriwinkles, wilks, sea-eggs, star-fish, and sea-ears, are also found here*.

They have not any mineral entitled to notice, but a green jasper, or serpent stone, of which the tools and ornaments of the inhabitants are principally formed. This is held in the highest estimation among them; of the generation of which they entertain strange superstitious notions.

The natives are, in general, less perfectly formed about the limbs than the Europeans, though their stature may be nearly equal; very few among them are corpulent. Their features are various, some resembling Europeans; and their colour is of different tints, from a deepish black to a kind of olive; their faces are usually round, their lips somewhat protuberant, and their noses large towards the point; their eyes are large, and their teeth broad, white, and regular. The hair, which is generally black, strong, and straight, is cropt short on the hinder part, and the rest tied on the crown of the head. The youth have a free and open countenance, but those arrived to manhood have a serious sullen cast. The women are not distinguished by any peculiar graces, either of form or features.

Both sexes are clothed alike, having a garment made of the silky flax already mentioned, of about five feet in length, and four in breadth: this is manufactured by knotting. Two corners of it pass over the shoulders, and they fasten it on the breast with that which covers the body; they also secure it with a girdle made of mat, about the belly. And it is sometimes embellished with dog skin, or large feathers. The most common covering, however, is a quantity of a sedgy plant, attached to a string, and thrown over the shoulders; whence it descends on all sides to the middle of the thighs.

Their heads are ornamented with feathers, combs of bone and wood, pearl shell, and the inner skin of leaves. Both men and women have their ears slit, and decorated with beads, jasper, or pieces of cloth. Many have their faces stained, in imitation of various figures, of a black or dark blue colour. The women are marked only on their lips and chins; but both sexes besmear their heads with a greasy reddish paint. The women also decorate themselves with necklaces of sharks' teeth, or bunches of long beads; and some of them have small triangular aprons, adorned with feathers or pearl shells.

They live in small coves, sometimes in single families, and sometimes in companies of forty or fifty. Their huts are miserable lodging places, erected contiguous to each other. Their furniture consists of a few small bags or baskets, in which they deposit their fishing hooks and other property. They sit round a small fire in the middle, and probably sleep in the same way, without any additional covering.

* Insects are not very numerous here; some butterflies, dragon-flies, grass-hoppers, spiders, black-ants, and scorpion-flies, were, however, frequently seen. The sand-fly, which is the only noxious one, is one of the most general.

A few inoffensive lizards were the only reptiles they perceived here; no traces were seen of any quadruped, except a few rats, and a kind of fox-dogs, kept by the natives as domestic animals.

Their

Their boats are formed of planks raised upon each other, and fastened with strong withes; many of them are fifty feet in length; when two of them are fastened together with rafters, they are called a double canoe; their paddles are narrow, pointed, and about five feet long. Their sail, which is very little used, is a triangular mat.

They roast, or rather bake their fish, being totally ignorant of the art of boiling. When the weather will not admit of their going to sea, muscles and sea-ears supply the place of other fish. Sometimes they kill a few penguins, rails, and shags, which enable them to vary their diet. Considerable numbers of dogs also constitute a part of their food; but they rely principally on the sea for their subsistence. They are as filthy in their feeding as in their persons, which often emit a very offensive effluvia, from the abundance of grease about them, and from their never washing their cloaths; their heads swarm with vermin, which they occasionally eat. The inhabitants of Van Diemen's land would not even taste the bread of the Europeans, but these people devoured it voraciously, even when it was mouldy and rotten.

In point of ingenuity they are not inferior to other uncivilized nations; for, without metal tools, they make every thing by which they procure subsistence, clothing, and weapons, with neatness, strength, and convenience. Their principal mechanical tool, in some degree resembling an adze, is made of serpent stone or jasper; and their chissel and gouge are often of the same material. Carving, however, is their master-piece, in which they display much design and execution. Their cordage for fishing lines is not inferior to that in this country, and their nets are equally excellent. A shell, a bit of flint, or jasper, is their substitute for a knife; and a shark's tooth, fixed in the end of a piece of wood, is their auger. They have a saw made of jagged fishes' teeth, with which they only cut up the bodies of those whom they have slain in battle *.

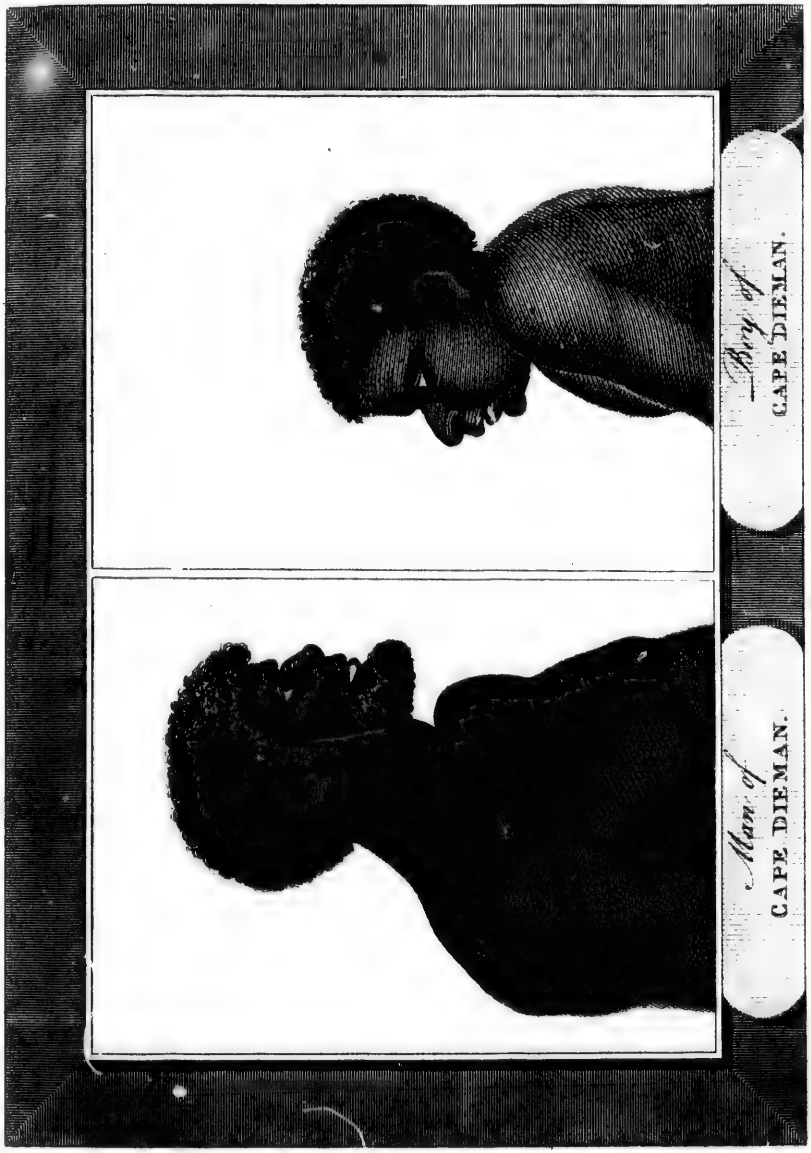
Their public contentions are almost perpetual; war being their principal profession, as appears from the number of their weapons, and their dexterity in using them. Their arms are spears, patoos, halberts, and stones. The first are from five to thirty feet long, made of hard wood, and pointed. The patoo is about eighteen inches in length, of an elliptical shape, with a handle made of wood, stone, &c. and is supposed to be their principal dependence in battle. The halbert is about five or six feet long, tapering at one end, with sharp edges at the other.

Before the contest, they join in a war song, and gradually work themselves into a kind of frantic fury, accompanied with horrid distortions of their tongues, eyes, and mouths, to deter their enemies. They also mangle, and cut to pieces, even when not quite dead, the bodies of their enemies; and, after roasting them, devour the flesh with peculiar satisfaction. But though these people are capable of such an excess of cruelty, they lament the loss of their friends in the most tender and affectionate manner; piercing the air with the vehemence of their cries, and cutting large gashes in their cheeks and foreheads, with shells or pieces of flint, till the blood flows copiously, and mixes with their tears.

Their language is neither harsh not disagreeable; but it is not so comprehensive as the European languages.

* Though extremely irritable, and ready to resent an injury, they are surprisingly insolent when they apprehend there is not any apprehension of punishment. They are naturally mistrustful and suspicious; and so dishonest that they steal every thing within their reach, if they suppose they can escape detection. In trading they take every possible advantage, and are highly delighted when they have overreached.

SECT



Boy of CAPE DIEMAN.

Man of CAPE DIEMAN.

Warren sculp.

Course of th
Account o
Transactio
habitants—
—Messrs.
Twenty Y
Natives—
Countryme

ON the 2
and ma
soon as they
young New-
inconsiderate
continually,
their sorrows
the country a
probably for
in this state
they appeared
tions were le
friends had n
their minds, a
selves to the
They crosse
the 29th, as
east, the Lis
land. They
island, and st
was at the d
The next mo
for the west a
people wadi
observed the
But others, v
course; and
bodies, makin
On approa
many of the

* Two persons
the ship; but, w
the beach. Thei
an address from
came near enoug
being tied to so
They, however,
things from it; fo
offered to them,

SECTION V.

Course of the Voyage—Conduct of the New Zealand Youths on Board—The Island of Mangeea—Account of the Inhabitants—Mouroua and his Companion described—A Mangeean Canoe—Transactions with the Natives—Description of the Island—Manners and Customs of the Inhabitants—The Island of Wateoo discovered—Visits from the Inhabitants—Description of them—Messrs. Gore, Burney, Anderson, and Omai, sent on Shore—Their Reception—Dance of Twenty Young Women—Omai's Apprehensions of being roasted—Further Description of the Natives—Trees and Plants—Omai's expedient to avoid Detention—Meets with Three of his Countrymen—Their distressful Voyage.

ON the 25th of February they left the Sound, and made sail through Cook's Straits. As soon as they had lost sight of the land, the two young New-Zealanders heartily repented of the inconsiderate step they had taken. They wept continually, and expressed the poignancy of their sorrows in a kind of song, highly extolling the country and people, from which they were probably for ever to be separated. They were in this state for several days, but by degrees they appeared less agitated, and their lamentations were less frequent. Their kindred and friends had not taken such entire possession of their minds, as to prevent their attaching themselves to the Europeans.

They crossed the Tropic on the 27th; and on the 29th, as they were standing to the north-east, the Discovery made the signal of seeing land. They soon perceived it to be a small island, and stood for it till the evening, when it was at the distance of two or three leagues. The next morning, at day break, they bore up for the west side of the island, and saw several people wading to the reef, where, as they observed the ship leaving them, they remained. But others, who soon appeared, followed her course; and some of them assembled in small bodies, making considerable shouts.

On approaching nearer the shore, they saw many of the natives running along the beach, armed with long spears and clubs, which they brandished in the air in a menacing stile. Most of them were nearly naked, having only a kind of girdle, which was brought up between their thighs. Some of them, indeed, wore pieces of cloth about their shoulders; their heads being covered with a white wrapper resembling a turban. They were robust, about the middle size, and of a tawny complexion *.

The features of Mouroua were agreeable, and his countenance pleasant; these were accompanied with gesticulations which indicated humour and good nature. He also affected a serious tone; and repeated a kind of ejaculation before he would venture to take hold of the rope at the stern of the ship. Both these men had black hair, straight and strong, tied together on the top of their heads with a piece of white cloth. They had long beards, and the inner part of their arms, from the elbow to the shoulder, were *tatooed* or punctured. The lobe of one of their ears was slit to such a length, that he stuck a knife and some beads in it. The same person had his neck ornamented with two polished pearl shells, and a bunch of human hair, loosely twisted together. They wore girdles manufactured from the *morus papyriser*, and glazed: they had a sort of woven sandals, formed of a grassy substance. The canoe they came in was the only one they had seen; it was narrow, and

* Two persons in a canoe put off with a view of reaching the ship; but, wanting resolution, they returned towards the beach. Their apprehensions being partly removed by an address from Omai, in the language of Otaheite, they came near enough to receive some nails and beads, which, being tied to some wood, were thrown into the canoe. They, however, put the wood aside without untying the things from it; for Omai observed, that when presents were offered to them, they requested something for their *Eatooa*. On being asked by Omai, whether they were accustomed to eat human flesh, they replied in the negative, with equal horror and abhorrence. One of them, named Mouroua, being asked what had occasioned a scar upon his forehead, said, it was in consequence of a wound he had received in fighting with the natives of an island to the north-east, who sometimes invaded them. They afterwards took hold of a rope, but would not venture to come on board.

about ten feet long, but strong and neatlymade: the lower part was of white wood, and the upper part of black, and their paddles were similar in appearance. They moved, as a matter of indifference, either end of the canoe forward.

When the ships were in a proper station, Captain Cook ordered out two boats to seek a convenient place for landing. In one of them he went himself, and just as he put off from the ship, the two men in the canoe paddled towards his boat. When they were come alongside, Mouroa without ceremony or hesitation, stept into her. Omai, who was with the Captain, desired the islander to ask where they could land. He pointed out two places, but it was soon discovered that an attempt at either place would have been impracticable, on account of the surf; and they were equally unsuccessful in their search for anchorage.

While they were thus reconnoitering the shore of Mangeea, many of the natives assembled upon the reef. Mouroa, who still remained in the boat with Captain Cook, supposing this thronging multitude deterred them from landing, commanded them to retire. Many of them instantly complying, he was supposed to be a person of some consequence. Excited by curiosity, several of them swam from the shore to the boats, and came on board them without reserve. It was, indeed, a difficult task to keep them out, or prevent their pilfering whatever they could lay their hands upon. At length, seeing the Europeans returning to the ships, they all left them except Mouroa, who, notwithstanding he entertained some suspicious apprehensions, accompanied the Captain on board the Resolution *.

Those parts of the coast of Mangeea which they saw, are guarded by a reef of coral rock, against which a heavy surf is continually breaking. The island is about five miles in circumference. In the interior parts it rises into small hills, whence there is an easy descent to the shore, except in the south-west part, which is steep, but not very high. The shore on the north-west part terminates in a sandy beach. The island, upon the whole, has a pleasing appearance, and might by proper cultivation, be rendered a beautiful spot †.

Quitting Mangeea on the 30th of March, and proceeding on a northerly course, they discovered land on the 31st, at the distance of about ten leagues: the next morning they were abreast of it, and within four leagues. It then appeared to be an island of nearly the same extent as that which they had left. A smaller island was also descried right a-head; and after that a larger was perceived, which they preferred as being most likely to furnish food for the cattle; but the wind being rather unfavourable, they were about two leagues to windward at eight o'clock the succeeding morning. Captain Cook dispatched three armed boats, under the command of Lieutenant Gore, in search of a landing place and anchoring ground. Three canoes, each conducted by one man, came along-side of the Resolution; they were long, narrow, and supported by out-riggers. The Europeans gave their visitors some knives, beads, and other trifles; and they gave the Europeans some cocoanuts, merely because they asked for them, but

* Here he appeared to be too much occupied about his own safety, to be struck with much surprise at seeing the cattle and other objects. He seemed very uneasy, and gave them but little new intelligence; in consequence of which, after he had continued a short time on board, Captain Cook ordered a boat to take him towards the land. In passing from the cabin, he happened to stumble over one of the goats; at which he immediately stopped, gazed at the animal, and asked what bird it was? The boat having conveyed him near the surf, he leaped into the water, and swam ashore. His countrymen, eager to learn from him what he had seen, flocked round him on his landing, in which situation they remained till they had lost sight of them.

† As the inhabitants seem numerous and well fed, it indicates that articles of provision are furnished by this island in great abundance. They had no hogs nor dogs; but they had plantains, taro, and bread fruit. The birds seen by the Europeans were principally terns, noddies, white-egg birds, and one white heron. The Mangeean language is a dialect of that of Otaheite, with a more guttural pronunciation. They resemble the inhabitants of Otaheite, and the Marquesas in their persons, and in their disposition; for they are equally lively and cheerful, and are adepts in all the lascivious gesticulations so significantly practised by the Otaheiteans in their dances. From a variety of circumstances it was also conjectured, that their mode of living, and the manner of constructing their habitations, was much in the Otaheitean taste. They salute strangers by joining noses, and seizing the hand of the person whom they accost, which they rub somewhat forcibly upon their mouth and nose. It is remarkable, that in the New Philipine, or rather Caroline Islands, though at the distance of fifteen hundred leagues from Mangeea, the inhabitants practice the same method of salutation.

not by way of exchange, as they seemed to have no idea of barter or traffic.

Three of them, after a little persuasion, came on board, seeming perfectly at their ease, and free from apprehension. After their departure, a man arrived in another canoe, bringing a bunch of plaintains as a present to Captain Cook; who, in return, gave him a piece of red cloth and an axe, which Omai afterwards informed them had been sent from the king of the island. Soon after, a double canoe, containing twelve of the islanders, came towards them, reciting some words in the nature of a chorus. Having finished this solemn chant, they asked for the chief: and when Captain Cook had made his appearance, a pig and some cocoa-nuts were conveyed into the ship; and the captain was also presented with a piece of matting*.

On the 3d of April Captain Cook detached Mr. Gore with three boats, to make trial of the experiment he had proposed. Two of the natives, who had been on board, accompanied him, and Omai was the interpreter. The ships being about the distance of a league from the island, when the boats put off, they worked up to it by about twelve, and saw their three boats within the surf, and a multitude of the islanders on the shore, a-breast of them. With a view of observing their motions, and affording them what assistance they might require, the captain kept as near the shore as he thought compatible with prudence. He was convinced, however, that the reef was an effectual barrier, between the Europeans and their friends who had landed, and put them completely out of the reach of their protection. But, after considerable solicitude for the safety of the people who had landed, Captain Cook had the satisfaction of seeing the boats return; when, upon enquiry, it appeared that Mr. Gore, Mr. Anderson, Mr. Burney, and Omai were the only persons who had landed. An account of their transactions, as related by Mr. Anderson, was to the following effect:

They rowed towards a sandy beach, where a considerable number of the natives had assembled, and came to an anchor at a hundred yards from the reef. Several of the islanders swam off, bringing cocoa-nuts with them; when Omai informed them that their people were inclinable to land. Soon after, two canoes came off; and to furnish the natives with greater confidence, Mr. Gore and his companions resolved to go unarmed. Mr. Anderson and Lieutenant Burney went in one canoe, a little before the other; and their conductors, watching the motions of the surf with great attention, landed them safely on the reef. They were conducted from the beach by a vast concourse of people; and being attended up an avenue of cocoa-palms, approached two rows of men, armed with clubs. Proceeding onward, they observed a person, who appeared to be a chief, sitting cross-legged upon the ground, and cooling himself with a triangular fan, formed of the leaf of the cocoa-palm, with a polished handle of black wood: his ears were adorned with large bunches of beautiful red feathers; but he was not otherwise distinguished from the rest of the people. The two Europeans having saluted him as he sat, were conducted successively to a second and a third chief, likewise ornamented with red feathers. This ceremony having been performed, they were desired to sit down; an injunction which they instantly complied with*.

The Europeans now hearing a noise, turned their eyes aside, and saw the people armed with clubs, who had been desired to entertain them, as they supposed, with a representation of their mode of fighting; which now took place accordingly; one party pursuing another which had run away.

Lieutenant

* These new visitors were introduced into the cabin, and conducted to the other parts of the ship. Many objects seemed to surprise them, but nothing could fix their attention. They were afraid to venture near the cows and horses, of which they had not the least conception: they admitted, however, that they knew the sheep and goats were birds.

The islanders whom they had seen in these canoes, were chiefly of the middle stature, and not unlike the Mangeeans. Their long hair either flowed loosely over their shoulders, or was tied on the crown of the head. Like the inhabitants of Mangeea, they wore girdles of glazed cloth, or fine matting, the ends of which were brought between their thighs. Their ears were bored, and a sort of broad grass was worn about their necks by way of ornament, stained with red, and strung with berries of the night-shade: many of them were curiously *tatooed*, from the middle downwards, particularly upon their legs; and they had sandals on their feet. They were cheerful in their deportment, and apparently good natured.

+ The people being ordered to disperse, Messrs. Anderson and Burney saw, at a little distance, about twenty young women, adorned with red feathers like the chiefs, engaged in a solemn dance, accompanied with the singing of the whole party. The two Europeans rose up, and walked forward to observe the dancers, who proceeded in their

Lieutenant Burney and Mr. Anderson now sought for Mr. Gore and Omai, whom they at length perceived coming up among the crowd, having been introduced, like themselves, to the three chiefs; the names of whom were Otteroo, Taroa, and Fatouweera. They now endeavoured to separate the Europeans from each other, every one of whom had his respective circle to surround, and gaze at him. Mr. Anderson discovered that, at this time, several trifling things had been pilfered from his pocket; and on his complaining of this treatment to the chief, he approved and justified it.

From these circumstances, Mr. Anderson began to apprehend that they intended to detain his party among them. Mr. Burney happening to go to the place where Mr. Anderson was, the latter acquainted him with his suspicions; and to try whether they were well founded, they both attempted to get to the beach, but were prevented by the natives, who said they must return to the place from whence they came. On their coming up, they found Omai under the same apprehensions, accompanied by an additional cause of terror; for having observed that they had dug a hole in the ground for an oven, which they were now heating, he concluded that they had formed a plan of roasting and devouring the party. So prevalent were his fears, that he even asked them whether that was really their intention: at which they were much surprised, asking, in return, whether that custom prevailed among them?

Mr. Anderson, and the others, were thus detained the greatest part of the day, being sometimes separated, and sometimes together; but always in a crowd. Sometimes they were requested to uncover parts of their skin, the whiteness of which struck the islanders with admiration; though at the same time they rifled the pockets of the persons they were thus tormenting. One of them snatched from Mr. Gore a bayonet, which hung by his side; and when remonstrances were made against the aggressor, the chief was suspected of having countenanced the theft; for Omai, soon after, had a dagger stolen from him in the same outrageous manner.

A pig now lying near the oven, which had been prepared and heated, now banished Omai's fears of being put into it himself; and induced him to suppose it was intended for the repast of him and his three friends. In the mean time Messrs Burney and Anderson again attempted to get to the beach; but, on their arrival, they found themselves watched by persons stationed for that purpose; for when Mr. Anderson endeavoured to wade in upon the reef, one of them forcibly dragged him back by his clothes. They also insisted upon his throwing down some pieces of coral which he had picked up, and some plants which he had gathered. They likewise took a fan from Mr. Burney, which, on his coming ashore, he had received as a present.

Perceiving that obedience to their will, was the only method of procuring better treatment, the gentlemen returned to the place they had quitted; and the natives now promised, that, after they had partaken of a repast prepared for them, they should be furnished with a canoe to convey them to the boats. Accordingly, the second chief to whom they had been presented, seated himself on a low stool, and the multitude forming a large ring, seated themselves near him. A number of cocoa-nuts, a quantity of baked plantains, and a piece of the little hog that had been dressed, were placed before each of them. Fatigue having taken off the keen edge of their appetite, the Europeans could only eat a little to please their entertainers. It was now almost sun-set, and the islanders sent what was left of the provisions down to the beach, to be conveyed to the ships.

The party found a canoe prepared to put them off to their boats, which the natives appeared to do with great caution; but as they were in the act of pushing the canoe into the surf, one of them snatched a bag out of her, containing a pocket-pistol belonging to Mr. Anderson, who

their amusement without paying them the least attention. Though their feet were not inactive in the dance; their exercise consisted more in moving their fingers very nimbly, holding their hands at the same time in a prone position near the face, and occasionally clapping them together. They had probably been very carefully instructed, and selected for this kind of entertainment, as they greatly surpassed in beauty most of those who had mingled with the crowd. Their shape and limbs were elegantly formed, and their dress, which only consisted of a piece of glazed cloth tied round the waist, hardly extended so low as the knees: their eyes were black, and rather too full to constitute perfect beauty; but their countenances were strongly expressive of modesty and gentleness.

calling

calling out to the thief, in terms strongly expressive of his displeasure, the terrified culprit swam back to the canoe with the bag*.

Though Omai was sent upon this expedition as Mr. Gore's interpreter, he probably performed other essential services this day. He was interrogated by the natives, concerning the Europeans, their country, their ships, and their arms. In answer to which he informed them, among other particulars, that their country had ships as large as their island; on board of which were guns of such dimensions as to contain several people within them; one of which could demolish the whole island at a single shot, and every soul would inevitably perish.

The natives of this island call it by the name of Wateeoo: it is a beautiful verdant spot, consisting of hills and plains, and is about six leagues in circumference. If we may rely on Omai's report of what information he had received from three of his countrymen, whom he almost miraculously met in this island, the manners of the people of Wateeoo, their habits of life, and their method of treating strangers, are extremely similar to those which prevail at Otaheite, and its neighbouring islands: even their religious ceremonies and opinions accord in many instances. It therefore seems indubitable that the inhabitants of Wateeoo derive their descent, from the same stock which has so remarkably diffused itself over the immense extent of the Southern Ocean. Omai assured the Europeans, that they dignified their island with the pompous appellation of *Wenooa no te Eatooa*, implying a land of Gods; esteeming themselves a kind of divinities, possessing the spirit of the *Eatooa*. Their language was equally understood by Omai, and the two New Zealanders who were on board.

SECTION VI.

Visit Otakootaia—Description of—Its Produce—Visit Hervey's Island—Find it inhabited—Inhabitants averse to coming on board—Propensity to thieving—Manners, Dress, &c.—Islets of Palmerston—Proceed to the Friendly Island—Barter with the Natives of Komango, &c. for Provisions—Arrival at Annamooka—Transactions there—Visited by Feenou, a principal Chief from Tongataboo—His Reception—Frequently dines on board the Resolution—Propensity of the Natives to pilfering—Punishments inflicted on them—Account of Annamooka—Proceed to Hapace.

HAVING failed of receiving any effectual supply from Wateeoo, they quitted it, and steered to an island which they had discovered three days before. They got up with it about ten in the morning, when Captain Cook dispatched Mr. Gore with two boats, to learn whether they could land, and get subsistence for their cattle. Though a reef surrounded the land, and a considerable surf broke against the rocks, when the boats reached the west side of the island, they ventured in, and Mr. Gore, with his attendants arrived safe on shore. The supply procured here was about two hundred cocoanuts for the adventurers, and some grass and other food for the cattle. This island is situated about four leagues from Wateeoo, the inhabi-

* The restrained situation of these gentlemen afforded them very little opportunity of observing the country; their observations therefore could only be directed to the surrounding objects. What first attracted their notice, was the number of people, which at least amounted to two thousand. Most of those who came on board the ships were of an inferior class; but many which were beheld on shore had a superior dignity of demeanor, and their complexion was much whiter. In general, they had their hair, which was long and black, tied on the crown of the head. Many of the young men were perfect models in point of symmetry, and of a delicate complexion. Their general dress consisted of a piece of cloth wrapped about the waist: others wore conical caps, made of the core of a cocoa-nut, interwoven with beads. At their ears hung pieces of the membraneous part of some plant, or some odoriferous flower. The chiefs, and others of elevated rank, had two little balls, made of bone, attached to a small cord round their necks. Red feathers announce eminent distinction, and are worn only by the chiefs, and the female dancers. Some of the men and women were punctured all over the sides and back. No personal deformities were observed, except in a few individuals, who had scars of broad ulcers remaining on the face and other parts.

Many of the natives were armed with spears and clubs; the latter of which were about six feet long; the spears were generally of twice that length: some of them, however, were so short, as to seem intended only for darts. Their canoes were thought superior to any that had been exhibited in any other island in the south seas.

tants of which call it *Otakootaia;* it is supposed not to exceed three miles in circuit. This island is totally destitute of water, and cocoa-palms were the common trees found in it. A beautiful cuckoo, of a chesnut brown, variegated with black, was the only bird seen among the trees. On the shore were observed some blue and white herons, curlews, egg-birds, and a great quantity of noddies.

A lizard of a most forbidding aspect was seen running up a tree: moths and butterflies of various kinds were numerous*.

The boats being hoisted in, they made sail to the northward: they got sight of Hervey's island by day-break on the 6th, at the distance of about three leagues. They approached it about eight, and saw several canoes coming from the shore towards the ships. They were much surprised at this circumstance, as no indications of inhabitants were to be seen, when the island was first discovered by Captain Cook in 1773.

Advancing still towards the island, six or seven double canoes came near our navigators, with several men in each of them. At a little distance from the ship they stopped, when Omai could hardly prevail on them to come along-side: they absolutely refused to trust themselves on board; but they attempted to steal some oars out of the Discovery's boat, and struck a man for endeavouring to obstruct the depredators. They also cut away a net containing meat, which hung over the stern of that ship, and refused to restore it; though they afterwards permitted the navigators to purchase it of them. Those who assembled about the Resolution, behaved equally daring and disorderly. If pieces of paper, or any other trivial articles were thrown to them, they caught at them with the greatest avidity; and if any such article fell into the sea, they immediately plunged in to swim after it†.

Captain Cook dispatched Lieutenant King, with two armed boats to reconnoitre the coast: the boats returned at three, and Mr. King informed Captain Cook that he could find no anchorage for the ships, and that the boats could proceed no farther than the outer edge of the reef, which was a quarter of a mile from the dry land. That multitudes of the natives came upon the reef, armed with clubs and pikes, as if they intended to oppose his landing; though at the same time they threw cocoa-nuts at the Europeans, and solicited them to come on shore. In the mean time the women were remarkably active, in bringing down an additional supply of darts and spears.

As Captain Cook could not bring the ships to anchor, he thought an attempt to procure grass would be attended with delay and danger: he therefore pursued such measures as he thought most expedient for the preservation of the cattle. Resolving to bear away for the Friendly Islands, where he knew he could be furnished with what he wanted, he ordered Captain Clerke to keep a league a-head of the Resolution; as his ship could best claw off the land, which they might possibly fall in with in their passage. He deemed it necessary to get into the lati[illegible] of Palmerston's and Savage Islands, which [illegible]d discovered in 1774; that, in case of necessity, recourse might be had to them. To prevent the unnecessary consumption of water, Captain Cook ordered the still to be kept at work a whole day, in consequence of which fifteen gallons of fresh water were procured.

On the 10th they had plenty of rain and thunder; some advantage was derived from the former, as a sufficient quantity of rain-water was collected to fill five of their puncheons. At day-break on the 13th they perceived Palmerston's Island, bearing west by south, but did not get up with it till the next morning at eight. Captain Cook then dispatched three boats from the Resolution, and one from the Discovery, with an intelligent officer in each to search for a convenient

* No regular inhabitants were now permanently attached to the island. but a few empty huts informed us that it was at least occasionally visited. Monuments, consisting of several large stones, were erected under the shade of trees: others of smaller stones were inclosed, where probably their dead had been interred. Mr. Gore left some nails and a hatchet in one of the huts, for the use of future visitors of the island.

† Though the distance between Hervey's Island and Wateeoo is not very considerable, the inhabitants are very different both in person and disposition. The colour of the natives of Hervey's Island, was of a deeper cast than that of the natives of Wateeoo; and several of them have a fierce savage aspect, like the natives of New Zealand. Not one of them, however, had adopted the mode of puncturing or tatooing their bodies. Their language bore a stronger resemblance of the dialect of Otaheite, than that of Mangeea or Wateeoo. They said the name of their island was Terronggemou Atooa; and that they were subject to Teerretooeah, king of Wateeoo. Their food consists of cocoa-nuts, fish, and turtle. Their canoes are large, and well built, and resemble those of Wateeoo.

venient landing place; absolute necessity requiring immediate provender for their cattle, which would otherwise have been starved.

What is named Palmerston's Island consists of about nine or ten small islets, connected together by a reef of coral rocks, and lying in a circular direction. The boats were disappointed in their examination of the most south-easterly islet; but running down to the second, they instantly landed: Captain Cook then bore down with the ships, till they were a-breast of the place, where they kept standing off and on, no bottom being to be found to anchor upon. The island was indeed uninhabited, except by the party who had landed from their boats*.

Except a piece of a canoe found upon the beach, no traces were discoverable of inhabitants having ever been here: Some little brown rats were indeed perceived upon this island, which created no small degree of surprise among the party. The boats being laden, Captain Cook returned on board, leaving Mr. Gore and his associates to pass the night on shore, to be ready for business the next morning.

A sufficient supply of subsistence for the cattle being procured by the 15th, Captain Cook ordered all his people on board by sun-set on that day: but, having very little wind, he determined to employ the next day in endeavouring to get some cocoa-nuts for the crews, from the next island to leeward. They found plenty of them, but it was a tedious operation to convey them to the boats. Omai, who was of the party, caught with a scoop-net as many fish as were found sufficient for a repast, besides a liberal supply for each of the ships. In these excursions to uninhabited islands, Omai was infinitely serviceable: he caught the fish, and cooked them, as well as the birds they killed, after the fashion of his country, with a dexterity and cheerfulness that did him honour.

The islet they last came from is somewhat larger than the other, and abounding with cocoa-palms. On the beach two pieces of board were found, one of which was wretchedly carved, and an elliptical paddle: these were probably a part of the same canoe, the remains of which had been seen on the other beach. Crabs were not so plentiful here as at the last place, but scorpions and other insects were numerous: among the rest were some large spotted eels, which strove to raise themselves out of the water, and seemed to menace their pursuers. There were snappers, parrot-fish, and a brown spotted rock fish; and when the tide flowed, several sharks came with it, some of which were destroyed by our sailors.

The islets comprehended under the general term of Palmerston's island, appear to be the summits of a reef of coral rock, covered only with a thin coat of sand, though cloathed with a variety of trees and plants. Having left Palmerston's Island, the navigators steered west to proceed to Annamooka: they encountered variable winds, with squalls, thunder, and much rain: and as the showers produced a more plentiful supply of water in one hour, than could be procured by distillation in a month, the still was abandoned and laid aside. The heat, which had been excessive for about a month, became more disagreeable in this close rainy weather; and fears were entertained that it would soon be noxious; but it fortunately happened that not a single person was ill on board either of the ships.

They passed Savage Island, which had been discovered by Captain Cook in 1774, in the night between the 24th and 25th; and, on the morning

* About noon one of the boats returned, laden with scurvy-grass and young cocoa-trees, which proved a salutary repast for the animals on board. Mr. Gore, who commanded the party upon this expedition, informed them that the island abounded with such produce, as well as with the Wharra-tree and cocoa-nuts. A sufficient supply of these articles was therefore procured before the party quitted the station. This island is about a mile in circumference, consisting almost entirely of a coral sand, with a small mixture of blackish mould. This poor soil is, however, covered with shrubs and bushes. A great number of man of war birds, tropic birds, and boobies were seen; the latter were so exceedingly tame, as to permit any one to take them off their nests, which consist only of a few sticks loosely put together. Having been long confined to a salt diet, our people killed plenty of each sort for food, which, though not of the most delicate kind, were highly acceptable to them. Plenty of red crabs were seen creeping about among the trees; and several fish were caught, which had been left in holes upon the reef when the sea retreated.

At one part of the reef, which bounds the lake within, a large bed of coral afforded a most enchanting prospect; and this delightful scene was greatly improved by the multitude of beautiful fishes, gently gliding along, seemingly in perfect security: their colours were the most vivid that can be imagined; blue, red, black, yellow, &c. far excelling any thing that can be produced by art. Though transported with this wonderful prospect, some regret was however experienced, that a work so astonishingly elegant should be concealed in a place so seldom explored by the human eye.

of

of the 28th, saw the islands to the eastward of Annamooka, about five leagues distant. After steering to the south, they hauled up for Annamooka, and, at the approach of night, the weather being squally, and accompanied with rain, they anchored in fifteen fathoms water.

Soon after our navigators had anchored, two canoes paddled towards them, and without hesitation came along-side of them. One of the canoes contained four men, and the other three, having with them some bread-fruit, sugar-cane, plantains, and cocoa-nuts, which they bartered with the Europeans for nails. When these canoes had taken their leave, another arrived, but as night was approaching they also thought proper to depart. These visitors must have come five miles to traffic with them, as Komango, the nearest island to our European adventurers, was at least so far distant from them; a proof of the high estimation they affix even to their most trivial articles.

At four the next morning, Captain Cook dispatched Lieutenant King, with two boats to Komango, to procure refreshments; and at five made the signal to weigh to proceed to Annamooka. At day-light, six or seven canoes arrived, laden with two pigs, some fowls, wood-pigeons, rails, and violet-coloured coots; besides fruits and roots, which they exchanged for hatchets, nails, beads, &c. About noon Mr. King's boat returned with seven hogs, several fowls, some vegetables, and grass for the animals. His party was treated with great civility at Komango. The inhabitants were not very numerous, and their huts were miserable habitations. Tooboulangee, the chief, and another, came on board with Mr. King. They brought a hog, as a present to Captain Cook, and promised some more the following day *.

The Captain ordered a boat to be hoisted out, and the master to sound the south-west side of Annamooka. When he returned, he reported that no fresh water was to be had, but at a considerable distance inland; and that, even there, it was neither plentiful nor good; Captain Cook therefore resolved to anchor on the north-side of the island, where, in his last voyage, he found a convenient place for watering and landing. Though within a league of it, they did not reach it till five in the afternoon, being retarded by the multiplicity of canoes crowding round the ships, laden with the produce of their island. Several women, as well as men, appeared in the canoe, and used the paddle with as much dexterity as the males; nor were they less expert in the true spirit of bartering. They came to an anchor in eighteen fathoms water; Captain Cook resuming the station he had occupied, when he visited Annamooka three years before.

The next day Captain Cook, accompanied by Captain Clerke and others, went on shore to fix upon a spot for erecting his observatories; the natives having readily granted them permission, and accommodated them with a boat-house. Toobou, the chief, conducted Captain Cook and Omai to his pleasant habitation, in the centre of his plantation, surrounded with a grass-plat for the sole purpose of cleansing their feet, a method also much practised at the Friendly Islands. While they were on shore, they bartered for some hogs and fruit, and when they arrived on board, the ships were exceedingly crowded by the natives, who came loaded with articles of refreshment.

In the afternoon Captain Cook landed again with a party of marines, but he returned to the ship in the evening, leaving Mr. King in command upon the island. Taipa was now become the particular friend of our Europeans; and, wishing to be near their party, had a house carried on men's shoulders, to be next the shed which the party occupied: various operations began on shore the next day, hay-making, filling the water-casks, cutting wood, &c. Taipa harangued the natives in a long speech. The subject could only be guessed at, which was supposed to instruct them how to behave to the adventurers. His eloquence, however, occasioned a plentiful supply of provisions the next day.

They were visited on the 6th by a chief from Tongataboo, named Feenou; he was introduced by Taipa, as king of all the Friendly Isles. Captain Cook was now informed, that on their arrival, a canoe had been dispatched to Tongataboo with the intelligence, which occasioned

* The boats being a-board, they stood for Annamooka; meeting with some obstacles, they found it necessary to spend the night under sail. The next morning they were farther off than they had been the preceding evening, and the wind was then right in their teeth. In the evening they anchored in thirty-nine fathoms water, four miles distant from Annamooka. Tooboulangee and his friend performed their promise of bringing some hogs for Captain Cook.

his

his coming to Annamooka. On his arrival, all the natives saluted him by bowing their heads as low as his feet, the soles of which they afterwards touched with the palm and back-part of each hand. In the afternoon Captain Cook went to pay a visit to this great man, having first received a present of two fish, brought on board from him by one of his attendants. When the captain landed, Feenou approached him. After the first salutation, Captain Cook requested to know if he was king; when Taipa eagerly answered for him, and enumerated one hundred and fifty-three islands, of which he was the sovereign. Soon after this grand visitor, attended by five or six servants, accompanied them on board. In the evening the captain attended them on shore in his boat, into which three hogs were ordered to be conveyed by the chief.

The following short narrative will give some idea of the authority exercised here, over the inferior people. While Feenou was on board the Resolution, an inferior chief ordered all the natives to quit the post the Europeans occupied. Some of them, however, ventured to return, when he beat them most unmercifully with a large stick. One of them in particular, received so violent a blow, that, after lying motionless for some time, he was removed from the place in convulsions. This wanton excess of cruelty seemed to afford mirth for the author of the catastrophe *.

Though Feenou was so fond of the company of our adventurers, as to dine every day on board, he did not always partake of their fare. On the 10th his servants brought him a mess which had been dressed on shore, consisting of fish, soup, and yams, boiled or stewed in cocoa-nut liquor, instead of water. The captain tasted of the mess, and was so well pleased with it, that he afterwards ordered some fish to be dressed in the same way; but the imitation attempted by his cook, was much inferior to that prepared for Feenou.

Having almost exhausted the island of every article of food, our navigators removed from the shore the observatories, &c. intending to sail as soon as possible. Feenou, fearing that the Captain meant to proceed to Tongataboo, earnestly entreated him to alter his plan, and warmly recommended a group of islands, called Hapaee, where he assured him he could be plentifully supplied with every refreshment; and even offered to attend them thither in person: Hapaee was therefore made choice of, and, as it had not been visited by any European ships, the surveying it became an object to Captain Cook: on the morning of the 14th they got under sail, and left Annamooka †.

Our adventurers frequently amused themselves in walking up the country, and shooting wild ducks, resembling widgeons, which are very numerous on the salt lake, and on the pool where they procured their water. From occasional estimations of the inhabitants, at different times, it was conjectured that the island contained about two thousand inhabitants.

In the direct track to Hapaee, a great number of small isles are seen. They are scattered at unequal distances, and most of them are as high as Annamooka. In general they are entirely

* On the 6th and 7th Feenou dined with Captain Cook; on the last of these days he was attended by Taipa, Toobou, and some other chiefs. None but Taipa, however, was permitted to sit at table with Feenou, or even to eat in his presence; a circumstance which afforded pleasure to Captain Cook, as he had generally a larger company than he chose. A large junk axe having been stolen by one of the natives, on the day they arrived at Annamooka, application was made to Feenou for a restoration of it; who gave such peremptory orders for that purpose, that the instrument was brought on board before the repast was concluded. On the 9th of May one of the natives was detected carrying a bolt out of the ship, for which offence the Captain ordered a dozen lashes to be given him, and he was further sentenced to be confined till he should pay a hog for his liberty.

When any of them were detected in the act of thieving, their masters frequently advised the persons they were attempting to plunder, to kill them instantly; but they not choosing to inflict that punishment, they usually escaped with impunity. Captain Clerke, however, contrived a mode of treatment, which was supposed to have a good effect: immediately on detection, he ordered their heads to be completely shaved, and thus exhibited them to the ridicule and detestation of their countrymen; and put the Europeans upon their guard when such depredators were on the spot.

† This island is somewhat higher than the other small isles that surround it. In the centre of it there is a salt-water lake, about a mile and a half in breadth, though they could not trace its having any communication with the sea. Not a stream of fresh water is to be found in any part of the island. Yams and plantains form their principal plantations; many of which are extensive, and enclosed with fences of reed. The bread-fruit and cocoa-nut trees are irregularly interspersed, but principally near the habitations of the natives.

covered with trees, each having the appearance of a beautiful garden placed in the sea. In the afternoon they steered to the north, leaving Toofoa and Kao on their larboard. Being within about two leagues of Toofoa, they observed the smoke of it several times in the day. There is a volcano upon it, of which the Friendly Islanders entertain very superstitious notions. On the 15th, about ten o'clock, Feenou came on board, and continued with the navigators all day. He brought with him two hogs, and a quantity of fruit. In the course of the day several canoes happened to come to barter for the latter article, which was very acceptable to them, as their stock began to be low. In the course of the night they plainly saw flames issuing from the volcano upon Toofoa.

At day-break on the 16th they steered for Hapaee, which was in sight; at nine they saw it plainly, forming three islands, nearly equal in size; and soon after a fourth appeared to the southward of these, as large as any of the others: they are all four included under the general name of Hapaee, though the most northern of them is called Haanno, the next Foa, the third Lefooga, and the fourth Hoolaiva. By sun-set they got up with the northernmost of these isles, but found no anchorage; and had another night to spend under sail, with land and breakers in every direction. Feenou, who had been on board all day, proceeded to Hapaee in the evening, taking Omai with him in the canoe. He generously kept up a good fire the whole night by way of land-mark.

At day-light on the 17th, being then close in with Foa, they perceived it was joined to Haanno, by a reef passing from one island to the other. A boat was dispatched to look for anchorage, and a proper place was found, having twenty-four fathoms depth of water. In this station they were about three quarters of a mile from the shore, and as they lay before a creek in the reef, it was convenient landing at all times.

SECTION VII.

Arrival at Hapaee—Reception there—Taipa harangues the People—Cautions them against stealing—Presents—Combats with Clubs—Wrestling—Boxing—Marines exercised—Dance—Fire-Works—Nocturnal Entertainments—Singing and Dancing by Men and Women—Captain Cook goes to Lefooga—Description of that Island—Occurrences there—A Female Oculist—Singular Mode of Shaving—A remarkable Mount and Stone—Hoolaive described—Account of Poulaho King of the Friendly Isles—The Captain accompanies him on Shore—Quit the Hapaee Islands—Kootoo described—Meeting of Poulaho and Feenou—The Ships strike against the Rocks—Arrive at Tongataboo.

THEY were no sooner anchored than they were surrounded with a multitude of canoes, and their ships were instantly filled with the natives; bringing with them hogs, fowls, roots, and fruit, which they exchanged for hatchets, beads, and cloth. Feenou and Omai having come on board to introduce Captain Cook to the people of the island, he soon accompanied them on shore for that purpose. The chief conducted the Captain to a hut on the beach, which had been prepared for his reception. In this Feenou, Captain Cook, and Omai were seated: the other chiefs, and the multitude appearing on the outside; and they also seated themselves. Captain Cook being requested to mention how long he intended to stay, answered five days. Taipa was therefore ordered to proclaim this intelligence to the people. In consequence of which he exhorted both old and young to regard Captain Cook as a friend, who meant to continue with them a few days; and that, during his stay, they would not pilfer any thing from him, or offend him in any other manner. He informed them that they were expected to bring hogs, fowls, and fruit to the ship, and enumerated the articles they were to receive in the exchange.

Soon after Taipa had thus addressed the assembly, Feenou left them; on which it was intimated to Captain Cook by Taipa, that a present was expected from him to Earoupa, the chief of the island. Without hesitation the Captain gave him such articles as far exceeded

his expectation. This liberality occasioned similar demands from two other chiefs who were present, and even from Taipa himself. Soon after the last favour was conferred, Feenou returned, and pretended to censure so lavish a distribution of valuable articles; but this was considered as finesse. Feenou now resumed his seat, ordering Earoupa to sit near him, and harangue the people as Taipa had done; an injunction which he readily complied with.

These ceremonies over, the chief conducted Captain Cook to the three stagnant pools of what he called fresh water; in one of which that fluid was tolerable, and the situation commodious for filling their casks. On his return to his former situation, he found a baked hog and some yams, ready dressed, to be conveyed on board for his dinner. He invited Feenou and his friends to partake of the repast. Dinner being over, the captain conducted them on shore, and, before he returned, received a fine large turtle, and some yams, as a present from the chief.

In the morning of the 18th, Feenou and Omai, who now slept on shore with the chief, came on board to request Captain Cook's presence upon the island. He accompanied them, and was conducted to the place where he had been seated the preceding day, and where he had observed a large concourse of people had assembled. He supposed something extraordinary was in agitation, but could not hazard a conjecture upon the occasion, nor could Omai give him any information. Soon after he was seated, about a hundred of the natives appeared, laden with yams, bread-fruit, plantains, cocoa-nuts, and sugar canes, and their burdens were deposited on their left. A number of others arrived, laden in the same manner, whose articles were collected into two piles on the right side. To these were added two pigs, and half a dozen fowls; and to those on the left, six pigs and two turtles. Earoupa seated himself before the articles on the left side, and another chief before those upon the right. When this collection of provisions was properly arranged, the bearers of it joined the multitude, who formed a circle round the whole. A number of men, armed with clubs, then entered this circle; where they paraded about for a few minutes, and half of them retired to one side, the other half joining the other side, and seating themselves before the spectators. Soon after they successively entertained the multitude with single combats; one champion from one side challenging those of the other side, by words or gestures, to send one of their party to oppose him. The challenge was, in general, accepted, and the two combatants began; when one of them yielded, the victor squatted himself down before the chief, after which he immediately rose up and retired. Some old men, who seemed to preside as judges, concisely gave their opinion, and the multitude celebrated the glory of the conqueror in two or three loud huzzas *.

The diversions being ended, the chief informed Captain Cook that the provisions on their right hand were a present to Omai; and those on the left, making two-thirds of the whole, were intended to be taken on board for him. Four boats were loaded with the munificence of Feenou, whose favours far exceeded any that Captain Cook had ever received, from the sovereigns of any of the islands which he had visited in the Pacific Ocean. He readily embraced the first opportunity of convincing Feenou that he was not insensible of his liberality †.

The music that accompanied the dances was produced by two hollow logs of wood, by beat-

* A couple of stout wenches soon after stepped forth, and began boxing with great dexterity, but the engagement was of short duration; for in the space of about half a minute, one of them yielded. The victorious heroine was much applauded by the spectators: though our navigators expressed some disapprobation at this part of the entertainment, it did not deter two other females from entering the lists, who seemed to be very spirited girls, and would probably have given each other a good drubbing, if two old women had not interposed to part them. About three thousand spectators were present when these combats were exhibited, and every thing was conducted with the most perfect cordiality and good humour on all sides.

† Feenou having expressed a desire to see the marines perform their exercise, Captain Cook ordered them all ashore on the 20th. They went through their various evolutions, and fired several vollies, which gave great satisfaction to the numerous spectators. The chief, in his turn, entertained our Europeans with a kind of dance, performed by men, in which one hundred and five persons were engaged; each having an instrument in his hand resembling a paddle. With these instruments several flourishes were made, accompanied with a different attitude or movement of the body. After having first ranged themselves in three lines, they successively changed their stations by different evolutions. During the last movement, one of them came forward and performed an antic dance before Captain Cook, which terminated the entertainment.

ing on them with sticks, and a kind of vocal chorus, in which all the performers joined; their song being rather melodious. They preferred the drum to any of our European instruments, and even pronounced that inferior to their own. The music of the French horns disgusted them exceedingly, not only here, but at many of the other islands.

To give them a favourable opinion of the English amusements, Captain Cook ordered some fire-works to be prepared; and, after it was dark, exhibited them in the presence of Feenou, and a vast multitude of people. They were so pleased and astonished at this performance, that they admitted the scale was turned in favour of the English.

As soon as the fire-works were ended, a succession of dances began, which had been prepared by Feenou. A band of music, or chorus, consisting of eighteen men, seated themselves in the centre of a circle formed by the numerous spectators. Four or five of the performers had each pieces of large bamboo, of different length, each played on by one man, who held it almost vertically. By constantly striking the ground, though slowly, with the close end, a variety of notes are produced, according to the different lengths of the instruments, but all of them were of the hollow kind; which was counteracted by one who struck nimbly a piece of the same substance lying upon the ground, furnishing an acute tone. The whole of the band was so judiciously conducted, that the most perfect judge of the modulation of sweet sounds, could not avoid confessing the vast power and effect of this simple harmony.

About a quarter of an hour after the commencement of the concert, twenty women entered the circle, whose heads were decorated with garlands of crimson flowers. They encircled those of the chorus, and began by singing a soft air. The women accompanied their song with many graceful motions of their hands and feet. Dancing to a quicker measure now succeeded, and the rapidity of their music increased; their attitudes and gestures being varied with wonderful dexterity. This ballet was succeeded by one performed by fifteen men; and though some of them appeared old, time had not robbed them of their agility. Towards the conclusion, the rapidity of their music and dancing so much increased, that it became difficult to distinguish their different movements.

After a considerable interval, twelve other men advanced, who were not remarkable for their dexterity. Nine women then exhibited themselves, who sat down opposite the hut where the chief had placed himself. A man immediately rose, and gave the first of the women a blow on the back with both his fists joined. The second and third received the same treatment; but when he came to the fourth, he struck her upon the breast. On seeing this, a person rising up from among the crowd, knocked down this man with a blow on the head, and he was quietly conveyed away: but the other five women did not escape the extraordinary discipline, for they were all treated in the same manner by a person who succeeded him. These women having met with the disapprobation of several of the spectators, were twice compelled to repeat their dance.

The festivity of this memorable night concluded with a dance, in which the principal people assisted. In many respects it resembled the preceding one: but the two last dances in particular, were universally approved by all the spectators. They were perfectly in time, and some of their gestures were so expressive, that it might be truly said, they spoke the language that accompanied them.

On the 21st of May Captain Cook made an excursion into the island of Lefooga, on foot, which he found to be, in many respects, superior to Annamooka, and the plantations more numerous and extensive. On account of the sandiness of the soil, many parts of the country near the sea continue waste; but in the internal part of the island the soil is better, and bears evident marks of improved cultivation. Many of the plantations are so judiciously enclosed as to form spacious public roads. Large spots, covered with the paper mulberry-trees, were observed; and plants and fruit trees were very numerous. To these the captain made some addition, by sowing the seeds of melons, Indian corn, pumpkins, &c. Near the landing place, a mount presented itself, of the height of two or three feet, on which four or five little huts were erected, wherein the bodies of some persons of distinction had been interred. This island is about seven miles in length, but its breadth, in some places, does not exceed three. The shore is either a sandy beach, or a coral rock.

When the captain returned from his excursion, he found a large sailing canoe fastened to the stern

stern of the Resolution. In this canoe he recognised Latooliboula, whom he had seen during his last voyage, at Tongataboo, and whom he then supposed to be the king of that island. He refused to come on board, and continued sitting in his canoe with an air of uncommon gravity. The islanders called him *Areekee*, which signifies king; a title which the Europeans had not heard any of them bestow on Feenou, however extensive his authority over them had appeared to be. Latooliboula continued under the stern till the evening, when he thought proper to depart. Though Feenou was on board the Resolution at this time, neither of these chiefs took the smallest notice of each other.

On the following day some of the natives stole a tarpaulin, and other articles, when Captain Cook applied to Feenou to exert his authority to get them restored; but his application proved ineffectual. On the 23d, as the Europeans were preparing to leave the island, Feenou and Taipa came along-side in a canoe, and informed them that they were going to Vavnoo, an island to the northward of Hapaee. They said it was their intention to procure an additional supply of hogs, and begged them not to sail till their return, which would not exceed four or five days; after which Feenou would accompany them to Tongataboo*.

Captain Cook, finding few attendants to supply the ships with necessaries, resolved to change his station. They accordingly made sail on the 26th for the southward, and hauled into a bay between the north end of Hoolaiva, and the south of Lefooga, and there anchored: Mr. Bligh, having been sent to sound the bay, found in it from fourteen to twenty fathoms water, with a bottom principally of sand. Lefooga and Hoolaiva are separated from each other by a reef of coral rocks, dry at low water. One of the gentlemen, who landed in the last-mentioned island, saw no appearance of cultivation, and only one miserable hut, inhabited by a man employed to catch fish and turtle: this circumstance is the more remarkable, as it communicates so immediately with Lefooga which is well cultivated.

On the 27th, at break of day, the captain made the signal to weigh, but the wind being unsettled and variable, two persons were sent to examine the channels. About noon a large sailing canoe came under their stern, in which was a person named Poulaho, or Futtafaihe, or both; who was declared by the natives on board, to be king of Tongataboo, Annamooka, Hapaee, and the neighbouring islands; at the same time asserting that Feenou was not the king, but a subordinate chief, though he possessed great power. Poulaho was invited on board by the captain, and, being attended by two fat hogs, was not deemed an unwelcome guest. This dignified personage was not very tall, but unwieldy, and almost shapeless with corpulence. He appeared to be about forty, with straight hair, and features very different from those of the majority of the people. He was grave and sensible; and his remarks and questions concerning the objects which presented themselves on board the ship, were pertinent and judicious. Having viewed the cattle, and other novelties, he was requested to walk down into the cabin: some of his retinue objected to this proposal, lest it should happen that some of the people might walk over his head, a circumstance that could not be permitted. Poulaho, however, waved all ceremony, and descended without any previous stipulation. He sat down to dinner with our navigators, but ate and drank very sparingly, and afterwards desired Captain Cook to accompany him on shore. Omai was asked to be one of the party, but he was too faithfully attached to Feenou to be officiously civil to his competitor. Captain Cook attended the chief in his own boat, having first given and received considerable presents. The chief was carried out of the boat by his own subjects, on a board resembling a hand-barrow; after which he seated himself in a small house near the shore. The captain was placed at his side, and his attendants formed a semi-circle before them, on the

* Captain Cook consented to wait the return of this chief, and on the 25th he went into a house where a woman was dressing the eyes of a child who seemed blind. The instruments employed by her were two slender wooden probes, with which she brushed the eyes so severely as to make them bleed. In the same house a woman was seen shaving a child's head with a shark's tooth, fastened into the end of a stick: the hair was first wetted with a rag dipped in water, and then by a proper application of the instrument, she completed the business as effectually as if a razor had been employed. The natives of these islands, however, shave themselves with the assistance of two shells; and though it is attended with a tedious process, it was as common for the English sailors to go ashore to have their beards scraped after the mode of Hapaee, as it was for their chiefs to come on board to be shaved by British barbers.

outside of the house. An old woman sat near the chief, with a fan in her hand, to prevent his being incommoded by the flies. Not any of his people presumed to speak to him standing; and, just before they left him, his attendants paid him obeisance by bowing their heads down to the sole of his foot, and touching it with the upper and under side of the fingers of each hand*.

On the 29th the Europeans weighed with a fine breeze at north-east, followed by several sailing canoes, in one of which was Poulaho, the king. They were also honoured with the company of a chief named Toboueitoa, just arrived from Tongataboo; who, as soon as he came, sent away his canoe, declaring that he and his companions would sleep on board; furnishing, in the whole, a cabin full of visitors for Captain Cook. But he did not repine at the inconvenience, as they brought with them plenty of provisions as presents to him.

On the 31st, at day-break, they stood for the channel between Kotoo, and the reef of rocks to the westward of it, but they found the wind insufficient to lead them through. It now blew fresh, with squalls and rain; and, during the night, the Resolution, by a small change of the wind, fetching too far to the windward, was near running full upon a low sandy isle, named Potooah, encompassed with breakers. The people had fortunately been just ordered upon deck, to put the ship about, and most of them being in their respective stations, the necessary movements were were judiciously and alertly performed, which preserved them from destruction.

The natives on board were so alarmed by this narrow escape, that they were anxious to get ashore; a boat was therefore hoisted out, on the return of day-light, and the officer who commanded her was ordered, after landing them a Kotoo, to sound for anchorage along the reef that projects from that island. They found it necessary to cast anchor in fifty fathoms water, the sandy isle bearing east by north, about the distance of one mile. Here they remained till the 4th of June, where they were frequently visited by the king, by Toobouceitoa, and by the people from the neighbouring islands to traffic with them. Captain Cook landed on Kotoo, to take a survey of it: it is about two miles in length, and in a tolerable state of cultivation, though thinly inhabited. On returning to the boat, they passed some ponds of dirty brackish water, and saw a burying-place.

They weighed on the 4th, and made sail towards Annamooka, where they anchored the next morning almost in the same station which they so had lately occupied. Captain Cook soon after went on shore, and saw the islanders very busy in their plantations. In the course of the day, about two hundred of them assembled on the beach, and traded very briskly. It appeared that they had cultivated large tracts since their last visit, and several places had been sown with melon and cucumber-seeds†.

On the 8th they weighed anchor, and steered for Tongataboo with a gentle breeze, accompanied by fifteen sailing vessels belonging to the islanders, every one of which outran the ships. The royal canoe was distinguished from the rest by a small bundle of red grass, attached to the end of a pole, and fixed in the stern of the canoe, like the British ensign staffs. At five in the afternoon

* After due deliberation the navigators resolved to return to Annamooka by the same route which they had so lately experienced to be a safe one; and would have sailed the next morning, if the wind had not been very unsettled. Poulaho came early on board, with a red-feathered cap as a present to Captain Cook. These curious caps are composed of the tail-feathers of the tropic bird, intermixed with the red feathers of the paroquet, and have the form of a semicircle. The chief left the ship in the evening; but his brother, and some of his attendants, remained all night on board

† On the 6th Feenou arrived from Vavaoo, and propagated a report that several canoes, laden with hogs and other provisions, had been lost in coming from that island in the late tempestuous weather. The truth of this tale was very much doubted; the real reason being supposed the impossibility of procuring at Vavaoo the expected supplies. On the succeeding morning Poulaho, and some other chiefs arrived, when Captain Cook happened to be ashore with Feenou, who now acknowledged the impropriety of his conduct in assuming a character to which he was not entitled: he declared that Poulaho was the acknowledged sovereign of Tongataboo and the adjacent isles. The captain left him, and repaired to the king, whom he found sitting with a few of the natives before him; but as great numbers were hastening to pay their respects to him, the circle rapidly increased. Feenou approached, and placed himself among the rest that sat before Poulaho, as attendants on his majesty. He at first seemed abashed and agitated, but afterwards appeared to be collected. Some conversation passed between these two chiefs, who attended the captain on board to dinner, but only Poulaho sat at table. Feenou made his obeisance in the usual submissive mode, and then retired from the cabin. It was now evident, beyond a doubt, that he could neither eat nor drink in the king's presence.

Woman of Tongataboo

Woman of Tongataboo

Barron sculp.

afternoon two
of which was
only five inh
Hoonga Tong
by the directi
sensibly drawn
innumerable r
the sea. Wi
unable to pre
of them: nor
keep clear of
Being assu
Tongataboo,
water further
was true, and

Reception at T
peans from
reside—Int
Haiva—Fi
—The King
Omai intery
scribed—E
preparing
Method of
Description

THEY had
gataboo,
island, accom
officers. The
them on the
little house ne
area before it,
at his service
They had not
great number
them, and sea
root of the *kav*
he ordered it
tributed amo
who performe
paratory to it
vourite liquor
yams, were al
portions. Al
given to some

afternoon two small islands were descried; one of which was called Hoonga Hapaee, and had only five inhabitants; the other was named Hoonga Tonga, and had no inhabitants. Steering by the direction of their pilot, they were insensibly drawn upon a large flat, on which lay innumerable rocks of coral, below the surface of the sea. With the utmost caution, they were unable to prevent the ship from striking on one of them: nor did the Discovery, though behind, keep clear of them.

Being assured by several of the natives of Tongataboo, that they should meet with deep water further in, they found their information was true, and about four o'clock found good anchoring ground. They weighed, and stood in till dark, when they anchored in nine fathoms water. While they were plying up to the harbour, the king continued sailing round them in his canoe; a number of small canoes was at the same time among the ships, two of which, not getting instantly out of the way of his royal vessel, he ran over them with the most perfect unconcern.

They arrived at their intended station about two in the afternoon, on the 10th of June. It was a convenient place, formed by the shore of Tongataboo, and two little islands. Here both the ships anchored over a sandy bottom, where the depth of water was ten fathoms.

SECTION VIII.

Reception at Tongataboo—Distribution of Pork, Yams, and Kava—The Natives flock to the Europeans from all Quarters—Excursion of the Captains—Description of the Village where the Chiefs reside—Interviews with Mareewagee and Toubou—Presents from the King's Son—A grand Haiva—Fire-Works, Wrestling, Boxing—Presents to the Chiefs—Poulaho, Feenou, &c. arrested—The King's Present and Haiva—Some Officers robbed of their Musquets, &c. by the Natives—Omai interferes—Probable Consequences of this Outrage—A Visit to Poulaho—A Fiatooka described—Entertainment at Poulaho's House—His Mourning Ceremony—Disgusting Method of preparing Kava—Account of Oneyy—Messrs. King and Anderson entertained by Futtafaiha—Method of dressing and carving Hogs—Observations on the Country—Prepare for Departure—Description of the Island.

THEY had not been long at anchor off Tongataboo, when Captain Cook landed on the island, accompanied by Omai and several of the officers. The king, who was waiting to receive them on the beach, conducted them to a neat little house near the woods, having an extensive area before it, which he assured the captain was at his service during his continuance in the island. They had not been long in the house, when a great number of the natives assembled before them, and seated themselves upon the area. A root of the *kava* plant being presented to the king, he ordered it to be divided into pieces, and distributed among several persons of both sexes, who performed the operation of chewing it, preparatory to its constituting a bowl of their favourite liquor. A baked hog, and several baked yams, were also produced, and divided into ten portions. All these shares, except one, were given to some of those who were present; that which remained undisposed of, being probably reserved for the king himself. The liquor was next formally distributed: the first cup being presented to his majesty, he directed it to be given to a person who sat near him: the second was also brought to him, which he thought proper to keep: the third was tendered to Captain Cook; but as he was not much delighted with the delicate mode of preparing it, he politely transferred the intended compliment to Omai.

The remainder was portioned out to different people; several, however, withdrew, being prohibited from eating and drinking in his majesty's presence. Soon afterwards the greater part of them went away. It is somewhat remarkable, that the servants who distributed the meat and the kava, delivered it sitting, not only to the king, but to the other partakers.

Captain Cook, before he returned on board, endeavoured to find a watering-place, and at length

length discovered a pool, containing more excellent fluid of that kind than any he had ever tasted in these islands. The same morning a tent was pitched near the house appropriated by his majesty's order to their use. The horses and cattle were landed, and the observatory erected. The inhabitants, who flocked from all quarters with hogs, yams, cocoa-nuts, and other necessaries, were now become extremely numerous. Feenou residing in the neighbourhood, gave our Europeans daily proofs of his opulence and liberality, by the continuance of his valuable donations: Poulaho was equally attentive to them in this respect.

They were now informed of a person named Mareewagee, who was of very exalted rank, and equal, if not superior to Poulaho himself; but, being advanced in years, he chose a retired life, and appeared to have no inclination to honour them with a visit. This intelligence exciting the curiosity of Captain Cook, he signified to Poulaho his intention of waiting upon Mareewagee. The king agreed to accompany him; and they accordingly set out the next morning in the pinnace, Captain Clerke making one of the party in his own boat. Proceeding to the eastward of the small isles which form the harbour, they entered a spacious bay, and after rowing about three miles, landed amidst a great concourse of people, who received them with shouts and acclamations.

The crowd instantly separated, that Poulaho might pass without interruption, who took our Europeans into a small enclosure, and exchanged the piece of cloth he then wore, for a new piece folded with great delicacy: an old women assisted in this arrangement, and threw a large mat over his cloth. Being now asked where Mareewagee was, the gentlemen were astonished at the answer to that interrogation, which was, that he was gone down to the ships. He requested them, however, to accompany him to a *malaee*, or house of public resort; and, coming to a large area before it, he seated himself in the path, while they walked up to the house, and sat down in the front. After waiting, and repeating their enquiries, by the medium of Omai, whether they were to be introduced to Mareewagee; they received no answer. It was therefore suspected that the aged chief was purposely concealed from them, and they retired to their boats, much chagrined at their disappointment. But it afterwards appeared that the whole transaction originated from Omai's misunderstanding, and mistating the information which had been given him concerning the old chief*.

On the 13th, about noon, Mareewagee came within a small distance of our Europeans' temporary residence on shore, attended by a multitude of people of all ranks. In the afternoon, the two captains, and several of the other officers, accompanied by Feenou, went ashore to visit him. They saw a person sitting under a tree, with about forty yards of cloth spread before him, round which considerable numbers of people were seated. They supposed this to be the great personage, but Feenou gave them authentic information, and informed them that another, who was sitting on a piece of mat, was Mareewagee. To him they were introduced by Feenou, and he received them very graciously; requesting them to sit down by him. The name of the chief who sat under the tree, was Toobou, whom we shall hereafter call old Toobou, to distinguish him from Captain Furneau's friend. Both he and Mareewagee were venerable to behold! the latter was slender in his person, and seemed about seventy years of age. Old Toobou, though younger than Mareewagee, was corpulent, and almost blind from a disorder in his eyes.

Captain Cook, expecting to meet with only one chief, had provided but one present, which he divided between the two; but as it happened to be pretty considerable, both of them appeared perfectly satisfied. The navigators then entertained them about an hour with the music of two French horns and a drum; after which Captain Clerke fired off a pistol, which he took from his pocket, at which they seemed to be exceedingly delighted. Before the gentlemen took their leave of the two chiefs, the large piece of cloth was rolled up, and presented to Captain Cook, together with some cocoa-nuts.

Mareewagee went to see our Europeans who were

* The place our gentlemen visited was a pleasant village, delightfully situated on the banks of the bay, where many of the principal persons of the island reside. Near the public roads are some large houses, with spacious grass-plats before them, which were said to belong to the king, and were probably the places where public assemblies were respectively convened.

were stationed on shore, and was struck with admiration at the sight of the cattle; the cross-cut saw also rivetted his attention. Towards noon, Poulaho came on board, attended by his son about twelve years of age: though the father dined with Captain Cook, the son was not permitted to sit down with him.

On the 15th Captain Cook received a message from old Toobou, requesting to see him on shore. He and Omai waited on him, whom they found sitting under the shade of a tree, with a large piece of cloth spread out before him. He desired them to approach him, and informed Omai that the cloth, some cocoa-nuts, and red feathers were intended as a present from him to Captain Cook. The latter thanked him for the favour, and requested him to go on board with him.

Being informed that young Fattafaihe, the king's son, desired to see him, Captain Cook obeyed the summons, and found the young prince and Omai seated under a canopy of fine cloth; with a large piece of a coarser kind, spread before and under them. A large boar was placed on one side, and a quantity of cocoa-nuts on the other. Many people sat round the cloth, among whom was Mareewagee, and others of eminence. As Poulaho and the captain were friends, the son requested to be comprehended in this friendship, and as a testimony of the captain's consent, that he would accept of the prince's present. Captain Cook readily agreed to this proposal, and invited them all to dine with him on board; in consequence of which the young prince, old Toobou, Mareewagee, several subordinate chiefs, and two old ladies accompanied the captain to the ship.

Mareewagee was dressed in a new piece of cloth, with six patches of red feathers on it: on his arrival on board, he put it off, and presented it to Captain Cook. Dinner being served up, not one of them would even sit down, or eat a morsel, as they were all *taboo*, intimating a prohibition. Why they were thus restrained at this time was not accounted for. Captain Cook was convinced, from several circumstances, of the supreme dignity of Poulaho and his son; he also now discovered that old Toobou and Mareewagee were brothers, and that they were both men of immense property, and in high estimation with the people.

Captain Cook, on his landing, found Poulaho in the house near the tent, who immediately gave him a hog and a quantity of yams. In the evening a number of islanders came, and having seated themselves in a circle, sung to accompany the music of bamboo drums, placed in the centre. They burned the leaves of the *wharra* palm to produce a sufficient quantity of light*.

The Captain and Mr. Gore, happening to meet Feenou on their return from their excursion, conducted him and another chief on board to dinner; but, on its being served up, neither of them would eat a morsel, alledging that they were *taboo avy;* but on discovering that a pig and some yams had been dressed without *avy* water, they made a very hearty meal; and drank freely of wine, when they were assured that no water was in it. Hence it was inferred, that the use of water had, for some particular reason, been forbidden; or perhaps they did not like the water they then were accustomed to use, it being taken from the places where the islanders bathed.

The following day a grand *hatva* was given by Mareewagee, to which our navigators were invited. Before the temporary hut of this chief, a large space had been cleared for the express purpose. In the morning crowds of the natives came in from the country, each of which bore on his shoulder a long pole, at each end of which a yam was suspended. These poles and yams were deposited on each side of the open space, forming two large heaps, and were deco-

* In the mean time Mr. Anderson, with several others, took an excursion into the country. Westward of the tent, the soil was entirely uncultivated for about two miles, though covered with trees and bushes. Beyond this, a considerable plain extends itself, on which are cocoa-trees and small plantations. Near the creek, which runs west of the tent, the land is entirely flat, and partly overflowed every tide by the sea. When the water retires, a great number of holes of yellowish mud appear, whence issue innumerable small crabs, which are so remarkably nimble, that they instantaneously disappear, and baffle the dexterity of the natives, who endeavour to capture them. Not far from hence are the ruins of two causeways, and a kind of circus, which appear to have been of some antiquity.

On the 10th Captain Cook and Mr. Gore took a walk into the country, where they had an opportunity of seeing the whole process of making cloth. The manufacturers, who are of the female sex, fabricate the whole of this curious article from the slender stalks or trunks of the paper-mulberry, which seldom grows higher than seven feet, and does not exceed the thickness of four fingers.

rated with small fish of different kinds; they were Mareewagee's present to the Captains Cook and Clerke. About eleven o'clock the islanders began to exhibit various dances, which they call *mai*. The band of music at first consisted of about seventy men as a chorus, amidst whom were placed three instruments, somewhat resembling drums. On one of these instruments, which is named *naffa* by the natives, they sit and beat vigorously, with two cylindrical pieces of wood, as thick as the wrist, and about a foot in length, producing a rude but powerful sound. They frequently vary the strength and rapidity of their beating, and modulate the tones by striking occasionally towards the end or middle of the instrument. There were four ranks of twenty-four men each in the first dance. These had each a small thin wooden instrument, called a *pagge*, about two feet in length, with which they made variety of motions. A quicker dance was then begun, when the whole body, in a twofold division, retreated, and then advanced, forming a kind of circular figure, which concluded the dance.

In the second dance, forty men formed a chorus, with only two drums; the performers consisting of two ranks, the foremost of which contained seventeen persons, and the other fifteen. Feenou was in the middle of the first rank; they danced, and repeated sentences with short intervals, for about half an hour, and with great exactness and regularity. Towards the conclusion, the rear-rank divided, came round, and occupied the place of the front, afterwards resuming its pristine situation.

Three drums were then introduced, and seventy men composed the chorus to the third dance. This consisted of two ranks, of sixteen men each, with young Toobou at their head, who was splendidly decorated with a garment covered with red feathers. This dance consisted of a variety of figures, which were conducted with great dexterity; and was probably considered as a capital performance, as some of the principal personages were engaged in it; one of the drums being beat by Futtafaiha, the king's brother; another by Feenou, and the third by Mareewagee himself.

In the fourth and last dance, forty men formed a chorus, with two drums, the performers consisting of sixty men. After a preliminary harangue, they recited sentences alternately with the chorus, and divided into two parties, with their backs to each other; formed again, shifted their ranks, divided, and retreated. Soon after which the dance was terminated. These amusements continued from about eleven to three o'clock; the number of spectators, among the islanders and stragglers, amounting to about ten thousand, all within the compass of a quarter of a mile.

In the evening they were entertained with the *bomai*, or night dancers, on a large area before the temporary residence of Feenou. Their performance continued about three hours; twelve persons representing such manoeuvres as were exhibited at Hapaee. In two of them, performed by women, a party of men formed a circle within theirs. In another, consisting of twenty-four men, many new motions were displayed, which drew forth general plaudits. In one of the dances Feenou himself appeared, at the head of fifty men, handsomely clad in linen, with small pictures hanging round his neck*.

While the natives were waiting for this evening's exhibition, many of them passed the afternoon in wrestling and boxing. A person desirous of engaging in the former, gives a challenge by crossing the ground in a kind of measured pace, and smartly striking on the elbow

* Though the whole entertainment was conducted with more order than could have been reasonably expected, the natives could not be deterred from exercising their plundering talents. In the middle of the day they attempted to take an anchor from off the Discovery's bows, but without effect. On the 18th an islander got out of a canoe into the Resolution, and stole a pewter bason, but being detected was brought along-side the ship; three old women in the canoe made loud lamentations over the prisoner, violently beating their breasts, but could not shed a single tear among them.

The same day Captain Cook bestowed some presents on Mareewagee, in return for those he had received from that chief the preceding day. He also ordered the marines to go through their exercise, on the spot where the dances were performed; and in the evening some fire-works were exhibited in the same place. These were intended to compensate for the variety of entertainments that had been introduced for the gratification of the Europeans. The platoon firing pleased them much, but when they saw the water-rockets, they were filled with admiration. Poulaho sat behind every one, no person being permitted to sit behind him; but, to prevent any obstruction to his view, a kind of lane was made by the spectators, from him to the space allotted for playing off the fire-works.

joint of one arm, which, being bent, produces a hollow sound. If no opponent starts, he returns to his seat; but if an antagonist appears, they meet with marks of complacency and good nature, and deliberately adjust the piece of cloth that is fastened round the waist. They then sieze each other by this cloth, and he who successfully draws his opponent to him, instantly endeavours to lift him on his breast, and throw him on his back; and if he can turn round with him three times in that position, he receives great applause for his dexterity. When they are more equally matched, they close and attempt to throw each other by their extraordinary skill or exertion. When one of them is thrown, he immediately retires; while the conqueror sits down for about a minute, and then repairs to the side from which he came, where the victory is loudly proclaimed. If several antagonists afterwards appear, he may select which he pleases to engage with; and if he should throw his competitor, challenge again, till he himself is vanquished; when the people on the opposite side chant the song of victory in favour of their champion.

Those who are inclined to box, advance sideways, changing the side at every pace, having one arm stretched out before, and the other behind; and holding in one arm a piece of cord, which they wrap closely about it. Their blows are given with great vigour, and aimed principally at the head. Not only boys engage in these exercises, little girls often box with great obstinacy. Some of the English sailors contended with them in both exercises, but were generally overcome*.

Captain Cook now walked out with Omai, and during their jaunt they found six or seven women at supper together; two of whom were fed by the others. Asking the reason of this circumstance, the women replied, *taboo mattee*. On further enquiry it appeared, that one of them, about two months before, had washed the corpse of a chief, and became thereby disqualified from handling any food for five months; and the other had performed a similar office on the dead body of a person of inferior rank, and was therefore restricted for a shorter space of time.

Early in the morning of the 21st, Poulaho came on board to invite Captain Cook to an entertainment, which he intended to bestow on that day; he had already besmeared his head with pigment, to communicate a red colour for the embellishment of his hair. The Captain attended him to the shore, and found the islanders very busy in fixing four very long posts, at the distance of about two feet from each other; after which the space between the posts was filled up with yams, sticks being fastened across, to prevent the posts from separating by the weight of the inclosed yams. They continued to fasten others to them till each pile was about thirty feet in height. On the top of one of the piles they placed two baked hogs; and, on the top of the other, a living one: they tied another by the legs half way up. Having accumulated some other heaps of yams, and a quantity of bread-fruit, on each side of the area, a turtle, and a great quantity of excellent fish were added: the whole of this collection, with some red feathers, a mat, and a piece of cloth, consititued the king's present to Captain Cook†.

That

* Captain Cook came to a resolution of distributing the following animals before his departure; on the 19th he gave a bull and a cow to the king; to Mareewagee, a Cape ram and two ewes; and to Feenou a horse and a mare. Omai explained to them their respective uses, as far as his limited knowledge in those particulars would permit him. It soon appeared that some of the natives were dissatisfied with the allotment of the animals, for the next morning a kid, and two turkey-cocks were missing. To procure their restoration, Captain Cook ordered three canoes to be seized that were along-side the ships: then, going on shore, he found his majesty, his majesty's brother, Feenou, and some other chiefs in his temporary house; he immediately placed a guard over them, and intimated to them that they must continue under arrest, till the turkeys, the kid, and the other articles which had at different times been stolen, were restored to them. They assured him that they should all be instantly returned, and sat down to drink *kava* with the most perfect composure.

Soon afterwards an ax and an iron wedge were delivered to them; not a great while after, the kid and one of the turkeys were restored; and, on their promising that the other turkey should be brought back the next morning, the prisoners and the canoes were pronounced at liberty.

† About one o'clock the *mai*, or dances commenced; the first of which nearly resembled that performed at the beginning of Mareewagee's entertainment; the second was conducted by young Toobou, in which four or five women were introduced, who were not in the least inferior to the men in the exactness and regularity of their motions. Towards the end, the performers divided to make way for the introduction of two champions, who brandished their menacing

That the Captain might be present during the whole of this exhibition, he dined on shore: Poulaho sat down with him, but neither ate nor drank; a female of superior rank to himself being present: when this lady had dined, she walked up to Poulaho, who applied his hands to her feet; after which she retired. Poulaho then dipped his fingers into a glass of wine, when all the attendants paid him immediate obeisance. He requested an exhibition of the fire-works in the evening, which was readily complied with; but, as they had been considerably damaged, they did not answer the expectations of the beholders.

Poulaho's *haiva* being ended, and the populace having satisfied their curiosity, most of them repaired to their respective avocations. It was apparent, however, that some thieves were still remaining to pillage our Europeans, by the continual instances of their depredations. Some of the officers of both ships, having made an excursion into the interior parts of the island, returned on the 22nd, after an absence of two days. They had taken their muskets, some ammunition, and several of their most favourite commodities; the whole of which the natives had the dexterity to steal from them in the course of their short journey. Disagreeable consequences were expected from this outrage; for, when the plundered travellers returned, they employed Omai, without consulting Captain Cook, to complain to the king of the daring violence. Not knowing how the Captain would proceed in this affair, and fearing he might again lay him under restraint, he absented himself early the next morning, and Feenou followed his example; not a chief of authority being then remaining in the neighbourhood*.

Our navigators had now recruited their ships, and repaired their sails, and having little more to expect of the produce of the island, the captain proposed to continue no longer in it than till the 5th of July, to have the chance of observing an eclipse on that day.

Being now at leisure, Captain Cook with a party, accompanied by Poulaho, proceeded in a boat to Moo, where he, and the other men of consequence usually reside. Rowing up the inlet, they saw fourteen canoes fishing in company; in one of which was Poulaho's son. Having succeeded in taking some fine mullets, they caused about a dozen of them to be conveyed into their boat.

Landing at the bottom of the bay, they were conducted to one of Poulaho's houses, which, though of considerable magnitude, appeared to be his private place of residence, and was situated within a plantation. The king seated himself at one end of the house, and his visitors sat down in a semicircle at the other end. A bowl of *kava* was immediately prepared, and some yams ordered to be baked for them †.

After refreshing themselves with some provisions which they had brought from the ships,

menacing clubs; to these succeeded two other men with clubs, vaunting of their skill and activity. Boxing and wrestling then began, and one man entered the lists with a large ponderous club, but could find no opponent hardy enough to engage him in so rough an amusement. In the evening the *bomai*, or night dances began, in which the King himself appeared in the character of an English manufacturer; but neither of these dances afforded much satisfaction.

* The Captain was irritated at this business, and reprimanded Omai for having dared to interfere in it. This remonstrance induced him to endeavour to bring back his friend Feenou; and he succeeded in his negociation, by promising lenient measures, to procure a speedy return of the stolen articles. Relying on this declaration, Feenou came back in the evening, and was favourably received. Poulaho also made his appearance on the following day. Though the Captain adopted no measures to recover the purloined articles, the whole of them were returned, through the interposition of Feenou, except one musket, and a few other trivial articles. The tools and implements which had been stolen from the workmen were also restored.

† While these were getting ready, some of the Europeans, a few of the king's attendants, and Omai, went to take a view of a fiatooka, or burying-place, at a little distance from the habitation. It appertained to the king, and consisted of three houses, situated on a rising ground, with a smaller habitation not far off, all ranged longitudinally. The largest of the three first was the middle house, which was placed in a square: the other houses were situated on little mounts. On the floors, and on the tops of the mounts, fine loose pebbles were placed; and the whole was inclosed by large flat stones of coral rock. One of the houses was open on the side, and had two wooden busts of men, rudely carved, within it, which were said to be memorials of some chiefs who had been buried there. Such monuments, it was conjectured, were not often raised, for these appeared to have been erected many ages before.

It was said that dead bodies had been buried in each of these houses, but no marks of them were to be distinguished. The carved head of an Otaheitan canoe, which had been driven ashore on the coast, was deposited in one of them. On the rising ground many large trees were planted, some of which were named etoa: they strongly resemble the cypress, and had a very solemn effect.

the

They went farther into the country; the greater part of which was cultivated, and many of the plantations enclosed. Travelling here was very commodious, the roads being excellent, and the country level; they were conducted to several pools and springs, the waters of which were generally brackish or stinking.

The next day Captain Cook went to pay a visit to Toobou, Captain Furneau's friend, who had a handsome house in the neighbourhood. Here he found a company preparing a morning draught. The king presented the Captain with a living hog, a baked hog, a quantity of yams, and a large piece of cloth. Returning to his majesty, they found him and his attendants engaged in drinking the second bowl of *kava*. That business being dispatched, he informed Omai that he was instantly going to perform a mourning ceremony, called *tooge*, in memory of a son who had been a considerable time dead; and desired the Captain and others to accompany him, to which they readily acquiesced *.

The Europeans began to expect the mourning ceremony was now on the point of commencing, when, to their great surprize, as soon as the *kava* bowl was exhausted, they all rose up and dispersed; and Poulaho informed the party who accompanied him, that he was ready to attend them to the ships.

Our navigators had witnessed the drinking of *kava* at other islands, but no where so frequently as here. The *kava* is a species of pepper, which they cultivate and esteem a valuable article. It has large heart-shaped leaves, and jointed stalks. Only the root of it is used at the Friendly Islands: after being dug up, it is delivered to the servants, each of which chews his portion, which he afterwards spits into a piece of plantain leaf; the different mouthfuls are afterwards collected together, and deposited in a wooden bowl; about a quarter of a pint of this beverage is usually put into each cup. It has no perceptible effect on those who use it frequently, but on some of the Europeans who deigned to drink it, it operated like spirituous liquors, occasioning intoxication or stupefaction.

Receiving information from Poulaho and others, that good water was to be procured at Onevy, a small island near the inlet, our navigators landed there to taste it, but found it extremely brackish.

The next day several of the natives assaulted some of the Europeans who were sawing planks, which occasioned them to be fired on by the sentry; three of them were taken, and one was supposed to be wounded; the former were imprisoned till night, when they were punished and set at liberty. It was afterwards proved that one of them had felt the effect of fire-arms, which induced them all to behave with more decency and circumspection.

Mr. Anderson, in relating an excursion he had engaged in with Mr. King, says, that on the 30th of June, he accompanied that gentleman to Futtafaihe's house. Soon after they arrived, a hog was killed by repeated strokes upon the head, and the hair was scraped off with pieces of slit bamboo. An oven had been previously prepared for baking it, by digging a large hole in the earth, the bottom of which was covered with small stones, which were intended to be rendered red-hot by kindling a fire over them; some of these stones were then wrapped in leaves

* The king quitted the house, attended by two old women, and cloathed himself with new apparel; over which he placed a ragged mat, and his attendants were habited in a somewhat similar manner. Thus equipped they marched off, preceded by about ten persons in the same uniform; each of them also having a green bough about his neck. Poulaho, who carried the bough in his hand till he approached the principal scene of action, then also put it about his neck. They then entered a small inclosure, in which a house was observed with a man sitting before it; and, as they entered, they pulled the branches from their necks, and threw them away. The king seated himself, and others sat before him as usual; and, by the arrival of other persons, the circle increased to upwards of a hundred, chiefly old men, all habited as above described. The company being assembled, a large root of *kava* was produced by one of the king's servants, and a bowl of sufficient magnitude to contain five or six gallons. Many persons instantly engaged in the operation of chewing the root, and the receptacle was soon filled with liquor up to the brim. Others employed themselves in preparing drinking cups from plantain leaves.

The first cup that was filled being presented to the king, he ordered it to be given to another person; the second being presented to him, he drank it; and the third was offered to Captain Cook. A cup was then given to several others, till the liquor was exhausted. As the cup was emptied from time to time, it was thrown upon the ground, whence it was taken up, and carried to be filled again. During this time, the chief and his whole circle appeared extremely grave, and hardly a syllable was uttered among them.

of the bread-fruit tree, and placed in the hog's belly, stuffing in a quantity of leaves to prevent their falling out: the carcase was then placed upon some sticks laid across the stones, and covered with plantain leaves. The earth was afterwards dup up all around, and the oven being effectually closed, no farther assistance was required.

They afterwards amused themselves by walking about the country, but saw nothing remarkable, except a fiatooka of about thirty feet high; a number of etooa trees, at a small distance, being almost covered with *Ternate* bats, making a most horrible noise. On their return to Futtafaihe's house, the baked hog was produced, accompanied with cocoa-nuts and yams. The animal was cut up in a masterly manner by the person who dressed it, with a knife made of split bamboo. Dinner being ended, the party accompanied Foutafaihe, with his attendants, towards the spot where Poulaho's mourning-ceremony was performed; a kind of repetition of the same solemn rites ensued by way of condolence, which, upon enquiry, they found was performed in memory of a chief who had long since died at Vavahoo, whose departure was still to be farther commemorated.

They were entertained in the evening with a pig for supper, dressed and garnished like the hog. After they had finished their repast, a large quantity of cloth was brought for them to sleep in; but they were disturbed in their repose by a singular instance of luxury, much indulged among the superior ranks of people, that of being severely thumped while they are asleep. Two women who sat by Futtafaihe, performed this operation, which they call *tooge tooge*, by striking his body and legs with both fists till he fell asleep; and, with some intervals, continued the practice during the night: if strong symptoms are perceived of a probability of his awakening, they resume it. That such a practice should operate as an opiate, is a demonstration of what habit may effect. Nothing further occurred during this little excursion, which Mr. Anderson thought sufficiently important to be related.

Captain Cook had waited at this island on account of the approaching eclipse; but on the 2nd of July he discovered that some accident had rendered his micrometer useless; he therefore caused all his cattle, and other animals, except those that were destined to remain, to be conveyed on board. They took up their anchor the next day, and ordered the ships to be ready for the first favourable wind to take them through the narrows. The king, dining with them that day, took particular notice of the plates, which the Captain observing, offered him the choice of one, either of pewter or earthen-ware. He preferred the first, and mentioned the uses to which he intended to apply it. Whenever he should visit any of the other islands, he said he should leave this plate behind him at Tongataboo, as his representative, that people might do it homage in his absence; and added, that this singular honour had hitherto been conferred on a wooden bowl, in which he washed his hands. Another use to which he meant to apply it, was to discover a thief; expressing the most perfect conviction, that if it should be touched by the guilty person, he would drop down dead immediately; and if he refused to touch it, such refusal was a satisfactory proof of his guilt.

On the 5th of July, the day of the eclipse, occasional clouds and showers prevented an accurate observation of it. But this disappointment was the less to be lamented, as the longitude was sufficiently determined by lunar observations. The eclipse being over, the Europeans packed up their instruments, and conveyed them on board.

Mr. Anderson has given a description of this island, of which the following is the substance. Amsterdam, Tongataboo, or Tongo (as it is sometimes called by the natives) is about twenty leagues in circumference. It may with propriety be called a low island, the only eminence part to be observed from a ship, being on the south-east point, notwithstanding which many gentle rising and declining grounds are perceivable by those on shore. Though the general appearance of the country does not exhibit a beautiful landscape, it conveys an idea of the most exuberant fertility. The climate of Tongataboo, from the situation towards the tropic, is more variable than countries far within that line; and the winds are generally from some point between south and east. The vegetable productions never shed their foliage all at once; but every leaf, as it falls, is succeeded by another, conveying the appearance of universal spring.

A coral rock seems to be the basis of the island, that being the only sort which presents itself on the

the shore. In cultivated places, it is generally of a loose black colour, apparently produced by rotten vegetables. The principal of the cultivated fruits, are plantains, the jambu, and the eeeve, the latter being a kind of plum. They have two sorts of yams, and a large root, called kappe. They have cocoa-nut trees in abundance, and three other sorts of palms; sugar-cane, gourds, bamboo, turmeri, and a species of fig called matte.

The quadrupeds of this island are hogs, dogs, and a small quantity of rats. Fowls of a very large breed are domesticated here.

Among the birds are parrots, parroquets, cockoos, king-fishers, and a green bird of the thrush kind, which has a strong melodious voice. The other land birds are small rails, large violet-coloured cootes, with red bald crowns, two sorts of fly-catchers, and three sorts of pigeons. Among the water-fowl are considered the ducks seen at Annamooka, tropic birds, noddies, blue and white herons, white terns, a large spotted plover, and a small blueish curlew*.

SECTION IX.

Solemnity at Mooa called Notche—Extraordinary Processions and Ceremonies—Manner of Supping, &c. at the King's House—Second Day's Ceremony—Captain Cook ventures himself in the Midst of the Assembly—His Reception there—Arrival at Eooa—Some Account of the Island—Quit the Friendly Islands—Refreshments in great Variety to be procured there—Keppel's Island—Boscawen's Island—Account of Vavaoo, Hamoa, and Feejee—Calculating Distances by Time—Omai incapable of accurate Information—Description of the Inhabitants—Their Diseases—Character—Puncturing and Painting—Habits—Ornaments, &c.

THOUGH the navigators were ready to sail, they had not sufficient day-light to turn through the narrows; and the morning and evening flood happening at improper times, it was thought expedient to wait two or three days, unless they should be fortunate enough to have a leading wind. This delay gave them an opportunity of attending a public solemnity, to which the king had invited them on the 8th. Poulaho had informed them that his son was then to be initiated into certain privileges; one of which was that of eating with his father, an honour which he had not hitherto enjoyed.

At about eight in the morning they arrived at Mooa, where the solemnity was to be exhibited, and saw the king, with a number of attendants sitting before him, within a small dirty enclosure. They were engaged in preparing a bowl of *kava*. They mixed with the people, to observe what preparations were making for the ceremony, which was shortly expected to begin. About ten they assembled in a large area before the great house. At the end of a road, leading into this area, several men appeared, armed with spears and clubs, perpetually reciting short sentences, in melancholy accents. While this continued, many people came down the road, each having a yam fastened to the middle of a pole, which they laid down before those who were repeating the sentences. At length the king and prince arrived, and seated themselves upon the area; when the Europeans were requested to sit down by them, to take off their hats, and to untie their hair.

The bearers of the yams afterwards formed themselves into companies of ten or twelve each, and marched rapidly across the place; each company headed by a man who had a club or spear, and defended on the right by several others, armed with different weapons. About two hun-

* Among the animals of the reptile or insect tribe, are sea-snakes, (though often seen on shore) about a yard long, with alternate black and white circles; some scorpions, centipedes, and green guanoes. There are also some beautiful moths and butterflies, and some very large spiders. Though the sea abounds with fish, those in the greatest plenty are mullets, soles, silver fish, old wives, parrot fish, bonnetos, rays, and some devil fish. An endless variety of shell-fish are found among the reefs and shoals, among which are the hammer oyster, pearl-shell oyster, and a gigantic cockle.

dred

dred and fifty persons walked in the procession, which was closed by a man carrying a living pigeon on a perch.

They stopped before a *morai* or *fiatooka* of one house standing upon a mount, about the distance of a quarter of a mile from where they first assembled. Here they deposited the yams, and gathered them into bundles. When they returned to the king, he desired Captain Cook to order the boat's crew not to stir from the boat, for every thing would soon be *taboo*, and if they should be seen walking about, they would be knocked down with clubs.

Not approving of this restriction, however, the Captain stole out to observe what was going forward. Very few people were to be seen, except those who were prepared to attend the ceremony; some having small poles in their hands, with sticks fastened to them. These men were advancing towards the *morai*. Captain Cook was pursuing the same road, and was frequently stopped by the natives, who vociferated *taboo*. Still he ventured to go forward, till he came in sight of the *morai*. Being again strongly urged to go back, and not knowing the consequence of a refusal, he complied*.

After some further uninteresting particulars, the grand procession, which marched from the other *morai*, now began to come in. As they entered the area, they prostrated themselves on the grass to the right of the shed, and deposited their pretended heavy burthens, the poles facing round to the prince.

A profound silence then ensued, after which a man in the front of the area, began an oration, breaking at regular stated periods one of the poles which had been brought in. The oration being finished, the people who had been sitting before the shed separated, to make a passage for the prince and his attendants; after which the assembly closed.

The supper for our navigators, which consisted of fish and yams, was got ready by about seven o'clock. The king supped with them, and drank so freely of brandy and water, that he was conducted to bed with a sufficient dose†.

About noon the Captain repaired to the palace to dine, by appointment, on pigs and yams. The drowsy monarch was roused to partake of what he had appointed for their entertainment, when two mullets and some shell-fish were introduced, as if intended for his separate portion; but he added it to their fare, sat down with them, and made a very hearty meal.

Dinner being over, they were informed that the ceremony would soon begin, and Captain Cook seemed determined to mix with the actors themselves, not choosing any longer to be a peeper from behind the curtain. With this view he proceeded to the *morai*, the scene of the solemnity. He was frequently requested to return, but paying no regard to the admonitions he received, he was permitted to pass on. He was, however, repeatedly desired to leave the place; but, finding him determined to stay, they requested him to uncover his shoulders as theirs

* The number of persons at the *fiatooka* continued increasing, till at length they quitted their sitting posture, and marched off in procession, in pairs; forming in the whole one hundred and eight pairs, who were principally men of rank. Having seen them all pass, our navigators repaired to Poulaho's house, and saw him going out They were not permitted to follow him, though they were immediately conducted to the place allotted to them, behind a fence adjoining to the area of the *fiatooka*.

Arriving at their station, they saw two or three hundred people sitting on the grass, near the end of the opening into the *morai;* and others were continually joining them. At length several men arrived with small poles and branches, and leaves of the cocoa-nut tree. When they appeared, an old man seated himself in the road, and pronounced a long oration in a serious majestic tone. He then retired, and others began to erect a shed or hut with the materials already mentioned. Their work being finished, they squatted down for a moment before it; then rose up, and joined the rest of the company. Poulaho's son then arrived, preceded by four or five men. Next appeared twelve or fourteen women of distinction, advancing slowly in pairs, each pair carrying between them a long narrow piece of white cloth.

† Captain Cook and Omai now paid a visit to the prince, who lodged at apartments of his own, at some distance from his father's house. They found him among a circle of boys, about his own age; an old man and woman they also observed, with other persons of both sexes, employed about their necessary affairs. Returning to the king, they saw a crowded levee before him, consisting principally of old men. While the *kava* was preparing, a baked hog and yams were introduced; the greatest part of which fell to their share, for the *kava* drinkers have not much appetite in a morning.

They afterwards walked out, and visited several other chiefs. They found the king asleep in a retired hut, with two women striking on his breech. About eleven he rose again, ate some fish and yams, and lay down to sleep. They left him to wait on the prince, with a present of cloth, beads, and other articles: he was furnished with a sufficient quantity to make him a complete suit, in which he was soon after clad, and seemed delighted with his new habiliments. He afterwards made Captain Cook a present of two pieces of cloth which, had been manufactured in the island.

were

were; and with this injunction he readily complied.

The prince, the women, and the king at length appeared. The prince, being placed under the shed, two men, having each a mat, repeated something in a serious strain, and placed them about his person. The procession soon after arrived as on the preceding day. After many other ceremonies, not sufficiently varied from what has been related, to deserve a circumstantial description, wrestling and boxing matches commenced. Speeches were then delivered by two men, who seated themselves before the prince; with which the solemnity ended, and the assembly broke up *.

The day being far spent before the breaking up of the assembly, our navigators were impatient to return to the ships. Taking leave of Poulaho, he urged them to stay the following day, to be present at the funeral ceremony of the wife of Mareewagee, who had lately died. Captain Cook would have been glad to have seen this ceremony, had not the tide been now favourable: the wind too, which had been boisterous, was now moderate and settled. The captain, however, assured the king, that if he did not immediately sail, he would visit him again the next day.

That the horses and cattle might be safe during the ceremony of the Natche at Mooa, the captain ordered them to be taken thither. A young English boar, and three young English sows, had also been left with his friends there, that they might improve their own breed, which was but small. Feenou had also got two rabbits from our Europeans, a buck and a doe, from which young ones were produced before they sailed.

They weighed anchor on the 10th in the morning, and, with a steady gale, turned through the channel between the small isles called Makhahaa and Monooafai. The flood, at first, set strong in their favour, till leading up to the *lagoon*, where the eastern meets the western flood. This, with the shoals before it, occasions strong riplings and whirlpools. The depth of the channel also exceeds the length of a cable; in consequence of which no anchorage could be had, except close to the rocks, where a ship would be exposed to the whirlpool. They plied to windward, between the two tides, and soon after got into the influence of the eastern tide, where they expected the ebb to run strong to the eastward in their favour. It proved, however, very inconsiderable; and, perceiving they could not get to sea before it was dark, they anchored under the shore of Tongataboo, in forty-five fathoms water.

At eleven o'clock the next day, they weighed, and plied to the eastward. At ten at night they weathered the east end of the island, and stretched away for Eooa, where they anchored about eight the next morning; being nearly the same place where the captain took his station in 1773, when he called it *English Road*.

As soon as they anchored, Taoofa, the chief, and several of the natives, visited them on board, and greeted them on their arrival. The chief, who was known by the appellation of *Tayo*, in 1773, was recognised by Captain Cook, and they were no longer strangers to each other. The captain accompanied Taooffa on shore in search of fresh water, and conducted him to a spring, among rocks, between low and high water mark. Complaining of this fluid, as being brackish, the captain was shewn a little way into the island; where, in a deep chasm, some excellent water was found; but, as the conveyance of it to the shore would be attended with labour and expence, he contented himself with the supply the ships had received at Tongataboo.

At this island the Europeans landed the ram and two ewes, of the breed of the Cape of Good Hope, and committed them to the care of Taooffa, who seemed greatly delighted with his

* The endeavours of our Europeans to find out the purport of the solemnity called Natche, was wholly ineffectual. The general answer to their enquiries was *taboo*, which is applied to many things, and on many occasions. It is generally believed, however, that this mysterious solemnity has a mixture of religion in its institution. Upon no other occasion, the natives had regarded the dress of the Europeans; but in this ceremony it was required that their hair should flow about their shoulders; that they should be uncovered to the waist; sit cross-legged, and have their hands locked together.

They were indeed informed, that in the space of three months, there would be a more serious and important solemnity; on which occasion the tribute of Tongataboo, Hapaee, Vavaoo, and all the other islands would be presented to the chief, and more awfully confirmed, by sacrificing ten human victims from among the people: On their enquiry into the occasion of so horrid a ceremony, they were informed that it was a necessary part of the Natche; and that, should it ever be omitted, the deity would destroy their king.

charge. This country forms a pleasing landscape; the land rising gently upwards, presents an extensive prospect, where groves of trees, in beautiful disorder, are interspersed at irregular distances. Near the shore, it is shaded with a variety of shrubs, among which are erected the habitations of the natives; and to the right, where our travellers were stationed, one of the most extensive groves of cocoa-palms presented itself that they had ever seen.

On the 13th a party ascended the highest part of the island, to have an uninterrupted view of the country. On the most elevated spot a mount had been raised, by the direction of the chief, for the occasional purpose of drinking *kava:* they called it *Etchee.* From this elevation they had an extensive view. The south-east side rises, with great inequalities, immediately from the sea: the plains and meadows lie all on the north-west side; which, being adorned with tufts of trees and plantations, form a most delightful landscape in every point of view. They found, on this height, not only the plants common to the neighbouring isles, but a species of the *acrosticum melastoma,* and fern-tree. Omai, who was much esteemed by Feenou, and several others, was offered the appointment of chief of this island, if he would have continued there, and seemed inclinable to have accepted the offer, but Captain Cook thought proper to advise him to the contrary*.

The next day the captain received a present from the chief, consisting of two little heaps of yams, and a quantity of fruit. On this occasion a great number of the inhabitants of the island had assembled; much pilfering was therefore reasonably apprehended. Cudgelling, wrestling, and boxing were exhibited for the entertainment of the Europeans; and in the latter, combatants of both sexes engaged. The diversions were intended to be closed with a *homai,* or Night Dance; but an accident prevented their continuing on shore to see it. One of the Europeans was surrounded by twenty or thirty of the natives, some of whom knocked him down, stripped him and ran off with his clothes. Hearing of this, Captain Cook seized two canoes, and a large hog; and insisted on the chief's causing the apparel to be restored, and the offenders delivered up to him.

Taooffa was greatly concerned at what had happened, and took every measure to appease the captain. Many of the people assembled on this occasion, were so alarmed that they instantly fled; but the captain assuring them he would take no other measures to revenge the insult, they returned. One of the delinquents was delivered up to him, and a shirt and a pair of trowsers restored. The remainder of the stolen goods not coming in till the evening, the captain was obliged to leave them in order to go aboard. The next morning he came ashore, bringing with him a present for Taooffa, in return for what he had received from him. It appeared that many of the people were still considerably alarmed with their fears and apprehensions; but on Captain Cook's desiring Omai to assure them, that he did not mean to injure them; and having restored the canoes, and released the offender who had been delivered up to him, they resumed their usual cheerfulness.

The remainder of the clothes was afterward brought in, but having been torn from the man's back by violence, they were not thought worth the trouble of carrying on board. Captain Cook continued with them till they had drank the bowl of *kava;* and then, after paying for the hog which he had taken the day before returned on board with Taooffa, and one of Poulaho's servants, by whom he sent a piece of bar iron, as a distinguished mark of esteem on parting with him; that being thought as valuable a present as any he could make.

The navigators weighed soon after; and with

* Returning from their country excursion, they were informed that one of the natives had fractured the skull of one of their own people with a club; and, pursuing his vengeance, had afterwards broke his thigh with the same instrument. On their requesting to know the reason of such extreme severity, they were informed that he had been seen in an indelicate situation with a woman who was tabooed. It appeared, however, that she was no otherwise *tabooed* than by belonging to another person, whose rank in life was superior to that of her gallant. The female sinner received a much milder punishment for her misdemeanour; a remonstrance and slight beating being thought a sufficient chastisement for her infidelity.

Captain Cook, on the following morning planted a pine-apple, and sowed some melon seeds, in the chief's plantation. He was the more encouraged to expect success from his endeavours, as a dish of turnips was this day served up at his dinner, which was the produce of the seeds he had left here in 1773.

a ligh

a light breeze at south-east, stood out to sea, when Taooffa, and some other natives, left them. A few hours after, a small canoe, conducted by four men, came off to them. They were informed, by these men, that a sailing canoe had brought directions to the people of Eooa, to furnish them with hogs, and that the king, with some other chiefs, would be with them in two or three days; they requested them therefore to return to their former station. They had not the least doubt of the truth of this information, but, being now clear of the land, it was not a sufficient inducement to bring them back, especially as they had an ample stock of provisions. Perceiving that they would not return, these people, and others, left them in the evening; their eagerness to possess more of the European commodities having induced them to follow them out to sea, and to continue their intercourse with them as long as possible.

The navigators took leave of the Friendly Islands and the inhabitants, after a pretty cordial intercourse with the latter for between two and three months. The time they continued there was not thrown away, as they principally subsisted upon the produce of the island, and expended very little of their sea provisions. The captain was happy in having had an opportunity of serving these people, by leaving useful animals among them; and that those intended for Otaheite had acquired additional strength in the pastures of Tongataboo *.

It has often been conjectured and asserted, that extreme hunger first induced men to feed on human flesh; but why should the Feejee people continue the horrid practice in the midst of plenty? It is held in detestation by the inhabitants of Tongataboo. When a profound peace exists between the two islands, they have frequent intercourse together, though it seems probable that they have not long been known to each other †.

Feejee is three days sail from Tongataboo; these people calculate the distance from island to island, by mentioning the time required for the voyage in one of their canoes: this was supposed by Captain Cook to amount to about seven miles in an hour; and that, with such breezes as generally blow in their seas, they will sail seven or eight miles an hour on an average. In the day they are guided by the sun, and in the night by stars. When these are obscured, they can only have recourse to the points from whence the winds and waves came upon the vessel.

The harbour and anchoring place of Tongataboo, is more secure and capacious than any which the Europeans met with among these islands, having also a good bottom; but though the water of Tongataboo has the preference, it is exceeded in goodness by that at Anna-

* Iron tools are the best articles for traffic here: hatchets, axes, nails, knives, and files, are much demanded. Red cloth, linen, beads, and looking-glasses, are also in great estimation. Among beads, blue are in the highest estimation: a large hog might at any time be purchased by a string of large blue beads. For the commodities enumerated, any refreshments which the island produces may be obtained. The yams of the Friendly Islands are excellent and preserve well at sea; but their pork, plantains, and bread-fruit are not equal to the same articles at Otaheite.

Good water is scarce in these islands. It may indeed be found in all of them; but the situations are too inconvenient, or the quantities too inconsiderable for the navigators. Under the denomination of Friendly Islands, are included, not only the group at Hapaee, but those discovered to the north, nearly under the same meridian, as well as some others belonging to Tongataboo, the capital, and seat of government. One of the natives enumerated one hundred and fifty islands, and Mr. Anderson procured all their names. But the most considerable that our navigators heard of in this neighbourhood are Hamao, Vavaoo, and Feejee, each of which is more extensive than Tongataboo; but it does not appear that any European has ever seen any one of them. Hamao, which lies two days sail north-west from Vavaoo, is said to be the largest of all their islands; affords harbours and good water, and produces, in abundance, all the essential articles of refreshment. Feejee lies about three days sail from Tongataboo, and abounds with hogs, dogs, and such fruits and roots as are to be found in any of the others. It is larger than Tongataboo, but not subject to its dominion, like the other islands of the archipelago. Feejee and Tongataboo often oppose each other in war; and the latter, on many occasions, bend the body forward, and cover the face with their hands, by way of acknowledgment of their own inferiority to the Feejee men. The latter have indeed rendered themselves formidable by their dexterity in the use of bows and slings; but more so by their savage practice of devouring such of their enemies as they have slain in battle.

† The colour of a native of Feejee is a shade darker than that of the inhabitants of the other Friendly Islands. Our navigators saw one of them who had his left ear slit, and the lobe so stretched that it almost reached to his shoulder; a singularity which had been observed by Captain Cook at the other islands of the South Sea, during his second voyage. The Feejee men, though cruel in war, are reverenced for their ingenuity. Their clubs and spears are curiously carved, and several articles were shewn of their beautifully chequered cloth, variegated mats, and other articles, all of which bore evident marks of their extraordinary talents.

mooka, yet that does not deserved the epithet of good.

The Friendly Islanders seldom exceed the common stature (though some of them were upwards of six feet in height) and are strong and well proportioned. Several of them were really handsome, but their muscular frame conveyed a stronger idea of prowess than of beauty. Their features are so various, except it be by the fulness at the point of the nose, which is universal, a general likeness cannot be ascertained. Many Roman noses, and European faces were seen amongst them; they have good eyes and teeth, but the latter are not remarkably white or well set; and few of them have that uncommon thickness about the lips, so frequent in other islands.

Though the features of some of the women are very delicate, and justly possess a considerable share of beauty and expression, the rule is not so general as in many other countries. Their persons, however, are usually well proportioned, and some of them are perfect models of a beautiful figure. But the extreme smallness and delicacy of their fingers, which may vie in competition with any in Europe, appear to be the most remarkable distinction in the women *.

The graceful mien, and firmness of step which are very observable in their walking, are proofs of their personal accomplishments. The mildness of disposition, which they abundantly possess, is depicted on their countenances; they are free from that savage keenness which distinguishes those nations that are in a barbarous state. They are, however, intelligent, cheerful, and good humoured; though in the presence of their chiefs, they affect a degree of gravity and reserve. Their pacific disposition is manifestly shewn by their friendly reception of all strangers: like the most civilized nations, they have even courted an intercourse with their visitors, by bartering, a medium which tends to make all nations amicable. Though they had hardly any traffic, except with Feejee, no persons in the world could dissplay more capability or honesty in their dealings, or less prevarication or distrust. If either party became dissatisfied with his bargain, a re-change was made with mutual consent and satisfaction. They are certainly in possession of many of the most excellent qualities that adorn the human mind †.

Among most of these islanders, the hair is thick, straight, and strong; though some have it bushy or frizled. The natural colour appears black, but both sexes occasionally stain it of a brown or purple colour, and others embellish it with an orange cast. Whimsical and various are their methods of wearing this natural ornament of the head: some have none on one side of the head, but permit it to grow very long on the other: One perhaps has it shorn all over; another only retains a single lock on a particular side. Some permit the whole to grow to its full length, without having recourse to any of these mutilations; but the women usually wear it short: among the men, short beards are also fashionable.

The men are stained with a deep blue colour, from the middle of the belly to half way down the thighs; a flat bone instrument, full of fine teeth, introducing the juice of *dooe dooe* into the skin, occasioning indelible marks. Lines and figures are thus elegantly traced in some of them. The women have only some small permanent

* The general colour of the natives has a deeper cast than the copper brown; but several of both sexes have a genuine olive complexion. Some of the females are much fairer, arising perhaps from their having been less exposed to the sun, as a tendency to corpulence, in persons of superior rank, seems naturally to have been occasioned by indolence and ease; a softer and clearer skin is more generally to be observed among the latter. Among the major part of the people, the skin is generally of a dull hue, with some degree of roughness. Upon the whole, however, few natural defects or deformities were seen among them; though two or three were observed with their feet bent inwards. They are not exempt from diseases, many of them being affected with the tetter or ring-worm, which leaves whitish marks behind it. But they have a more mischievous disease very prevalent among them, which appears in large broad ulcers on every part of the body, discharging a thin, clear, and very virulent pus. This malady is sometimes attended with the loss of their nose, or a considerable part of it. They have a few other diseases, but in general they are remarkably healthy.

† A propensity to thieving, however, casts an indelible shade upon their fair character; all ages, and both sexes, are uncommonly addicted to it: but may it not be admitted as some kind of palliation of such practices, that it is only with the Europeans that they exercise such criminal liberties? Allowances should be made for the foibles of these poor islanders, whose minds are too yielding to withstand the glare of new and captivating objects. Among civilized nations, thieving denotes a character deeply stained with moral turpitude; but in the Friendly Islands, tenderness will suggest, that it may often be occasioned by less culpable motives.

lines

lines in the inside of their hands. It seems a tacit degradation of this practice, that, as a mark of distinction, their kings are exempted from it.

The dress of both sexes consists of a piece of cloth or matting, about two yards in breadth, and two and a half in length. It is double before, and, like a petticoat, descends to the middle of the leg; the part of it which is above the girdle, is plaited into several folds, which extended, forms a covering round the shoulders. This, with regard to form, is the general dress; but the fine matting, and long pieces of cloth, are only worn by the superior classes. Inferior persons are satisfied with small pieces; and frequently have only a covering made of the leaves of plants, or the *maro*, a narrow piece of cloth like a sash, which they pass between the thighs and round the waist. It is seldom used but by the men. In their grand entertainments they have various dresses, which are usually decorated with red feathers. Both men and women occasionally wear little bonnets, made of various sorts of materials, to shield their faces from the sun.

The same ornaments, as well as the same habiliments, are worn indiscriminately by either sex. The most common are necklaces, made of the fruit of the *pandanus*, and odoriferous flowers. Others are formed of small shells, sharks' teeth, the wing-bones of birds, &c. all of which are pendant upon the breast. Thus they often wear a polished mother-of-pearl shell, or a ring, on the upper part of the arm; rings of tortoise-shell on the fingers, and a variety of such articles formed into bracelets on the wrists.

Two holes are perforated in the lobe of the ears, in which cylindrical pieces of ivory are introduced at one, and drawn out of the other, or bits of reed, full of yellow pigment.

They delight much in personal cleanliness, to produce which, they bathe frequently in the ponds. Though the water in them is generally foul, and emits a disagreeable stench, they prefer it to that which is in the sea. They are so fully convinced that salt-water is injurious to their skin, that when they find themselves compelled to bathe in the sea, they cause fresh water to be poured over them to wash off its pernicious effects. They are remarkably fond of cocoa-nut oil, which is often poured over their head and shoulders: a smaller quantity suffices for a less liberal anointment of the other parts of the body.

SECTION X.

Employments of the Women of the Friendly Islands—Employment of the Men—Agriculture—Mode of building Houses—Their Furniture—Canoes—Tools—Fishing Tackle—Musical Instruments—Food—Cookery—Diversions—Marriage—Parting with their little Finger—Their Deities—Sentiments on a Future State—Fiatookas—Form of Government—Power of the Chiefs—Homage to the King—To avert Famine—Of the Tammahas—Language—Occurrences at Otaheite, and the Society Isles—The Island of Toobouai discovered—Its Situation and Produce—Description of its Inhabitants—Arrival in Oheitepeha Bay, at Otaheite—Omai's Reception—His improper Conduct—Partiality for Red Feathers—Captain Cook visits a Chief—Allowance of Grog abridged—The Captain's Interview with Waheiadooa—Description of a Toopapaoo—Anchor in Matava Bay.

THE domestic life of these people is not rendered oppressive by labour, nor are they so destitute of employment as to yield implicitly to a state of indolence. Their country has been so liberally favoured by nature, that the first can hardly occur; and their disposition would preserve them from the last. Their necessary labour seems to yield, in its turn, to their amusements and recreations, which are never interrupted by obtrusive thoughts of being forced to recur to business, till they feel an inclination for that transition. The employment allotted to the women is not attended with difficulty, as it is generally such as can be executed in the house: the making of cloth is solely committed to their care; the finer sort of which receives the im-

pression of any pattern. The cloth is in general able to resist water for some time; that having the strongest glaze, being the least liable to be penetrated by that transparent fluid.

Another manufacture, also consigned to the women, is that of their mats, which in their texture and beauty excel those of most other countries. There are many other articles of less importance manufactured by their females, as combs and baskets made of the same substance as the mats; and others composed of the fibrous husk of the cocoa-nut, plain, or interwoven with beads, all which are executed with neatness and true taste.

The men are habituated to more masculine employments; among which architecture, boat-building, agriculture, and fishing, are principally attended to. In propagating yams and plantains, they are so particularly exact, that, whichever way you turn your eyes, the rows present themselves perfectly complete and regular. The bread-fruit, and cocoa-nut trees, are irregularly dispersed about; and when they have attained a certain height, occasion little farther trouble. The same may be asserted of another large tree, which produces a nut called *ceefee;* and of a smaller tree, bearing an oval nut. The *kappe* is planted regularly, and in large spots. Sugar-cane is usually in small spots, closely crowded. The mulberry, of which the cloth is made, is kept remarkably clean, and not confined to circumscribed limits *.

They are very expert in building their canoes, which are the most perfect of their mechanical productions. The double ones, which are sufficiently capacious to carry about fifty persons, sail very rapidly. The single canoes are furnished with an out rigger. Their cordage is made of the fibres of the cocoa-nut husk, from which the ropes of a larger size are formed, by twisting several of those together. Their fishing lines are strong, and their hooks, consisting of pearl-shell, and tortoise-shell, enable them to make easy captures of the finny race. Nor are they destitute of seines, which are of the most delicate texture.

Their musical reeds, resembling the *syrinx* of the ancients, consist of eight or ten pieces of unequal length; their flutes are made of a joint of bamboo. Their *naffa*, or drum, has been already described.

Their warlike weapons are clubs, spears, and darts. They also use bows and arrows, but these are intended only for amusements; such as shooting at birds. Their stools, or pillows, are composed of brown or black wood, neatly polished, and sometimes inlaid with ivory. They also inlay with ivory the handles of fly-flaps, &c. &c.

Their vegetable diet consists principally of plantains, bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and yams. The animals which afford them food, are hogs, fish, and fowls; but the common people often feed upon rats. Hogs, fowls, and turtle, are, however, classed among the occasional dainties, reserved for persons of rank; and their food is usually baked, as at Otaheite. But they are not very delicate, either in their cookery, or their manner of eating. Their usual beverage at their meals, is water, or cocoa-nut milk, the *kava* being only their morning solace. The food served up to the chiefs is usually laid upon plantain leaves; and the king, at his meals, is generally attended by three or four of the natives, one of whom cuts the fish or joint into large pieces; another afterwards subdivides them into mouthfuls: and the rest attend with cocoa-nuts, or whatever else may be wanted. The women are not excluded from taking their meals with the men; but certain ranks of people are not permitted to eat or drink together.

They rise at day-break, and retire to rest when darkness spreads its sable veil; in very hot weather they also repose in day-time. They delight in society; in consequence of which several houses are frequently found empty, many of the owners of them being assembled in some other house, where they relax themselves by

* Very little taste or ingenuity is displayed in the construction of their houses: those of the lower class of the people are miserable huts, hardly capable of sheltering ing them from the weather. Those for the higher ranks are larger, more comfortable, and more commodious. Properly speaking, however, their houses are thatched roofs, or sheds, supported by rafters and posts. The floor is raised with earth, smoothed, and covered with thick matting. Some of their habitations are open all round, but most of them are enclosed on the weather side with strong mats, or with branches of the cocoa-nut. Their whole furniture consists of some wooden stools, which serve them for pillows; baskets for their combs, fish-hooks, and tools; two or three wooden bowls to contain *kava*, some cocoa-nut shells, a few gourds, and a bundle of cloth.

conversation

conversation, or other amusements. Their private diversions consist principally of music, dancing, and singing; the songs are usually accompanied with the music of their flutes, and their dances are generally performed with ease, grace, and elegance*.

The *fiatookas* are appropriated to the chiefs, and others of distinction, as places of interment; the inferior classes appear to have no particular spot set apart for their remains. The natives consider death as a great evil, to avert which they adopt a very singular custom. When Captain Cook first visited these islands, he observed many of the people had parted with one or both of their little fingers, of the cause of which he had obtained no satisfactory information. But he was now assured, that they perform this operation of cutting off one or both of their little fingers when they are attacked with any dangerous disorder. They, at such a time, console themselves with the idea, that the little finger will be accepted by the deity as a propitiatory sacrifice sufficient efficacious to ensure their recovery; a stone-hatchet is the common instrument used in this singular mode of amputation. Hardly one person in half a score is to be seen, who is not thus mutilated†.

Among their subordinate deities, they mention *Futtafathe*, or *Fooafooa*, and several others. But the same system of religion does not extend all over the Friendly Islands: the supreme deity of Hapaee, for example, being called *Alo, Alo*. They entertain very absurd opinions relative to the power and various atributes of these beings; but they seem to have more rational sentiments respecting the immortality of the soul; they believe that, immediately after death, the souls of their chiefs are separated from their bodies, and admitted into a delightful region called *Boolootoo*, the god of which is named Gooleho; whose country, according to their mythology, is the general repository of the dead. Those who have once arrived there, are no more subject to death, but feast on the favourite productions of their native soil, with which this happy abode is plentifully furnished. The souls of the inferior classes of the people are supposed to experience a kind of transmigration; or are eaten by a bird called *loata*, who walks upon the graves for that purpose‡.

Little information could be obtained with respect to their form of government. A subordination is established among them, like the feudal system of the ancestors of the Europeans; but of its constituent parts, little is understood. Some of the natives informed our navigators that the king's power was unlimited, and that he had the absolute disposal of the lives and properties of his subjects. But the idea of despotic sway is rather contradicted than confirmed, by several circumstances. Mareewagee, Feenou, and old Toobou, acted each the part of a petty sovereign, and often counteracted the measures of the king. It is apparent, however, that the inferior people are entirely subject to the will of the chiefs, to whom they severally belong.

The island of Tongataboo consists of numerous districts, each of which has its peculiar chief, who administers justice within his own territory. Most of these chieftains have estates in other islands, whence they procure supplies. At certain stated times, the king receives the pro-

* It could not be precisely known whether their marriages were rendered permanent by any kind of solemn contract; but it evidently appeared that the men in general contented themselves with one wife. The chiefs, indeed, have sometimes several women; but only one of them appears to be considered in the respectable character of mistress of the family. Though female chastity is not held in great estimation, the Europeans knew not of any breach of conjugal fidelity happening during their residence at these islands.

The concern manifested for the dead by these islanders, is a strong proof of their humanity. Among other indications of grief, they strike a shark's tooth into their heads till the blood flows plentifully, beat their teeth with stones, and thrust spears through their cheeks, and into other parts of the body. The more painful operations, however, are only practised to lament the death of those who have been most nearly and dearly in alliance with them.

† They seem not to aim particularly at eternal happiness, in their mourning and religious solemnities; their regards seeming almost wholly fixed upon temporal objects, for they appear to have little conception of future punishment for sins committed in the present life. They believe, however, that they meet with just punishment upon earth; and are therefore assiduous to render their divinities propitious. They admit of a plurality of Deities, all of whom are inferior to *Kallafoolonga*, who is a female, residing in the heavens, and directing the wind, rain, thunder, &c.

‡ They worship no visible part of the creation, nor any thing effected by their own manual exertion. They make no offerings of hogs, dogs, and fruit, (as at Otaheite) unless emblematically; but no doubt is entertained of their offering up human sacrifices. *Fiatookas* or *morais*, are usually burying grounds, or places of worship; though some of them are only appropriated to the former purpose, but these are inferior to the rest.

product of his distant domains at Tongataboo, which is not only the usual place of his residence, but the abode of all the principal persons in the island *.

When the number of islands of which this state consists, and the distance of many of them from the seat of government, is considered, it seems remarkable that no attempts have been made to throw off the yoke of subjection; but the Europeans were informed, that circumstances of this sort never happen. All the principal chiefs having taken up their residence at Tongataboo, may probably be one reason for their not being embroiled in domestic commotions. The decisive celerity of their operations may reasonably be supposed to be another; for should a seditious popular man happen to start up in any of them, Feenou, or whoever happens to occupy his post, is instantly dispatched thither to put him to death; by which means they extinguish an insurrection while it is in embrio.

The different classes of their chiefs appear to be numerous; but there are few, comparatively speaking, that are lords of extensive territory. It is said, that, on the death of a man of property, his possessions devolve to the sovereign; but that it is almost the invariable practice to give them to the eldest son of the deceased, with this express condition, that he should provide, out of the estates, for the other children.

The crown is hereditary; and it clearly appears that the Futtafaihes (the ancestors of Poulaho) have reigned, in a direct line, upwards of one hundred and thirty-five years, which have elapsed between the present visit to these islands, and Tasman's discovery of them. Poulaho is the fifth monarch since that period.

Our European travellers naturally supposed, that the present sovereign of the Friendly Isles was superior in rank to any person in his dominions, but they found it to be otherwise; for Latooliboolod, and three women, are in some respects, superior to Poulaho himself. These exalted personages are distinguished by the title of Tammaha; and when our navigators sought for information concerning them, they were told that the late king, father of Poulaho, left behind him a sister of equal rank, and older than himself; that she, by a native of Feejee, had a son and two daughters; and that these three persons, as well as their mother, enjoyed higher rank than the king; no satisfactory reason could, however, be assigned for this pre-eminence of the *Tammahas*.

The language of these islands seems to have a striking affinity to that of New-Zealand, of Otaheite, and the Society isles. They have terms to express numbers as far as a hundred thousand, beyond which they either would not, or could not reckon.

Having taken a final leave of the Friendly Islands on the 17th of July in the evening, the navigators stood to the south. At six the next morning, a sudden squall took place, which proved somewhat injurious to the mainsail and the top-gallant sails. They met with no other remarkable occurence, till the morning of the 8th of August at eleven, when land was observed about nine or ten leagues distant. They steered directly for it with a fine gale. As they drew near it the next morning, they saw people passing along shore, on several parts of the coast; and, in a short-time after, when they had reached the lee-side of the island, they saw two canoes launched, which contained about a dozen men, who were now advancing towards them.

To give the canoes time to come up, as well as to sound for anchorage, they shortened sail. The canoes, after having arrived within pistol-shot of the ships, suddenly stopped. Omai was requested to prevail on them to come nearer; but no arguments could induce them to trust themselves within the reach of the ships. They often pointed eagerly to the shore with their paddles, and many of their people were seen

* The chiefs are styled lords of the earth, and of the sun and sky. The royal family assume the name of Futtafaihe, from the god distinguished by that appellation. The king's particular title is *Tooee Tonga*. The decorum observed in his presence, and in that of the other chiefs, is wonderful. Whenever he sits down, his attendants seat themselves before him, forming a semi-circle. Nor is any person permitted to sit or pass behind him, or even near him, without his permission. When a person wishes to speak to his majesty, he seats himself before him, and delivers, in a few words, what he has to say; and having received an answer, retires. If the king speaks to any person, the latter answers him from his seat; but when he is to receive an order from him, he rises from his place, and seats himself cross-legged (Captain King, however, assures us, that this posture is peculiar to the men, for the females always sit with both their legs thrown a little on each side,) before his majesty. None of the most civilized nations have ever shewn a more submissive compliance with their commands than these faithful islanders.

standing on the beach, holding up something white in their hands, which was considered as an invitation for them to land. The captain, however, did not choose to risk the advantage of a fair wind, for the sole purpose of examining an island which appeared to be but of small importance. After several unsuccessful attempts to induce these people to approach the ships, the navigators made sail to the north, and left them, having first discovered that the name of their island was Toobouai.

The greatest extent of this island, in any direction, does not exceed five or six miles. It contains hills, however, of a considerable elevation, and is said to be plentifully stocked with hogs and fowls. In the course of conversation with those who came off towards the ships, it was perceived that the inhabitants of Toobouai speak the Otaheite language, whence it is apparent that they are of the same nation. Those in the canoes were a stout copper-coloured people; some wearing their black hair flowing about their shoulders, and others having it tied in a bunch on the crown of the head. Their faces were roundish and full, and their features flat; expressive of a great degree of natural ferocity. Their covering was a piece of narrow stuff wrapped round the waist, and passing between the thighs. Many of those who appeared upon the beach, were completely clothed in white. Some of those in the canoes had decorated their necks with pearl-shells; and one of them continued blowing a large conch-shell, to which a long reed was fixed. Perceiving that our navigators were determined to leave them, they stood up, and spoke in an exalted voice, but what they said could not be understood.

Steering to the north with a fresh gale on the 12th, they saw the island of Maitea; and Otaheite appeared soon after; the point of Oheitepeha-bay bearing west, about four leagues distant. At nine they were obliged to stand out, and spend the night at sea.

As they drew near the island, they were attended by several canoes, each conducted by two or three men: but being of the lower class, they were not particularly noticed by Omai, nor was Omai particularly regarded by them. They knew not indeed that he was one of their countrymen, though they had for some time conversed with him. At length a chief, named Ootee, whom Captain Cook had known before, Omai's brother-in-law, and several others came on board; all of whom knew Omai before he embarked with Captain Furneau. But there was nothing particularly striking or affectionate in their meeting; on the contrary, the most perfect indifference seemed to exist among them; till Omai, conducting his brother into the cabin, gave him a few red feathers from a drawer.

This circumstance being communicated to the natives on deck, Ootee, who hardly condescended to speak to him before, now begged they might be *tayos* (friends) and exchange names. Omai accepted of the honour, and a present of red feathers ratified the agreement; and Ootee, on his part, sent ashore for a hog. It evidently appeared, however, that it was not the man, but his property that they esteemed. Had he not exhibited his treasure of red feathers, a commodity much estimated in this island, a single cocoa-nut would not perhaps have been bestowed upon him. With the valuable cargo of presents which he owed to the liberality of his friends in England, he might easily have raised himself into consequence among the first persons throughout the Society Islands. But he disregarded the repeated advice of his well-wishers, and exposed himself to the most flagrant impositions*.

Having no wind in the morning, it was nine o'clock before our navigators could anchor in the bay, when they moored with the two bowers. They had not long anchored before Omai's sister came on board, to congratulate him on his arrival: and never was more genuine affection displayed than at this endearing moment, between two fond relatives after a long separation.

When this scene of sensibility closed, and the ship was properly moored, Omai attended

* Intelligence having been propagated on shore, that red feathers were plentiful on board the European ships, they were surrounded the next morning by a multitude of canoes, crowded with people; and plenty of hogs and fruit accompanied them. A bird of the magnitude of a tom tit, might, at that time, have furnished a sufficient quantity of feathers to purchase a hog of forty or fifty pounds weight. But as every man in the ship was in possession of some of this precious article of trade, it decreased upwards of five hundred *per cent.* in its value in a few hours. Still, however, red feathers preserved their superiority over every other commodity.

Captain Cook on shore; where, at his request, he was induced to visit a person, who was represented as a very extraordinary man indeed; Omai declaring that he was the God of Bolabola. They beheld him seated under such an awning as is usually exhibited in one of their larger canoes. He was so old and feeble as to be usually conveyed from place to place upon a hand-barrow. Omai presented to him a tuft of red feathers; but after a little conversation with this Bolabolaman, his mother's sister appeared, fell at his feet, and bedewed them with tears of joy: an affecting scene ensued*.

Though it rained, almost incessantly, for two successive days, our navigators were visited by the natives from every quarter, intelligence of their arrival having been so rapidly spread. Wahaiadooa, whose residence was at a considerable distance, had been informed of it; and on the 16th, a chief, named Etorea, who was his tutor, brought Captain Cook two hogs as a present from him; accompanied with a promise that he would attend him the day after. So attentive was he to his appointment, that Captain Cook received a message from him requesting he would go ashore to meet him.

In consequence of this invitation, Omai and the captain prepared to make him a formal visit. Omai, on this occasion, was determined to equip himself superbly not after the manner of the English, nor that of Otaheite, Tongataboo, or any other country; but one consisting of a strange medley of all the habiliments and trappings he was possessed of.

Thus splendidly decorated, they got ashore, and first paid a visit to Etary; who, conveyed on a hand-barrow, accompanied them to a spacious building, where he was set down. Omai seated himself on one side of him, and the captain on the other. The latter caused a piece of Tongataboo cloth to be spread, on which were exhibited the presents he intended to make. The young prince afterwards appeared, attended by his mother and several exalted personages; who all seated themselves opposite to our adventurers. A man who was situated near Captain Cook, delivered a short unconnected speech: another, on the side near the chief, made another harangue; Etary after him, and then Omai, &c. Captain Cook's arrival, and his laudable proceedings in that country, furnished the subjects of their orations.

As a present for Otoo, the king of the whole island, Omai had prepared a *maro*, composed of red and yellow feathers; which, in that country, were extremely valuable. Captain Cook advised him not to produce it now, but seek an opportunity of presenting it to Otoo with his own hands. He relied, however, too much on the fidelity of his countrymen to be guided by his advice. He resolved to carry it ashore, on this occasion, and to give it to Waheiadooa, to be forwarded by him to Otoo, and added to the royal *maro*. By this conduct, he expected to oblige both chiefs; instead of which he highly offended that whose favour was essential to him, without receiving any compensation from the other. The captain was prophetic on the occasion; for Waheiadooa kept the *maro* for himself, and transmitted to Otoo about a twentieth part of what composed the magnificent present.

On the 19th Captain Cook received a present from the young chief, consisting of ten or a dozen hogs, a quantity of fruit, and some cloth†.

Having

* As Otaheite, and the neighbouring islands, could afford a plentiful supply of cocoa-nuts, the liquor of which is esteemed a most excellent beverage, Captain Cook prevailed upon his people to consent to be abridged, for a short time, of their stated allowance of spirits to mix with water. Among other arguments, he informed the ship's company, that the duration of the voyage would exceed by a year at least what had been originally supposed. He begged them to consider the aggravated hardships they must yet labour under, if they should be compelled to submit to short allowance of any species of provisions in a cold climate. He therefore submitted to them, whether it would not be more judicious to be prudent in time, and rather than run the risk of having their spirituous liquors exhausted, when they might be most necessary, to discontinue the use of their grog at present, when its absence could be so well supplied with so excellent a liquor as that of cocoa-nuts. He concluded, however, with observing, that the choice depended entirely upon themselves.

This proposal was no sooner intimated by Captain Cook, than it was generally approved and applauded. He directed Captain Clerke to make a similar proposal to his people, who were also unanimous in their approbation of the same measure. The serving of grog was therefore instantly prohibited, except on saturday nights; when every man was permitted to have a full allowance of it, to enable him to assist in toasting their female friends in England, that they might not be totally forgotten amidst the pretty girls of Otaheite.

† Some of the officers belonging to the European ships discovered in their walks, what they conceived to be a Roman Catholic chapel; but it afterwards appeared that they

Having provided a fresh supply of water, and finished all their necessary operations, our navigators brought their animals from shore on the 22d, and made ready for sea. While the ships were unmooring, Omai and Captain Cook took leave of the young chief. During the time they were with him, one of the *Eatooas*, a person pretending to possess the spirit of the divinity, presented himself before them. Insanity seemed depicted in his countenance, and his only covering was a quantity of plantain leaves. What he uttered was in so low and squeaking a voice, that he was hardly to be understood. But Omai said he perfectly comprehended him, and that he was advising Waheiadooa not to accompany Captain Cook to Matavia. The *Eatooa* also predicted, that the ships would not arrive on that day at Matavia. While he was engaged in his prophetic business, a heavy shower of rain happening to fall, every one, except himself, retired for shelter. He continued squeaking about half an hour. Little attention was, however, paid to the predictions, though some of the auditors condescended to laugh at him.

Captain Cook desired to know of the chief whether he was an *Earea* or a Towtow. The answer he received was that he was *taata eno*, a bad man. And yet, though so little notice was taken of the mad prophet, superstition governs the natives with such absolute sway, that they really believe such to be possessed of the spirit of the Eatooa. Soon after the captain got on board, a light breeze springing up at east, the navigators got under sail, and the Resolution anchored the same evening. The Discovery did not get in till the next morning; the Eatooa's prediction was consequently erroneous.

SECTION XI.

Interview with Otoo, King of Otaheite—Improper Behaviour of Omai—Several Animals landed—Employment on Shore—Visit from a Native—Account of Oedidee—The Islanders retreat, but return—A Rebellion in Eimeo—Council of Chiefs—War resolved on—A human Sacrifice—Description of that Solemnity—The Morai at Attahooroo described—Singular Customs—Re-embark for Matavia—Reflections on human Sacrifices—Account of the Keeeas—Dinner given by Omai—Fire-works—Remarkable Method of making a Present—Preservation of the Body of a Chief—Another human Sacrifice—Riding on Horseback—Animals given by Captain Cook—Audience given to Etary, &c.—Fighting with War-Canoes.

ON the 24th, Otoo, the king of the whole island, accompanied by a number of natives in their canoes, came from his residence in Oparre, and having landed on Matavia Point, dispatched a messenger to Captain Cook on board, to inform him that he should be glad to see him. The captain went ashore in compliance with the king's request, attended by Omai, and several of the officers. A vast concourse of people assembled on this occasion, in the midst of whom was his majesty, accompanied by his father, his two brothers, and three sisters. The captain approached the king, and saluted him; being immediately followed by Omai, who kneeled and embraced his legs. Though Omai had embellished his person, on this occasion, with his best apparel, and behaved with the utmost decorum, very little notice was taken of him.

they were mistaken: it was indeed a *toopapaoo*, in which the body of the late Waheiadooa lay, in a kind of state. It was in a house, inclosed with a low palisade. The *toopapaoo* was very neat, resembling one of those little awnings which they have over their large canoes. It was hung and covered with mats and cloths of a variety of colours. Small offerings of fruit and other vegetables seemed to be daily made at this shrine, several articles of different denominations being then perfectly fresh: they were deposited on a kind of altar without the palisades; within which they were not permitted to enter. Two men attended here at all times, as well to protect the place, as to dress and undress the *toopapaoo*. When Captain Cook went to take a view of it, the cloth and its appendages were rolled up; but, at his request, the two attendants placed it in proper order, after having first qualified themselves for the purpose, by dressing themselves in clean white robes. From credible information it appeared, that the death of the chief happened about twenty months before.

him. He presented to the king two or three yards of gold cloth, with a large piece of red feathers; and the captain gave him a gold laced hat, a suit of fine linen, a quantity of red feathers, some tools, and one of the bonnets worn by the Friendly Islanders.

The ceremony being ended, the king and the royal family accompanied Captain Cook on board, attended by several canoes, all richly laden with provisions. Each of the royal family had provided a part of them, the captain therefore received a present from every individual of them; and each received from him a separate present in return. The king's mother came on board, some time after, having cloth and provisions, which she divided between Captain Cook and Omai. Though the latter was, at first, but little noticed by his countrymen, when they gained information of the extent of his wealth, he was particularly caressed and complimented. This disposition of the people was encouraged by Captain Cook as much as possible, he being desirous of establishing that youth with Otoo. But Omai rejected his advice, and by his imprudent conduct not only forfeited the friendship of the king, but also of the most considerable persons at Otaheite. He associated with none but strangers and vagabonds, whose sole intention was to plunder him; and who would certainly have reduced him to penury, if the captain had not interfered*.

Intending to continue here a considerable time, Captain Cook ordered the two observatories to be set up on Matavai Point: Before they had been two days at anchor in Matavia Bay, they were visited by their old friends who are named in the narrative of Captain Cook's last voyage. None of them appeared with empty hands; provisions accumulated in abundance, and no apprehensions were entertained of exhausting the island, which presented to the eyes of the beholder every mark of the most exuberant fertility and abundance.

Soon after their arrival here, one of the islanders, whom the Spaniards had taken with them to Lima, paid them a visit. They also found here the young man whom they called Oedidee, but whose real name is Heete hecte. Captain Cook had taken him from Ulietea on board his ship in 1773, and brought him back in the succeeding year.

After the arrival of our navigators at Matavia, the weather continued very unsettled till the 29th; before which day they could not get equal altitudes of the sun for ascertaining the going of the time-keeper. In the evening the islanders made a precipitate retreat, as well from the land station, as from on board the ships; the cause of which was speedily discovered. One of the surgeon's mates had made an excursion into the country to purchase curiosities, and had taken with him four hatchets for the sole purpose of exchange. Having imprudently employed a native to carry these valuable articles, the fellow took an opportunity of running away with them. The hatchets, however, were at length recovered, and every thing quickly resumed its former tranquillity†.

Towha,

* This behaviour drew upon him the disapprobation of the principal chiefs, who could not obtain, from any one in either ship, such valuable presents as were bestowed by Omai on the lowest of the people. After dinner, a party of the Europeans accompanied Otoo to Oparre, taking with them a peacock and hen, a turkey-cock and hen, three geese, a gander, four ducks, and a drake. All these were left with Otoo; and the geese and ducks began to breed before the Europeans sailed. They found there a gander, given to Oberea by Captain Wallis ten years before. The horse, mare, and sheep, were also put ashore at Matavia, after the immense trouble occasioned by bringing a living cargo to such a distance.

† Some messengers arrived the next morning from Eimeo, with intelligence that the people of that island were in arms; and that Otoo's partisans there had been compelled to retreat to the mountains. This quarrel between the two islands began in 1774, and had, in a great measure, subsisted ever since. A formidable armament had sailed soon after Captain Cook quitted Otaheite in his last voyage; but the mal-contents at Eimeo had so gallantly resisted, that the fleet had returned without success, and another expedition was now resolved upon.

On the arrival of these messengers, the chiefs assembled at Otoo's house, where the captain was then on a visit, and had the distinguished honour of being admitted into their council. After considerable debates on a variety of existing circumstances, the party for war at length prevailed; and it was resolved, though not unanimously, that a strong force should be sent to Eimeo. Otoo spoke but little during the debate: those of the council, who were advocates for war, applied to Captan Cook for his assistance; and all of them appeared extremely anxious to know which side of the question would be adopted by him. Omai was sent for to act as his interpreter; but as he could not be found, the captain performed his part as well as he could: he admitted that he was not perfectly acquainted with the subject, and observed, that, as the natives of Eimeo had never offended him, he could not think of engaging in hostilities against them. With this declaration they appeared to be perfectly satisfied,

Towha, the
who is related t
in chief of the
1774, happened
time, and there
sultations. It
not a stranger t
entered into the
spirit. For on
arrived from hi
killed a man to
order to implore
Eimeo; and th
at the great *mo*
presence was ne

The ceremoni
commenced: or
a young planta
the king. Ano
tuft of red feath
cocoa-nut husk
Otoo's feet, and
companions. C
at the *morai*, t
certain periods
which were pla
tion the numer
this occasion
prolixity, and t

On being ask
extraordinary a
was an ancient
their god, who
which induced h
Their own chie
in a very diffe

satisfied, and the
captain retired, O
noon, and that Ou

* Let it be ob
victim, offered on
aged man, and or
had not been fix
mitted any crime
plece such wicked
who have no visibl
some of the Euro
pearance of the bo
it was bloody abo
upon the right te
which he had bee
was deprived of li

The wretches,
previously made

Towha, the chief of the district of Tettaha, who is related to Otoo, and had been commander in chief of the armament sent against Eimeo in 1774, happened not to be at Matavia at this time, and therefore was not present at these consultations. It appeared, however, that he was not a stranger to these transactions; and that he entered into the affair with great eagerness and spirit. For on the first of September, a messenger arrived from him to acquaint Otoo that he had killed a man to be sacrificed to the *Eatooa*, in order to implore the assistance of the deity against Eimeo; and the ceremony was to be performed at the great *morai*, at Attahooroo; and Otoo's presence was necessary on the occasion.

The ceremonies of the human sacrifice at length commenced: one of the attendant priests brought a young plantain-tree, and laid it down before the king. Another approached, bearing a small tuft of red feathers, twisted on some fibres of the cocoa-nut husk, with which he touched one of Otoo's feet, and afterwards retired with it to his companions. One of the priests, who was seated at the *morai*, then began a long prayer, and at certain periods sent down young plantain-trees, which were placed upon the sacrifice. To mention the numerous ceremonies performed upon this occasion would tire the reader with its prolixity, and uninteresting sameness*.

On being asked what was the occasion of so extraordinary a solemnity, they replied, that it was an ancient custom, and highly agreeable to their god, who came and fed upon the sacrifices, which induced him to comply with their petitions. Their own chiefs, who fall in battle, are treated in a very different manner. Their late king, Tootaha, Tubourai-tamaide, and another chief, who were all slain in an engagement with those of Tiaraboo, were taken to the *morai* at Attahooroo; where the priests cut out their bowels before the great altar; and their bodies were afterwards interred in three different places; and the common men who were killed in the battle, were all buried in one hole. This was performed the day after the battle, with great formality, as a thanksgiving offering to the deity, for the victory they had obtained the preceding day.

At the close of the scene exhibited at the Morai, the party embarked about twelve o'clock to return to Matavia; and, in their way, paid a visit to Towha, who had remained in the little island, where they met him the preceding day. Some conversation happening on public affairs, Captain Cook was once more entreated to join them as an ally, in the war against Eimeo; but by his positive refusal he forfeited the good opinion of this chief. Before they separated, Captain Cook took an opportunity of expressing his sentiments on the horrid ceremony of the human sacrifice; declaring that, exclusive of the barbarity of the custom, such an inhuman act, instead of making the Eatooa propitious to their nation, must certainly excite his vengeance.

Omai performed the office of interpreter, in conveying the captain's sentiments to Towha, on the subject of the late bloody sacrifice; and he supported his arguments with such spirit that the chief appeared much irritated; especially when he was assured that if he had taken away the life of a man in England, his rank would not have protected him from an ignominious death.—He instantly exclaimed *maeno! maeno!*

satisfied, and the council was dissolved. But, before the captain retired, Otoo desired to see him again in the afternoon, and that Omai might accompany him.

* Let it be observed, however, that the unfortunate victim, offered on this occasion, was apparently a middle aged man, and one of the lowest class of the people: but he had not been fixed upon, on account of his having committed any crime that deserved death, though they usually select such wicked persons for their sacrifices; or vagabonds who have no visible means of procuring an honest livelihood. Some of the European gentlemen having examined the appearance of the body of the unhappy sufferer, observed that it was bloody about the head and face, and much bruised upon the right temple, which pointed out the manner in which he had been killed: and they were informed that he was deprived of life by a blow on the head with a large stone. The wretches, who suffer on these occasions, are never previously made acquainted with their destiny. When a principal chief supposes a human sacrifice necessary, he fixes upon the victim, and dispatches some of his trusty servants to perform the deed; who instantly stone him to death, or beat out his brains with a club. The solemnity itself is termed *Poore Eree*, or the prayer of the chief; and the victim is called *Tataa-taboo*, or consecrated man.

This barbarous custom of offering human victims, is supposed to prevail in all or most of the islands of the Pacific Ocean. And though we may suppose, that not more than one person is sacrificed at one time, either at Otaheite, or other islands, yet it occurs so frequently, that Captain Cook reckoned no less than forty-nine skulls, of former victims, lying before the *morai* at Attahooro; and as none of these skulls appeared to have suffered any considerable change from the weather, it may reasonably be inferred that no considerable time had elapsed since they submitted to the fatal operation

(vile! vile!) and would not hear a syllable more on the subject.

Leaving Towha, the party proceeded to Oparre, where Otoo solicited them to pass the night. They landed in the evening, and as they proceeded towards his habitation, they had an opportunity of observing how these people amuse themselves in their private *heevas*. They saw about a hundred of them sitting in a house; in the midst of whom two women appeared, and an old man behind each of them, beating gently upon a drum; the women, at intervals, chanting with great delicacy. The assembly were so extremely attentive to the music, that few of them took any notice of the strangers. When the party arrived at Otoo's house, it was almost dark; and they were entertained with a public *heeva*, or play, in which his three sisters performed the principal characters. This is termed a *heeva* raa; during the representation of which no person is permitted to enter the house or area. The dress of the royal sisters was truly elegant and picturesque, and they supported their respective parts with singular propriety.

While Otoo and Captain Cook had been absent from the ships, they had few visitors, and were very sparingly supplied with fruit. After their return they wanted neither company nor provisions. On the 4th, Otoo accompanied a party of Europeans to dine ashore with Omai, who provided an excellent repast. Dinner being over, the captain accompanied Otoo back to his dwelling, where he found all his servants fully engaged in getting a quantity of provisions ready for him. Among other articles, there was a large hog; and a capacious pudding, composed of bread-fruit, plantains, taro, and palm or pandanus-nuts. The hog being baked, and the pudding ready, they were sent on board the captain's ship, in a canoe; together with two living hogs, some bread-fruit, and cocoa-nuts, followed by the captain, and all the royal family*.

The next day Captain Cook received a present of five hogs, and some fruit, from Otoo, and a similar gratuity from each of his sisters. Otoo was ever attentive to supply the wants, and contribute to the amusements of our navigators. On the 10th he treated a party of them at Oparre with a play; and his three sisters, dressed with the greatest elegance and taste, were the performers†.

They quitted Oparre in the evening, leaving Otoo, and all the royal family: the captain saw none of them till the 12th, when all except the chief honoured him with a visit. The chief himself was gone to Attahooroo, to assist at another human sacrifice‡.

Captain Cook, Mr Anderson, and Omai went again to Oparre on the 18th, accompanied by Otoo; taking with them the sheep which the captain

* On the 7th some fire-works were exhibited before a vast concourse of people; which greatly delighted some of them, and caused infinite terror to many others.

A party dined, the next day, with Oedidee; soon after which the captain attended Otoo to his father; where he saw several people extremely busy in dressing two girls, with fine cloth, after a very singular fashion. There were several pieces of cloth; and one end of each piece was held over the heads of these young females, while the remainder was wrapped round their bodies, under the arm-pits. The upper ends were then permitted to fall down, and hang in folds to the ground, over the other. Round the outside of all, several other pieces of various colours were wrapped, which considerably increased the size; the whole being five or six yards in circuit; and the weight of this singular dress was as much as the poor girls were able to support. To which were hung two breast-plates to embellish the whole, and give it a picturesque appearance. Thus equipped they were conveyed on board the ship, with several hogs, and a quantity of fruit, which, with the addition of this cloth, was a present to Captain Cook from Otoo's father. Those who are dressed in style are called *atee*, but only large presents of cloth are honoured with this ceremony.

† The captain had now an inclination to go to Oparre, to see the embalmed corpse of Tee, a chief whom he well knew when he last visited this island. It was lying in an elegant toopapaoo, like that Ohaitepeha, in which the remains of Waheiadoua are deposited. The body was entire in every part, though Tee had been upwards of four months dead: there was indeed a shrinking of the muscular parts and eyes, but the hair and nails were perfect, and the several joints were pliable. The bodies of all their great men, who die a natural death, are thus preserved by an easy pleasant kind of process, that they may be exposed to public view for a considerable time afterwards. At first they are exhibited every fine day; then at certain stated times and afterwards they are seldom to be seen.

‡ Being honoured with the company of Otoo the following day, the Captains Cook and Clerke mounted on horseback, and rode about the plain of Matavia, to the astonishment of a multitude of spectators. Once or twice, before this, Omai had attempted to shew his dexterity in horsemanship; but he had as often fallen off, before he could get properly seated. This was therefore the first time that the natives had ever seen any body on horseback. What the captains had begun, was daily practiced by some of the Europeans; but the curiosity of the people continued unabated. Having particularly observed the method of riding these noble animals, they were exceedingly delighted with them.

Dress of a FEMALE *of* OTAHEITE
when bringing a present.

A Dance at
OTAHEITE.

J. Hamilton sculp.

intended to leave u
sisted of an Englis
Cape ewes, all whi
Otoo; strictly enjoin
to be removed from
got a stock of yo
distribute among hi
neighbouring islands
The ships having
water on board, an
order, Captain Cook
the island. Early th
on board to acquaint
canoes of Matavia, a
to join those belong
of the island; and th
review there. The
after in motion; an
bay, assembled on sh
Captain Cook went
his boat.
Their war canoes
on which they figh
amount to about sixt
many more of a sma
ready to have attende
chiefs were determi
following day; an
offered of acquiring
manner of fighting.
Otoo to give orders,
manœuvres should be
were therefore orde
of which Otoo,
King embarked; a
the other. Having
they faced, advanced
utmost expedition.
flourished their weap
the stage, gave the
advance, and when t
several times advanci
each other, the two c
and after a short, bu
on Otoo's stage were
Omai and his assoc
instantly Otoo, and
leaped into the sea,

intended to leave upon the island. They consisted of an English ram and ewe, and three Cape ewes, all which he made a present of to Otoo; strictly enjoining him not to suffer them to be removed from Oparre, till he should have got a stock of young ones, which he might distribute among his friends, or disperse in the neighbouring islands.

The ships having taken a proper quantity of water on board, and every thing being put in order, Captain Cook began to think of quitting the island. Early the next morning, Otoo came on board to acquaint Captain Cook, that the war canoes of Matavia, and some other districts, were to join those belonging to Oparre and that part of the island; and that there would be a general review there. The Matavia squadron was soon after in motion; and, after parading about the bay, assembled on shore, near the middle of it. Captain Cook went to take a survey of them in his boat.

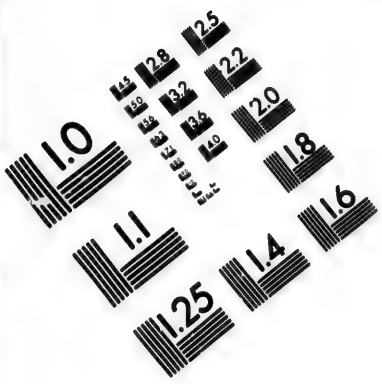
Their war canoes are those which have stages, on which they fight, the number of which amount to about sixty; and they have nearly as many more of a smaller size. The captain was ready to have attended them to Oparre: but the chiefs were determined not to move till the following day; an opportunity was therefore offered of acquiring some insight into their manner of fighting. He earnestly requested Otoo to give orders, that some of the necessary manœuvres should be performed. Two of them were therefore ordered into the bay; in one of which Otoo, Captain Cook, and Mr. King embarked; and Omai went on board the other. Having got sufficient sea-room, they faced, advanced, and retreated, with the utmost expedition. The warriors on the stages flourished their weapons. Otoo, by the side of the stage, gave the necessary orders when to advance, and when to retreat. At length, after several times advancing to, and retreating from each other, the two canoes closed, stage to stage: and after a short, but severe conflict, the troops on Otoo's stage were supposed to be killed; and Omai and his associates boarded them; when instantly Otoo, and the paddlers of his canoe, leaped into the sea, having no other alternative than that of swimming for the preservation of their lives.

But their engagements are not always conducted in this manner; Omai declared that they sometimes lash the two vessels together, head to head, and fight till all the warriors, on one side or the other, are killed. But this close contest is only practised when the parties are determined to conquer or die.

The strength of these islands consists wholly in their navies: a general engagement on land never happens among them; all their decisive battles occurring upon the water. When the time and place of battle are fixed upon by both parties, the preceding day and night is devoted to feasting and diversions; and at the approach of morning, they launch the canoes, get every thing in order, and, with the day, commence the contest, the event of which generally terminates the dispute. The vanquished have recourse to flight, and those who reach the shore ascend the mountains; for the victors, before their fury is abated, spare neither age nor sex. They assemble the following day at the *morai*, to return thanks to the *eatooa* for the victory, and offer up the slain and prisoners as sacrifices. A treaty is then proposed, when the conquerors usually name the terms of stipulation; by which large districts of territory, and whole islands, may probably change their owners. Omai said he was once taken a prisoner by the men of Bolabola, and conducted to that island; where he and many others must have lost their lives the next day, had they not fortunately found means to escape in the course of the night.

The sham engagement being ended, Omai equipped himself in his suit of armour, mounted a stage in one of the canoes, and paddled along the shore of the bay, that every person might have an opportunity of taking a perfect view of him. His coat of mail, however, did not excite the attention of the multitude so much as he expected. Many of the people, indeed, had been so highly disgusted at his folly and impudence, upon several recent occasions, that they looked on him, and his splendid decorations, with indifference, bordering on contempt.

SECT.



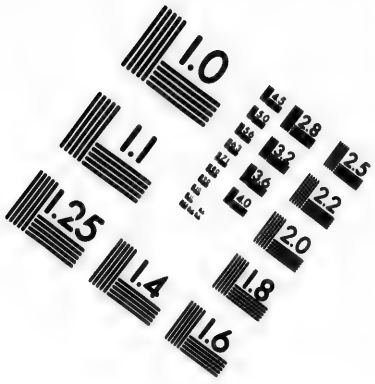
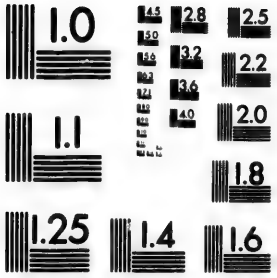
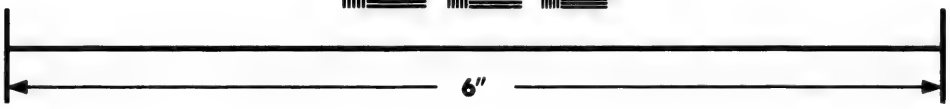


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)





Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

SECTION XII.

Deliberations on Sailing—A Peace with Eimeo—Otoo neglects sending early Reinforcements—Solemnity at the Morai on the Peace—Otoo's artful Conduct—Omai receives a Present of a War Canoe, which he embellishes with Streamers—Otoo's Present to his Majesty, Modes of Traffic, &c. at Otaheite—Expedition of some Spaniards—Who endeavour to traduce the English—Omai jealous of another Traveller.

OTOO and his father came on board in the morning of the 22d, to know when Captain Cook intended to sail, as they proposed to accompany him to Eimeo, and that their fleet should sail at the same time to reinforce Towha. The Captain submitted to them the appointment of the day; the following Wednesday was therefore resolved upon, when he was to receive on board Otoo, his father, mother, and the whole family. This point being adjusted, the Captain proposed setting out immediately for Oparre, where the fleet was to assemble this day, and to be reviewed.

As Captain Cook was stepping into his boat, intelligence arrived that a treaty had been concluded between Towha and Mahaine, and Towha's fleet had returned to Attahooroo. In consequence of which the war canoes, instead of rendezvousing at Oparre, were ordered to their respective districts. Captain Cook, however, followed Otoo to Oparre, accompanied by Mr. King and Omai; where, soon after their arrival, a messenger from Eimeo related the conditions of the peace, which might more properly have been denominated a truce; the time of its duration being limited.

The terms being disadvantageous to Otaheite, Otoo was severely censured, as the disgraceful accommodation was the effect of his delay in sending reinforcements. It was even suggested that Towha, resenting the treatment he had received, had declared, that immediately after Captain Cook's departure, he would join his forces to those of Tiaraboo, and attack Otoo. Roused by this irritating report, the Captain resolutely declared, that he was determined to espouse the interest of his friend; and that whoever presumed to attack him, should feel the weight of his displeasure, when he returned to their island.

After this declaration no more was heard of Towha's report: Whippai, the father of Otoo, was highly offended at the terms of the peace, and censured Towha for concluding it; wisely considering that Captain Cook's going with them to Eimeo, might have been of essential service to their cause, though he might not interfere in the quarrel. He therefore concluded, that Otoo had acted prudently in waiting for the captain, though it unfortunately prevented his giving that early assistance to Towha which he expected *.

On the 25th of September, Otoo, Mr. King, and Omai, returned from Attatooroa, when Mr. King gave a narrative of what he had seen, to the following effect. "At sun-set we embark-

* While they were debating on this subject at Oparre, a messenger arrived from Towha, to request that Otoo would attend the next day at the *morai* in Attahooro, to render thanks to the gods for the peace he had concluded. Captain Cook was asked to attend, but being indisposed, he chose to decline it; he sent Mr. King and Omai to observe the particulars, and returned to his ship, accompanied by Otoo's mother, his three sisters, and several other women. The captain at first supposed that this numerous train came into his boat to procure a passage to Mataval, but they assured him that they intended to pass the night on board, in order to cure him of the rheumatic disorder which he complained of. He accepted the friendly offer, and submitted himself to their directions. He was then desired to lie down among them, when all those who could get near him, began to squeese him with both hands on many parts of his body, but more particularly on those where the pain was found the most intolerable, till his bones began to crack, and his flesh was almost squeezed to a mummy: after suffering this severe discipline about a quarter of an hour, he thought himself extremely happy to be allowed an interval of ease. The operation, however, gave him immediate relief, and encouraged him to ask a repetition of it before he retired to bed; so effectual were their endeavours, that he found himself pretty easy the whole night after. These generous physicians renewed their prescription the next morning, and again in the evening, when the health of the patient was perfectly re-established, and they politely took their leave. This operation is called *romee* among the natives, and far exceeds that of the flesh-brush, or any external friction.

ed

ed in a canoe, and left Oparre. About nine we landed at that extremity of Tettaha which joins to Attahooroo. The meeting of Otoo and Towha, I expected, would be interesting. Otoo and his attendants seated themselves on the beach, near the canoe in which Towha sat. He was then asleep; but being awakened, and hearing Otoo's name mentioned, a plantain-tree and dog were instantly laid at Otoo's feet, and several of Towha's people entered into conversation with him. After having been for some time seated close to Otoo, I repaired to Towha. He asked me if Toote was displeased with him; I answered no; and that he was his *tato;* and that I was directed to go to Attahooroo to let him know it. On returning to Otoo, he desired that I should go to eat, and then to sleep: Omai and I were therefore induced to leave him. On questioning Omai on that subject, he said Towha was lame, and could not stir; but that Otoo and he would soon converse together in private. This was probably true; for those we left with Otoo joined us in a little time, and soon after Otoo himself arrived; when we all went to sleep in his canoe. Plenty of *kava* was produced the next morning. One person drank to such an excess, that he was deprived of his senses, and appeared to be convulsed. He was held by two men, who amused themselves in plucking off his hair by the roots. I left this spectacle to see the meeting of Towha and his wife, and a young girl who was said to be his daughter. After the ceremony of cutting their heads, and a copious discharge of blood and tears, they washed, embraced the chief, and seemed perfectly unconcerned. But the sufferings of the young female were not yet concluded. Terridiri (Oberra's son) arrived; when she, with the utmost composure, repeated those ceremonies to him, which she had just performed on meeting her father. Towha having brought a war canoe from Eimeo, I asked if he had killed the people belonging to her; and was informed that there was not a person in her when she was captured."

About ten they left Tattaha, and landed in the afternoon close to the *morai* of Attahooroo. It was expected that the solemnity would have immediately been commenced; but nothing was done, as neither Towha nor Potatou had joined them. The next day both those personages arrived, with seven or eight large canoes, and landed near the *morai.* Several plantain-trees were presented to Otoo, on behalf off different chiefs. The ceremony was began by the principal priest, who brought out the *maro,* wrapped up, and a bundle of a conic shape. These things were placed at the head of what had the appearance of a grave; and three priests sat down at the other end, having with them a plantain-tree, a branch of another tree, and the sheath of the flower of the cocoa-nut tree. The priests separately repeated sentences: and, at intervals, chanted a melancholy ditty. A short prayer ensued; after which the chief priest uncovered the *maro,* when Otoo rose up and wrapped it about him, holding in his hand a bonnet of red and black feathers. After some further ceremonies, extremely similar to those above mentioned, the solemnity ended with three cheers. The *maro* was then wrapped up, and decorated with additional red feathers.

The people then proceeded to a large hut near the morai, and seated themselves in solemn order. An oration was pronounced by a man of Tiaraboo; who was followed by another from Attahooroo. After these Tooteeo distinguished himself as a fluent speaker.

In the midst of their harangues, a man of Attahooroo rose up, having a sling fastened to his waist, and a stone upon his shoulder. After parading for some time in the open space, and chanting a few sentences, he threw the stone upon the ground. This stone, with the plantain tree that lay at Otoo's feet, were then conveyed to the *morai;* one of the priests joining with Otoo in pronouncing a short sentence upon the occasion.

Omai, who was present at the ceremony when Otoo was made king, said it much resembled that which was now described by Mr. King. The plantain tree is always first introduced in all their religious ceremonies; and probably upon many other occasions. It is, indeed, the olive-branch of these people upon all important occasions.

Captain Cook accompanied Otoo, the next day, to Oparre; and surveyed the cattle and poultry he had consigned to his friend's care: every animal was in a promising way, and seemed properly attended to. He took four goats from Otoo, two of which he proposed to leave at Ulietea; and to reserve the other two for the

advantage of any other islands he might touch at *.

For the many valuable articles which Omai had given away, he received one good thing in return. This was a fine double sailing canoe completely equipped. Captain Cook had some time before made up a suit of English colours for him, but he thought them too valuable for the present purpose, and therefore collected ten or a dozen flags and pendants, which he spread over different parts of his canoe; and thus drew together a number of people to gaze at her. Omai's streamers were an assemblage of English, French, Spanish, and Dutch; being all the European colours he had seen †.

Otoo came on board the 28th of September, and informed Captain Cook that he had got a canoe, which he requested he would take with him, as a present from him to the *Earee rahie no Pretane*. The Captain was pleased with Otoo for this token of his gratitude; which he supposed, at first, to have been a model of one of their vessels of war, but it proved to be a small *ivahah*, about sixteen feet in length: it was double, and decorated with carved work; but being too large for him to take on board, he could only thank him for his kind intention.

Calms and gentle breezes from the west, detained them here some days longer than they expected; during which time the ships were crowded with their friends, and surrounded by canoes. On the 29th, at three in the afternoon the wind came at east, and they weighed anchor. The ships being under sail, seven guns were fired, not only to oblige Otoo, but also to gratify the curiosity of his people; after which many of their friends took their leave of them in so affectionate a manner, as to testify how much they regretted their departure. Otoo, and two or three others, expressing a desire of seeing the ships sail, a stretch was made out to sea and then in again immediately; when they also took their last farewel, and went ashore in Otoo's canoe ‡.

It may seem extraordinary that our navigators could never get any distinct account of the time when the Spaniards arrived, how long they stayed, or when they departed. It however appeared, by the inscription upon the cross, and by the information of some of the intelligent natives, that two ships came to Oheitepeha in 1774, soon after Captain Cook left Matavai, which was in May the same year. They left behind them a bull, some goats, hogs, and dogs, and a ram.

The hogs are large, and have greatly improved the breed originally found by the English upon the island: goats are also extremely plenty. The dogs introduced by the Spaniards, are of two or three sorts. Had they all been hanged, instead of being left upon the island, the natives would have been gainers by it. Captain Cook's

* Otoo had no objection to the exercise of a little fraudulent cunning to answer a mercenary purpose, as appears from the following circumstance. Among other articles, Captain Cook had made this chief a present of a spying-glass; but when he had been a few days in possession of it, he grew tired of its novelty, or from some other cause grew indifferent about it; he therefore took it privately to Captain Clerke, professing great friendship for him, and informing him that he had got a present for him, which he supposed would be agreeable. "But," added he, "*Toota* must not be made acquainted with this transaction, because he wanted it, and I refused to let him have it." He then delivered the glass to Captain Clerke. The Captain, at first, begged to be excused from accepting it; but Otoo, becoming still more urgent, insisted upon his taking it, and left it with him. A few days after he reminded the Captain of the glass; who, thinking a few axes would be agreeable to Otoo, produced four or five to give him in exchange. Otoo instantly exclaimed, "*Toote* offered me five for it." "Well," replied Captain Clerke, "I am far from wishing that you should be a loser by your friendship for me, and you shall have six axes." He readily accepted them; but again requested that Captain Cook might not be made acquainted with the transaction.

† Omai's sister, and brother-in-law, together with a few select acquaintance, engrossed him to themselves, in order to strip him of all the property he possessed; and they would probably have succeeded, if Captain Cook had not taken his most valuable articles under his own care. But even this measure would not have saved Omai from destruction, if these relations of his had accompanied him to his intended place of settlement at Huaheine, as they had intended; but the Captain disappointed their further views of plunder, by forbidding them to appear in that island while he continued in that country; and they knew him too well not to comply with the injunction.

‡ Captain Cook was enjoined by Otoo, to request, in his name, the *Earee rahie no Pretane*, to send him by the next ship, some red feathers, axes, and half a dozen muskets, powder and shot, and horses.

When these people made the Europeans a present, they usually signified what they expected in return; by which means their presents often came dearer to them than what they could get by barter; but when they were occasionally pressed by extreme scarcity, they could have recourse to their friends for a supply, when they could not procure it by any other method. This mode of traffic was therefore as convenient to them as to the natives.

young

young ram fell a victim to one of these animals. Four Spaniards remained on shore, after these ships left the island; two of whom were priests, one a servant, and the other was much caressed among the natives, from his having a competent knowledge of their language. This man, who was distinguished by the name of Mateema, had been indefatigable in impressing the minds of the islanders with exalted ideas of the greatness of the Spanish nation, and inducing them to think meanly of that of the English. Many improbable falsehoods were propagated by this Spaniard, and believed by the inhabitants; but Captain Cook's return to Otaheite was an ample confutation of all that Mateema had advanced.

Whatever design the Spanish priests and their companions, might have had upon this island, their hasty departure sufficiently proved that they had laid it aside. They endeavoured to make the natives believe that it was their intention to return, and that they would bring with them houses, animals, men and women, who were to settle on the island. After Mateema and his companions had continued ten months in the island, two ships arrived at Oheitepeha, took them on board, and sailed again in five days.

SECTION XIII.

Anchor at Taloo in Eimeo—The Harbours of Taloo and Parowroah described—Visit from Maheine the Chief of Eimeo—Description of his Person—Preparations for Sailing—Goat Stolen—That recovered and another stolen—Menaces on the Occasion—Expedition in Search of the Goat—Houses and Canoes destroyed—Other Hostilities threatened—The Goat returned—Description of the Island.

AFTER leaving Otaheite at day-break on the 30th of September, the navigators stood for the north-end of the island of Eimeo. Omai, in his canoe, arrived there before them. They were not without pilots, having several natives of Otaheite on board, and, among them, several women. Unwilling to rely entirely upon these guides, Captain Cook dispatched two boats to examine the harbour; when, safe anchorage being found, they stood in with both the ships, and anchored in ten fathoms water.

The name of the harbour is Taloo; it is on the north side of the island, and runs upwards of two miles between the hills, south, or south by east. It is not inferior to any harbour they have seen in this ocean, both for security and goodness of bottom. It has besides this singular advantage, that a ship can sail in and out with the reigning trade wind. Among the several rivers which fall into it, one is so considerable as to admit boats a quarter of a mile up, where the water is perfectly fresh. The banks on the sides of this stream are covered with the *pooroo* tree, which makes excellent fuel. Wood and water may therefore be procured here with great facility*.

As soon as they had anchored, many of the inhabitants came on board the ships from mere motives of curiosity, without having any thing to barter; but several canoes arrived in the morning from more distant parts, bringing with them hogs, bread fruit, and cocoa-nuts, which were exchanged for hatchets, nails, and beads.

On the 2nd of October Captain Cook received a visit from Maheine, the chief of the island. He approached the ship with as much caution as if he had apprehended mischief from our Europeans, because they were friends to the Otaheitans. This chief was accompanied by his wife: Captain Cook made them several presents, after which they went ashore, but speedily returned with a large hog, as a proper acknowledgment of the Captain's favours. He then made them an additional present, and surpassed the chief in generosity. This couple afterwards repaired to the Discovery, to pay a visit to Captain Clerke.

Maheine, supported with a few adherents,

* The harbour of Parowroah is about two miles to the eastward, and is much larger within than that of Taloo; but the opening in the reef lies to the leeward of the harbour, and is considerably narrower. These defects give the harbour of Taloo a decided preference. There are also one or two inconsiderable harbours on the south side of the island.

considers

considers himself as almost independent of Otaheite. He is bald-headed, though only about forty-four years of age, which is rather an uncommon circumstance in these islands. He seemed ashamed of his naked head, and wore a kind of turban to conceal it: it may probably be thus considered, as shaving the head had been introduced by Captain Clerke as a punishment inflicted on thieves; in consequence of which some of the officers belonging to the ships, whose heads were but thinly covered with hair, were strongly suspected by the natives of being *tetos**.

On the 3rd most of the inhabitants were absent, taking a corpse with them on a *toopapaoo*, and Maheine had retired to the remotest part of the island. It was now sufficiently evident that a regular plan had been projected, to steal what the Captain was unwilling to give; he having assigned to the chief the most satisfactory reasons for not leaving them in this island.

Having restored one of the goats, the people were determined not to part with the other, which was a female, and with kid; and the Captain was as resolutely determined to have it back again. He therefore applied to two elderly men, who had been instrumental in recovering the first; they informed him that this had been taken to a place called Watea, by Hamoa, the chief of that place, but that it would be delivered up, if he would send for it. They expressed a willingness to conduct any of his people to the spot. Some of Captain Cook's officers proceeded to the house of Hamoa at Watea, where they were, for some time, amused by the people; who pretended they had sent for the goat, and that it would instantly be produced. Night however approached, and the lost animal never appeared; when Mr. Shuttleworth, one of Captain Cook's officers, was obliged to return to his boat without it†.

On their first arrival at Watea, several men were seen running to and fro in the woods, being armed with clubs and darts; and Omai, who moved towards them, had stones thrown at him. Hence it was apprehended that they meant to oppose any violence that might be attempted against them; but on perceiving the strength of the other party, had abandoned the design.

* Towha's fleet had been stationed in this harbour, and though the war was speedily concluded, the marks of its devastation were every where conspicuous. Having made every preparation for sailing, the navigators intended to put to sea the next day; but an unfortunate accident prevented it. In the day time our adventurers had sent their goats on shore to graze; and though two men had been appointed to protect them, one of them had been stolen in the evening. As this loss interfered with the captain's views of stocking other islands with these animals, he resolved, if possible, to recover it. Information was received the next morning that it had been conveyed to Maheine, who was then at Parowroah harbour; the Captain therefore dispatched some of his people in a boat, with a message to that chief, requiring both the goat and the thief to be immediately given up.

Little suspecting that any person would presume to steal a second, whilst great exertions were making to recover the first, the goats were again put ashore in the morning, and a boat, as usual, sent for them in the evening. While the Europeans were getting them into the boat, another was conveyed away undiscovered. As it was immediately missed, hopes were entertained of recovering it without much trouble, supposing it could not have been taken to any considerable distance. Several of the natives set out, different ways, to seek after it, declaring they supposed it must have strayed into the woods; not one of them admiting that it was stolen. Our adventurers, however, were convinced to the contrary, when it was discovered that not any of the pursuers returned; their intention was only to amuse them till their prize was safely deposited. Night coming on, the boat returned with the other goat, and one of the persons who had stolen it.

† Fearing that if these robbers should escape detection, the islanders would be encouraged to rob our navigators with impunity, the Captain consulted with Omai, and the two old men, what methods could be taken. They did not hesitate to recommend the most decisive measures, and advised him to go into the country with a party of men, and shoot every person he should meet with. Captain Cook did not approve of this bloody counsel; but, early the next morning, set out with upwards of thirty of his people, accompanied by Omai, one of the old men, and three or four attendants. He also sent lieutenant Williamson round the western parts of the island, with three armed boats, to meet them.

As soon as this party had landed, a few remaining natives fled before them. The first person they came near was in a very perilous situation; for Omai, the instant he beheld him, asked the Captain if he should shoot him; fully expecting that the advice which he had given was instantly to be carried into execution. General orders were then immediately given, that it was not Captain Cook's intention to injure, much less to destroy, a single native. This declaration being speedily circulated, prevented the flight of the inhabitants.

Ascending the ridge of hills, on their road to Watea they were informed the goat had been taken the same way. Proceeding further, they were told the animal had been kept there the first night, but had been taken to Watea the next morning. Arriving at Watea, they were directed to Hamoa's house, by persons who assured them the lost goat was there; but when they entered the premises, the people they saw there, declared they had never seen it, or knew any thing concerning it. Hamoa himself appeared, and declared he knew nothing of the business.

The

They were confirmed in this opinion, by observing that all their houses were empty *.

About four in the afternoon the party arrived at Wharrarada, where their boats were waiting for them. Here they remained about an hour, in order to rest themselves, and afterwards set out for the ships, where they arrived about eight in the evening, but no tidings of the missing animal had been, at that time, received.

In the morning of the 10th of October, the Captain dispatched one of Omai's men to Maheine, with this peremptory message,—that if he persisted in his refusal to deliver up the goat, a single canoe should not be permitted to remain on the island; and that hostilities should never cease while the stolen animal continued in his possession. To convince the messenger that he was in earnest, he ordered the carpenter, in his presence, to break up several canoes that lay at the head of the harbour. Captain Cook then proceeded to the next harbour, where he caused seven or eight more canoes to be destroyed, and returned on board about seven in the evening. On his arrival, he found the goat had been returned about half an hour before; and it evidently appeared, from a variety of circumstances, that it came from the very place, where the inhabitants, the day before, declared they knew nothing about it. Thus ended this troublesome and unfortunate business.

The intercourse between our Europeans and the natives was renewed the following morning; several canoes bringing articles to the ships to barter; whence it was reasonable to conclude, that they were conscious they had merited the treatment they had received. They weighed, with a breeze, down the harbour, about nine; but it was so variable, that they did not get out to sea till noon, when they steered for Huaheine, Omai attending in his canoe.

There is not much difference between the produce of this island, and that of Otaheite; but their women are remarkably dissimilar: those of Eimeo being of a dark hue, low stature, and having very unpleasant features. Otaheite, being a hilly country, has little low land, except some deep vallies. Eimeo has steep rugged hills, in different directions, with gently rising grounds about their sides. The hills, though rocky, are generally covered with trees, almost to the tops.

SECTION XIV.

The Ships arrive at Huaheine—Assembly of the Chiefs—Omai's Harangue—His Establishment agreed to—A House erected for him—His Safety provided for—The Ships infested with Cock-Roaches—Detection and Punishment of a Thief—Escapes from his Confinement—Animals left with Omai—His European Weapons—His Entertainments—His Character.

ON the morning that succeeded the departure of our navigators from Eimeo, they saw Huaheine; and at twelve they anchored at the northern entrance of Owharre harbour, on the west side of the island, Omai, in his canoe, entered the harbour just before them, but did not land. Many of his countrymen crowded to behold him, but they were not particularly noticed by him. Such numbers came off to the ships, as greatly to incommode the persons on board. Their passengers informed them of the transactions at Eimeo, and multiplied the number

* A few of the natives being collected together, Omai was directed to expostulate with them on the absurdity of their conduct, and to inform them that he knew the goat was in their possession; and that, if it was not instantly restored, he should consume all their houses and canoes. Still they persisted in their denial of knowing any thing relative to the crime, alledged against some of their brother islanders. In consequence of which Captain Cook set fire to seven or eight of their houses, and two or three war canoes, which were entirely consumed. After this they marched off to join the boats, which were then about seven miles from them, and, on their road, destroyed six other war canoes. At length Omai, who was at some distance before them, returned with information, that a multitude of men were assembling to attack them. They prepared themselves to receive them, but, instead of enemies, they were petitioners, bearing plantain-trees in their hands; these were laid down before the Captain, entreating him to spare a certain canoe, which he readily complied with.

of houses and canoes they had destroyed. This exaggerated account was far from being displeasing to Captain Cook, as he found it made a greater impression upon all who heard it; which might operate in such a manner as to induce the natives of this island to behave better, than they had done during his prior visits.

The next morning, which was the 13th of October, the ships were visited by all the principal people of the island; a circumstance that afforded much satisfaction to Captain Cook, as he now thought it high time to settle Omai, and he supposed the presence of these chiefs would enable him to effect it in a satisfactory manner. The Captain therefore prepared to make a formal visit to Taireetareea, the *Earee rahie*, or king of the island, to introduce this business. Omai, who was to accompany him, decorated his person very properly on the occasion, and provided a suitable present for the chief himself, and another for his *Eatooa*. Their landing drew a number of visitors from the ships, who, with many others, repaired to a large house. The concourse of people was astonishing; most of whom were stouter and fairer than those of Otaheite.

The Captain waited some time for Taireetareea; but when he made his appearance, he was convinced that his presence might have been dispensed with, as he hardly exceeded ten years of age. Omai commenced with making his offering to the gods, consisting of red feathers, cloth, &c. Another offering was devoted to the gods by the young chief; and several other tufts of feathers were also presented. The various articles were laid before a priest, being each delivered with a kind of prayer, spoken by one of Omai's friends, though principally dictated by himself; in which he did not forget his friends in England, nor those who had safely conducted him back to his native country. The priest then noticed each of the articles in order, and, after reciting a prayer, dispatched every one to the *morai* *.

Wishing, however, to be perfectly understood upon this important business, the captain declared, in the most decisive manner, that he would neither assist in such an enterprize, nor suffer it to be carried into execution, while he continued in their seas; and that, if Omai established himself in Ulietea, he should be introduced as a friend, and not forcibly imposed upon the people of Bolabola.

This peremptory declaration had a wonderful effect on the deliberations of the council, one of whom expressed himself to the following effect: That the whole island of Huaheine, with whatever it contained, was Captain Cook's; and that consequently, he might bestow what portion of it he pleased on his friend. The captain then requested, that a particular spot might be fixed upon, and a certain quantity of land appropriated for his settlement. A short consultation ensued among the chiefs, and Captain Cook's request was unanimously granted; the ground immediately fixed upon, being contiguous to the house where the present meeting had been convened. It extended two hundred yards along the shore of the harbour, which was somewhat exceeded by its depth. This business being adjusted, a tent was pitched on shore, a post established, and the observatories erected. The carpenters were employed in building a house for Omai sufficiently capacious to contain the European commodities he had in his possession. At the same time, some of the ships' company were occupied in making a garden for his use, planting vines, melons, pine-apples, and the seeds of other vegetables; all of which were in a flourishing state before the Europeans quitted the island.

Omai now began seriously to attend to his own affairs, and h

* After the performance of these religious rites, Omai seated himself near the Captain; who gave a present to the young chief, and received another in return. The establishment of Omai was then proposed to the chiefs who were assembled. He informed them that the Europeans had conveyed him into their country, where he was graciously received by the great king and his nobles, and indulgently treated during his continuance there: that he had been brought back, after having been enriched by their generosity, with a variety of articles, which would be extremely beneficial to his countrymen; and that, besides the two horses which were to continue with him, many other new and valuable animals had been left at Otaheite, which would speedily multiply, and furnish a progeny for the advantage of all the neighbouring islands. He then intimated to them, that Captain Cook requested they would give his friend a piece of land, whereon a house might be erected, and provisions produced for himself and servants: adding, that, if he could not obtain this at Huaheine, the Captain was determined to establish him at Ulietea. Omai, indeed, had vainly flattered himself, that the Captain would employ forcible means to restore him to his father's lands in Ulietea.

affairs, and heartily repented of his folly and prodigality at Otaheite. He found, at Huaheine, a brother, a sister, and a brother-in-law, but they did not plunder him, as his other relations had lately done. They were too honest to injure him, and they were of too little consequence in the island to render him any essential service.

As Omai had, by his connection with our Europeans, made himself master of a species of treasure, which his countrymen could not possibly create; it was natural to imagine that many were desirous of sharing in his envied wealth, and would not be much averse to join with others in stripping its sole proprietor. To prevent such a combination, Captain Cook advised him to distribute some of his moveables among a few of the principal chiefs; who, on being thus gratified, might patronise him, and shield him from the injuries of others*.

While the navigators continued in this harbour, they took the bread on shore to clear it of vermin. Cock-roaches innumerable infested the ship at this time: the damage they sustained from them was very considerable, and every attempt to destroy them was fruitless. Food of any kind, exposed for a few minutes, was covered with these noxious insects, who soon pierced it so full of holes that it resembled a honey-comb†.

Omai's house being now almost completed, several of his moveables were taken ashore on the 26th; among other articles, a box of toys seemed to engage the attention of the gazing multitude. But his dishes, plates, mugs, kettles, and the whole train of domestic apparatus, created no admirers. Omai himself now began to think that they would not be of any service to him; that a baked hog was more savoury food than a boiled one; that a plaintain was as good a plate as pewter; and a cocoa-nut shell as convenient a goblet as a mug. He therefore bartered these articles of English furniture among the crew of the ship for hatchets, and iron instruments.

On the 30th, in the morning, the Bolabola-man, who had been confined, found means to make his escape, taking with him the shackle of the bilboo-bolt that had been put about his leg; which was demanded from him as soon as he arrived on shore, by one of the chiefs, and given to Omai; who quickly informed the captain that his professed enemy was again let loose upon him. It appeared, upon enquiry, that the sentry placed over the prison, and even the whole watch where he was confined, having fallen asleep, he seized the opportunity of taking the key of the irons out of the drawer he had put it in, and set himself at liberty. Captain Cook

* He promised to pursue this salutary advice; and our navigators were informed, before they sailed, that he had literally adopted it. The captain, however, had also recourse to intimidation, supposing it might be equally effectual with many of the natives. He took every opportunity of assuring them, that it was his intention to make another visit to their island, after being absent the usual time; and that if he did not find his friend in a state of such perfect security as he should now leave him, all those who had been his enemies, might expect to become the objects of his resentment. This menacing assertion will probably have some effect; for the successive visits from the Europeans of late years, have induced these islanders to believe that their ships are to return at stated periods. While this notion is generally entertained among them, Omai has a prospect of being suffered to thrive upon his new plantation.

† The intercourse of trade and friendly offices between the Europeans and the inhabitants of Huaheine, was not disturbed till the evening of the 22d, when one of the natives found his way into Mr. Bayly's Observatory, and carried off a sextant, unobserved. Informed of this theft, Captain Cook desired Omai to apply to the chiefs, to procure restitution. He accordingly made application to them, but they neglected to take the necessary steps to recover the instrument; being more attentive to a *heeva*, that was then exhibiting, till the captain commanded the performers to desist. Convinced that he was now in earnest, they began to make some enquiry after the delinquent, who sat in the midst of them with such apparent unconcern, that Captain Cook could hardly be induced to think him guilty. Omai, however, assuring him that this was the man, he was taken on board the ship, and there confined. This produced a general ferment among the assembled islanders, and the whole body of them fled. The prisoner was examined by Omai, who, after much prevarication, acknowledged where he had concealed the sextant, which was brought back uninjured the next morning. After this discovery, the natives ventured to appear as usual. As the thief appeared to be a hardened depredator, Captain Cook ordered him to be punished with unexampled severity; for, besides having his head and beard shaved, he directed that both his ears should be cut off, and then dismissed.

But this punishment did not deter him from the perpetration of other offences; for, in the morning of the 25th a general alarm was spread, occasioned by one of the captain's goats being stolen by this very man. This indeed happened not to be true, but it appeared that he had destroyed, and carried off from Omai's ground, several vines and cabbage-plants; and publicly threatened to murder him, and set fire to his house, as soon as he should quit this place. To prevent the further execution of his mischievous designs, the captain ordered him to be again confined on board the ship, with a view of carrying him out of the island; a circumstance which gave general satisfaction to the chiefs.

had

had afterwards the pleasure to be informed, that the fellow who had thus escaped had gone over to Ulietea.

Omai being now settled in his new habitation, Captain Cook began to think of departing from Huaheine, and got every thing off from the shore, except a goat with kid, and a horse and mare, which were left in the possession of his friend. He was also favoured with a boar, and two sows of the English breed; and he had got two or three sows of his own.

To form his domestic establishment, Omai had procured at Otaheite four or five *toutous*, or people of the lower class; the two New Zealanders continued with him; and his brother, with several others, joined him at Huaheine; so that his family consisted of about ten or eleven persons. The house erected for him was twenty four feet by eighteen, and about ten feet in height. In the construction of it, as few nails as possible were used, lest the desire of iron might be an inducement to pull it down. It was agreed on that, after the departure of the Europeans, a spacious house should be built, after the mode of his own country; it was intended to add greatly to ecurity; and many of the chiefs promised contribute their assistance. Should the intended building cover as much ground as was marked out for it, few of the mansions in Huaheine will exceed it in magnitude.

Omai's European arms consisted of a fowling-piece, a musquet, a bayonet, two pair of pistols, with several swords or cutlasses. Having taken on shore the property belonging to him, he several times invited the two captains, and many of the other officers of the ships, to dine with him; on which occasion, his table was plentifully supplied with the best provisions that could be procured. Before our navigators set sail, Captain Cook caused the following inscription to be cut on the outside of his house:

Georgius Tertius, Rex, 2 Novembris, 1777.
Naves { *Resolution, Jac. Cook, Pr.*
Discovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.

On the 2d of November, at four o'clock, taking the advantage of an easterly breeze, the Europeans sailed out of Owharre harbour. Most of their friends remained on board till the vessels were under sail; when Captain Cook, to gratify their curiosity, ordered five guns to be fired. Every person then quitted them, except Omai, who remained till they were out at sea. They had come to sail by a hawser fastened to the shore, which, in casting the ship, parted, being cut with the rocks, and its outer end was left behind; a boat was therefore dispatched to bring it on board. In this boat, Omai went ashore, after having taken a very affectionate leave of all the officers. He sustained his part with becoming fortitude, till he came to Captain Cook, when he found himself unable to suppress his tears, and continued weeping till he arrived on shore*.

The defects of Omai's character were considerably over-balanced by his good nature and docility. Captain Cook, during the time he was with him, was never seriously displeased with his general character. His grateful heart retained the highest sense of the favours that had been conferred upon him; nor will he ever be unmindful of those who have honoured him with their favour and protection. But these islanders, though they have been several times visited by Europeans, have not even attempted to profit by this intercourse; such is the characterist icfoible of the people. It cannot therefore be expected, that Omai will be able to introduce among them many of our arts and customs: but it may be expected that he will exert his endeavours to bring to perfection, the fruit and vegetables that were planted by our Europeans; which will be no inconsiderable acquisition. The principal ad-

* If Omai had made a proper use of the presents brought with him from Great Britain, he might have formed the most advantageous connections. His father was possessed of considerable property in Ulietea, when that island was subdued by the inhabitants of Bolabola; and, with many others, fled for refuge to Huaheine, where he died, leaving Omai, with several other children, who thus became dependent. In this situation, Captain Furneaux took compassion on him, and brought him to England. Perhaps he expected, from the treatment he met with there, that powerful assistance would be afforded him against the enemies of his father and his country; for, from the commencement of his voyage, this was his constant topic. He was indeed so ridiculously attached to his favourite scheme, that he expressed a belief that the Bolabolans would certainly quit the conquered island, when they received intelligence of his arrival in Otaheite. But as he proceeded in the voyage, he began to perceive his error; and on his arrival at the Friendly Islands, he had such apprehensions of his reception in his own country, that he was even inclined to have remained at Tongataboo, under the protection of his friend Feenou. He continued undetermined to the last, and would not have adopted the plan of settlement in Huaheine, had not Captain Cook peremptorily refused to employ force in restoring him to his father's former possessions.

vantage

vantage will probably arise from the animals which have been left upon these islands, which perhaps they never would have obtained, if he had not come over to England. When these multiply, Otaheite, and the Society Islands will become the most enviable situations upon earth.

SECTION XV.

Arrival at Ulietea—A Marine deserts; but is brought back—Intelligence from Omai—Instructions to Captain Clerke—Two others desert—Sought after by the two Captains—The Chief, and his Family, confined—Conspiracy of the Natives against the Captains—Two Deserters recovered—The Chief's Family liberated—The Ships sail—Remarks on the Ulieteans.

ON the return of the boat which conveyed Omai on shore, our navigators hoisted her in, and instantly stood over for Ulietea. The next morning they made sail for the harbour of Ohamaneno. Meeting with variable light airs and calms, they were, at twelve o'clock, still about the distance of a league from the mouth of the harbour. While they were thus detained, Oreo, the chief of the island, with his son, and son-in-law, came off to visit them. All the boats were hoisted out, and sent a-head to tow. An easterly breeze, blowing right out of the harbour, obliged them to anchor at its entrance, about two o'clock, and to warp in, which employed them till night. They were no sooner within the harbour, than their ships were surrounded with canoes, laden with a supply of fruit and hogs, which the natives exchanged for their commodities.

The Resolution was, the next day, moored close to the northern shore: and the Discovery along-side the southern shore. Captain Cook, in the mean time, returned Oreo's visit, and presented that chief with a red-feathered cap from Tongataboo, a linen gown, a shirt, and some other things. Oreo, with some of his friends, accompanied him on board to dinner. On the 6th the observatories were set up, and the necessary instruments taken on shore. On the 13th, a marine, named John Harrison, deserted from the Observatory, taking with him his musquet and accoutrements. A party was detached in search of him, but they returned without success. On the following day the Captain applied to the chiefs, who encouraged him to expect the fugitive before the close of the day. This, however, did not happen, and the chief was suspected of being perfectly indifferent about the business.

Our navigators had, at this time, a great many of the natives about the ships, and several thefts had been committed; the consequences of which deterring the greater part of them, very few thought proper to come near them the next morning. Oreo caught the alarm, and fled with his whole family. Captain Cook peremptorily demanded a restoration of the deserter; and, having heard that he was at a place called Hamoa, he proceeded thither with two armed boats, attended by a native. In their way, they happened to find the chief, who also embarked with them. At length the natives obtained information of the captain's approach; and were prepared to deliver up the fugitive. He was discovered, with his musquet lying before him, seated between two women, who, on the appearance of the captain, rose up to plead in his behalf*.

About a fortnight after the Europeans had arrived at Ulietea, Omai dispatched two persons in a canoe, with intelligence, that he remained unmolested by the inhabitants of Huaheine, and that every thing proved successful, except that his goat had died in kidding. This information

† Wishing to discourage such proceedings, the captain only bid them begone; when they instantly burst into tears, and retired. Paha, the chief of that district, advanced with a sucking-pig, and a plantain-tree, and was preparing to present it to the captain, as a peace-offering; when he disdainfully rejected it. He then commanded the chief to quit his presence, embarked with Harrison in one of the boats, and returned to the ships: after which harmony was speedily restored. The delinquent alledged that the natives had enticed him away; and, as he made it appear that he did not quit his station till within a few minutes of the time he was to have been relieved by another, the punishment inflicted was not severe.

was accompanied with an earnest request, that the captain would send him another goat, and two more axes. Pleased with the opportunity of having it again in his power to oblige his friend, the captain sent back the messengers to Hugheine, on the 18th, with the boon he had solicited, consisting of a male and female kid, and two handsome axes.

On the 19th instructions were delivered by Captain Cook to Captain Clerke, for the regulation of his conduct, if a separation should happen after they had quitted these islands. The purport of these instructions was, that if the two ships should be separated, he, after searching for Captain Cook, and not finding him in five days, was to proceed towards the coast of New Albion, and endeavour to fall in with it in the latitude of 45°, and there to cruise for him ten days. If he should not see him in that time, he was to put into the first convenient harbour, to obtain refreshments, and take in wood and water. While he continued in port, he was constantly to look out for Captain Cook; and if he should not be joined by him before the 1st of the ensuing April, he was to proceed northward to the latitude of 56°, where he was to cruise for him till the 10th of May. Not finding him then, he was to proceed on a northerly course, and attempt to find a passage into the Atlantic Ocean, either through Hudson's or Baffin's Bay: that if he should fail in those endeavours, he was to proceed to the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul in Kamtschatka, and pass the winter there: but, if he could not procure refreshments there, he might go where he thought proper, leaving with the governor, before his departure, an account of his destination, to be delivered to Captain Cook when he arrived; and that, in the spring of 1779, he was to return to the port above-mentioned: that if he then received no further orders from Captain Cook, so as to justify his deviation from those of the Lords of the Admiralty, his future proceedings were to be directed by them: and if he should be prevented by illness, or any other cause, from carrying these into execution, he was to leave them with the officer who was next in command*.

The chief being in Captain Cook's presence when he received intelligence of this transaction, immediately mentioned it to him, supposing this step had been taken without his knowledge or approbation. The captain instantly undeceived him, when he began to apprehend disagreeable consequences respecting himself; his countenance indicating great perturbation of mind. But the captain consoled him, by informing him that he was at liberty to quit the ship whenever he pleased, and to take such measures towards the recovery of the two absentees as he supposed would prove effectual. If success should crown his endeavours, his friends on board the Discovery should be immediately released from their confinement: if not, they should certainly be taken away with them. The name of Bedooa, (who was Orea's daughter) resounded from every quarter, and the women not only joined in a most dismal howling, but also struck their bosoms, and cut their heads with shark's teeth, which occasioned a great effusion of blood†.

Captain Cook having, at this time, no suspicion

* On the 24th intelligence was communicated to Captain Cook, that two of the Discovery's people were missing; one of whom was a midshipman. It was soon discovered that they had embarked in a canoe the preceding night, and were now at the other end of the island. As the midshipman had expressed a desire of remaining at one of these islands, it was supposed he had fled with that intent. Captain Clerke, with two armed boats, and a detachment of marines, set out in quest of the deserters, but returned in the evening without receiving any satisfactory information concerning them. The next morning intelligence was brought that the two fugitives were in the isle of Otaha. To give effectual discouragement to any further desertion, Captain Cook resolved to go in pursuit of them; he accordingly set out, with two armed boats, accompanied by Oreo. They proceeded, without stopping, till they came to the eastern side of Otaha, where they put ashore. The only information they could procure concerning them was, that they had quitted this island, and gone to Bolabola the preceding day. The captain, not choosing to follow them thither, determined to have recourse to a more effectual expedient.

Early in the morning of the 26th, Oreo, with his son, daughter, and son-in-law, having come on board the Resolution, Captain Clerke invited them on board his ship. As soon as they arrived in his cabin, he thought proper to detain the three last, till the deserters should be delivered up. A sentinel was placed at the door, and the window secured, at which they were exceedingly surprised; and, when Captain Clerke explained the reason of it, they burst into tears, and requested he would not kill them. He declared he would not, and assured them that when the run-a-ways were brought back, they should that moment be released: but these assurances did not seem to alleviate their sorrow.

† The chief now dispatched a canoe to Bolabola, to inform

picion of their design, it was fortunate they did not succeed in it, and that no mischief ensued on the occasion: no musquets were fired, except two or three to stop the canoes: to which firing it is probable that Captain Clerke and Mr. Gore owed their safety; for, at that instant, a party of the islanders, armed with clubs, were proceeding towards them, but thought proper to disperse on hearing the report of the musquets*.

On the 27th our navigators took down their observatories, and carried them, with many other valuable articles on board. They unmoored the ships, and moved further down the harbour, where they anchored again. No account of the deserters having been received from Bolabola, Oroco set out for that island, requesting Captain Cook to follow him, the next day, with the ships. The wind, however, prevented their getting out to sea; but though it detained them in the harbour, it brought back Oreo, with the two fugitives, from Bolabola. They had reached Otaha on the night of their desertion; but being unable to go to the eastward as they intended, for want of wind, they proceeded to Bolabola, and afterwards to the small island of Toobaee, where they were apprehended by Pootoe's father. As soon as they were seen on board, the three prisoners in the Discovery were restored to their liberty.

Adverse winds kept our navigators in the harbour till the 7th of December, when, at eight in the morning, they weighed and made sail. The Ulieteans are, in general, smaller and blacker than the natives of the adjacent islands, and seemed less orderly. Oreo, their chief, is a kind of deputy to the Bolabola monarch; and the conquest seems to have lessened the number of subordinate chiefs among them: consequently they are less immediately under the eye of those whose interest it is to enforce a proper obedience. Though Ulietea is now reduced to this humiliating state, it was formerly the most eminent of this group of islands, and the first seat of government. The present royal family of Otaheite is descended from that which ruled here before the late revolution.

---

form Opoony, king of that island, of what had happened, and requesting him to seize the two deserters, and cause them to be restored. The messenger was enjoined by Captain Cook not to return without the fugitives, and to tell Opoony, from him, that if they had left the isle of Bolabola, he must send canoes in pursuit of them.

The impatient natives now meditated an attempt, which, had it not been prevented, might have involved them into still greater distress. Between five and six o'clock, Captain Cook, who was then on shore, observed that all the canoes about the harbour began to move off. He enquired, in vain, the cause of this manœuvre, till one of the people called to him from the Discovery, and informed him that some of the islanders had seized Captain Clerke and Mr. Gore, as they were walking at some distance from the ships. Captain Cook, struck with the audacity of this scheme of retaliation, ordered his people instantly to arm; and, in a few minutes, a strong party was dispatched, under the conduct of Mr. King, to the rescue of those two gentlemen. Two armed boats, and a party under Mr. Williamson, were also sent at the same time, to intercept the flying canoes in their return to the shore. These detachments had hardly disappeared, when intelligence arrived that our Europeans had been misinformed, and they were therefore ordered to return. It clearly appeared, however, from a variety of corroborating particulars, that the natives had really formed the design of seizing Captain Clerke. They had also projected a plan of getting possession of the person of Captain Cook. He was accustomed to bathe every evening in the fresh water; on which occasion he often went alone, and always unarmed. Expecting him to go this evening, as usual, they intended to seize him, and Captain Clerke also, if he had accompanied him. But Captain Cook, having confined the chief's family, was cautious of putting himself into their power, and advised Captain Clerke, and the officers, not to venture far from the ships. Oreo, in the course of the afternoon, asked Captain Cook, several times, if he would not go to the bathing-place; till, finding he could not be prevailed upon, he retired, with his people.

* This conspiracy was discovered by a girl who had been brought from Huaheine by one of the officers. Hearing some of the Ulieteans say, they would seize Messrs Clerke and Gore, she ran to acquaint the Europeans of the plan in agitation. Those who had undertaken the execution of the design, threatened to murder her, as soon as our navigators should quit Ulietea, for disappointing them. The girl's friends were therefore prevailed upon to take her to a place where she might remain concealed, till she could safely be conveyed to Huaheine.

SECTION XVI.

Proceed to Bolabola—Apply to Opoony for M. de Bougainville's Anchor—Reasons for purchasing it—Delicacy of Opoony—Quit the Society Islands—Description of Bolabola—History of the Reduction of Otaha, and Ulietea—Bravery of the Men of Bolabola—Animals left at Bolabola and Ulietea—Process of salting Pork—Observations on Otaheite, and the Society Islands.

HAVING quitted Ulietea, our adventurers steered for Bolabola; their principal reason for visiting this island was, to procure an anchor that had been lost at Otaheite by M. de Bougainville. Having parted with all their hatchets, and other iron tools and implements, in purchasing refreshments, they were reduced to the necessity of creating a fresh assortment of trading articles, by fabricating them from the spare iron they could find on board; and even that was now almost exhausted. Captain Cook therefore supposed that if he could purchase de Bougainville's anchor, it would be found a great acquisition of that useful material; and he hoped Opoony might be induced to part with it.

Oreo, accompanied by seven or eight others from Ulietea, went with the Europeans to Bolabola; but not being highly favoured by wind and tide, Captain Cook declined the attempt of carrying the ships into the harbour, and embarked in one of the boats, attended by Oreo and his companions, and was rowed into the island.

As soon as the captain got ashore, he was introduced to Opoony, surrounded by a vast concourse of people. After the usual preliminary ceremonies were over, he did not hesitate to ask the chief for the anchor in his possession. To induce him to comply with this request, he produced a present which had been prepared for him. It consisted of some gauze handkerchiefs, a linen night-gown, a shirt, a looking-glass, six axes, and some beads and toys. Opoony, however, refused to accept of this present till the captain had received the anchor. He instantly ordered the anchor to be delivered to him, and the compensation for it was to be left to the discretion of the captain. Messengers were sent in the boats to a neighbouring island, where the anchor had been deposited; but it was found to be less valuable than reports had represented it. The mark on it indeed demonstrated that it had originally weighed seven hundred pounds; but it now wanted the two palms, the ring, and part of the shank. The reason was now evident why Opoony refused Captain Cook's present; he doubtless supposed that the anchor was so much inferior to it in value, that, when he saw it, he would be offended. The captain, however, took the anchor as he found it, and sent the whole of the present which he first intended. He then returned on board, hoisted in the boats, and made sail to the north. Oteavanooa, the harbour of Bolabola, is situated on the west side of the island, and is very capacious; and, though they did not enter it, Captain Cook was informed that it was a very proper place for the reception of ships. Bolabola is only eight leagues in circumference; it is therefore remarkable that its inhabitants should have been able to conquer Ulietea and Otaha, the former of which is more than double its size*.

When Captain Cook landed to meet Opoony, he took an ewe on shore, of the Cape of Good Hope breed. He had been informed, when the deserters were brought back from Bolabola, that a ram had been left there by the Spaniards. He therefore intended to lay the foundation for a breed of sheep at Bolabola. He also left with Oreo, at Ulietea, two goats, and an English boar and sow. It may therefore be reasonably expected that the race of hogs will soon be considerably improved at Otaheite, and all the neighbouring islands: and they will probably be stocked with many other valuable European animals.

Had our British navigators possessed a greater assortment of goods, and a proper quantity of salt, they might have preserved as much pork as would have supplied the two ships almost a year. But they almost exhausted their trading commodities at the Friendly Islands, Otaheite, and its

* Since this revolution, the Bolabola men are considered as invincible; and their fame is so far extended, that, even at Otaheite, they are respected for their valour. They have the reputation of never flying from an enemy, and that they are ever victorious against an equal number of the other islanders.

neighbourhood. Our axes were nearly gone, without which hogs were hardly to be purchased. The salt remaining was not more than sufficient for curing fifteen puncheons of meat *.

It seems almost incumbent on the Europeans to pay these islanders occasional visits, to supply them with such articles as they have given them a predilection for, by introducing them. The want of such supplies may be severely felt, when they cannot return to their old imperfect contrivances, which they have now discarded. When the iron tools, which Europeans had furnished them with, are worn out, their own will be forgotten and despised. Knives were in high estimation at Ulietea; and axes and hatchets were coveted in all the islands. With respect to articles merely ornamental, these islanders are as capricious as the most polished European nations: a toy admired to-day, will probably be rejected to-morrow. But the iron implements are so evidently useful, that they must continue to be highly estimated by them. They would be inconceivably miserable, if they should cease to be supplied with what now appears so necessary to their happiness or existence, as they are ignorant of the art of fabricating them themselves. The following section is furnished by Mr. Anderson.

SECTION XVII.

Remarks on former Accounts of Otaheite—Prevailing Winds—Beauty and Fertility of the Country Land little Cultivated—Produce—Curiosities—Natives—Delicacy of the Women—General Character—Disposed to amorous Gratifications—Language—Ignorance of Surgery or Medicine—Food of the superior Class—Effects of Ava—Meals—Religion—Notions concerning Immortality—Superstitions—Traditions concerning the Creation—The King almost deified—Classes of the People—Punishments—The adjacent Islands.

AFTER some prefatory remarks on the voyages of Wallis, Bougainville, and Captain Cook, Mr. Anderson relates such particulars concerning Otaheite, and its neighbouring islands, as he could procure from Omai, and the other natives with whom he frequently conversed.

For the greatest part of the year, the wind blows from between east south-east, and east north-east. When it blows violently, the natives call it *maaraee*. If it blows strong, the weather is usually cloudy or rainy; but when it is more moderate it is generally clear, settled, and serene. Should the wind veer to the south-east, or south south-east, it blows more gently, and is termed *maoai*. In December and January, when the sun is almost vertical, the winds and weather are extremely variable; though it often blows from west north-west, or north-east. This wind is named *toerou;* and is generally accompanied with cloudy weather or rain. If the wind is more northerly, it has the appellation of Era-potaia. The wind from south-west, and west south-west, is more frequent than the former, and is usually gentle, with occasional breezes, though it sometimes is attended with squalls. The weather is then usually cloudy, or rainy, with a close air, frequently accompanied with thunder and lightning. The natives then call it *etoa*.

The south-east part of Otaheite affords a most luxuriant prospect. The hills are high,

* The following process of curing pork was adopted by Captain Cook in his several voyages. The hogs were killed in the evening; and when cleaned, they were cut up, and the bone taken out. The meat was salted while it was hot, and so disposed that the juices might drain from it till the next morning: it was then salted again, put into a cask, and covered with pickle. When it had remained in this situation four or five days, it was taken out, and carefully examined; and, if any of it appeared in the least tainted, it was separated from the rest, which was repacked, headed up, and filled with good pickle. It passed a further examination in about eight or ten days time; but there appeared to be no necessity for it, as it was generally found to be all perfectly cured. Bay and white salt, mixed together, are supposed to answer the best, though either of them, alone, will answer the purpose. Great care should be taken that none of the large blood-vessels remain in the meat; and that too much should not be packed together at the first salting; lest the pieces in the middle should heat, and hinder the salt from penetrating them. In tropical climates, meat should not be salted in sultry rainy weather.

steep, and craggy, though covered to the summit with trees and shrubs. The lower land and vallies teem with exuberant productions, and demonstrate to the beholders that no country can vie with this in strength and beauty of vegetation. Nature has been equally liberal in conducting rivulets through every valley, delighting the eye by their translucent fluid, and fertilizing the land through which they meander in their passage to the parent ocean.

The habitations of the natives are scattered on the level land, and many of them along the shore. The natural fertility of the country, improved by the mildness and serenity of the climate, has rendered the inhabitants so careless in their cultivation, that, in many parts, the smallest traces of it are hardly to be discovered, though loaded with the richest of the earth's productions. The cloth plant, and the *Ava*, are almost the only articles which seem to demand their attention. The bread-fruit tree is never planted, but spontaneously proceeds from the roots of the old ones, which spread themselves almost upon the surface of the ground. The cocoa-nut tree requires no attention, after it has made its appearance about a foot or two above the ground. The plantain indeed claims some attention in its culture; for, about three months after it shoots up, it begins to bear fruit; at the same time putting forth young shoots, which supply a succession of fruit: the old stocks being cut down as the fruit is taken off*.

The navigators were much astonished at the remarkable contrast between the inhabitants of Tongataboo, and those of Otaheite: the former being robust and dingy, and the latter having a distinguished delicacy and whiteness. The women of Otaheite have all those delicate characteristics, which in many countries distinguish them from the other sex. The men wear their beards long, and their hair much longer than at Tongataboo, which gave them a very different appearance. The Otaheiteans are irresolute and fickle; and not so robust as the Friendly Islanders, the fertility of their country enabling them to lead a more indolent life †.

"Nine tenths of their common diet," says Mr. Anderson, "consist of vegetable food; and the *mahee*, or fermented bread fruit, which is an article in almost every meal, prevents costiveness, and has a singular effect in producing a coolness about them.—To this temperate course of life, may, perhaps, be attributed their having so few diseases among them ‡."

The natives of Otaheite seem open and ingenuous, though Omai has declared they exercise cruelty in punishing their enemies, and torment them with great deliberation; but this, perhaps, is only on very extraordinary occasions. If cheerfulness results from innocence, it might naturally have been supposed that their whole lives had been unsullied with a crime. Under any misfortune, after the trying moment, they suffer little by reflection: care cannot create a wrinkle on their brow; even the approach of death does not deprive them of their vivacity. I have seen them hovering over the brink of the grave with disease, and preparing for a decisive engagement with an enemy, "but, in either of these cases have I ever observed their countenances overclouded with melancholy or dread §."

They are immoderately fond of music; but though

* The products of the island are, however, more remarkable for their abundance than for their variety. The only curiosity in this country, that seems particularly entitled to the notice of the traveller, is a large lake of fresh water, on the top of a high mountain, at the distance of almost two days journey. Its depth is very considerable, and it is inhabited by eels of an enormous size. A small pond on this island contains water which has a yellow sediment at the bottom. It has the appearance of being good, but the taste of it is offensive; and it is said to prove fatal to those who drink a quantity of it; and those who bathe in it break out in pustules.

† Personal endowments are in high estimation among them, and they have various methods of improving them. Among the *Erreoes*, or unmarried men, especially those of superior rank, it is usual to submit to a kind of regimen, to render them fair: to effect this they continue a month or two in the house, wear a great quantity of cloth during that period, and feed only upon bread-fruit, which alone is wonderfully efficacious in whitening the skin. They also vary their food, according to the variation of the seasons, to preserve a sufficient portion of corpulence and colour.

‡ They mention only five chronic or national disorders among which are the dropsy. The Europeans are accused however, of having added a disease to their catalogue which abundantly supplies the place of all the others; and for which they seem to have no effectual remedy. The priests, indeed, administer a medley of simples, which they acknowledge never performs a cure: but they admit that nature alone has sometimes exterminated the poison of this loathsome disease, and produced a recovery.

§ Disposed to direct their aims to what will afford the pleasure, all their amusements tend to excite their amorous passion

though they were not charmed with our complicated compositions, they were much delighted with the more melodious sounds, when produced singly, as they bore a strong resemblance to the simplicity of their own.

The language of Otaheite is radically the same as that of New Zealand and the Friendly Islands, but has not that gutteral pronunciation, and is pruned of some of the consonants, with which those dialects too much abound. It has many figurative expressions, and is extremely copious.

They are extremely deficient in the arts, though they pretend to perform cures in surgery, which are in vain attempted by European anatomists. Simple fractures, among them, are bound up with splints, but, should part of the bone be lost, they insert, between the fractured ends, a piece of hollow wood to supply its place. The *rapaoo*, or surgeon, inspects the wound in about five or six days, when he finds the wood is partly covered with the growing flesh: in as many days more, he visits the patient again, when he generally finds it completely covered: and, having acquired some strength, he bathes in the water, and is restored.

It is well known that wounds will heal over leaden bullets, and there are some instances of their healing over other extraneous bodies. But I entertain some doubt of the truth of this narrative, because in the cases which fell under my observation, they were far from being so dexterous. I was shewn the stump of an arm, which had been taken off, that had not the appearance of a skilful operation, even making a proper allowance for their defective instruments. I saw a man going about with a dislocated shoulder, some months after he had received the accident, from their not being acquainted with the method of reducing it, though one of the simplest operations of British surgery.

They know that fractures of the spine are mortal; they also know in what particular parts of the body wounds are fatal. They have less physical knowledge, because, perhaps, their accidents are more numerous than their diseases*.

Their meals at Otaheite are very frequent: Their first is about two in the morning, after which they go to sleep: the next is at eight; they eat again at eleven, at two, and at five; and go to supper at eight. The women are not only obliged to eat by themselves, but they are also excluded from partaking of the better sorts of food. Turtle, or fish of the tunny kind, they are not permitted to touch: particular sorts of plantain are also forbidden them; and even those of the first rank are seldom permitted to eat pork. The children also eat apart; and the women usually serve up their own provisions.

When young persons of each sex, from mutual choice, agree to cohabit, the man makes a present to the father of the girl of some common necessaries, as hogs, cloth, or canoes: If the

passions; and their songs, which give them infinite delight, have the same forcible tendency. But, as a constant succession of sensual enjoyments must unavoidably cloy, they occasionally vary them by introducing subjects more refined, they chanted their triumphs in war, and their amusements in peace; their own adventures, and the fertility of their island.

* A famine often happens in this island, notwithstanding its astonishing fertility, in which many people are said to perish. Whether this calamity is occasioned by the scanty produce of some seasons, or to wars, satisfactory information could not be obtained, but it has induced the people to exercise the strictest œconomy, even in the time of plenty.

In a scarcity of provision, when their yams and bread-fruit are consumed, they have recourse to various uncultivated roots upon the mountains. The *patarra* is first used, and, when young, is tolerably good, but becomes hard and stringy, when old. A small portion of animal food falls to the lot of the lower class of people; and if they sometimes should obtain any, it is either fish, sea-eggs, or some other marine productions; for pork they seldom taste. Only the *Eree de hoe* can afford such provision every day: the inferior chiefs, according to their wealth, may perhaps enjoy that delicacy once a week, a fortnight, or a month. Sometimes, indeed, they cannot even be thus far indulged; for, when the island is impoverished by war, or any other cause, a prohibition is issued against the killing of hogs, for a certain limited time. In such an interval, these animals have been known to multiply so fast, that they have almost departed from their domestic state, and literally become wild. A prohibition is sometimes extended to fowls.

The *ava* is chiefly used here among the superior class of the people; but the preparation of this beverage is different from that in the Friendly Islands. Here they pour a small quantity of water upon the root, and bake, roast, or bruise the stalk before it is infused, without chewing. They also bruise the leaves of the plant, and pour water upon them as upon the root. It is not drank sociably, in large companies, as practised among the people at Tongataboo; but it certainly has more pernicious effects here, as our Europeans saw frequent instances of its intoxicating powers.

Many of the English, who had visited these islands before, were surprized to find several who were then corpulent, now almost reduced to skeletons; and the cause of this alteration was universally attributed to the use of the *ava*. Their excuse for this destructive practice is, that they take it to prevent their growing too corpulent: it, however, enervates them exceedingly, and probably accelerates the termination of their lives.

father

father supposes he has not received a valuable consideration for his daughter, he compells her to quit her first friend, and engage with another who may be more liberal. The man, indeed, may at any time make a new choice; or, should his consort become a mother, he may destroy the child; and afterwards has his choice, either to leave the woman, or continue his connection with her. If he adopts the child, and suffers it to live, the man and woman are then considered as in the married state; and, after that, they seldom separate. A man, however, escapes censure, should he join a more youthful partner to his first wife, and cohabit with both of them.

From a notion of cleanliness, the practice of cutting off the foreskin is adopted among them.

Their religious system abounds in singularities, which few of the common people know any thing of; that being confined to their priests, which are very numerous. They pay no particular respect to one God, as possessing pre-eminence; but believe in a plurality of Divinities, who have each a plenitude of power. The respective inhabitants make choice of one who they think is sufficiently powerful to protect them, and to supply their necessities. If he does not give them satisfaction, they think it no impiety to change. An instance of this kind happened lately in Tiaraboo, where two Divinities have been discarded, and Oraa, God of Bolabola, has been elected in their room.

In their Rites to their Divinities, they are particularly assiduous. The *whattas*, or offering places of the *morais*, are generally loaded with fruit and animals; and almost every house has a part appropriated to a similar purpose. Many of them will not even begin a meal, till they have laid aside a morsel for the *eatooa*. It is said, indeed, that they frequently have recourse to human sacrifices to avert misfortunes. Their prayers, which are chanted, are also very frequent. In religion, as well as in other cases, the women shew their inferiority. If they pass the *morais*, they must partly uncover themselves, or take an extensive circuit to avoid them. *Etee*, they say, is an evil spirit delighting in mischief, to whom they make offerings as well as to their divinity. But the mischiefs inflicted by invisible beings, are merely temporal. They expect no permanent punishment hereafter for crimes committed on earth; the souls of good and bad men being indiscriminately eaten by the deity.

They have not those sublime conceptions of happiness, which our religion and reason teach us to expect hereafter. They believe that immortality is acquired by death, for they suppose that spirits are not entirely divested of those passions by which they were actuated on earth. If the husband departs this life before the wife, the soul of the latter is no stranger to him on his arrival in the land of spirits. Their former intimacy is renewed in a capacious building, called *Tourooa*, where departed souls repair to recreate themselves with the gods. The husband then accompanies her to his separate habitation, where they eternally reside, and have an offspring purely spiritual.

Many of their notions respecting the deity are extravagantly absurd: they suppose that every temporal blessing is derived from their regular performance of religious offices: Sudden deaths, and all other accidents, they impute to the immediate impulse of some divinity. Should a man receive a wound in his toe, by stumbling against a stone, the *Eatooa* is the cause of it*.

The chief characteristics of the sovereign are these: the being invested with the *maro*, the presiding at human sacrifices, and the blowing

* In the night, they are much startled and terrified on approaching a *toopapaoo*, where dead bodies are exposed: as the ignorant and superstitious are in England at the sight of a church-yard, or with the apprehension of ghosts. They have implicit confidence in dreams, but they admit that this kind of knowledge is only possessed by particular persons. Omai pretended to have been favoured with these communications: he assured our European travellers, that, on the 26th of July, 1776, his father's soul had intimated to him in a dream, that he should land somewhere in three days; but he was erroneous in his first prophetic attempt, for they did not reach Teneriffe till the first of August.

The doctrine of planetary influence they frequently adopt, and are sometimes regulated in their public counsels by the appearances of the moon.

Their traditions concerning the creation are equally obscure and whimsical. They affirm that some Goddess had a lump of earth suspended in a cord, which, by giving a swing round, she scattered around in small portions, which constituted Otaheite and the adjacent islands; and they were all peopled by one of each sex, who originally settled at Otaheite. Besides this account of their own immediate creation, they also admit of one upon an universal plan; which is wholly composed of absurdities: male and female rocks are therein formally married, beget land, and afterwards a race of gods, &c. The spots observable in the moon, according to their account, are groves of a certain tree, which grew in Otaheite, and being accidentally destroyed, the seeds were carried thither by some doves, where they afterwards grew to perfection.

of the conch-shell. On the sound of the latter, every subject is obliged to take a reasonable quantity of food to his royal residence. Their veneration for his name, they sometimes carry to a most extravagant height. When he accedes to the *maro*, such words as resemble it in sound, are immediately changed for others; and should he afterwards be presumptuous enough to continue the use of those words, he, and his whole family, are put to death. Bestowing the sacred name of the sovereign on any animal, incurs immediate death. Hence Omai was induced, when in England, to express his indignation, that dogs or horses should be named princes, or princesses.

The sovereign never deigns to enter the habitation of a subject; in every district he visits, he has houses belonging to himself. Should he, by any accident, deviate from this rule, the mansion thus honoured with his presence, with all its furniture, is committed to the flames. When present, the sovereign's subjects uncover to him as low as the waist. When he is at any particular place, a pole, having a piece of cloth affixed to it, is elevated near, on which the same honours are bestowed. His brothers are entitled to the first part of this ceremony; but the women only uncover to the royal females.

Exclusive of the *Eree de hoi*, and his family, the people are classed in the following order. The *Erees*, or powerful chiefs; the *Manahoone*, or vassals; and the *Teou*, or *Toutou*, servants or slaves. The men connect themselves with women of equal rank; but if a man takes one of an inferior class, and she produces a child, it is not only preserved, but is also entitled to the rank of the father; unless he should happen to be an *Eree*, in which case the child is destroyed.

When a woman of condition suffers a man of inferior rank to perform the duty of a husband, the children they produce are killed. If a *Teou* be detected in an intrigue with a royal female, his punishment is death. The son of an *Eree de hoi*, at his birth, succeeds his father in titles and honours; if he has no children, the government devolves to his brother at his death. In other families, possessions descend to the eldest son, who is, nevertheless, required to support his brothers and sisters. Otaheite is divided into several districts: property is sometimes ascertained by large stones, which have continued from generation to generation.

Crimes, which are not of a general nature, are often left to be punished by the injured party, supposing he will decide as equitably as a person wholly unconcerned: long custom having allotted certain punishments for certain crimes, he may venture to inflict them without danger. If a person, for instance, be detected stealing, which is generally practiced in the night, the owner of the property may kill him immediately. But they do not often inflict so severe a punishment, unless the property taken is very valuable. When cloth, or hogs, are stolen, and the robber escapes; if, on discovery, he engages to return an equivalent for such hogs and cloth, he is discharged from the offence; or, at most, receives but a slight chastisement.

If a person is killed in a quarrel, the friends of the deceased attack the survivor and his supporters. If they are victorious they seize the house and property of the other party; but, if they are vanquished, the reverse takes place.

One of the Europeans remonstrated with some of these islanders, on the unnatural cruelty of murdering their own children, and asked if their chiefs were offended on these occasions. They answered that their chiefs had no right to interfere in such cases; every man being at liberty to do what he pleased with his own child.

In the language of Otaheite there are many words different from those of the islands to the westward of it. Apples are produced here in great abundance; which are not to be found in any of the other islands, except Eimeo. Besides the cluster of islands, extending from Mataia to Mouroa, the people of Otaheite said there was a low uninhabited island, called Mopeeha, to the north-east, distant about two days sail.

It is said to be customary at Mataeeva, for men to present their daughters to strangers who visit the island. The parties, however, must lie near each other for five nights, without presuming to take improper liberties. On the sixth evening, the father feasts his guest, and orders the daughter to receive him that night as her husband. However disagreeable the bed-fellow may be to the stranger, he must not express or signify his dislike, as that would be an unpardonable offence, and punishable with death.

SECTION XVIII.

Proceed in their Voyage—Christmas Island discovered—Fish and Turtle—Solar Eclipse—Distress of two Seamen—Singular Mode of procuring Refreshment—Inscription left in a Bottle—Soil—Trees and Plants—Animals—Further Particulars.

HAVING quitted Bolabola, and taken leave of the Society Islands, on the 8th of December they steered to the northward, with the wind between north-east and east, hardly ever having it in the south point till they crossed the equator. Before they quitted the Society Isles, they were very particular in enquiring of the natives, whether there were any islands situate in a northerly or north-westerly direction from them. It did not appear, however, that they knew of any; nor were any indications of the vicinity of land observed, till they began, about the latitude of 8° south, to see boobies, terns, tropic birds, and a few other sorts In the night between the 22d and 23d, they crossed the equinoctial line; and early on the 24th, discovered land bearing north-east by east. On their making a nearer approach to it, they observed some cocoa-nut trees in two or three places, but the land had, taken collectively, a very steril aspect. On the western side the depth of water was from forty to fourteen fathoms, over a sandy bottom.

Captain Cook, supposing this island well adapted for procuring turtle, resolved to anchor here. They accordingly dropped their anchors in thirty fathoms water; and a boat was dispatched in search of a convenient landing-place. The officer, employed on this business, returned, and reported that he could find no place where a boat could land; but that fish abounded in the shoal-water. Early the next morning, which was Christmas-day, a boat was sent from each ship, to examine more accurately whether it was possible to land. Two other boats were, at the same time, ordered out, to fish at a grappling near the shore. The latter returned about eight, with as many fish as weighed about two hundred pounds.

Encouraged by this success, the captain dispatched them again after breakfast; and went himself in another boat to view the coast, but saw no possibility of landing. The two boats which had been sent out on the same business, returned about twelve; and the master, who was in that belonging to the Resolution, informed Captain Cook that, about four miles to the northward, there being a break in the land, and a channel into the lagoon, there was consequently a proper place for landing. On this representation they weighed, and, after two or three trips, anchored again, before a little island at the entrance of the lagoon.

On the 26th Captain Cook ordered Captain Clerke to send out a boat, with an officer, to the south-east part of the lagoon, in pursuit of turtle; and went himself with Mr. King, each in a boat, to the north-east part. But the wind not permitting them to go to the eastern extremity, he and Mr. King landed more to leeward, on a sandy flat, where they caught one turtle, not seeing any other in the lagoon. They waded through the water to an island, where they found only a few birds. Captain Cook proceeded to the land that bounds the sea towards the north-west, which he observed was extremely barren; but, walking over the sea-coast, he saw five turtles near the shore, one of which he caught. Soon after which the Captains Cooke and Clerke returned to their respective ships. Though so few turtles had been observed by these two gentlemen, they did not abandon their expectations of a supply; for some of the officers of the Discovery had been remarkably successful.

The next morning, the cutter and pinnace were dispatched, commanded by Mr. King, to the south-east part of the island to catch turtle; and the small cutter was sent northwards for the same purpose. Some of Captain Clerke's people having been on shore all night, had fortunately turned about forty turtles on the sand, which were this day brought on board: the party detached to the northward were also tolerably successful.

On the 28th Captain Cook, accompanied by Mr. Baily, landed on the island between the two channels into the lagoon, to prepare the telescope for

for observing the solar eclipse on the 30th. At noon, Mr. King returned, with one boat, and eight turtles; seven having been left behind to be brought by the other boat. Mr. Williamson was now sent to superintend this business instead of Mr. King, who remained on board to attend the observation of the eclipse. On the following day, the two boats, laden with turtle, were sent back to the ship by Mr. Williamson, who, in a message to Captain Cook, requested that the boats might be ordered round by sea, which would prevent much trouble and inconvenience*.

One of the stragglers being still missing, Captain Clerke dispatched a party in search of him. Captain Cook ordered two boats on the same duty. Captain Clerke's detachment at length returned and restored the long-lost fugitive. This man's distress must probably have been greater than that experienced by the other straggler, as he had been longer absent, and had too much delicacy to make a beverage of turtle's blood.

Having on board some yams and cocoa-nuts, in a state of vegetation, they planted them, by Captain Cook's order, on the island where they had observed the eclipse; some seeds of melons were also sown in another place. The captain left a bottle on the same little isle, containing the following inscription:

Georgius Tertius, Rex, 31 Decembris, 1777.
Naves { *Resolution, Jac. Cook, Pr.*
Discovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.

On the 1st of January, 1778, Captain Cook sent out several boats to bring on board the parties employed on shore, with all the turtle they had caught. The navigators procured at this island, for both ships, about three hundred turtles, weighing, on the average, about ninety pounds: they were all of the green sort, and equal in goodness to any in the world. They also caught a great quantity of fish, with hook and line.

As our navigators kept the festival of Christmas here, Captain Cook gave it the name of Christmas Island. The soil is, in some places, light and blackish, consisting of sand, the dung of birds, and rotten vegetables. Broken coral-stones, decayed shells, and other marine productions, constitute some other parts. Not a drop of fresh water could be found on the island, though much digging had been recurred to in search of it. Several ponds of salt-water were met with, though they had no apparent communication with the sea. No traces were discoverable of any human creature having been on this island before our Europeans.

Several sorts of birds were observed, among which were a new species of tern, boobies, men-of-warbirds, curlews, petrels, &c. Several rats were observed, of the smaller kind; with plenty of land-crabs, and small lizards. Christmas Island is supposed to be about sixteen leagues in circuit; and, like most of the islands in this ocean, is surrounded by a reef of coral rock, extending but a little way from the shore.

SECTION XIX.

Three Islands discovered—The Inhabitants of Attooi approach the Ships—Description of them—Some of them venture on board—Astonishment on that Occasion—Precautions against importing a certain Disease—One of the Natives killed—The Ships cast Anchor—The Captain's Reception on landing—His Excursion into the Country—Description of a Morai—The Custom of offering Human Victims prevalent—Feathered Cloaks and Caps—The Resolution driven from Attooi Road. The Isle of Oneeheow visited—Persons detained on Shore—Animals, &c. left at Oneeheow—Customs of the Natives.

WEIGHING anchor early in the morning of the 2d of January, 1778, they resumed their northerly course. They daily observed tropic birds, boobies, men-of-war birds, &c. and saw several turtles. Though all these are thought indications of the proximity of land, they discovered

* On the 30th Captain Cook, and Messrs. King and Bayley, repaired to the small island above-mentioned, to observe the eclipse. In the afternoon, the party who had been employed in catching turtle at the south-eastern part of

covered none till Sunday the 18th, when an island appeared, bearing north-east by east. Not long after, more land was seen, detached from the former. The next day, at sun-rise, the island first seen bore east, at the distance of several leagues. Soon after, they observed a third island bearing west-north-west.

They had a fine breeze at east-by-north, and, at noon, the second island for which they were steering, named Atooi, was about two leagues distant. As they advanced, many of the inhabitants put off from the shore in their canoes, and came along-side the ships. They spoke a dialect of the Otaheitean language, but could not be prevailed upon to come on board. Captain Cook fastened some brass medals to a rope, which he bestowed on those who were in one of the canoes; and they, in exchange, returned some mackarel, in a similar mode of conveyance. This was repeated; and some small nails, or pieces of iron, were given them; for which a return was made of some more fish, and a sweet potatoe. One of them exhibited for sale the piece of stuff which surrounded his waist. These people were stoutly made, but did not exceed the ordinary size. Their complexion was brown, but though their was a striking similarity in their colour, there was a considerable variation in their features. Many of them had their hair cropped short, a few had it tied in a bunch at the top of the head; and others permitted it to flow loose. It seemed naturally black, but a brownish colour had been generally communicated to it by staining. Most of them had long beards. Some of them were tatooed on the hands, or near the groin; and the pieces of cloth worn by them round the middle, were curiously coloured with black, white, and red.

They seemed mild and placid, and were furnished with no other arms than small stones, which they brought with them for their own defence; and those they threw into the sea, when they perceived there was no occasion for them. Seeing no anchoring place at this part of the island, they bore away to leeward, and ranged along the south-east side. The canoes left them when they made sail; but others successively came off, bringing with them pigs and potatoes, which they exchanged for whatever was offered them. Several small pigs were purchased by a six-penny nail. They passed several villages, the inhabitants of all which hastened to the shore, and assembled on elevated places to take a view of the ships.

A few trees were observed about the villages, near which could be discerned several plantations of sugar-canes and plantains. They continued to sound, but did not strike the ground with a line of fifty fathoms, till they came a-breast of a low point, near the extremity of the island, where they found from twelve to fourteen fathoms. Having passed this point, they met with twenty fathoms, then sixteen, twelve, and five, over a bottom of sand. They were met by several canoes, containing natives, many of whom were prevailed on to come on board*.

Abou

of the island, returned on board, except one sailor belonging to Captain Clerke's ship, who had been missing for two days. At first, two men had lost their way, but disagreeing with respect to the track, they separated, and one of them happened to rejoin the party, after an absence of twenty-four hours, in which he had experienced great distress. Not being able to find any fresh water, or a cocoa-nut tree, to allay his thirst, he drank the blood of turtle, which he killed for that purpose. His method of refreshing himself when fatigued, was equally singular; he undressed himself, and lay down in the shallow water on the beach for a considerable time.

How these two men could lose their way, was a matter which excited much astonishment: the land, over which their journey lay, did not exceed three miles across, nor was there any thing to impede the way; but considering what strange people the generality of sailors are, while on shore, it is rather matter of surprize that no more of the party should be missing.

* None of the people which our navigators had seen, were so much astonished as these islanders were on entering the ship. Their eyes were incessantly passing from object to object; and the wildness of their looks and gesture indicated their ignorance of every thing they saw: which clearly demonstrated that they had never, till this moment been visited by Europeans, nor were acquainted with any of their commodities, except iron. This metal, they had probably heard some mention of, or perhaps had seen in some inconsiderable quantity, brought to them at a remote period. They enquired for it by the appellation of *hamaite*, referring perhaps to some instrument, in making which iron could be properly employed; for they applied the name to the blade of a knife. They also call this metal by the name of *toe*, which signifies a hatchet or adze. On being shewn some beads, they asked what they were, and whether they were to be eaten? But, being informed they were to be hung in the ears as ornaments, they rejected them as useless: they manifested the same indifference with regard to a looking glass that was shewn them. China cups, and earthern ware, were so little known to them that they asked if they were composed of wood. They were extremely cautious of giving offence. Some of them before venturing on board, pronounced a long prayer, and others sung, accompanying the voice with various motio

About nine Captain Cook dispatched Lieutenant Williamson, with three armed boats, in search of a landing-place, and fresh water; with orders, that, if he should land to procure the latter, he should not allow more than one man to accompany him out of the boats. While they were putting off from the ship, one of the natives having stolen a cleaver, leaped into his canoe, and hastened towards the shore *.

Captain Cook, after dispatching one of the boats to find the best anchoring ground, cast anchor in twenty-five fathoms water; the village near which the fresh water was said to be, was one mile distant. The ships being thus stationed, the Captain went on shore, about four in the afternoon, with three armed boats and twelve marines; wishing to examine the water, as well as the disposition of the inhabitants, who had assembled in great numbers. The moment he stepped on shore, all the natives fell prostrate upon their faces, and continued in that position, till by motions he prevailed on them to rise. They then presented to him several small pigs, accompanied with certain ceremonies, an oration, and a prayer. The Captain indicated his willingness to accept of their friendship, by giving them, in return, such presents as he had brought on shore. After this preliminary business, he stationed a guard upon the beach, and accompanied some of the natives to the water, which was found to be extremely good, and so capacious as to be entitled to the appellation of a lake. On his return, orders were instantly issued that preparations should be made for filling the water-casks in the morning.

No sooner were they landed than a trade was entered into for hogs and potatoes, which the natives bartered for nails and pieces of iron. Instead of obstructing our Europeans in the performance of their duty, they even assisted them in rolling the casks to and from the pool. Captain Cook, leaving the command at this station to Mr. Williamson, who had landed with him, made an excursion into the country, with Messrs. Anderson and Webber; and followed by a great many of the natives, one of whom the Captain made choice of as a guide. As this man occasionally proclaimed the approach of any of our European gentlemen, every native who met them fell prostrate on the ground, and so continued till they had passed. This, as it afterwards appeared, was the mode of manifesting their respect to their powerful chiefs.

As our navigators ranged along the coast in the ships, they observed at every village, one or more elevated white objects, resembling obelisks; one of which, supposed to be about fifty feet high, was conspicuous from their anchoring station; but they could not be conducted to it, a pool of water obstructing their passage to it: yet as there was another of the same kind about half a mile distant, they agreed to visit

* ...tions of their hands. On their first entering the ship, ...y attemped to steal whatever appeared before them; or ...her to take it openly, supposing such an action would ...t be prevented or resented. But they were soon con...red of their error, when they observed that a watchful ...attended to their proceedings, and they were less active ...appropriating to themselves what did not belong to them. The Captain's prohibition that the crews of the boats ...uld not appear on shore, was to prevent, if possible, ...importation of a dangerous disease into this island, ...ch he knew some of his people laboured under, and ...ich had been communicated to other islands in this ocean. ...m the same motive, he excluded all female visitants from ...ships. Many of this sex came off in their canoes, but ...e features, complexion, and stature, were not very ...erent from those of the men; and though their counte...ces seemed ingenuous and agreeable, few of the graces ...delicacy were visible in their faces or proportions. The ...erence in dress, was the having a piece of cloth about ...r bodies, reaching from the middle to the knees, in...d of the *maro* worn by the males. They were much ...ined to favour the people with their company on board; ...the Captain was extremely desirous of preventing all ...nection, which might probably convey an irreparable injury to themselves, and afterwards throughout the nation. He also enjoined, that no person, capable of communicating the infection, should be sent out of the ships, upon any kind of duty.

Waiting for the return of the boats, which had been sent to reconnoitre the coast, they stood off and on with the ships. About noon Mr. Williamson came back, saying, he had observed near one of the villages a large pond, which the natives informed him contained fresh water; and that there was a tolerable anchoring ground before it. He also declared that he had attempted to land in another place, but was prevented by the islanders, who came in crowds to the boats, endeavouring to take away the oars, musquets, and whatever they could seize. They were so outrageous, that it was thought expedient to fire upon them, by which one man was killed. But this circumstance was not known to Captain Cook, till after he had quitted the island. Mr. Williamson informed him, that, when the man fell, he was carried off by his countrymen, who then retired from the boats. It did not appear that the natives intended to kill, or even to injure any of Mr. Williamson's party; they were excited, by curiosity only, to get what they had from them, being prepared to give them what should be thought an equivalent.

that. It was situated in a *morai*, or burying ground, which greatly resembled those they had seen at Otaheite, and other islands in this ocean. It was an oblong space, environed by a stone wall; at one end of which was placed the obelisk, called by the natives *henananoo*. It was about twenty feet in height, and four feet square at the base. Its four sides consisted of small poles, interwoven with twigs and branches, hollow within from the top to the bottom. On each side of it were long pieces of wicker-work, with two poles inclining towards each other, where some plantains were exhibited. The fruit was said to be an offering to their deity. Adjoining to this, on the outside of the *morai*, was a small shed; and before it a grave was observed, where the remains of an old woman had been deposited.

There was a kind of a shed at the further side of the area of the *morai*, about forty feet in length, eleven in height, and ten in breadth; but narrower at each end. Opposite the entrance stood two images, near three feet high, cut out of one piece of wood, with pedestals: they were said to be *Eatooa* no *Vehcina*, or representation of goddesses. One of them has a cylindrical cap on the head; and the other a carved helmet. Each of them had a piece of cloth fastened about the loins, and hanging down a considerable way. A piece of carved wood is placed on the side of each, with cloth hung on it*.

Among the various articles offered by the natives for barter this day, the Europeans were particularly struck with a cloak and cap, which even in polished countries might be esteem elegant. The former, in form and shape, r sembled the short Spanish fashion among t Dons, or that worn by some ladies in Englan tied loosely before, and extending to the midd of the back. The ground of them is a ne work, with beautiful red and yellow feath closely fixed upon it, giving it the gloss a smoothness of a rich velvet. The islanders, first, refused to part with any of these clo for any thing that was offered in exchange, d manding nothing less than a musquet for it: th afterwards, however, bartered some of them very large nails.

The caps are formed like a helmet, with middle part frequently of a hand's bread They sit close upon the head, having notches admit the ears. They consist of twigs and osie covered with a net-work, into which feathers various colours are wrought, as upon the clo These two articles together seemed to compl the dress, for the islanders sometimes appea in both.

Expressing their surprize at seeing such quantity of these beautiful feathers, the na gators speedily procured intelligence concern one sort; for the natives afterwards brought sale considerable numbers of skins of a small species of birds. The red-bird of this isla according to Mr. Anderson, is a species of *merops*, about as large as a sparrow. Its gene colour is a beautiful scarlet, but the tail wings, are black: it had a longish arched b which, with the feet, was of a reddish hue†.

* The Europeans, seeing so many instances of resemblance between the *morai* they were now visiting, and those of several other islands, naturally supposed the similarity existed in their solemn rites, and particularly in their horrid oblation of human victims. Their suspicions were instantly confirmed; for, observing two square places, one somewhat larger than the other, they asked what they were?—The answer was, that in one of them had been interred the remains of a man who had been sacrificed; and in the other, a hog, which had been offered up to the deity.

These, and many other instances, confirmed Captain Cook in his opinion, that this inhuman practice was very general here. After the Captain, with Messrs. Anderson and Webber, had examined whatever demanded notice about the *morai*, they found a multitude of people assembled near the beach, and a flourishing trade was carrying on there for fowls, pigs, and vegetables, with the most perfect order and decorum. At noon Captain Cook went to dine on board, and then sent Mr. King command the party on shore. In the afternoon he la again, intending to take another excursion into the cou but before he could engage in it, the day was too far vanced. Towards sun-set he returned on board, a having procured, in the course of the day, nine tons water, about seventy pigs; some fowls, plantains, p toes, and taro roots.

† On the 22d it rained continually during the gre part of the morning. The wind was at south-east, and surf broke so high upon the shore that the boats w prevented from landing: but the natives were not dete from venturing out in their canoes with hogs and vegeta to purchase commodities from the ships' companies. On them, who offered some fish-hooks for sale, was obse to have a small parcel tied to the string of one of th which he separated and retained for himself, when he posed of the hook. With some reluctance he was vailed on to open the parcel, which contained a small

In the afternoon, they had some intervals of fair weather; the wind then changed to the east; but, towards evening, veered back again to the south south-east. At seven the next morning, a north-easterly breeze springing up, Captain Cook ordered the anchors of his ship to be taken up, intending to remove her further out. As soon as the last anchor was up, the wind veering to the east, he was driven considerably to leeward. He endeavoured to regain the road, but could not accomplish that design; he therefore dispatched Messrs. King and Williamson ashore, with three boats, in search of water and refreshments; sending, at the same time, an order to Captain Clerke to put to sea after him, if he found the Resolution was unable to recover the road *.

The boats returned about seven in the evening, with a few hogs, some roots, and two tons of water. A northerly breeze springing up on the 24th at day-break, Captain Cook expected it would bring the Discovery to sea, and steered for Oneeheow, a neighbouring island, with a view of anchoring there. He continued to steer for it till after eleven, when he was within six miles of it: but, not seeing the Discovery, he thought it would be imprudent to separate too far; he therefore relinquished the design of visiting Oneeheow for the present, and stood back to Atooi, intending again to cast anchor in the road, to complete their supply of water. At two the northerly wind was succeeded by calms and variable airs: early in the morning of the 25th, they tacked, and stood in for Atooi road; and very soon after, they were joined by the Discovery. They were wholly incapable of regaining the road; and, after many unsuccessful attempts, Captain Cook declined all thoughts of returning to Atooi, and resumed his intention of visiting Oneeheow †.

Mr. Gore, having been sent in search of a commodious landing-place, and fresh water, returned in the evening, and reported to Captain Cook that he had been conducted to a well about half a mile up the country, but that it could not furnish a sufficient quantity for their purpose, and the road to it was extremely bad. The next day Mr. Gore was sent ashore again, with a guard, to trade with the inhabitants for refreshments. The Captain's intention was to have followed soon after, but the surf so rapidly increased, he apprehended he should not have been able to make his way back again. This circumstance really happened to those who had landed with Mr. Gore, the communication be-

piece of flesh, which appeared to have been dried, but was then wet with salt water. Supposing it might probably be human flesh, that question was put to the producer, who readily answered it was part of a man. Another of the islanders, who stood near him, was then asked, if it was a custom among them to eat such of their enemies as they had slain in battle; and he immediately replied in the affirmative.

* As the commodore approached the west end of the island, he perceived that the coast rounded gradually to the north-east, without forming a cove or creek to shelter a vessel from the violence of the swell, which broke against the shore in an amazing surf: all hopes of meeting with a harbour were consequently vanished. Many of the natives, in their canoes, followed our navigators as they stood out to sea, bartering their various articles. Willing to acquire additional proof, after what they had seen and heard the preceding day, whether these people were really cannibals, further enquiries on the subject were now made. A small instrument of wood, beset with shark's teeth, had been purchased, which was suspected to have been a saw or knife, used by the savages of New Zealand, to dissect the bodies of their enemies. One of the natives, being questioned on this point, admitted that it was used for cutting out the fleshy part of the belly; but, being asked whether his countryman ate the part thus cut out, he strongly denied it; yet, the question being repeated, he manifested some degree of apprehension, and swam off to his canoe. An elderly man, who sat foremost in the canoe, was then asked whether they ate the flesh; and he answered in the affirmative. The question being proposed a second time, he again affirmed the fact, declaring that it was savoury food.

† Some of the natives who visited the ships, informed the Captain that fresh water might be procured at a village, which they pointed at; he therefore ran down, and cast anchor before it, about three quarters of a mile from the shore, the depth of the water being twenty-six fathoms. The Discovery anchored at a greater distance from the shore. Before they anchored, several canoes brought them off potatoes, yams, and small pigs. The persons in them resembled the inhabitants of Atooi, and, like them, had some knowledge of the use of iron, readily parting with their commodities for pieces of that metal. More canoes reached the ships after they had come to anchor, bringing people that had apparently no other object than that of making the Europeans a formal visit. Many of them came on board, crouched down upon the deck, and continued in that humble posture till they were requested to rise. Several women remained along-side in the canoes, who had much less pretensions to modesty than the females of Atooi. At intervals, they all joined in a song, beating time upon their breasts with their hands: it was more methodical than melodious. The men, who ventured on board, did not continue long there; but, on their departure, they requested permission to lay down locks of their hair on the decks.

tween them and the ships being quickly stopped. They made a signal in the evening, for the boats, which were accordingly sent; soon after which they returned, with some good salt and a few yams. A quantity of both these articles had been procured in the course of the day, but the surf was so exceedingly high, that almost the whole of them were lost in attempting to bring them off to the boats *.

At night, appearances seemed to indicate an approaching storm; when Captain Cook, apprehending he was too near the shore, caused the anchors to be taken up: and the ships, being carried into forty-two fathoms water, came to again in that more secure situation. This weather continued for the whole succeeding day, the sea running so high that all communication with their party on shore was totally intercepted, and the islanders themselves would not venture to approach the ships. Towards the evening, the Captain sent the master in a boat to the south-east point of the island, to try if he could land in that quarter: a favourable answer was received, but it was then too late to send for their party till the following morning. When daylight appeared, a boat was dispatched to the south-east point, with instructions to Lieutenant Gore, that if he could not embark his people from the spot where they then were, he should march them up to the point. The boat being unable to get to the beach, one of the crew swam to the shore to communicate these instructions.

After the boat had returned, Captain Cook went himself, with the launch and pinnance, up to the point, to bring off the party from the land. He took with him three goats, a boar, and a sow; and a reasonable quantity of the seeds of onions, melons, and pumpkins. He landed, without difficulty, under the west side of the point, where he found his party in company with several of the natives. To one of these, who seemed to affect a kind of superiority over the rest, he gave the animals and seeds; all of which he intended to have left at Atooi, had he not been so unexpectedly driven from that island †.

The party which had been so long detained on shore, had found, in those parts of the island which they had traversed, several salt ponds; some of them had plenty of water remaining in them, though others were almost empty. They saw no appearance of a stream, though they perceived some wells; the fresh water of which was tolerable, but seemed not to be abundant. The houses were very thinly scattered, and it was conjectured, from variety of circumstances, that not more than five hundred persons inhabited the island. They appeared decent and cleanly in their mode of living; but the men and women were never seen eating together. The nuts of the *dooe dooe* are burned by these islanders as candles are among the Europeans; and they dress their hogs by baking them in the oven.

They have several mysterious ceremonies among them; one of which was performed by a woman, who threw a pig into the surf, and drowned it; after which she tied up a bundle of wood, which she disposed of in the like manner. The same female gave a man a hearty drubbing with a stick, over his shoulders, after he had formally seated himself to receive her friendly discipline. It was a common practice among them to pull out one of their teeth; but when they were asked why such a custom was introduced, no other answer was given than *teeha;* which was also a reason assigned by them for giving a lock of their hair. These islanders have a great veneration for owls.

* Regardless of the violence of the surf, the natives were not to be deterred from coming in canoes to the ships: They brought with them some refreshments to exchange for nails and pieces of iron hoops; together with some ribbons and buttons. Human figures were represented on the breasts of some of the men; and on one of them a lizard had been punctured. The Europeans were informed by these visitants, that there was no chief of this island; but that it was subject to one of the chiefs of Atooi, named Tencooneoo. Among other articles, a small drum was exhibited to our navigators, similar to those which they had seen at Otaheite.

† Whilst some of the seamen were employed in filling the water-casks, from a stream produced by the late rains, Captain Cook went a little way into the country, accompanied by the islander above-mentioned, and followed by two others, who carried the two pigs. Arriving upon an eminence, the Captain stopped to take a view, when he observed a woman, on the opposite side of the valley in which he had landed, calling out loudly to her countryman who attended him. In consequence of which this supposed chief began to mutter something, as if he was praying; the two pig-carriers walking round the Captain the whole time, making about a dozen circuits before his oraison was ended. After this strange ceremony had taken place, they proceeded on their walk, and met people coming from all quarters, who, upon being called to by the Captain's attendants, fell prostrate on their faces, and continued in that position till he was out of sight.

The water-casks having been filled, and roots and other provisions purchased from the natives, Captain Cook returned on board, intending to visit the island again the next day; but, about seven in the evening, the anchor of the Resolution started, and she drove off the bank. By this accident they found themselves, at day-break the next morning, nine miles to the leeward of their last station. He therefore made the signal for the Discovery to weigh anchor and join him. This junction was effected about noon, and both ships directed their course to the northward, in prosecution of their voyage.

The joint observations made by Captain Cook, and Mr. Anderson, furnish materials for the following section.

SECTION XX.

Situations of the Islands in the Pacific Ocean—The whole Group of them named the Sandwich Islands—Description of Atooi—its Produce—Persons and Dispositions of the Natives—Manners and Customs—Diversions—Manufactures—Tools—Agriculture—Their Chiefs—Weapons—Affinity between their Manners and those of the Society and Friendly Islands—Their Language.

THE islands in the Pacific Ocean, discovered of late in the course of the late voyages, have generally been found situate in groups; the single intermediate isles bearing but a small proportion to the rest. Of what number this new-discovered archipelago is composed, must be decided by future mariners. Our navigators observed five of them, whose names are Woahoo, Atooi, Oneecheow, Oreehoua, and Tahoora. The last is a small elevated island, four or five leagues from Onecheow, abounding with birds, which are its only inhabitants. Some intelligence was also obtained respecting the existence of an uninhabited island in the neighbourhood, named Tammata-pappa; and that there are other islands both to the eastward and westward. This group was distinguished by the name of the Sandwich Islands, in honour of the earl of Sandwich.

Woahoo, the most easterly of these islands, seen by our navigators, consists of high land, and is inhabited. Oneecheow lies seven leagues to the westward of their anchoring place at Atooi, and is about fifteen leagues in circumference. Yams are its chief vegetable production. Salt is here produced by ponds, with which fish and pork are cured. This island consists principally of low land, except the part opposite to Atooi, which rises from the sea to a considerable height. Of Oreehoua no more is known than that it is an elevated island, of small extent, lying very near the north side of Oneecheow.

Atooi, which is the largest of those seen by our navigators, and was a principal scene of their operations, will be more particularly entitled to a description. It is about ten leagues in length from east to west, but is considerably broader at the east than at the west point. The anchoring place, which their vessels occupied, is on the south-west side of the island. This road, or anchoring place, is somewhat exposed to the trade wind; notwithstanding which it is far from being a bad station, being greatly superior to those at Madeira, Teneriffe, the Azores, &c. The landing too is less difficult than at most of those places; and, except in very bad weather, is always practicable. The water in the neighbourhood is excellent, and may be conveniently obtained.

Though the land presents not to the view the delightful borders of Otaheite, or the luxuriant plains of Tongataboo, covered with trees, which afford a shelter from the scorching rays of the sun, a beautiful prospect to the eye, and food for the inhabitants; yet it is, in many respects, superior to those favourite islands, as being more capable of improvement. The ground, from the wooded part to the sea, is covered with excellent grass, about two feet in height, and might be converted into abundant crops of fine hay; but on this extensive spot not even a shrub grows naturally.

In the valley leading to the *morai*, the soil is of a dark brown, and loose; but on the higher ground it is more stiff and clayey. Let its quality, however, be estimated from its productions,

rather than from its appearance: the moist ground produced larger *taro* than the navigators had ever before seen; and the more elevated ground furnished sweet potatoes that seldom weighed less than two or three pounds, and very frequently exceeded twelve or fourteen pounds.

During the short time the navigators remained here, besides the *lapis lydius*, they found a species of cream-coloured whetstone, sometimes variegated with whiter or blacker veins like marble. The natives also exhibited some species of coarse white pumice stone. They also procured a brown sort of *hæmatites*, which, from its being strongly attracted by the magnet, discovered what metal it contained.

Besides the vegetables which they had purchased for sustenance, they saw five or six varieties of plantains. The island also produces bread-fruit, but not in great abundance, as they only saw one tree of that species. There are also a few cocoa-palms; some yams; the etooa-tree, and odoriferous *gardenia*, or *cape-jasmine*. Several trees of the *dooe dooe* kind were seen, which bear the oily nuts: these are stuck upon a kind of skewer, and made use of as candles.

The scarlet birds, which were brought for sale, our adventurers never saw alive; but they saw a dead one, about the size of a canary-bird, of a deep crimson colour: they also saw a large owl, two brown hawks, and a wild duck. They heard, among the natives, of some other birds; among which were the otoo, or blueish heron, and the *torata*, a sort of wimbrel.

Fish, and other productions of the sea, did not appear to be various: they only saw the small mackarel; a few common mullets; a small brownish rock-fish, decorated with blue spots; a turtle; and three or four sorts of fish salted. The habitations of a few shell-fish were converted into ornaments, but they had neither beauty or novelty to recommend them.

The tame domestic animals were hogs, dogs, and fowls, all of which were similar to those they met in the islands of the South Pacific. There were also small lizards and some rats.

The inhabitants of Atooi are of the middle size, and generally robust. They are not distinguished, as a nation, by any general cast of countenance. Their complexion is nearly of a nut-brown; but some individuals are of a darker hue. It has been observed that the women are not much more delicate than the men in their formation: and it may be added, with some few exceptions, they have little claim to those feminine attractions, by which the sex is distinguished in most other parts of the world. There are few natural deformities in either sex, among the natives: their skin is neither soft, nor shining, but their eyes and teeth are generally pretty good. Their hair, which is usually black and straight, is frequently stained, as at the Friendly and other Islands. The few instances of corpulency which were observed was principally among the women.

They are expert swimmers; and often, merely for amusement, quit their own canoes, dive under them, and swim to others at a great distance. Women, with infants at their backs, were often seen, when the surf prevented their landing in the canoes, to leap overboard, and swim to the shore without fear or danger.

They are cheerful and ingenuous, possessing a due medium between levity and sedateness: they cultivate a social intercourse with each other; and, were it not for their propensity to thieving, which seems to be innate among them, they would be extremely friendly to our Europeans. It was pleasing to observe how affectionate the women were in the management of their children; and with what alacrity the men contributed their assistance in such a tender office. The number of inhabitants, upon this island, is estimated at thirty thousand.

Contrary to the usual practice of most of the islands of the Pacific Ocean, the ears of the Sandwich Islanders are not perforated, nor have they any ornaments in them. Both men and women, however, adorn themselves with necklaces composed of bunches of small black coral. They have also necklaces consisting of many strings of very small shells, or of the dried flowers of the Indian mallow. Sometimes the resemblance of a small human figure, made of bone, is hung round their necks. The women also wear bracelets of a single shell, with pieces of polished ivory interspersed. The heads of the men are sometimes ornamented with plumes of feathers from the tropic bird; or those of cocks, &c. For the same purpose they sew the skin of a white dog's tail over a stick, with its tuft at the end *.

* The houses are scattered about without the least order or regularity: some of them are large and commodious per-

It appeared clearly that sweet potatoes, *taro*, and plantains, constitute the principal part of their vegetable diet, and that yams and bread-fruit are considered as rarities. They have plenty of animal food; hogs running in great numbers, without restraint, about the houses. If they eat dogs, which is not improbable, their stock seemed very considerable. They bake their vegetable articles of food with heated stones; and, from the quantity they saw dressed at one time, they supposed all the inhabitants of a village joined in the use of a common oven. The only artificial dish they saw, was a *taro* pudding, which was extremely sour, though swallowed with avidity by the natives.

The amusements of these people are various. They had not, indeed, among them, either flutes or reeds; and the only two musical instruments, seen by our Europeans, were very rudely formed. The melody of one of them was similar to that of a child's rattle. The other instrument was a hollow vessel made of wood, not unlike a platter, with two sticks, on one of which a man was performing; a tune, however, was produced that was not disagreeable. This music was accompanied with the vocal performance of some women, whose song had a pleasing effect.

In their different manufactures, these people display much neatness and ingenuity. Their cloth is made from the *morus papyrifera*, as at Tongataboo and Otaheite. Its texture, however, is inferior to that of the cloth of ther of those places; but in colouring or staining it, the inhabitants of Atooi shew a great superiority of taste. They fabricate numbers of white strong mats, with red stripes and figures interwoven on one side. Their wooden dishes and bowls, out of which they drink their *ava*, are of the *ctooa* tree, extremely neat and well polished. They also make small square fans, of mat or wicker-work, with handles, which are curiously wrought with small cords of hair, and cocoa-nut fibres intermixed. Their fishing hooks are ingeniously made: some consist of bone, others of pearl-shell, and others of wood, pointed with bone. The various sorts have a barb, either on the inside like those made in England, or on the outside. Their tools resembled those of the southern islanders: their hatchets were exactly of the same pattern. They have small instruments made of a single shark's tooth, some of which are fixed to the jaw-bone of a dog, and others to a thin wooden handle. They serve occasionally as knives, and perhaps are used in carving.

The only iron tools which they possessed before the arrival of our Europeans, were a piece of iron hoop, of the length of about two inches, fitted into a wooden handle, and another edge tool which appeared to have been formed of the point of a broad sword.

The canoes of these people are usually about twenty-four feet in length, with the bottom generally formed of a single piece of wood, hollowed out to about the thickness of an inch, and brought to a point at each end. The sides are composed of three boards, each about an inch thick, neatly lashed to the bottom. The extremities, both at head and stern, are somewhat elevated, and are made sharp. They are rowed by paddles, like those our navigators observed at other islands; and some of them have a light triangular sail, extended to a mast and boom.

They are not novices in agriculture. The vale-ground is one continued plantation of *taro*, and some other articles, which seem not to have been neglected. The potatoe fields, and plats of sugar-canes, or plantains, are planted with great regularity; but none of them have any fence, unless the ditches may be so construed; they are perhaps rather intended to convey water to the *taro*.

Though Captain Cook did not see any chief of note, many of the islanders declared there were several who resided at Atooi, and to whom they prostrate themselves as a token of homage and respect. Whether they were, at first, unwilling to be seen, or happened to be absent, cannot well be ascertained; but soon after the Resolution had quitted the island, one of these

perhaps fifty feet in length, and twenty or thirty in breadth, while others of them are paltry hovels. Their figure resembles that of a hay-stack. The entrance is either in the end or side, and is an oblong hole, extremely low: a board of planks, fastened together, serves as a door; but, having no hinges, it must be occasionally removed. No light is admitted into the house, except by this opening. The houses are kept very clean, the floors being strewed with dried grass; with several mats, conveniently spread to sit and sleep on. A bench about three feet high is placed at one end, on which domestic utensils are placed. These consist of gourd-shells, serving the natives as bottles to hold water, baskets to contain food, &c. The other domestic utensils are wooden bowls, trenchers, &c.

great

great men thought proper to come forward, and visited Captain Clerke on board the Discovery: he came off in a double canoe, paying no regard to the small ones which happened to be in his way, but ran over them, or against them, without attempting to steer clear of them. It was impossible for the poor wretches to avoid him, as they could not conduct their canoes, it being imperiously required that they should lay down till he had passed.

His attendants assisted him in getting into the ship, and placed him in the gang-way; where they surrounded him, holding each other by the hands; not a person, except Captain Clerke, being permitted to approach him. He was a young man, and accompanied by a young woman, who was probably his wife His name was said to be Tamahano. Captain Clerke having made him some presents, received in return a large bowl, supported by the figures of two men, which manifested some skill both in the design and execution. The Captain could not prevail upon the chief to go below, nor to move from the spot where his attendants had first placed him. After continuing a short time in the ship, he was conducted into his canoe, and returned to the island. Messages were sent to Captain Clerke, the following day, inviting him to return the visit on shore; but the Captain, being anxious to join the Resolution, did not think proper to accept the invitation.

From the general similarity of customs, and particularly from the honours paid to their chiefs, it may reasonably be supposed that the form of government established amongst them, is of the same nature with that which prevails in all the islands they had hitherto visited; and their wars among themselves were probably as frequent. This indeed appears from the number of weapons found in their possession, and from the excellent order in which they are preserved. Of this fact our navigators had proofs from the confession of the natives; and that these wars are carried on between the different districts of their own island, as well as between that and the neighbouring inhabitants of the isles of Oneeheow and Oreehoua. This is apparently a very cogent reason why their population is not proportioned to the extent of their ground that is capable of cultivation *.

The *taboo* prevails as strictly at Atooi as at Tongataboo: but whatever resemblance might be discovered between the general manners of the inhabitants of Atooi, and those of Otaheite, these were less striking than the similarity of language. The languages of both places are indeed almost the same. The people of Atooi, in general, have softened the strong guttural pronunciation of the New-Zealanders, and even that smaller degree of it which distinguishes the Friendly Islanders: they have adopted the harmonious mode of the Otaheitans, in avoiding harsh sounds, and cultivating the whole idiom of their language.

How widely has this nation diffused itself in every quarter of the Pacific Ocean! We find it from New Zealand, in the south, as far as the Sandwich Islands to the northward; and from Easter Island to the New Hebrides: that is, over an extent of three thousand six hundred miles, north and south; or four thousand nine hundred and eighty miles, east and west! How much farther its colonies reach in those directions, is not known, but we are authorized in pronouncing it to be the most extensive nation upon earth. Had the Sandwich Islands been discovered at an early period by the Spaniards, they would doubtless have made use of Atooi, or some other of the islands, as a place of refreshment for their ships between Manilla and Acapulco. What difficulties would Lord Anson have avoided, had he known that a cluster of islands existed, half way between America and Tinian, where all his wants might have been effectually relieved!

SECT.

* They have spears formed of a brownish wood, finely polished; some of which are barbed at one end, and flattened to a point at the other: They have also a weapon which somewhat resembles a dagger, about eighteen inches in length; sharpened at one or both ends, and secured to the hand by a string. Some of these have a handle in the middle, by which they are enabled to strike different ways. They have bows and arrows, which appear to be too slenderly constructed to annoy the enemy in battle. Their dissecting knives deserve to be mentioned among their weapons, as they both strike and cut with them in their conflicts.

Some of their religious institutions strongly indicate an affinity between the manners of these people, and the natives of the Friendly and Society Islands. The inhabitants of Tongataboo inter their dead with great decency, and they also bury their human sacrifices; but our Europeans could not learn whether they offer any other animal, or even vegetable, to their deities. The Otaheitans do not bury their

SECTION XXI.

Scarcity of Oceanic Birds—Birds in the Northern Hemisphere—Beautiful Sea Animals—See the Coast of North America—Description of the Country—Difficulties at Cape Foul Weather—Tempestuous Weather—Observations on Martin d'Aguilar's River—An Inlet discovered—Ships anchor—Visited by great Numbers of the Natives—Their Behaviour.

BEING joined by the Discovery, they stood away to the northward, with a gentle gale from the east. On the 7th of February they were in the latitude of 29° north, and in the longitude of 200° east. They steered north-east and east till the 12th. On the 19th the wind veered to the south-east. On the 25th they reached the latitude of 42° 30′, and the longitude of 219°; when they began to meet with the rock-weed, mentioned in Anson's voyage by the name of the sea-leek, which is generally seen by the Manilla ships. Since they left the Sandwich Islands, they had hardly beheld a bird, or any other oceanic animal.

It was remarkable that they should meet with few of the feathered race, compared to those they had seen in the same latitudes to the south the line; occasioned either from the scarcity them, or from a deficiency of resting-places. In the morning of the 2d, during a calm, part the sea appeared with a kind of slime, and minute sea animals were observed swimming out. The most conspicuous were of the gelatinous kind, and almost globular; a smaller sort were of a shining white, and seemed more abundant. When they swam about, which they did in various directions, they emitted the bright-est colours of the most valuable gems. Sometimes they had a pellucid appearance, and at others displayed the various tints of blue, from the sapphirine to a violet, accompanied with a blaze of ruby, and illuminating the glass and water. By candle-light, the principal colour they exhibited was a beautiful pale green, with a kind of burnished gloss; and, in the dark, it faintly emitted a glowing fire *.

After variable airs and calms, a breeze sprung up at south-west in the evening of the 7th. They stood to the north-west under an easy sail: but the next morning, the wind having shifted from north-west, it blew in squalls, with rain. Till near ten their course was north-east. About noon on the 9th, they stood in for land, which was seen at two in the afternoon, bearing east north-east. In the evening the wind veered more to the west, and the weather became worse, which induced them to tack and stand off till four the next morning, when they stood in again. In the afternoon at four they discovered land: here they tacked and sounded, but could not reach the ground with a line of one hundred and sixty fathoms. They stood off, and in again; and at half after six the next morning, they were about three leagues from the land. Seeing nothing like a harbour, and the weather remaining unsettled, they tacked and stretched off south-west, having then fifty-five fathoms water.

The coast appeared straight in almost every part, without any opening, and terminating in a kind of white sandy beach; though some of the people on board imagined that such an appearance was occasioned by the snow. Each extreme of the land shot out into a point: the northern one which had been seen on the 7th, the Captain named *Cape Perpetua;* and the southern extreme *Cape Gregory*. This point is rendered remark-

* dead, but suffer them to become putrefied by time, which they inter the bones. They also offer up to gods other animals and vegetables. The people of ooi bury their common dead, and their human sacrifices, Tongataboo; but, like those of Otaheite, they offer als and vegetables to their gods.

Two large birds settled this day on the water, near the . One was the *procellaria maxima*, and the other, ch was about half its size, seemed to be of the albatross : it resembled a sea-gull, but was larger. About noon he 6th they saw two seals, and several whales; and the next morning the coast of New Albion § was descried, extending from north-east to south-east, at the distance of about ten leagues. They had now seventy-three fathoms water, over a muddy bottom, and found ninety fathoms about a league farther off. The land appeared to be diversified with hills and vallies, and principally covered with wood. A lofty hill with a flat summit, was seen eastward of them at noon. The land formed a point at the northern extreme, which was named Cape Foul-Weather by Captain Cook, from the extreme bad weather they afterwards experienced.

§ This name was given to it by Sir Francis Drake.

able, by the land rising immediately from the sea to a tolerable height; that on each side being very low.

Cape Perpetua now bore north-east by north, and the farthest land to the south of Cape Gregory, bore south by east, distant about twelve leagues. Its latitude will therefore be 43° 10′, and its longitude 235° 55′ east. The wind now blew in squalls, attended with snow-showers. At midnight it increased to a very hard gale, with heavy squalls, and sleet. They now found themselves obliged to stretch to the southward, to get clear off the coast: this was done under more sail than the ships could safely bear; but the intention was to avoid the more imminent danger of being forced on shore. This gale abated on the morning of the 13th, and they then stood in again, for the land. Storms, breezes, and calms alternately succeeded each other till the morning of the 21st, when a breeze sprung up at south-west. This being accompanied with fair weather, they steered northward, hoping to fall in with the land. In the evening the wind shifted to the westward, and about eight the next morning they saw the land at the distance of nine leagues. They stood to the north, with a fine breeze till seven in the evening, when they tacked, to wait for day-light. They were now in forty-eight fathoms water, and four leagues from the land. A small round hill, which they supposed to be an island, bore north three-quarters east, at the distance of about seven leagues.

Thinking they could perceive a small opening, between this supposed island, and the northern extremity of the land, they entertaind hopes of finding a harbour; but these hopes gradually vanished as they drew nearer, and at length they were convinced that the opening was closed by low land. The Captain, therefore, expressive of his disappointment, named the point of land to the north of it, *Cape Flattery*. Its latitude is 48° 15′ north, and its longitude 235° 3′ east.

In this latitude geographers have placed the pretended Strait of Juan de Fuca. But nothing of that kind presented itself to the view of our navigators, nor is it probable that any such thing ever existed. They were now perpetually encountering with adverse weather: in an evening, the wind would sometimes become moderate, and veer southward; but this was a certain prelude to a storm at south south-east, accompanied with rain and sleet. In six hours it was usually succeeded by a gale from the north-west, which produced fair weather. At nine in the morning on the 19th, they again saw the land, the nearest part about six leagues distant *.

Not far from hence a large bay is formed, which the Captain named *Hope Bay;* hoping, as he observed, to find it a good harbour, as it eventually proved to be. As they approached the coast, they imagined they saw two inlets, one in the north-west, and the other in the north-east corner of the bay. They bore up for the latter, passing some breakers about a league from the shore. Half a league within them they had twenty fathoms water; but, when they had passed them, the depth increased to fifty fathoms, and farther in, the ground was unfathomable with the greatest length of line.

Though appearances were in their favour, they were not yet absolutely certain that there were any inlets; but, being in a deep bay, the Captain thought proper to anchor, expecting to obtain some water, which the ships now began to be in need of. As they advanced, however, the existence of the inlet no longer remained doubtful. About five they reached the west point of it, but were becalmed for some time. The Captain, however, ordered all the boats to be hoisted out, in order to tow the ships in. Presently a fresh breeze sprung up at north-west, when they stretched up into an arm of the inlet which ran into the north-east. Here they were again becalmed, and anchored in five fathoms water, so near the land as to be able to reach it with a hawser. The Discovery anchored in seventy fathoms water, before she got within the arm.

When they approached the inlet, they saw the coast was inhabited; and three canoes came off to the ship, where they were first becalmed, containing in the whole eighteen men. Advancing near them, a person stood up in one of them and spoke for a considerable time, inviting them

* The face of the country was now extremely different from that of those parts which they had before surveyed. Numbers of lofty mountains presented themselves to their view, whose summits were covered with snow. The vallies between them, and the borders of the coast, were covered with large strait trees, exhibiting the appearance of a vast forest. At the south-east extreme of the land, a low point is formed, off which several breakers are observed, occasioned by sunken rocks: It was therefore called Point Breakers.

as they supposed, to go ashore; at the same time strewing handfuls of feathers towards them. Some of them also scattered a quantity of red powder in a similar manner *.

After making a tumultuous noise, they lay at a small distance from the ship, conversing together with the greatest ease and composure. Several of them rose, occasionally, and spoke aloud; and one, in particular, sung a most agreeable air, accompanied with great melody and softness.

A breeze springing up, brought our adventurers closer to the shore, when the canoes began to visit them in great numbers: at one time, they had not less than thirty-two of them about the ship, containing, on an average, seven persons each, and of both sexes. Several of these also stood up, harangued like the first visitors, and employed very significant gestures. One of the canoes peculiarly attracted the observation of our Europeans; by a singular head, which had a bird's eye, and an enormous beak painted on it. The person in it, who was probably a chief, was equally remarkable; having an immense quantity of feathers hanging from his head, and being smeared with different colours in a very extraordinary manner. In his hand he held a bird carved of wood, of the magnitude of a pigeon, with which he often rattled, and delivered a vociferous harangue, accompanied with much action.

But, peaceable and civil as these visitors were, they could not be prevailed on to come on board: they were extremely ready and willing to part with any thing they had, and were satisfied with what the Europeans offered them in exchange; but were more anxious for iron than any other article of commerce; appearing to know how to estimate that valuable metal.

SECTION XXII.

Arrival at the Sound—Moor in a convenient Harbour—Visited by great Numbers of the inoffensive Natives—Articles brought to barter—Thefts committed—Observatories erected—Alarmed by the Arming of the Natives—Different Tribes not permitted to traffic by the Natives—Tempestuous Weather—Survey of the Sound—Friendly Behaviour of some of the Natives—Inhospitable Treatment from a Chief—A second Visit to one of the Villages—Departure of the Ships.

HAVING found an excellent shelter for their ships, in an inlet whose coasts were inhabited by an inoffensive race of people, our navigators lost no time, after coming to anchor, in searching for a commodious harbour. Upon this service Captain Cook sent three armed boats, under the command of Mr. King; and went himself, in a small boat, on the same business. On the north-west of the arm, and at a small distance from the ships, the Captain found a convenient cove perfectly adapted to the purpose; and Mr. King found a still better harbour on the north-west side of the land. It was, however, thought prudent to continue where they were till the ensuing morning.

Plenty of canoes, filled with the natives, surrounded the ships the whole day; and a reciprocal and honourable commerce was harmoniously carried on between the natives and our Europeans. The articles of the former consisted of the skins of various animals; as sea-otters, bears, wolves, foxes, deer, martins, racoons, and polecats. Garments were also produced by them made of skins; and others fabricated from the bark of a tree, or a plant resembling hemp. They had also bows, arrows, and spears; fish-hooks; wooden vizors; woollen stuff; carved work, beads, and red ochre. They also exhibited several little ornaments of thin brass and iron, resembling a horse-shoe, which they wear

* The person who officiated as the orator, was clothed with the skin of some animal, and held a kind of rattle in each hand. Grown weary of repeating his useless solicitations, he at length became quiet, and the others had something to say to our adventurers; but their speeches were shorter and less vehement than that of the other. Small white feathers were strewed over the hair of two or three of these people; and large ones were stuck in different parts of the head.

pendant

pendant at their noses; and they had pieces of iron fixed to handles, not much unlike European chissels*.

The next day was employed in hauling the ships into the cove that had been approved, where they were moored. They found, on heaving up the anchor, notwithstanding the great depth of water, that rocks were at the bottom. The cable was greatly injured, as well as the hausers that were carried out to warp the ship into the cover; consequently the whole bottom was strewed with rocks†.

The ships being safely moored, the adventurers proceeded to other necessary business. The Observatories were placed upon a rock on one side of the cove, not far from the Resolution; and a party of men were ordered to cut wood, and clear a place for watering. They were daily visited by a great numbers of the natives, who had a singular method of introducing themselves on their first appearance: they paddled rapidly round both the ships; a chief standing up in the mean time, with a spear in his hand, and speaking most vociferously. Sometimes the face of this orator was concealed under a mask, representing a human countenance, or that of some other animal; and, instead of a spear, he held a rattle in his hand. This ceremonious circuit round the ship having been performed, they usually came along-side, and then began to traffic. Sometimes, indeed, they entertained the Europeans with a preliminary song, in which the whole company joined, and produced a very agreeable harmony.

While the party were employed on shore in cutting wood and filling water, they were surprised at seeing the natives, in all quarters, arming themselves in the best manner they were able; and that those who were destitute of proper weapons, were collecting sticks and stones. It was now thought expedient for the Europeans to arm also; but, being resolved to act upon the defensive, the captain ordered all the workmen to repair to the rock, on which the observatories had been placed, leaving the supposed enemy in possession of the ground where they had assembled; which was at the distance of about a hundred yards from the Resolution's stern.

Their danger, however, was merely imaginary; these hostile preparations being directed against a body of their own countrymen, who were advancing to attack them. Their friends of the Sound, perceiving their exertions were misapprehended by the Europeans, explained, to their satisfaction, the real state of the case.

The adverse party, in about a dozen large canoes, drew up in line of battle, off the south point of the cove, when a negociation for the restoration of peace was proposed. In conducting the treaty, several embassies passed between the two parties, and some debates ensued. At length the disputed points appeared to be adjusted; but the strangers were not permitted to approach the ships, nor to have any intercourse with our navigators: they were probably the occasion of the quarrel, by insisting on having a right of sharing in the advantages of trade with

* But the most extraordinary articles of their trade were human skulls and hands, with some of the flesh remaining; on which they were not ashamed to acknowledge they had been feeding; some of them indeed bore evident marks of having been broiling on the fire. Hence it is but too apparent, that the horrid practice of devouring their enemies is common here, as well as at New Zealand, and other South-Sea Islands. For the articles they brought to barter, they received, chissels, knives, pieces of iron and tin, nails, looking-glasses, buttons, &c. Beads claimed very little of their attention, and cloth of every kind was rejected by them.

† On the 31st of March, intelligence of the arrival of our navigators brought great numbers of the natives about the ships. At one time upwards of a hundred canoes were distinctly counted, which at the very moderate computation of five persons to each canoe, must have amounted to five hundred. As they had, at first, apprehended hostile measures from our navigators, they had now abandoned such ideas: for they ventured on board the ships, and mixed with the people with the greatest familiarity and freedom. It soon appeared, however, that they were as fond of pilfering as any that had been met with during the voyage. They were indeed more expert and mischievous than any of the thieves which the navigators had been troubled with; for, being possessed of sharp instruments, at the very instant that a person turned his back, they could cut a hook from a tackle, or a piece of iron from a rope.

Besides other articles, several hooks were lost in this manner, one of which weighed upwards of twenty pounds. They stripped the boats of every morsel of iron that was worth taking away, though some of the men were always left in them to guard them. They were extremely artful too, upon these occasions: one fellow would contrive to amuse the people at one end of the boat, while another was forcing off the iron-work at the other. When an article was stolen and missed, the thief was easily detected, as the natives delight in impeaching each other: but the guilty person will not part with his booty without great reluctance; compulsive measures are therefore often obliged to be taken to get the purloined article restored.

them;

them; and our navigators resolving to engross them entirely to themselves.

From their putting into the Sound, till the 7th of April, the weather had been extremely fine, but early on the 8th, the wind blew fresh at south-east, accompanied with hazy weather and rain; and in the evening it blew remarkably hard. It came, in heavy squalls, right into the cove; and though the ships were well moored their situation was perilous. But if these tempestuous blasts rapidly succeeded each other, they were of short duration, and, in the intervals, they had a perfect calm. Another misfortune now befel them. On board the Resolution, the mizen was the only mast that remained rigged, with its top-mast up. The former was too defective to support the latter during these squalls, and gave way at the head, under the rigging. The gale abated about eight o'clock; but the rain continued, with little intermission, for several days; during which time a tent was erected over the fore-mast, to enable the carpenters to proceed conveniently in their labours

The bad weather did not discourage the natives from paying their daily visits to our Europeans, which were highly acceptable to them, as they were then situated. They frequently brought them a supply of fish, when they could not catch any with a hook and line, and they had not a convenient place to draw a net. In the evening of the 11th they received a visit from a tribe of natives whom they had not seen before, and who appeared in better plight than those they had been accustomed to see. The captain conducted them into the cabin, but not an article seemed to attract their attention; all their novelties were observed with indifference, except by a very few, who possessed a small portion of curiosity.

During the performance of several operations, respecting the repairing and rigging the two ships, the natives looked on with countenances expressive of wonder and surprize, which, from their general inattention, was little expected. A party of strangers, in seven or eight canoes, came into the cove on the 18th, and almost instantly retired. As their old friends were then more numerous about them than their new visitors, it seemed probable that they would not suffer them to trade, meaning to engross the traffic entirely to themselves*.

On the 20th, in the morning, Captain Cook set out to survey the Sound; and, going first to the west point, he perceived a large village, and a snug harbour before it, with from nine to four fathoms water. The numerous inhabitants of this village, to many of whom the captain was no stranger, received him with the utmost courtesy, every one soliciting him to enter his apartment, several families having habitations under the same roof. He politely accepted their invitations, and the hospitable friends gave him the most satisfactory proofs of their civility and respect.

In these habitations, women were employed in making dresses of the bark, and executed their business like the inhabitants of New Zealand. Others were in the act of opening sardines, large quantities of which our navigators saw brought on shore, which are cured by smoke-drying. They are at first hung upon small rods about a foot over the fire; and afterwards gradually raised higher, to make room for others. When dried, they are packed in bales, and matted to preserve them till they are wanted; and they are far from being unpleasant food. Cod, and other large fish, are frequently cured in the same manner.

Leaving this village, the captain proceeded up the west side of the Sound, when he saw, in the space of three miles, several small islands, so situated as to form some convenient harbours. About two leagues within the Sound, on the same side, an arm runs north-north-west, and another in the same direction about two miles further. A little above the second arm, he saw the ruins of a village; behind which is a small plain, covered with very large pines. This was somewhat singular, as most of the elevated ground on this side of the Sound was rather naked. Passing from hence to the east side of the Sound, the captain found, what he had before supposed, that it was an island under which the

* Such of the natives as came daily to see them, were found the most beneficial to them; for, after disposing of their trifles, they amused themselves in fishing, and the Europeans always partook of their good fortune.

Metal was principally demanded by their visitors, and brass had now supplanted iron; being so eagerly sought after, that, before they left the Sound, a bit was hardly to be found in either of the ships, except what constituted a part of their necessary instruments. Suits of clothes were deprived of their buttons, and bureaus of their shining furniture; kettles, candlesticks, and canisters partook of the general wreck.

ships lay; and that several smaller ones lay scattered on the west side of it. On the main land, opposite the north end of their island, he observed a village, and landed there; but he was not received with that civility by the inhabitants, which he had experienced from those of the other village he had visited. An old surly chief gave him a very cool reception, and would not suffer him to enter any of their houses; but suspiciously followed him wherever he went, significantly intimating that he was impatient for him to be gone. Captain Cook, in vain, endeavoured to sooth him by presents; for he was inexorable, and though he condescended to accept of his favours, he persevered in the same kind of behaviour. But, if he was thus inhospitably treated by the chief, the young women instantly apparelled themselves in their best, assembled in a body, gave the Europeans a hearty welcome to the village, and entertained them with an agreeable song. Evening approaching, they proceeded to the ships round the north end of the island*.

On the 21st a number of strangers, in about a dozen canoes, visited them about eight in the morning. They came from the southward, and drew up in a body, at the distance of two hundred yards from the ships, where they continued about half an hour. It was conjectured that they were afraid to approach; but that was not the case, for they were only preparing for an introductory ceremony. At length they advanced towards the ships, standing erect in their canoes, and began to sing. Many of their songs were slow and solemn, in which they were accompanied by the whole party; others were performed in quicker time, when the motions of their hands, and the beating of their paddles assisted in unison: expressive gestures, at the same time, adding a zest to their concert. Sometimes they continued silent, for a few seconds, after the conclusion of each air, and then began again, frequently pronouncing the word *hooee*, as a kind of chorus. When our navigators had been highly entertained with their music for about half an hour, they came nearer the ships and bartered with them; it then appeared that they were some of their old friends.

When these visitors departed, the Captains Cook and Clerke went with two boats to the village where Captain Cook had been two days before, and near which he had seen a quantity of excellent grass. A supply of this was necessary for the remaining goats and sheep, and as the captain experienced the same welcome reception he had met with before, he ordered some of his people to begin cutting; not supposing that the natives would object to their furnishing themselves, with what could not be useful to them, though essentially necessary for our Europeans. In this, however, he was mistaken, for when the men began cutting the grass, some of the inhabitants immediately stopped their progress, saying "*mahook*," signifying that they must pay for it first.

The captain was then in one of the houses; but, hearing of this, he repaired instantly to the field, where he found several claimants of different parts of the grass that grew on the premises. Having treated with them for the price, and complied with the terms of the purchase, he concluded that he was at full liberty to cut wherever he pleased. Here he was again mistaken; for he had so liberally paid the first pretended proprietors, that additional demands were made by others; who were so numerous, that the contents of his pockets were inadequate to the discharge of them. Perceiving, however, that he had no more to give, they were no longer importunate, and the mowers were permitted to cut where they pleased, and as much as they pleased†.

Having completed all their operations at this village, the natives and the two captains took a friendly leave of each other. The latter returned

* Returning on board, the Captain was informed that, in his absence, some strangers had visited the ships in two or three canoes; who informed them, by signs, that they had come from the south-east. They exchanged with them several garments, skins, and other articles, for some of theirs; but they were greatly surprized to see two silver table spoons, which had been purchased of them by some of the people, which appeared to be of Spanish manufacture. They were worn round the neck of these visitors, by way of ornament.

† Our navigators never met with any uncivilized nation who entertained such strict notions of their having an exclusive property in the produce of their country. They even expected payment for the wood and water that were carried on board: had Captain Cook been present, he would probably have complied with such demands; but the people thought differently, and paid little attention to such claims. The natives, perceiving that their demands were absolutely useless, at length ceased to apply. But they frequently thought proper to remind our Europeans, that their esteem for them had induced them to make them a present of wood and water.

to

to the ships in the afternoon; and the 23d, 24th, and 25th of April were employed in preparing for sea. They intended to have set sail on the morning of the 26th, but wind and tide being against them, they were obliged to wait till noon; when a calm succeeded, and the tide, at the same time, turning in their favour, they towed the ships out of the cove. The captain, unwilling to lose an opportunity of getting out of the Sound, resolved to put to sea. They were attended by the natives for a considerable time; some in their canoes, and others on board the ships. A chief, who had particularly attached himself to the captain, was among the last who parted from him: a little time before he went, the captain made him a small present; for which he received a beaver-skin of much greater value. An additional compliment was then paid to the chief; when he was so exceedingly delighted that he presented to Captain Cook the beaver-skin cloak which he then wore, and of which he was extremely fond.

Struck with this excess of generosity, and unwilling that he should be a sufferer by his gratitude, the captain insisted on his acceptance of a new broad-sword, with a brass hilt, with which he thought himself very amply compensated. Further particulars respecting the country and its inhabitants, will be communicated to our readers in the two subsequent sections.

SECTION XXIII.

Directions for sailing into the Sound—Description of the adjacent Country—Observations on the Climate and Weather—Vegetable Productions—Racoons, Martins, and other Quadrupeds—Variety of Skins brought to Market—Whales and other Sea Animals—Description of the Sea-Otter—Birds, Fish, Snakes, and Lizards—Insects—Stones—Description of the Natives—Horrible wooden Masks—Leathern Mantle for War—Dispositions, Fondness for Metals.

ON the first arrival of our Europeans at this inlet, Captain Cook honoured it with the name of King George's Sound, but he afterwards discovered that the natives called it Nootka. The entrance is in the east corner of Hope Bay. Its latitude is 49°, 33′ north, and its longitude 233°, 12′ east. The east coast of that bay is covered by a chain of sunken rocks; and, near the Sound, some others appear above water. The Sound is entered between two rocky points, lying east-south-east, and west-north-west from each other. Within these points the Sound widens, and extends to the northward about four leagues. The depth of water is from forty-seven to ninety fathoms, or more: harbours, and anchoring places are also numerous within its circuit. The cove where the British ships anchored, is on the east side of the Sound, and also on the east of the largest island.

On the sea-coast the land is tolerably high and level; but, within the Sound, it rises into steep hills which have an uniform appearance. Many of these hills are very high, and others of a more moderate height. The trees of which the woods are principally composed, are the Canadian pine, white cypress, and two or three other sorts of pine. In general, the trees here grow vigorously, and are of a large size.

On the borders of the woods, and about the rocks, strawberry plants, and rasberry, currant, and gooseberry bushes, were all seen in a flourishing state. Our adventurers also met with some wild rose-bushes, just budding, some water-cresses, young leeks, and a great abundance of *andromeda*. Within the woods they found two sorts of underwood shrubs, with which they were unacquainted, and mosses and ferns.

Lying in a cove, on an island, the living animals they saw were only a few racoons, martins, and squirrels. Some of the people, indeed, who landed on the continent, on the south side of the Sound, saw the print of a bear's foot at a little distance from the shore. The only account they could furnish of the quadrupeds, is taken from the skins which were purchased of the inhabitants, and these were sometimes so extremely mutilated, that it was difficult to guess to what animals they belonged. The most common among them were bears, deer, wolves and foxes. Bear-skins were plentiful, generally black, and not very large. The deer-skins appeared to belong to what the historians

historians of Carolina call the fallow deer, though Mr. Pennant distinguishes it by the name of Virginian Deer. Their foxes are numerous, and of several varieties*.

The sea-animals near the coast, are whales, porpoises, and seals: Though the sea-otter is amphibious, he may be considered as belonging to this class, his residence being principally in the water. Just before the departure of our adventurers from this place, a whole otter, just killed, was purchased from some strangers, of which Mr. Webber made a drawing. It was young, and weighed no more than twenty-five pounds, and was of a glossy black colour; but as many of the hairs were tipt with white, it had a greyish cast, at first sight. The face, throat, and breast were of a yellowish white; and, in several of the skins, that colour extended the whole length of the belly. In each jaw it had six cutting teeth; two in the lower jaw being extremely small, and placed without, at the base of the two in the middle. In these particulars, it differs from those found by the Russians, as well as in the outer toes of the hind feet not being skirted with a membrane. There also appeared a greater variety in colour: It seems probable that these changes of colour take place at the different gradations of life. After they have attained their full growth, the black colour disappears, and is succeeded by a deep brown. Some which were supposed to be older, were of a chesnut brown; and a few skins were seen that were of a perfect yellow. The fur of these creatures is much finer than that of any other animal they knew of; and consequently the discovery of this part of North America, which furnishes so valuable an article of commerce, ought to be considered as a matter of importance.

Birds are not numerous here, and those which are to be seen are remarkably shy; occasioned perhaps by their being continually harrassed by the natives, to procure their flesh for food, or their feathers for ornaments. Here are ravens and crows, not differing in any respect from those of England. This country is also inhabited by the jay, the magpie, the common wren, the Canadian thrush, the brown eagle, the heron, a small species of hawk, and the large crested American king-fisher. The common wren was the only singing bird our Europeans had heard. There are some which have not been mentioned by those who have treated on natural history. The two first are species of wood-peckers: one is smaller than a thrush, black on the back, and having white spots on the wings; the head, neck, and breast of a crimson colour. The other is larger and more elegant, the back being of a dusky brown, richly waved with black; the belly has a reddish cast, with black spots. The third and fourth are, one of the finch kind, about the size of a linnet, of a dusky colour, black head and neck, and white bill; and a sand-piper of a dusky brown. There are also humming birds, which differ, in some degree, from the sorts already known of this delicate little animal.

The quebrantahuessos, shags, and gulls, were seen off the coast; and the two last were common in the Sound. Wild-ducks, swans, and plovers were also seen.

Fish are plentiful here in quantity, but not in variety: the principal sorts are the common herring, not exceeding six or seven inches in length; and a smaller sort; a silver-coloured bream; and another of a burnished gold colour, with narrow blue stripes. The other fish were scarce, and consisted of a brown kind of sculpin; frost-fish, &c. Sharks are very common in the Sound, the teeth of which many natives had in their possession. The other marine animals are a small cruciated *medusa*, or blubber, star-fish, small crabs, and a large cuttle-fish.

Among the rocks were found many large muscles, sea-ears, cockles, and limpets.

Brown snakes were observed here, about two feet in length, with whitish stripes on the back and sides; and brownish water lizards. The former are so perfectly harmless, that several of the natives carried them alive in their hands. Among the insect tribe, though the season for their appearance was only beginning, they saw many different sorts of butterflies, humble bees, gooseberry moths, beetles, flies, and musquitoes†.

Some

* An entire wolf's skin was seen, which was grey. The common martin, the pine martin, and another of a lighter brown colour are inhabitants here: the ermine is also found in this country; but is small, and its hair is not remarkably fine. There were two animals which our adventurers could not, with any degree of certainty, distinguish. One of them they supposed to be the elk or mouse-deer, and the other the wild cat or lynx. Hogs, dogs, or goats, have not yet appeared here.

† The stature of the natives is rather below the common standard,

Some of the men are without beards; others ave only a small thin one upon the point of the hin. This is not occasioned by an original de-iciency of hair* in that quarter, but from their lucking it out by the roots. Their eye-brows e narrow, but they have plenty of black, strong, d lank hair on the head. Their necks are hort, their arms clumsy, and no elegance or eauty is distinguishable in their formation. hey are generally crooked, and ill-formed; sup-osed to have been principally occasioned by eir sitting almost continually upon heir hands d knees†.

Their common dress is a flaxen kind of mantle, rnamented with a narrow stripe of fur on the pper edge, with fringes at the lower edge. ver this is worn a small cloak of the same sub-ance, extending to the waist, also fringed at e bottom. They wear a cap like a truncated one, or a flower-pot, of very fine matting, de-orated with a round knob, or a bunch of leathern ssels; with a string under the chin to prevent blowing off. This dress is common to both xes. The men often wear, over their other rments, the skin of some animal, as a bear, olf, &c. with the hair outwards. They wear coarse mat about their shoulders in rainy eather. Their hair generally hangs loosely own; but those who are without a cap, tie it into a kind of bunch on the crown of the head. Their dress, if kept clean, would not be inelegant; but as they are continually smearing their bodies over with red paint and oil, their garments become greasy, and contract an offensive smell. The appearance of these people is extremely wretched and filthy, and their heads and garments swarm with vermin. But though their bodies are always covered with red paint, their face is ornamented with variety of colours. Many of their ears are also perforated in the lobe, where they make a large hole, and two smaller ones higher up on the outer edge. These holes are decorated with bits of bone, quill, shells, bunches of tassels, or thin pieces of copper. In some, the *septum* of the nose is perforated, and a piece of cord drawn through it. Others wear, at the same place, pieces of copper, brass, iron, beads, tassels, and buttons. Their ancles are ornamented with leathern thongs, or the sinews of animals ingeniously twisted‡.

Their curiosity seems to lie perfectly dormant: few of them expressed the least desire or inclination to see or examine things with which they were unacquainted; and which would have been beheld with astonishment by a curious observer. If they could procure what they required, they were perfectly satisfied, regarding all other matters with indifference. They are, however, sus-

---

andard, being usually plump, but not muscular; though e figures of many of the older people manifest a tendency leanness. Most of the natives have round full visages, hich are sometimes broad, with high prominent cheeks; bove which the face seems fallen in quite across between e temples. Wide nostrils accompany the nose, which attens at its base, and has a roundedpoint. The forehead low, the eyes small and black; the mouth round, the ps thick; the teeth tolerablyregular, but not remarkable r their whiteness.

* It is a mistaken notion, though mentioned by eminent riters, that American Indians have no beards. See *Carver's Travels*, 224, 225; and *Marsden's History of Sumatra*, 39, 40.

† Their colour cannot easily be ascertained, their bodies re so completely incrusted with paint and nastiness; but hen that task has been perfectly performed, their skin is id to be little inferior, in whiteness, to that of the Europeans. Some of them, when young, are found agreeable; at early period being attended with a peculiar degree of imation; but, after a certain age, a sameness characterizes very countenance, dullness and want of expression being isible in every visage. The women resemble the men in ze, colour, and form, and are without any natural feminine elicacies to distinguish them. Not a person was to be ound among all the females who were in their prime, who id the least pretensions to comeliness or beauty.

‡ Such are their common dresses and ornaments; but when going to war they exhibit themselves in their skins of wolves or bears, tied on like their other garments, bordered with fur, and curiously ornamented with figures. A common head-dress, on these occasions, is a quantity of withe, wrapped about the head, with large feathers.

Thus equipped. they have a truly savage appearance, which is much heightened by their monstrous decorations. They consist of an infinite variety of wooden masks, applied to the face, forehead, or upper part of the head. Sometimes they fix large pieces of carved work upon their heads, projecting to a considerable distance.

Though these people cannot be viewed without a kind of horror, when they are thus exhibited, it must be acknowledged that, when divested of these strange decorations, they have no appearance of ferocity in their countenance; but rather seem to be of a quiet phlegmatic disposition, deficient in animation and vivacity to render themselves agreeable in society.

Their orations, on all public occasions, consist of short sentences, emphatically repeated in one tone of voice, accompanied with a single gesture at every sentence. As they exhibit human skulls and bones to sale, it seems reasonable to suppose that they treat their enemies with great brutality; but as this circumstance rather marks a general agreement of character among almost every uncivilized tribe, they are not to be reproached with any charge of peculiar inhumanity.

ceptible of the tender passion, which is evident from their delighting in music, and that too of the pathetic kind Besides their concerts, sonnets were often sung by single performers, keeping time by striking the hand against the thigh. Though solemnity was predominant in their music, their performances are not destitute of sprightliness, gaiety, pleasantry, and humour.

A rattle, and a whistle, are the only musical instruments which were seen among them by our Europeans. Their rattles are generally formed in the shape of a bird, having small pebbles in the belly, and the tail is the handle. They have another sort, not very different from a child's rattle in England.

Some of them gave strong indications of a pro pensity to knavery, and under the pretence o traflicing with our Europeans, took away the goods without making any return. But the general conduct was very different; and they ha abundant reason to think favourably of their in tegrity. It must be admitted, however, tha their eagerness to possess iron, brass, or any kin of metal, was so great, that when an opportunit presented itself, few of them could avoid steali it. But the natives of the South-Sea islands de lighted in stealing any thing, whether it w particularly useful to them or not, and seem t have been solely actuated by a thievish dispo sition.

SECTION XXIV.

Population of Nootka Sound—Habitations—Inside Furniture—Filthiness—Wooden Images—Em ployments of the Men—Indolence of the Young Men—Women, and their Employments—Food— Bows, Arrows, Slings, and other Weapons—Manufactures of Woollen, &c.—Execution in Carvin and Painting—Implements in Hunting and Fishing—Iron Tools—Method of procuring them, an other Metals—Language.

THE inhabited parts of the Sound, seem wholly to consist of the two villages already mentioned; the population of which might be pretty accurately ascertained from the number of the canoes that visited the ships, the second day after their arrival. They consisted of about one hundred, and contained, upon an average, at least five persons each; but as there were very few women, old men, youths, or children then among them, it may be reasonably supposed, that the number of the inhabitants of the two villages was at least four times the number of their visitors, and consequently two thousand in the whole.

The village situated at the entrance of the Sound, stands on the side of an ascent extending from the beach to the wood. The houses consist of three rows, placed at equal distances behind each other; and there are a few straggling houses at each end. But though the general disposition has some appearance of regularity, there is none in the respective houses. These erection consist of long broad planks, resting on th edges of each other, and tied with withes of pine bark. They have slender posts on the outside at considerable distances from each other, t which they are also fastened; and larger pos within are placed aslant. The sides and ends o these dwellings are seven or eight feet in height and the back part is somewhat higher. Th planks which compose the roof are moveabl and may either be put close to exclude the rai or separated to admit the light in fine weather.

Upon the whole, however, they are mos miserable habitations, without any regular doors being entered only by a hole, which the unequa length of the planks has accidentally made. The have other holes in the sides of the house, ir regularly disposed, serving for windows to loo out at; the shape or size of which is not in th least attended to*

* There are some appearances of separations on each side of these ranges, for the accommodation of different persons or families. On the sides of each of these parts, a little bench is displayed, about five or six inches higher than the rest of the floor, covered with mats, for the family to sit and sleep on. The fire-place, without hearth or chimney, is in the middle of the floor. One house was seen nearly separated from the rest by a close partition; it was indeed the most regular building of the whole: it had fou of these benches, each holding a single family at the corner but it was not separated by boards, the middle of the hous seeming to be common to all the inhabitants.

The principal furniture of their houses is composed of chests and boxes of various sizes, piled upon each other at the sides or ends of the house, in which are deposited their garments, skins, masks, and other valuable articles. These boxes are frequently painted black, studded with the teeth of animals, or wretchedly carved with figures of birds, &c. &c. as decorations. They have also square and oblong pails; wooden cups, bowls, and troughs; bags of mattings, baskets of twigs, &c.

Their implements for fishing, and other things, are hung up, or scattered about the house, without the least order, presenting a complete scene of confusion; except their sleeping benches, which have nothing on them but the mats. But their irregularity and confusion is far exceeded by their nastiness and filth. They dry and gut their fish within doors, which, with the bones and fragments thrown upon the ground at meals, occasions several heaps of filth which they shew no great alacrity in removing*.

The men were chiefly employed in fishing, and killing animals for the sustenance of their families; and the women appeared to be occupied in domestic duties, manufacturing their garments, and in curing their sardines. The women also go in the small canoes to collect muscles, and other shell-fish; and seem very dexterous and expert in the management of the paddle†.

The porpoise is very common food among them; the flesh and rind of which they cut in large pieces which they dry and eat. From these, and other sea animals, they also procure oil in great abundance, which they mix with other food as sauce, and sometimes sip it alone, with a kind of scoop made of horn. Their land-animals, at this time, appeared to be scarce, no flesh belonging to any of them having been observed; except a few gulls, and some other birds, which they shoot with their arrows.

Their winter vegetables are the Canadian pine-branches, and sea-grass; but, as the spring advances, others successively come in season. The most common are two sorts of liliaceous roots, of a mild sweetish taste, which are mucilaginous and eaten raw. The next is a root called *ahcita*, and has a taste resembling liquorice. They have doubtless many others, which our adventurers did not see: for though there is not the least appearance of cultivation, there are plenty of alder, gooseberry, and currant bushes. The natives disliked any thing of the acrid kind, and would not touch either leek or garlic. They seemed, indeed, not to relish any of the European food; they particularly rejected their spirituous liquors, as something unnatural and disgusting‡.

They have bows, arrows, spears, slings, and short truncheons made of bone; and a small pick-axe resembling the American tomahawk. Some

* But amidst all this filth and confusion, they are fond of decorating their houses with images; which are formed of the trunks of trees, placed at the upper end of the apartment, with something like a face rudely carved on the front, and the hands and arms upon the sides: these figures, when painted by the natives, make a most ridiculous appearance, and are generally called *Klumma*. But the names of two particular ones, standing near each other, were *Natchkoa* and *Matseeta*. A sort of curtain, made of mat, usually hung before them, which the natives were not always willing to remove; and when they did consent to unveil them, they adopted mysterious expressions. It seems probable that they sometimes make offerings to them; for if our adventurers rightly comprehended their signs, they requested them to give something to these images, when the mats were taken from before them.

Mr. Webber, in drawing a view of the inside of a Nootka house, wherein these figures were displayed, was hindered from proceeding by one of the inhabitants. Supposing a bribe would have a good effect, Mr. Webber offered him a button from his coat, which being metal, operated as it was intended, and he was permitted to proceed. But, soon after he had made a beginning, he was again interrupted by the same fellow, who held a mat before the figures. Another button was offered, and received, when he was once more suffered to proceed. The same practice was successively renewed and persevered in till Mr. Webber had parted with every button, when he was permitted to proceed without any other obstruction or interruption.

† The young men are remarkably indolent; lounging about in scattered companies, basking themselves in the sun, or wallowing like so many hogs upon the beach, without any kind of covering. The women, however, behaved with great propriety, and were always decently cloathed; justly meriting every commendation for a modest bashfulness, so becoming to their sex.

The inhabitants rely principally upon the sea for their food, as it furnishes them with fish and sea-animals. The chief of the first are herrings, sardines, two species of bream, and some small cod. The herrings and sardines serve for fresh food in their season, as well as to be dried and smoaked as stores. The herrings also afford them another grand resource for food; which is a vast quantity of roe, prepared in an extraordinary manner. It is strewed upon small branches of the Canadian pine; and it is also prepared upon a long sea-grass, found in great plenty upon the rocks under water. This *caviare* is preserved in baskets of mat, and used occasionally, after being dipped in water. The large muscle, which is an important article of their food, is found in great abundance in the Sound, and the smaller shell-fish contribute to increase the general stock.

‡ Their manner of eating accords with the filthiness of their

Some of the arrows are pointed with iron, and others with indented bone: the spear has usually a long point made of bone. The tomahawk is a stone, seven or eight inches in length; one end terminating in a point, and the other fixed into a handle. They have another weapon made of stone, called a seeaik, about ten or eleven inches long, with a square point.

They are more ingenious in their manufactures and mechanic arts than could be expected, from the little progress they had made in civilization. The flaxen and woollen garments engage their principal attention, as being the most material under the class of manufactures. The former are fabricated from the bark of a pine-tree, beat into a mass resembling hemp. Their woollen cloth, that has much the appearance of being woven, is of various qualities; some of which is very excellent; some resembling the coarsest European blankets, and others not much inferior to their finer sort, and considerably softer and warmer. The wool, of which they are manufactured, appears to be produced by different animals; particularly the fox, and brown lynx: the ornamental figures introduced into these garments, are disposed with great taste, and are generally of a different colour, being usually dyed of a deep brown or yellow.

Their fondness for carving on wooden articles, corresponds with their taste in working figures upon their clothes. Every thing contains a representation of some animal upon it; but the most general figure is that of the human face. That these people have a strong propensity to works of this sort, is evident from a variety of particulars. Representations of human figures, beasts, birds, fish, canoes, &c. were found among them in very great abundance.

Though the structure of their canoes is simple, they seem well calculated for every useful purpose. They are very light, and, from their great breadth and flatness, swim firmly, without an out-rigger, of which they are all destitute. Their paddles resemble a large leaf in shape, being pointed at the bottom, broad in the middle, and gradually becoming narrower in the shaft; the whole length hardly exceeding five feet. Constant practice has taught them greater dexterity in the management of these paddles; but they never make use of any sails.

For fishing and hunting, their instruments are ingeniously contrived and executed. They consist of nets, hooks and lines, harpoons, gigs, and an instrument resembling an oar. Sometimes the natives decoy animals, by disguising themselves with a skin, and running upon their hands and knees, making an appropriate noise. On these occasions, they have masks, carved heads, or dried heads of different animals.

Every thing calculated to answer the purposes of a large or small rope, is formed from the thongs of skins, the sinews of animals, or from the flaxen substance, of which they manufacture their mantles.

Their implements are principally formed of iron: our adventurers saw but one chissel that was not formed of that metal, and that was only of bone. The knife and the chissel are the principal forms that iron assumes among them: the latter consists of a long flat piece, fixed in a wooden handle. A stone is their mallet, and a bit of fish-skin their usual polisher. Some of their knives are large, with crooked blades, the edge being on the back or convex part*.

From their general use of iron it is probably furnished from some constant source, in the way of

their houses and persons; for the platters and troughs which contain their provision, seem never to have been washed since their original formation. What is solid and tough, they tear to pieces with their hands and teeth; for, though their knives are employed in cutting off the larger portions, they know not how to subdivide them properly into mouthfuls. So inattentive are they to every idea of cleanliness, that when they take out the roots from the ground, they never attempt to shake off the soil which naturally adheres to them.

* Iron, among the natives, has obtained the name of *seekemaile*; which appellation they have also conferred on tin, and other white metals. Though our adventurers saw several articles of European manufacture, or such as appeared to be derived from some civilized nation, as brass and iron, it is not certain that they were received immediately from these nations: for our navigators never could obtain any information whether these people had ever seen any ships, like theirs before, or whether they had ever engaged in commerce with such people. Many circumstances tend to corroborate this fact: on the arrival of the Europeans, they earnestly enquired if they meant to settle among them, and whether they visited them on friendly terms: assuring them, at the same time, that they freely gave them wood and water, from motives of humanity and friendship.

Hence it sufficiently appears that they considered themselves as the only proprietors of the place, and apprehended no superiority: for it would have been an unnatural enquiry, if any ships had been there before, and had supplied themselves

of traffic; and they have doubtless been long supplied with it; for they use their tools with that dexterity which is acquired by a series of attentive practice. It is no unreasonable conjecture, that they trade for their iron with other Indian tribes, who may have some communication with European settlements upon that continent, or receive it through several intermediate nations. Their brass and copper is probably obtained by the same means. If such articles are not used by our traders to Hudson's Bay and Canada, they may have been introduced at Nootka from Mexico, whence the two table-spoons were perhaps originally derived.

Here are a sort of chiefs, distinguished by the title of Acweek, to which the other inhabitants are in some degree subordinate: but their authority seems to extend no farther than to their own respective families, who acknowledge him as their head. Being all elderly men, it is possible that this title may be hereditary.

The word *wakash* was frequently expressed by the people of Nootka: it seemed to announce approbation, applause, and friendship. Whenever they appeared to be delighted or rejoiced at any sight or occurrence, they exclaimed *wakish! wakish!*—As these people so essentially differ from those of the islands in the Pacific Ocean, in their manners, customs, and language, it cannot be supposed that their respective progenitors belonged to the same tribe, when they emigrated into those places, which are now peopled by their descendants.

SECTION XXV.

A Storm—The Resolution springs a Leak—Progress along the North American Coast—Cross Sound Beering's Bay—Cape Suckling—Kaye's Island—Anchor near Cape Hinchinbroke—Visited by the Natives—Their Partiality to Beads and Iron—Their Attempt to get Possession of a Boat—Attempt to plunder the Discovery—Progress up the Sound—Examination—Montague Island—Leave the Sound.

IT has been already stated, that the navigators put to sea on the 26th of April, with evident symptoms of an approaching storm; and they were not deceived. Hardly had they sailed out of the Sound, when the wind shifted from north-east, to south-east by east, and blew a strong gale, with squalls and rain, accompanied with a very dark sky. Apprehending that the wind might veer more to the south, and expose them to the danger of a lee-shore, they got the tacks on board, and made all the sail they could to the south-west. It fortunately happened that, early the next morning, they were entirely clear of the coast. Captain Clerke's ship being considerably astern, Captain Cook brought to till she came up, and then both vessels steered a north-westerly course. The wind blew with great violence; and a little before two in the afternoon, there was a perfect hurricane; the captain therefore thought it dangerous to run any longer before it, and brought the ships to, with their heads to the south. Thus situated the Resolution sprung a leak, in her starboard quarter; which was, at first alarming; but after the water was baled out, was kept under by means of one pump.

About five the next morning, the storm began to moderate: the weather now clearing up, they saw several leagues around them, and steered more to the north.

On the 1st of May they steered to the north-east, having a fresh breeze, with squalls, and showers of hail and rain. At seven in the evening they saw land, at the distance of about fourteen leagues. At four the next morning, they saw what appeared to be the northern point of an inlet, bearing east by south; and from it to the northward, there seemed to be several bays and harbours along the coast. Between eleven and

themselves with wood and water, and then departed; for they might then naturally suppose that our Europeans would have done the same. It must be admitted, however, that they manifested no symptoms of surprize at beholding the British ships; but this may reasonably be attributed to their natural indolence of disposition, and a total indifference respecting those events in which they are not materially concerned.

twelve they passed a cluster of little islands, near the continent, to the northward of the southern point of an extensive bay. An arm of this bay seemed to stretch towards the north, behind a lofty mountain between it and the sea. On this mountain Captain Cook bestowed the appellation of Mount Edgecumbe, and on the point of land projecting from it, Cape Edgecumbe.

Proceeding to the northward, they found the coast from Cape Edgecumbe trended to the north and north-east for six or seven leagues, and there formed a spacious bay: some islands appearing at the entrance of this bay, Captain Cook named it the Bay of Islands. On the 3d. at half an hour after four in the morning, Mount Edgecumbe bore south 54° east; a large inlet, north 50° east; and the most advanced point of land towards the north-west, lying under a peaked mountain, named Mount Fair Weather, bore north 32° west. They gave the inlet the name of Cross Sound, it having been first observed on the day so marked in the English Calendar. An elevated promontory appears at the south-eastern point of this Sound, which they denominated Cross-Cape. To the point under the peaked mountain, they gave the name of Cape-Fair-Weather; which, at noon, was distant about thirteen leagues.

Mount Fair-Weather is the highest of a chain or ridge of mountains, rising at the north-western entrance of Cross Sound, and extending towards the north-west, parallel with the coast. These mountains were covered with snow, except in a few places, where trees were discernible, seeming to rise out of the sea. About five in the afternoon, the top of a lofty mountain appeared above the horizon, which they supposed was the Mount Saint Elias of Commodore Beering. They saw, in the course of the day, several porpoises, whales, seals, and flocks of birds; among which were great numbers of gulls.

Having light winds, with occasional calms, they proceeded but slowly. On the 6th at Midday, the nearest land was distant about eight leagues. In a north-easterly direction, a bay was perceived, and an island near its southern point covered with wood. This is probably the place where Beering anchored. Southward of this bay (named Beering's Bay by Captain Cook) the ridge of mountains, already mentioned, is interrupted by a large plain. In the afternoon they sounded, and found a muddy bottom at the depth of seventy fathoms. At noon, the next day, they were distant about five leagues from the shore. On the 9th Mount St. Elias bore north 30° east, at the distance of nineteen leagues*.

A crow was seen flying about the wood; two or three white-headed eagles were also observed, besides another species equally large, which had a white breast. A number of fowls were likewise perceived sitting on the water or flying about, the principal of which were gulls, [illegible], burres, ducks, divers, and quebrantahuesses. There was also a single bird flying about, apparently of the gull kind, of a snowy white, except on the upper part of its wings, where some black is exhibited. Where their party landed, a fox came from the verge of a wood, saw them without much emotion, and walked leisurely away. His colour was a reddish yellow, and he was of a moderate size.

Captain Cook, together with those who accompanied him, returned on board in the afternoon, and steered for the south-west side of the island, which they got round by eight in the evening: they then stood for the westernmost land in sight. At the north-east end of Kaye's island, another of that denomination presented itself. Early the next morning, Kaye's [illegible] was still in view; and at noon the eastern point of a spacious inlet bore west north-west. The wind was now south-easterly, and they were menaced with a fog and a storm. The captain

* On the tenth, at about twelve, they were three leagues distant from the coast of the continent. To the westward was an island at the distance of six leagues. A point which Captain Cook named Cape Suckling, projects towards the north-eastern end of this island. The captain had some thoughts of repairing to this bay, but the wind being unfavourable, he relinquished his design, and bore up for the west end of the island. It being calm about ten o'clock, he embarked in a boat, and landed on the island, in order to observe what lay on the other side; but finding that the hills were at a greater distance than he expected, and that the way was woody and steep, he also gave up that idea. On an eminence near the shore, he left a bottle at the foot of a tree, containing a paper, whereon the names of their ships, and the date of their discovery were particularized: he also inclosed two silver pieces of English coin, value two pence each, which had been furnished him by Dr. Kaye, Dean of Lincoln, and, as a proof of his esteem for that gentleman, he distinguished the island by the name of Kaye's Island. It is about twelve leagues in length, but does not exceed one and a half in the breadth of any part of it. The vallies are filled with pine-trees, but they are not of extraordinary growth: among them were some currant and hawberry bushes.

was now desirous of getting into some place to stop a leak; he therefore steered for the inlet, which he had no sooner reached than the weather became so extremely foggy, that it was thought necessary to secure the ships somewhere till the sky should clear up. For this purpose they hauled close under Cape Hinchinbroke, and cast anchor before a small cove, in eight fathoms water, at the distance of two furlongs from the shore.

Soon after they had anchored, the seine was drawn in the cove, but without success, as it was torn. The fog gradually cleared away, and gave them a view of the neighbouring land: the cape was about one league distant; and the western point of the inlet, five leagues. The most westerly point they had in view on the north shore, was at the distance of about two leagues. Between this point, and the shore under which their ships now lay at anchor, is a bay, on the south-eastern side of which are several coves; and some rocky islands in the middle*.

The next morning, about ten, the wind becoming moderate, and the weather clearing up, they got up their anchors and made sail, in order to search for some convenient place where they might stop the leak; the situation they were in at that time being too much exposed for that purpose.

The Americans who paid their respects to our navigators the preceding day, came off again in the morning, in five or six canoes; but as they had deferred their visit till after they were under sail, they could not reach the ships, though they followed them for a considerable time. In the afternoon, about two, the unfavourable weather returned, with so thick a haze, that they could barely discern a little island, situated at the distance of about two miles from the neighbouring coast, forming a point of land, on the eastern side of which they discovered an excellent harbour. To this they plied, while the wind blew in hard squalls, accompanied with rain. Though, at some intervals, they could see land in every direction, the fog, in general, was so great, that they could only perceive the shores of the bay, for which they were now steering. About eight o'clock they were obliged, by the violence of the squalls, to cast anchor in thirteen fathoms water, before they had arrived at the intended spot: they thought themselves fortunate, however, in having the ships already secured, as the night was extremely tempestuous.

But even this turbulent weather did not deter the natives from paying them a visit: three of them came off in two canoes. These men were each in possession of a stick, of the length of about three feet, with the wings, or large feathers of birds, fastened to it. These were frequently held up to their view, considering them, perhaps, as tokens of peace and amity. The civility shewn to these three strangers, induced many others to visit them between one and two o'clock the following morning, in great and small canoes. Several of them courageously ventured on board the Resolution, but not till after some of the Europeans had condescended to step into their boats. Among those who came on board, was a middle-aged man, who was afterwards declared to be the chief. His dress consisted of a sea-otter skin, and such a cap on his head as is usually worn by the inhabtants of Nootka, ornamented with sky-blue glass beads.

Though these people were desirous of iron, they rejected small portions of it; requiring nothing less than pieces of nine or ten inches long at least, and of the breadth of three or four fingers. The chief evaded all solicitations to venture below the upper deck; and neither him nor his companions would continue long on board;

* Mr. Gore was sent in a boat to these islands, to endeavour to shoot some birds that might be salutary for food. On approaching them, about twenty natives made their appearance, in two large canoes; which induced him to return to the ships, and they followed him. Not choosing, however, to venture along-side, they kept at a little distance, shouting aloud, and alternately clasping and extending their arms. They then began to entertain the auditors with vocal music, by chanting a song. Feathers were strewed upon their heads, and a white garment was displayed by one of them; which was supposed to have been intended as a token of friendship or esteem. Another person, at the same time, stood up in the canoe entirely naked, and continued in that state of nudity for about a quarter of an hour, entirely motionless, with his arms extended like a cross.

Though the Europeans returned their signs of amity, and endeavoured by expressive gestures to prevail on them to come along-side, all their entreaties were ineffectual. After receiving some presents which were thrown to them, they retired towards the shore; intimating, by motions, that they would pay them another visit in the morning. Two of them, however, came off to them in the night, each in a small canoe, expecting perhaps to find them all asleep, that they might have a glorious opportunity of pilfering; but they thought proper to retire as soon as they perceived themselves discovered.

board; though their behaviour indicated so strong a propensity to thieving, that it was thought expedient to watch them narrowly. At length, when they had been several hours along-side the Resolution, they quitted her, and repaired to the Discovery. As soon as they had quitted the Resolution, Captain Cook dispatched a boat to sound the head of the bay. Soon afterwards all the Americans left the Discovery, and made their way towards the Captain's boat that was employed in sounding. The officer, who was in her, seeing them approach, returned to the ship, and all the canoes followed him. As soon as the crew of the boat had repaired on board, leaving two of their number in her by way of guard, several of the natives stepped into her, some of whom presented their spears before the guard, while others loosened the rope which fastened her to the ship, and the rest were so outrageously daring as to attempt to tow her away. But when they perceived that the Europeans were preparing to oppose them, they prudently let her go, and, with apparent unconcern, made signs to persuade them to lay down their arms*.

From this circumstance it may reasonably be inferred, that these people are unacquainted with fire-arms; for had they known any thing of their effect, they would not have ventured to carry off a boat from under a ship's guns, in the face of more than a hundred men; for the people of the Resolution were actually looking on, at the very instant of their making the attempt.

On the 16th, towards the evening, the weather cleared up, and our navigators found themselves encompassed with land. Their station was on the eastern side of the sound, in a place known by the appellation of Snug Corner Bay. Captain Cook, with some of his officers, went to survey the head of it, and found it was sheltered from all winds, and had a muddy bottom at the depth of from three to seven fathoms. The summits of the hills in the neighbourhood were covered with wood; but those at a greater distance in the country, had the appearance of naked rocks involved in snow.

The leak of the Resolution being at length stopped, our navigators weighed anchor on the 17th, at four in the morning, and steered a north-west course. Soon after they had made sail, the Americans paid them another visit, seeming with a view further to gratify their curiosity, for they did not attempt to traffic with them.

SECTION XXVI.

Extent of Prince William's Sound—Description of its Inhabitants—Their Dress—Remarkable Incision in the Under Lip—Variety of Ornaments—Canoes—Weapons—Armour—Domestic Utensils—Their manual Occupations—Food—Language—Animals—Conjectures on the procuring Beads and Iron.

THE inlet which our navigators had now quitted, had been distinguished by Captain Cook with the name of Prince William's Sound. It occupies about a degree and a half of latitude, and two degrees of longitude, exclusive of the branches; with the extent of which our Europeans profess to be unacquainted. The natives were, in general, of a middling stature, though many of them were below it. They were square, and short-necked, with broad flattish visages. Their heads were very large and disproportionate to their bodies: their teeth tolerably white, and regular; their noses had full round points, turned up at the tip; and their eyes seemed too small to be proportioned to their faces. Their hair was black, strong, and straight. Their beards are frequently thin, and deficient; but those of the elderly men are large and thick.

Great variety is, however, observable in the

* This attempt, though a bold one, was hardly equal to what they meditated on board Captain Clerke's ship. Several of the Americans went on board, without the least ceremony, and drawing their knives, made signs to the officer, and the other people upon deck, to keep off, and began to search for plunder. They took the rudder of one of their boats, which they threw overboard to those their party in the canoes. But, by this time, the ship's crew had taken the alarm, and many of them, armed with cutlasses, came upon deck. Perceiving this to be the case the plunderers sneaked off into their canoes.

feature

SNUG CORNER COVE *in* PRINCE WILLIAM'S SOUND.

features: very
some, though
dicate frankn
Some of them
reserved. The
are agreeable,
be distinguish
superior delica
plexion of son
the children, i
of red*.

A few of th
kind of skin
their thighs;
their hands, fo
paws. Those
heads, have hi
times fabricate
straw.

The hair of
forehead and
permitted to
lock of it on
behind; a pra
land, though
of both the me
holes, wherein
beads, &c. E
perforated, thr
the quill-feath
But the mo
some of the nat

* The men, wom
ed in the same ma
close frock, or r
knees, but general
upper part is ma
head, and it has
frocks are formed
side being generall
ort of cape or c
hood. In rainy w
skilfully made fro
arge animal. T
mposed of skin
Greenland, as des
Greenland, I. 136
† Many beads
ale blue colour,
caps, or attached
wear bracelets of
of a cylindrical fo
mber. They are
pent, that they fi
hem, in particul

features: very few of them can be deemed handsome, though their countenances usually indicate frankness, vivacity, and good nature. Some of them nevertheless appear sullen and reserved. The faces of several of the women are agreeable, and many of the young ones may be distinguished from the other sex, by the superior delicacy of their features: the complexion of some of the females, as well as of the children, is white, without the least mixture of red*.

A few of them cover their legs or feet with a kind of skin stockings, reaching half way up their thighs; and most of them have mittens for their hands, formed from the skins of a bear's paws. Those who wear any covering on their heads, have high truncated conical caps, sometimes fabricated of wood, and sometimes of straw.

The hair of the men is cropped round the forehead and neck, but that of the females is permitted to grow long: many of them tie a lock of it on the crown, while a few club it behind; a practice once countenanced in England, though now upon the decline. The ears of both the men and women are perforated with holes, wherein they suspend small bunches of beads, &c. Even the *septum* of the nose is also perforated, through which they frequently thrust the quill-feathers of birds, or other ornaments. But the most ridiculous fashion, adopted by some of the natives of both sexes, is their having the under-lip cut quite through lengthwise, rather below the protuberant part. They fix in this artificial mouth, a flat narrow ornament, made out of a shell or bone. Some of them only perforate the lower lip into separate holes; on which occasion the ornament consists of distinct shelly studs †.

The men occasionally paint their faces red, or blue; but not in a regular manner. The women puncture or stain the chin with black, so as to come to a point on each of their cheeks; a practice in vogue among the Greenland females. Upon the whole, it may with propriety be said, that no savages ever took more pains than these do to ornament or disfigure their persons.

Their weapons and implements for hunting and fishing, greatly resemble those used by the Greenlanders and Esquimaux. Some of their spears are headed with iron; but their arrows are generally pointed with bone. For defensive armour they have a jacket, or coat of mail, formed of lathe, connected with sinews, which render it flexible, though so close as not to admit a dart or arrow ‡.

Among their tools, they have a sort of stone adze: they have also plenty of iron knives, some of which are curved, others straight, and some very small ones, fixed in longish handles, with the blades bent upwards. They have likewise knives, shaped like a dagger, with a ridge towards the middle, which are worn in sheaths round their necks, under their frock. What-

* The men, women, and children of this Sound are clothed in the same manner. Their common dress is a sort of close frock, or robe, sometimes extending only to the knees, but generally down to the ancles. A hole in the upper part is made sufficiently capacious to receive the head, and it has sleeves terminating at the wrist. These frocks are formed of the skins of various animals, the hairy side being generally worn outwards. Some of them have a sort of cape or collar, and others have the addition of a hood. In rainy weather, they put over this another frock, skilfully made from the intestines of whales, or some other large animal. This frock, as well as the common one composed of skins, resembles the dress of the natives of Greenland, as described by Cranz. *See Crantz's Hist. of Greenland*, I. 136, 138.

† Many beads of European manufacture, chiefly of a pale blue colour, are also hung in their ears, or about their caps, or attached to their lip ornaments. They likewise wear bracelets of beads of a shelly substance, and others of a cylindrical form, composed of a substance resembling amber. They are, indeed, so remarkably fond of ornament, that they fix any thing in their perforated lip: one of them, in particular, appeared with two iron nails projecting like prongs from it; and another attempted to force a large brass button into it.

‡ Our navigators had not an opportunity of seeing any of the habitations of the natives, as none of them resided in the bay where the ships anchored, or where any of the Europeans landed. With respect to their domestic utensils, they brought in their canoes some round oval shallow wooden dishes; and others of a cylindrical form, much deeper. Others were of a more elegant form resembling an oval English butter-boat, but shallower, and without any handle. They also brought some wooden models of their canoes, chequered baskets so closely wrought as to hold water, and a number of small images, either of wood, or stuffed. These were covered with a piece of fur, and embellished with quill feathers, with hair fixed upon their heads. They have several instruments formed of two or three hoops, with a cross-bar fixed in the middle, by which they are held. A number of dried barnacle-shells are fixed upon these with threads, which, when shaken, produce a loud noise, and supply the place of a rattle. This is probably meant as a substitute for the rattling bird at King George's Sound.

ever they have is as well executed as if they were provided with a complete chest of tools; and the plaiting of sinews, sewing, and small work which is displayed on their little bags, may be said to vie with the neatest manufactures in the universe.

They were seen, by our navigators, eating the flesh of some quadruped, either roasted or broiled, and dried fish. Some of the former that was purchased, had the appearance of bear's flesh. They seemed to eat freely of a substance, which our navigators imagined was the interior part of the pine bark. Their drink is probably water, for, in their canoes, they brought snow in wooden vessels, which they swallowed by mouthfuls. Their manner of eating was decent and cleanly, carefully removing any dirt that they perceived adhering to their food. Their persons were also generally clean, and their utensils and boats kept in excellent order *.

They found the *halcyon*, or great king-fisher, which had fine bright colours; the white-headed eagle; the shag; and the humming-bird, which frequently flew about their ships, while they lay at anchor; though it can hardly be supposed to live here during the winter, which must be very severe. The water-fowl they saw were black sea-pyes, with red bills; geese, and a small sort of duck. Some of the people who went ashore, killed a snipe, a grouse, and some plovers. But though the water-fowl were numerous, they were so extremely shy as not to be approached within shot; a very inconsiderable supply of them as refreshment could be procured. A species of diver was observed here, which seems peculiar to this place: it is equal in size to a partridge, and has a short, black, compressed bill. Its head, and the upper part of its neck, are of a brownish black; the remainder of its body is of a deep brown, obscurely waved with black, except the under part, which is blackish, minutely varied with white. They also saw a small land-bird of the finch kind.

The fish brought by the natives for sale, were principally torsk and halibut; and some sculpins, with star-fish of a purplish hue, were caught about the ship. The only shell-fish they saw was a reddish crab, covered with very large spines.

Few vegetables of any kind were observed; the trees which grew about the sound, were the canadian and spruce pine, some of which were of a considerable size.

These people have probably received from some more civilized nation, the beads and iron found among them. Our navigators were doubtless the first Europeans with whom they had ever had any direct communication; and it only remains to be ascertained, from what quarter they had procured British manufactures by intermediate conveyance.

SECTION XXVII.

Proceed along the Coast—Cape Elizabeth—Cape St. Hermogenes—Beering's Chart defective—Point Banks—Barren Isles—Cape Douglas—Cape Bede—Mount St. Augustin—Search for a Passage up an Inlet—Proofs of its being a River—River Turnagain—Cook's River—The Ships return—Visits from the Natives—Lieutenant King lands and takes Possession of the Country—His Reception by the Natives—The Resolution strikes upon a Bank.

LEAVING Prince William's Sound on the 20th of May, on the following day they passed a lofty promontory, in the latitude of 59° 10′, and the longitude of 207° 45′. It has

* The language of these people appears difficult to be understood; occasioned perhaps by the various significations which their words may be calculated to bear; for they appeared frequently to make use of the same word on very different occasions.

The knowledge of the animals of this part of the American continent, is solely derived from the skins which were brought by the natives for sale; which were principally bears, sea-otters, seals, racoons, ermines, foxes. Besides these animals, here is also the white bear, of whose skins the natives brought several pieces, and some complete skins of cubs. But one of the most beautiful that fell under their observation, is that of a small animal about a foot in length; brown on the back, with a number of obscure whitish specks, the sides being of a bluish ash-colour, with few of these specks. The tail is about a third part of the length of the body, and has whitish hair. This animal appears to be the same with that which Stæhlin, in his New Northern Archipelago, calls the spotted field mouse.

een discovered on Princess Elizabeth's birth-
ay, Captain Cook honoured it with the name
f Cape Elizabeth. Seeing no land beyond it,
ur navigators flattered themselves that it was
he western extremity of the continent; but they
oon perceived their mistake, fresh land appear-
g in sight, bearing west-south-west. The
ind increasing to a strong gale, forced them to
considerable distance from the coast: on the
2nd, in the afternoon, the gale abated, and they
ood for Cape Elizabeth; which, at noon the
ext day, bore west, distant ten leagues.

They stood to the southward till the next day
noon, when they were about three leagues
rom the coast. In this situation it formed a
oint, that bore north-north-west. More land
as seen, extending to the southward; on which
as observed a ridge of mountains, with summits
overed with snow, behind the first land, which
ey supposed to be an island, there appearing
n it only a small quantity of snow. By what
aptain Cook could gather from Beering's voy-
ge and chart, he supposed it to be what he
alled Cape St. Hermogenes: but the account
f that voyage and chart is so extremely in-
ccurate, that it is almost impossible to discover
ny one place, which that navigator either saw
r touched at. The Captain indeed was not
ertain, that the bay which he had named after
eering, was the place where he had anchored.

By variable light airs and calms, they were
etained off the Cape till two in the morning of
he 25th, when a breeze springing up, they
teered along the coast, and perceived that the
nd of Cape St. Hermogenes was an island,
bout six leagues in circuit, separated from the
oast by a channel of one league in breadth.
bout noon St. Hermogenes bore south-east; the
nd to the north-west extending from south
alf west to near west. In the last direction, it
erminated in a low point, named *Point Banks*.
The ship was then in the latitude of 58° 41′,
nd in the longitude of 207° 44′. Thus situated,
he land was in sight, bearing north-west, which
they supposed connected Cape Elizabeth with this south-west land. Approaching it, they saw it was a groupe of high lands and rocks, and unconnected with any other land. From the inclemency of their appearance they were denominated the *Barren Isles;* being situated in the latitude of 59°, three leagues from Cape Elizabeth, and five from *Point Banks*.

In the evening they perceived a very lofty promontory, whose elevated summit appeared above the clouds, forming two extremely high mountains. The Captain named this promontory Cape Douglas, in honour of his friend Dr. Douglas, then canon of Windsor. The coast formed a large deep bay, between this point and Cape Douglas: some smoke being then observed upon Point Banks, it obtained the name of *Smokey Bay*. On the 26th more land was perceived, extending from Cape Douglas to the north: it consisted of a chain of very lofty mountains; the most conspicuous of which obtained the name of *Mount St. Augustin*.

It was then imagined, that the land to the north of Cape Douglas, consisted of a groupe of islands, separated by so many channels. Having a fresh gale at north-north-east, they stood to the north-west till eight o'clock, when they were fully convinced, that what they had supposed to be islands, were summits of mountains, connected by the lower land. This land was completely covered with snow, from the tops of the mountains to the sea-beach, and had, in other respects, the appearance of a great continent*.

In the morning of the 28th, they had so little wind that the ship drove to the southward; and, in order to stop her, they dropped a hedge-anchor with an eight inch hawser; but, in bringing the ship up, they lost both that and the anchor. They brought the ship up, however, with one of the bowers, and spent a great part of the day in sweeping for them, but without effect. They were in the latitude of 59° 51′; the low land extended from north-east to south-

* Mount St. Augustin now bore north-west, about three leagues distant. It is of an amazing height, and of a conical figure; but whether it is an island, or part of the continent, is not at present ascertained. Considering that nothing was to be done to the west, they stood over to Cape Elizabeth, under which they fetched at about five in the morning. Between Cape Elizabeth, and a promontory named *Cape Bede*, a bay presents itself, in which there are two snug harbours. The coast from Cape Bede trended north-east by east, with a chain of mountains inland, in the same direction. On the coast the land was woody: but they had the mortification of perceiving low land in the middle of the inlet, extending from north-north-east, to north-east by east; but supposing it to be an island, they were not much discouraged.

east,

east, the nearest part distant two leagues. The land on the western shore was distant seven leagues. A strong tide set to the southward out of the inlet. At ten o'clock it was low water: great quantities of sea-weed, and some drift wood were taken out with the tide.

Having a calm the whole day, they moved with a light breeze, at east, at eight in the evening, and stood to the north up the inlet. Two columns of smoke were visible on the eastern shore, which convinced them that inhabitants were near. They weighed at one in the afternoon, and plied up under double reefed topsails, having a strong gale at north-east.

Being anchored in nineteen fathoms water on the 30th of May, two canoes, with a man in each, came off to the ship about noon, nearly from that part where smoke had been observed. They found it troublesome to paddle across the strong tide, and they hesitated, a short time, before they ventured to approach our navigators. One of them talked very fluently, but to no purpose, for not a syllable he said was understood by the persons he addressed. While he continued talking, he pointed frequently to the shore, which the Europeans construed to be an invitation for them to go thither. Captain Cook, by way of present, conveyed a few trifles to them from the quarter gallery.

In dress, as well as in person, these people strongly resembled those which our navigators had seen in Prince William's Sound: their canoes were also constructed in the same manner. One of the visitors appeared to have no beard, and his face was painted of a jet black; the other, who was older, was not painted, but he had a considerable beard, and a countenance like the common sort of the people in the Sound. Smoke was this day observed on the flat western shore; whence it was conjectured that these lower spots only are inhabited.

As they weighed when the flood came, the canoes quitted them. In the evening, about eight, they anchored under a point of land, bearing north-east, distant about three leagues, and lay there during the ebb. Till they arrived there the water was equally salt, both at high and low water; but now the marks of a river evidently displayed themselves. The water taken at the ebb, was much fresher than any they had tasted; whence they concluded that they were in a large river, and not a strait which communicated with the northern seas. But, wishing to have stronger proofs, they weighed with the flood on the morning of the 31st, and drove up with the tide, having but little wind.

They were attended, about eight o'clock, by several of the natives, in one large canoe, and several small ones. The small canoes had only one person on board each; and some of the paddles had a blade at each end, like those of the Esquimaux. Men, women, and children were comprised in the large canoe. At some distance from the ship, they displayed, on a long pole, a kind of leathern frock, which was supposed to amount to a declaration of their amicable intentions. This frock was even conveyed into the ship, as an acknowledgment for favours which the captain had indulged them with.

Our navigators bartered with them for some of their fur-dresses, made of the skins of animals, particularly those of sea-otters, hares, and martins; they also received some of their darts, and a supply of salmon and halibut. In exchange for these, were given some old clothes, beads, and pieces of iron. Their language appears to be nearly the same as that used in Prince William's Sound: the words *ooneka*, *keeta*, and *naema*, and others which were frequently used in Prince William's Sound, were also often used by this new tribe*.

No hopes of finding a passage were any longer

* From a variety of circumstances, our navigators were convinced that they were in a river. At the lowest of the ebb, the water at and near the surface was fresh, though retaining a considerable degree of saltness, if taken above a foot below it: other proofs were thick muddy water, low shores, trees, and rubbish of various kinds, floating to and fro with the tide. In the afternoon they received a visit from some more of the natives, who carried on an extensive traffic with the Europeans, without attempting to be guilty of the least dishonest action.

At two in the morning of the 1st of June, the master, who had been dispatched by Captain Cook to survey the inlet, returned, informing our navigators that he found the inlet, or river contracted to about one league in breadth, and that it took a narrow course through low land on each side. He advanced three leagues through this narrow part, which he found from twenty to seventeen fathoms deep. When the stream ran down, the water was fresh; but it gradually became brackish when it ran up, and very much so towards high water. He went ashore upon an island, between this branch and that to the east, and saw several currant bushes, and many sorts of fruit that were unknown to him.

entertained;

tertained; but as the ebb was spent, and they ould not return against the tide, they took the vantage of the latter, to get a closer view of e eastern branch, to know whether the low land the east, was an island, or not. They there- re weighed, with the first of the flood, and od over for the eastern shore. At eight a eeze sprung up in an opposite direction to eir course, so that they despaired of reaching entrance of the river. Captain Cook, how- er, dispatched two boats, under the command Lieutenant King, to make such observations might enable them to form a judgment of the ture of the river.

They anchored, about ten, in nine fathoms ater. The captain, seeing the strength of the de was so great that the boats could not make ead against it, made a signal for them to return efore they had proceeded half way to the trance of the river. The chief knowledge ob- ined by this tide's work, was, that all the low nd, which they had supposed to be an island, as one continued tract from the great river to e foot of the mountains, terminating at the south trance of this eastern branch, which Captain ook denominated the River *Turn-again*. The w land begins again on the north side of this ver, and extends from the foot of the mountains the banks of the Great River; forming, before e river Turn-again, a large bay, having from elve to five fathoms water.

The time employed in the discovery of this eat River* ought not to be regretted, if it ould hereafter prove useful. The captain had w the pleasure to reflect, that if this large river d not been thus examined, the speculative bricators of geography would have ventured assert, that it had a communication with the a to the north, or with Husdon's or Baffin's y to the east†.

On Mr. King's return, he informed Captain ook, that, when he approached the shore, he w about twenty of the natives with their arms tended; an attitude supposed to signify their icable disposition, and to shew they were with- out weapons. Seeing Mr. King, and his attendants land, armed with musquets, they were alarmed, and by expressive signs requested them to lay them down. The hint was instantly complied with, and Mr. King, with his party, were immediately permitted to approach them, when they appeared extremely sociable and cheerful. They had with them several dogs, and some pieces of fresh salmon. Mr. Law, surgeon of the Discovery, happening to be of the party, purchased one of the dogs of them, and instantly shot it dead. They seemed considerably surprised at this circumstance, and, not thinking themselves safe in such company, thought proper to walk away. It soon afterwards appeared, however, that they had concealed their spears, and other weapons, in the bushes behind them.

When it was high water they weighed anchor, and stood over to the west shore, where the Discovery anchored the next morning, on account of the return of the flood. They were soon after visited by several of the natives in canoes, who bartered their skins and garments, many of them returning perfectly naked. Among their skins, were great quantities of those of white rabbits, and red foxes, but only a few of those of otters. They gave iron the preference to every thing that was offered to them in exchange. The lip-ornaments were not so fashionable here, as at Prince William's Sound; but those which pass through the nose more frequent, and longer.

They weighed at half past ten, and plied down the river; when by the inattention of the man at the lead, the Resolution struck upon a bank almost in the middle of the river. They had twelve feet depth of water above the ship, at the lowest of the ebb, but the bank was dry in other parts.

About five in the morning of the 3d, the tide being finished, they cast anchor on the west shore; where they were visited by many of the natives, and their company was highly acceptable, as they brought with them a quantity of very fine salmon, which they exchanged for some of their trifles. The mountains were now free from clouds, and

* The captain having left a blank, Lord Sandwich very diciously caused it to be named *Cook's River*.

† Mr. King was again sent, in the afternoon, with orders om Captain Cook to land on the south-east side of the ver, where he was to display the flag; and, in his Majesty's me, take possession of the country and the river. He as also to bury a bottle in the earth, containing some English coin of 1772, and a paper on which was inscribed the names of their ships, and the date of their discovery. The ships in the mean time were got under sail, and the wind blew fresh. but a calm ensued, and they found it necessary to anchor in six fathoms water, the point where Mr. King landed bearing south, at the distance of two miles. It was therefore named *Point Possession*.

they perceived a volcano in one of those on the western side. It did not make a very striking appearance; emitting only a white smoke, without fire.

Before their departure from this place, they were again visited by some of the natives, in six canoes, from the eastern shore. For half an hour they remained at some little distance from the ships, gazing at our Europeans with a kind of silent surprise, but without speaking to them, or to each other. At length they courageously came along-side, and began to barter with our navigators; nor did they quit them till they had parted with their skins and salmon, which were the only articles they had been laden with.

All those who had been seen in this river, had a striking resemblance to those who inhabit Prince William's Sound, but differed very materially from those of Nootka; as well in their persons, as in their language. The points of their spears and knives are made of iron; though some of the former are also made of copper. Their spears resemble English spontoons, and their knives, which are usually kept in sheaths, are of a considerable length. The only valuable skins, on this west side of North America, are those of the sea-otter: the others are of a very inferior quality.

The tide is very considerable in this river: in the stream it is high water between two and three, on the days of the new and full moon, and the tide rises between three and four fathoms.

SECTION XXVIII.

Departure from Cook's River—Pass St. Hermogenes—Cape Barnabas—Two Headed Point—Trinity Island—Pinnacle Point—A curious Bird described—The Schumagin Islands—A Russian Letter brought on board—Conjectures concerning it—Rock Point—Halibut Island—A Volcano—Providential Escape—Ooonalashka—Traffic with the Natives there—Another Russian Letter.

THE ebb tide making in favour of our navigators, they weighed, and, with a gentle breeze, plied down the river. The flood, however, obliged them to anchor again; but about one the next morning, they got under sail with a fresh breeze, passed the barren islands about eight, and at noon Cape St. Hermogenes bore south south-east, distant about eight leagues. They saw several columns of smoke on the continent, northward of the passage, meant, perhaps, as signals to attract them thither. About eight in the evening St. Hermogenes extended from south half-east to south-south east, distant three miles. Here they had forty fathoms water, and caught several halibut with hooks and lines.

The 9th, 10th, and 11th, they had continual misty weather, with some rain, and seldom had a sight of the coast. In the morning of the 12th, the fog clearing up, they saw land about twelve leagues distant, bearing west. At noon, the next day, they were within three miles of it; an elevated point, named *Cape Barnabas*, bore north-north-east, at the distance of about ten miles. They could not see the north-east extreme for the haze, but the point to the south-west had an elevated summit, which terminated in two round hills, and was therefore named *Two Headed Point*.

On the 14th, at noon, they were in the latitude of 56° 49′. Some land, which had been perceived before, was now discovered to be an island, and it obtained the name of Trinity Island. Its greatest extent, in the direction of east and west, is about six leagues*.

They ran all night with a gentle breeze at north-east,

* On the 19th, the Discovery, which was two miles astern, fired three guns, and brought to, making a signal to speak. Captain Cook was exceedingly alarmed at this circumstance; for, as no apparent danger had been observed in the channel, he was apprehensive that the Discovery had sprung a leak, or met with some serious accident. A boat was dispatched to her, which immediately returned with Captain Clerke, who informed Captain Cook that some natives, in three or four canoes, having followed the ship for a considerable time, at last got under his stern; one of whom made several significant signs, having his cap off and bowing in the European manner. A rope was then extended from the ship to this stranger, to which he fastened a thin wooden box, and after a series of gesticulations, the canoes left the Discovery.

When the canoes had departed, the box was opened, in which

east; and the next morning some breakers were seen within them, distant about two miles; others were soon after seen a-head; and they were innumerable on their larboard bow, as well as between them and the land: by holding a south course they fortunately cleared them. These breakers were occasioned by rocks, many of which were above water; they extend seven leagues from land, and are very dangerous. They got on their outside about noon, when their latitude was 54° 44′, and their longitude 198°. The nearest land was an elevated bluff point, named *Rock Point;* it bore north about eight leagues distant; and a round hill, called *Halibut Head,* bore south-west, distant about thirteen leagues.

Halibut Island, in which Halibut Head is situated, is about seven leagues in circumference, and, except the head, is very low and barren. Several small islands are near it, between which and the main, there seems to be a passage, of the breadth of about three leagues. They were kept at such a distance from the continent, by the rocks and breakers, that they had a very imperfect view of the coast between Halibut Island and Rock Point. They could perceive the main land covered with snow, and particularly some elevated tops of hills. A *volcano* on the most south-westerly of these hills, threw up immense columns of black smoke. Its figure is a complete cone, and the Volcano is at the summit of it.

In the afternoon, having about three hours calm, the people caught upwards of a hundred halibuts, some of which weighed more than a hundred pounds. This afforded a very seasonable refreshment. In the height of their fishing, they were visited by one man, in a small canoe, who came from the large island: when he approached the ship, he uncovered his head and bowed†.

In the afternoon of the 24th, the weather became gloomy, and afterwards turned to a mist, the wind blowing fresh at east. They hauled the wind to the southward till day-break, and then proceeded on their course to the west. They derived but little advantage from day-light, as the weather would not permit them to discern objects at the distance of a hundred yards; but, the wind being moderate, they ventured to run. Soon after they were alarmed by the sound of breakers, at their larboard bow: they found twenty-eight fathoms water, and then twenty-five. They brought the ship to, and anchored in the last depth: Captain Cook ordered the Discovery, which was not far distant, to anchor also‡.

The wind blew fresh at south, in the night; but in the morning was more moderate, and the fog almost dispersed. They weighed at seven, and steered between two small islands. The breadth of the channel did not exceed a mile, and the wind failed before they could pass through it; they were therefore obliged to anchor. Land now presented itself in every direction. That to the south extended, in a ridge of mountains, to the south-west, which was afterwards found to be an island, named *Ooonalashka.*

Between this island and the land to the north, there appears to be a channel, in a north-west direction. On a point, which bore west from the ship, three quarters of a mile distant, they perceived several natives and their habitations. To this place they saw two whales towed in, which they supposed had just been killed. A

which was found a piece of paper, carefully folded up, whereon some writing was observed, which was supposed to be in the Russian language; and to this paper was prefixed the date of 1778. At first Captain Clerke supposed that some Russians had been shipwrecked here; and that, seeing our ships, these unfortunate persons were induced to acquaint them with their situation. But Captain Cook was of a different opinion: he rather thought the paper was intended to communicate information, from some Russian trader, who had lately been at these islands, to be delivered to any of his countrymen who should arrive; and that the natives, imagining them to be Russians, had brought off the note. He therefore made no farther enquiry into the matter, but made sail, and steered to the westward.

† That the Russians had some communication with these people, was evident from their acquired politeness, and the note already mentioned. They had now an additional proof of it, for the new visitor wore a pair of green cloth breeches, and a jacket of black cloth or stuff, under the frock of his own country. He had nothing to barter but a grey fox-skin, and some fishing implements: he had some liquid in a bladder, which our navigators supposed to be oil; for he opened it, drank a mouthful, and then closed it up again. His canoe was of the same construction as those they had seen before, but smaller: his features resembled those of the natives of Prince William's Sound, and he had not disfigured himself with any kind of paint: his lip had been obliquely perforated, but he had no ornament in it at that time.

‡ Some hours after, when the fog was a little dispersed, they saw the imminent danger they had escaped. They were three quarters of a mile from the north-east side of an island: two elevated rocks were about half a league from them, and from each other. There were also several breakers about them, and yet providence had, in the dark, safely conducted the ships between those rocks, which they should not have attempted to have done in a clear day.

few

few of the inhabitants came off, occasionally, to the ships, and engaged in a little traffic with the people, but never continued with them above a quarter of an hour at a time. They seemed indeed remarkably shy, though it clearly appeared that they were not unacquainted with vessels similar to those of our navigators. They had more address and politeness than they had ever observed among any other of the savage tribes.

At one in the afternoon, having a light breeze, and the tide of flood, they weighed and proceeded to the channel last mentioned; expecting, when they had passed through, to find the land trend away to the northward; or that they should discover a passage out to sea, to the west. For they did not suppose themselves to be in an inlet of the continent, but among islands; and they were right in their conjectures. In the evening the ebb made it necessary to anchor.

They weighed early the next morning, and were wafted up the passage by a light breeze. There was, however, a rapid tide in their favour, and the Resolution got through before the ebb made. The Discovery was not so fortunate for she was carried back, got into the race, and found a difficulty in getting clear of it. Being short of water, and expecting to be driven about in a rapid tide, they stood for a harbour on the south side of the passage, but were driven beyond it; and, that they might not be forced back through the passage, anchored near the southern shore in twenty-eight fathoms water. In this situation, they were visited by many of the natives in different canoes, who bartered some fishing implements for tobacco. A young man, among them, overset his canoe, and was caught hold of by one of our Europeans, but the canoe was taken up by another, and carried ashore. The youth was therefore obliged to come into the ship, where he was invited into the cabin, and cheerfully accepted the invitation. His upper garment resembled a shirt, made of the gut of a whale, or some other large sea animal. Under this, he had another of a similar form, made of the skins of birds with the feathers on, curiously sewed together; having the feathered side placed next his skin. His cap was ornamented with glass beads.

His clothes being wet, others were procured for him, with which he readily and expeditiously equipped himself. From the behaviour of this youth, and many of his associates, it evidently appeared that these people were no strangers to Europeans, or to their customs. Something in the ships, however, greatly excited their curiosity; for, such as had not canoes to bring them off, ascended the neighbouring hills to take a view of them.

At low water they towed the ship into the harbour, where they anchored in nine fathoms water, the Discovery arriving soon after. They had not long anchored, before a native brought another note on board, nearly similar to that which had been given to Captain Clerke. He delivered it to Captain Cook; but, being written in the Russian language, neither he, nor any one present, could read it. As it could not possibly be of any service to them, and might probably be of consequence to others, the captain returned it to the bearer, accompanied with several small presents; for which he expressed his acknowledgments as he retired, by several obsequious bows. On the 29th, they saw along the shore, a group of the natives of both sexes, partaking of a repast of raw fish. They were seated on the grass, and seemed highly gratified with their entertainment.

Our navigators were detained here by thick fogs, and a contrary wind, till the 2d of July; during which time they obtained some knowledge of the country, and of its inhabitants; the particulars of which will hereafter be related. The harbour, which is called *Samganoodha*, by the natives, is situated on the north side of Oonalashka, the latitude being 53° 55′, the longitude 193° 30′; and in the strait which separates this island from those to the north. It is a mile broad at the entrance, and runs in four miles south by west. It becomes narrower towards the head, the breadth there hardly exceeding a quarter of a mile. Good water may be procured here in abundance, but not a piece of wood is to be found.

CAPS *worn by the* NATIVES *of* OONALASHKA.

Cook

Deeves Sculp.

SECTION XXIX.

Proceed to the Northward—The Isles of Oonella and Acootan—Oonemak—Plenty of Cod taken—Bristol River—Round Island—Mr. Williamson lands at Cape Newenham—Bristol Bay—Shoal Water—The Ships obliged to return—Americans come off to the Ships—Their Behaviour—Death and Character of Mr. Anderson—Sledge Island—King's Island—Cape Prince of Wales—Anchor on the Asiatic Coast—Captain Cook lands at a Village—Interview with the Natives, the Tschutski—Their Weapons, Ornaments, and Dress—Habitations—Summer Huts—The Ships quit the Bay—Cross the Strait to the American Coast—Point Mulgrave—Prodigious Mass of Ice—Icy Cape—Sea-Horses killed for Food—Account of these Animals—Ships almost surrounded with Ice—Remarks on its Formation, &c.—Arrival on the Asiatic Coast.

ON the 2d of July they steered from Samganoodha, with a gentle breeze to the northward, and met with nothing to obstruct them in that course. For, on the one side, the Isle of Oonalaska trended south west; and, on the other, no land was visible more northerly than north-east; all which land was a continuation of the groupe of islands, they had fallen in with on the 25th of the preceding month. That before Samganoodha, is denominated Oonella, being about seven leagues in circumference. Another, lying to the north-eastward of it, named Acootan, is considerably larger, in which are lofty mountains covered with snow.

They made but little progress for several successive days, during which period nothing essential occurred; except that on the 4th they caught, with hook and line, a great number of excellent cod; and they were equally successful the 8th. Soon after a river presented itself, which appeared to be about a mile in breadth; the water was somewhat discoloured, as upon shoals, and took a meandering direction. It probably abounds with salmon, as many of those fish were seen leaping in the sea before the entrance. The mouth of this stream, which obtained the appellation of Bristol River, is situated in the longitude of 201° 55′ east, and in the latitude of 58° 27′ north.

In the morning of the 12th, the navigators steered a north-west course, and at ten saw the Continent. At mid-day, an elevated hill appeared in the direction of north north-west, nine or ten leagues distant. This was discovered to be an island, to which, on account of its figure, Captain Cook gave the name of Round Island: it is about seven miles distant from the Continent. On the 16th, at five in the morning, the fog clearing up, they found themselves nearer the shore than they expected. Here, between two points, the coast forms a bay, in many parts of which the land was hardly visible from the mast-head. About nine, Captain Cook dispatched Lieutenant Williamson, with orders to go ashore, and observe what direction the coast assumed beyond it, and what was the produce of the country, as it had but a steril aspect from the ships.

On his return, Mr. Williamson reported that he had landed on the point; and having ascended the most elevated hill, found that the remotest part of the coast in sight was almost in a northerly direction. He took possession of the country, in the name of his Britannic Majesty, and left on the hill a bottle, containing a paper, on which was inscribed the names of the ships, and their commanders, &c. The promontory, which he denominated Cape Newenham, is a rocky point of considerable elevation. Over it, or within it, two aspiring hills rise, one behind the other; of which the innermost is the highest. Mr. Williamson could not discern, in the country, a single tree or shrub: the hills were naked, but grass and plants of various kinds grew upon the lower grounds. He saw no other animal than a doe, with her fawn.

Nothing material occurred from the 16th to the 18th, when the depth of water suddenly decreasing to seven and five fathoms; they brought to, till a boat from each ship was sent a-head to sound, and then steered to the north-east. At noon, the water was deepened to seventeen fathoms. Before one o'clock, the boats a-head displayed the signal of shoal-water. They had, indeed, only two fathoms, and the ships were then in six fathoms water. Between five and six o'clock, the boats finding less and less water, Captain Cook made the signal to the

Discovery, which was then a-head, to cast anchor, and both ships soon came to. In bringing up the Resolution, her cable parted at the clinch, when they were obliged to make use of the other anchor. They rode in six fathoms water, over a bottom of sand, at the distance of five leagues from the continent. The longitude of their present situation, by lunar observations, was, 197° 45′ 48″ east, and the latitude 59° 37′ 30″ north. It formed a low point, and received the name of Shoal Ness.

On the morning of the 21st, they weighed anchor, with a gentle breeze at north north-west, and steered back to the south, having three boats a-head employed in sounding. But notwithstanding this precaution, they were at length under the necessity of anchoring, to avoid running upon a shoal that had only a depth of five feet. While they lay at anchor, twenty-seven Americans, each in a separate canoe, came off to the ships, which they approached with great caution, hallooing, and extending their arms, as they advanced, intimating their peaceable intentions. Some of them, at length, came near enough to receive a few trifles which were thrown to them. This encouragement induced the others to venture along-side, and a general traffic immediately commenced between the natives and the Europeans. They resembled the other savages of the coast, and wore in their lips and noses the same species of ornaments; but they were dirtier, and worse clad. They seemed perfectly unacquainted with any civilized nation, and were even ignorant of the use of tobacco. Not a foreign article appeared in their possession, unless a knife may come under that denomination. This was, indeed, nothing more than a piece of common iron, fitted in a wooden handle, so as to answer the purposes of a knife*.

They did not get off the shoals before the evening of the 22d: at day-break on the 23d they stood to the north-westward, the Discovery being ordered to go a-head. They had not proceeded more than two leagues, before their soundings decreased to six fathoms; they thought it prudent therefore to haul to the south, with a fresh easterly breeze, a course which soon brought them into eighteen fathoms water. About three leagues to the west of this situation, their soundings were twenty-eight fathoms. In the evening of the 25th, having but little wind, and a very thick fog, they let go their anchors in thirty fathoms. About six the next morning, the weather being clearer, they weighed, and with a gentle breeze steered to the northward, the water being about twenty eight fathoms. Proceeding in a westerly course, they discovered land on the 29th, bearing north-west by west, at the distance of six leagues. It was the south eastern extremity, and formed a perpendicular cliff of great height, whence it obtained the name of Point Upright, from Captain Cook. More land was perceived to the westward of this point; and, at a clear interval, another portion of high land might be descried, bearing west by south.

On the 30th, at four in the afternoon, Point Upright bore north-west by north, distant about six leagues. The wind becoming north-easterly, they first made a stretch of ten leagues towards the north-west; and then, as they saw no land in that direction, they stood back to the east for fourteen or fifteen leagues, and met with a great variety of drift wood. Their depth of water was from twenty-two to nineteen fathoms. Variable light winds, with showers, prevailed till the 3d of August †.

On the 5th, at ten in the morning, they ran down, and anchored between an island and the continent in seven fathoms water. Soon after they had cast anchor, Captain Cook, accom-

* The hair of most of them was shaved, or cut short off, a few locks only being left on one side, or behind. As a covering for their heads, they wore a hood of skins, and a bonnet apparently of wood. A part of the dress, which our navigators procured from them, was a kind of girdle, neatly made of skin, with trappings depending from it, and passing betwixt the thighs, so as to conceal the adjacent parts. Their canoes were covered with skins, like the others they had lately seen; but they were broader, and the hole for the conductor wider than any they had before seen.

† At four o'clock in the afternoon of that day, died Mr. Anderson, surgeon of the Resolution, after lingering under a consumption for upwards of twelve months. He was a sensible intelligent young man, and an entertaining companion; well-skilled in his own profession, and had acquired considerable knowledge in other branches of science. The reader of this narrative will be able to form an opinion of the eminent services rendered by this gentleman in the course of the voyage. Soon after he had resigned his breath, land was perceived to the westward at the distance of about twelve leagues. It was supposed to be an island, and to perpetuate the memory of the deceased, for whom Captain Cook had a particular esteem, he distinguished it by the name of Anderson's Island.

pani-

panied by Mr. King, with some other officers, landed upon the island. He hoped to have had from it a prospect of the coast and sea towards the west; but in that direction the fog was so thick, that the view was not more extensive than it was from the ships. It is about twelve miles in circumference. The surface of the ground principally consists of large loose stones, covered in many places with moss and vegetables: but not a tree or shrub was observed, either on the the island, or upon the neighbouring continent. Captain Cook saw several plovers, and other small birds; a fox was also seen. Some decayed huts were likewise observed in it, and a beaten path was very visible from one end to the other. Near the spot where our adventurers landed, they found a sledge, which induced Captain Cook to give it the name of Sledge Island It was ingeniously constructed like those which are used by the Russians in Kamtschatka, to convey them over the ice or snow. It was ten feet in length, twenty inches in breadth, and had a kind of rail-work on each side.

Perceiving that the whole was a continued coast, our navigators now tacked and steered for its north-western part, near which they anchored in seventeen fathoms. The weather was then very thick and rainy; but at four the next morning it was sufficiently clear to discern the neighbouring land. A lofty steep rock or island bore west by south; another to the northward of it, bore west by north. A lofty peaked hill, bore south-east by east.

The point of land, which Captain Cook named Cape Prince of Wales, is the western extreme of all America hitherto known. Our adventurers imagined they saw some people on the coast, and perhaps they were not mistaken, as some elevations having the appearance of stages, and others resembling huts were distinctly beheld on the same spot. On the 10th, at break of day, they resumed their western course for the land they had seen the preceding day. About seven o'clock it extended from south-west to north-east. Between the south-west extremity, and a point bearing west, at the distance of six miles, the coast forms a capacious bay, in which they dropped their anchors at ten in the forenoon, two miles from the northern shore, over a gravelly bottom.

As they were steering into this bay, they perceived on the north shore, a village, the inhabitants of which appeared exceedingly alarmed at the sight of their vessels; many of them being seen running up the country with burdens upon their shoulders. At this hamlet Captain Cook proposed to land, and proceeded towards it with three armed boats, accompanied by several of the officers. Thirty or forty men, each with a spontoon, a bow and arrow, stood drawn up on a rising ground near the houses. As our navigators drew near, three of them came down towards the shore, politely pulling off their caps, and bowing obediently to their visitors. Though this civility was returned, it did not give them sufficient confidence to wait for the landing of the party; for on their reaching the shore, the natives instantly retired. Captain Cook, alone and unarmed, followed them, and by signs and gestures prevailed on them to stop, and accept some trifling presents: as a compensation for which, they give him two fox skins, and a couple of sea-horse teeth.

They seemed remarkably cautious and timid, expressing their desire, as well as they could, that no more of the people should be permitted to come up. The captain, familiarly laying his hand on the shoulder of one of them, he instantly started back several paces; and in proportion as he advanced, the natives retreated, always assuming the attitude of being ready with their spears, while those on the eminence were prepared to support them with their arrows. At length, however, the proper distribution of a few beads among them, created a degrec of confidence, and they were not intimidated when the captain was joined by an additional number of his people; by degrees a sort of traffic commenced between them. In exchange for knives, beads, tobacco, and other articles, they parted with a few arrows, and some of their clothing; but nothing that our navigators had to offer, could prevail on them to part with a spear or a bow. These were continually in readiness, except at one time, when a few persons laid theirs down, while they entertained the Europeans with a song, and a dance: and even then, they were so conveniently placed, that they could catch hold of them in an instant *.

The village contains an assemblage of their sum-

* Their arrows were pointed either with stone or bone, but most of them were without barbs, and many of them had a round blunt point. To what use they may be applied, cannot be positively ascertained, unless it be to kill small

summer and winter habitations: the latter resembles a vault, the floor of which is sunk below the surface of the earth. One of them, which Captain Cook examined, was of an oval form, about twenty feet in length, and twelve in height. The framing consisted of wood, and the ribs of whales, judiciously disposed, and fastened together. Their summer huts were pretty large, and circular, being brought to a point at the top: the framing consisted of slight poles and bones, covered with the skins of sea-animals. On examining one, a fire-place was observed just within the door; where a few wooden vessels were also exposed to view, all in a dirty condition. Their sleeping places were close to the side, and occupied about half the circuit; the bed and bedding consisted of deer-skins, most of them being very dry and clean. About the houses several stages were erected, composed entirely of bones, and ten or twelve feet high: they were apparently intended for drying their fish and skins, as they were thus conveyed out of the reach of their dogs, of which they had great numbers. These dogs are large, and of the fox kind, with woolly hair, and of different colours: they are probably used, in winter, for the purpose of drawing their sledges; a number of which Captain Cook saw laid up in one of their winter huts. It also seems evident that dogs constitute a part of their food, several of them laying dead that had been killed that morning*.

After the party had remained two or three hours with these people, they returned to their ships; and soon after, the wind becoming southerly, our navigators weighed anchor, stood out of the bay, and steered to the north-east. Nothing remarkable occurred till some time in the forenoon of the 16th of August, when they perceived a brightness in the northern horizon, like that reflected from ice, generally called the blink. Little attention, however, was paid to it, from a supposition that it was improbable that such a visitor would speedily be met with. The sharpness of the air, and the gloominess of the weather, for two or three preceding days, seemed indeed to portend some sudden change. About an hour after, the sight of an enormous mass of ice, left them no longer in doubt respecting the cause of the brightness of the horizon. Between two and three o'clock, they tacked close to the edge of the ice, in twenty-two fathoms water, being unable to stand on any further; the ice being quite impenetrable, and extending from west by south, to east by north, as far as the eye could reach. Here great numbers of sea-horses were beheld, some of which were in the water, but most of them were upon the ice.

Captain Cook conceived an idea of hoisting out the boats to kill some of these animals, but the wind freshening he gave up the design; and they continued to ply towards the south. They made no progress; for, on the 18th at noon, they were almost five leagues farther to the eastward. They were then close to the edge of the ice, which was as compact as a wall, and ten or twelve feet high: but farther north it appeared much higher. Its surface was rugged, and, in many places, pools of water were seen upon it. They now stood to the south; and, after running

small animals without lacerating the skin. Their bows were such as our adventurers had observed on the American coast. Their spears, or spontoons were of iron or steel, and of European or Asiatic manufacture; embellished with carving, and inlayings of brass and white metal. Those who had bows and arrows in their hands, had the spear slung by a leathern strap over their right shoulder: a leathern quiver slung over their left shoulder, contained arrows. Some of these quivers were extremely beautiful, being made of red leather, ornamented with embroidery. Several other articles, and particularly their clothing, indicated much ingenuity, far surpassing what could have been expected among so northerly a people.

All the Americans that our navigators had hitherto seen since their arrival on that coast, were rather low of stature, with round chubby faces, and high cheek bones; but the people they now beheld were far from resembling them, having long visages, and being stout and well proportioned. Among the men, women, and children, only one bald head was seen; which was that of an old man; and he was the only one who carried no arms: the others seemed to be chosen men, and somewhat under the middle age. Their ears were all perforated, and some had glass beads hanging to them. These were the only permanent ornaments that were seen about them, for they have not any to their lips.

Their apparel consisted of a cap, a frock, breeches, boots, and gloves, all made of leather, or of the skins of deer, dogs, seals, and other animals; and extremely well dressed; some with the fur on, and others without it.

* From the large bones of fish, and other sea-animals, it may be conjectured that the sea furnishes the inhabitants with the greater part of their subsistence; especially as the country seemed extremely barren.

At first our navigators supposed that some land, which they had descried to the westward, was a part of the island of Alaschka, laid down in Mr. Stœhlin's map; but from the appearance of the coast, the situation of the opposite shore of America, and the longitude, they supposed it was more probably the country of the Tschutski, or the eastern extremity of Asia, explored by Beering in 1728.

ing six leagues, shoaled the water to seven fathoms, though it soon afterwards deepened to nine fathoms*.

The Discovery being about a mile astern, and to leeward, had less depth of water than her associate; and tacking on that account, Captain Cook was obliged to tack also, to prevent separation. Their situation was now very critical: they were in shoal water, upon a lee shore, and the main body of the ice to windward driving down upon them. Captain Cook therefore made a signal for the Discovery to tack, and his ship tacked at the same time.

On the 19th, at eight in the morning, the wind veering to the west, they tacked to the northward. In this situation, they had a great deal of drift ice about their ships; and the main ice was about two leagues to the north. Between one and two they got in with the edge of it; but it was too close, and the pieces were too large, for the ships to be forced through it. An amazing number of sea-horses were seen upon the ice, and as our adventurers were in want of fresh provisions, the boats from each ship were dispatched to procure some of them. By seven in the evening, they had received on board the Resolution, nine of these animals; which till that moment, they had supposed to be sea-cows; nor would they have known the difference, if there had not been two or three men on board who had been in Greenland, and who informed them what animals these were, and that they were rejected as food: many of the people, however, made them serve them for provisions, and there were few among them who did not prefer them to their salt meat †.

But these animals, even when attacked, do not appear to be so dangerous as some authors have represented them, though they make a tremendous appearance. Vast numbers of them, indeed, follow, and approach the boats; but the flash of a musquet in the pan, or even the act of pointing one at them, would send them down in an instant. The female, however, will protect her young one to the last, whether upon the ice or in the water: nor will the young one desert the dam, though she should have been killed: if one of them is destroyed, the other must be taken ‡.

Soon after our navigators had got their sea-horses on board, they were almost surrounded with the ice, and could only clear it by steering to the southward, a measure which they pursued till three o'clock the next morning, with a light westerly breeze. At two in the afternoon they fell in with the main ice, and kept along the edge of it, relying on the roaring of the sea-horses as their guides, being then accompanied

* At this time the weather, which had been hazy, became clearer, and they saw land extending from south-east, to south-east by east, about three or four miles distant. The eastern extremity forms a point, which was so much encumbered with ice that it obtained the appellation of Icy Cape. The other extreme of the land was lost in the horizon, little doubt existing of its being a continuation of the American Continent.

† The fat of these animals is, at first, as fine as marrow, but becomes rancid in a few days, unless it is salted, which preserves it much longer in perfection. The lean flesh is coarse and blackish, and has a strong unpleasant taste; but the heart is almost as palatable as that of a bullock. The fat, when melted, affords a quantity of oil, proper for the supply of lamps; and their hides, which are thick and substantial, are extremely useful about the rigging. The teeth, or tusks of these are very small: even those of the oldest animals among them, did not exceed five inches in length: hence it was supposed, that they had lately shed their old teeth.

They lie on the ice in herds of several hundreds, huddling like swine, one over the other. They roar so loud, that in the night, or when the weather is foggy, they gave notice of the vicinity of the ice, before the people could discern it. The whole herd were never observed to be asleep, some of them being constantly on the watch. These, on the approach of the boat, alarm those which are next to them; and they gradually communicate their fears to the whole herd, and stimulate them to vigilance. They are not, indeed, in a hurry to get away till they have been fired at, when many of them would immediately fall into the sea, rolling one over the other in the utmost confusion: if they were not killed at the first discharge, by those who fired at them, they were generally lost, though mortally wounded.

‡ The dam, when in the water, supports her young one between her fore fins. Mr. Pennant, in his Synopsis of Quadrupeds, has well described this animal, under the name of *Arctic Walrus*. Why it should be called a sea-horse, seems extraordinary, unless the word be a corruption of the Russian name Morse; for it does not in the least resemble a horse. It is apparently the same animal that is found in the Gulph of St. Lawrence, and there called a sea-cow. It is more like a cow than a horse; but this resemblance consists in nothing except the snout. It has a strong resemblance of a seal, but incomparably larger. The length of one of them, which was not selected as among the largest, was nine feet four inches from the snout to the tail; the circumference of its body at the shoulder, seven feet ten inches; its circumference near the hinder fins, five feet six inches; and the weight of the carcase, without the head, skin, or entrails, 854 pounds.

with an exceeding thick fog. In this manner they continued sailing till midnight, when they got among the loose pieces of ice.

On the 22d, the wind was southerly, and the weather principally foggy, though not without intervals of sunshine. At eight in the evening they had a calm, which continued till midnight, when they heard the surge of the sea dashing against the ice, and many loose pieces of it were seen about them. On the 26th they fell in with the ice: on the 27th, at four in the morning, they tacked, and stood to the westward, and at seven in the evening they were close in with the edge of the ice, which lay east-north-east, and west-south-west, as far in each of those directions as the eye could reach. Having but little wind, Captain Cook went with the boats to survey the ice, when he found it to consist of loose pieces of various dimensions, and so close together, that he could hardly enter the outer edge with a boat; and it seemed as impracticable for the ships to enter it, as if it had consisted of rocks. He remarked that it appeared to be all pure transparent ice, except the upper surface, which was porous. It seemed to have been wholly composed of frozen snow, and to have been formed at sea, as none of the productions of the land were incorporated with it, which would certainly have been the case if it had been formed in rivers *.

A thick fog, which came on while the captain was thus employed with the boats, hurried him on board sooner than he intended, with only one sea-horse to each ship. Though they had killed many, they could not wait to bring them off with them. The number of these animals, o all the ice that our navigators had seen, w really astonishing; and the people began length to relish them.

On the 29th they saw the main ice towards t north, and soon after perceived land bearin south-west by west. Presently more land w seen, bearing west. At twelve o'clock t weather was very hazy, with drizzling rain, b afterwards it cleared up, and enabled them take a tolerable view of the coast; which r sembles, in many respects, the opposite coast America; having low land next the sea, wi elevated land farther back. It was destitute wood, and even of snow; but was apparen covered with a mossy substance which gave it brownish appearance. In the low ground, b tween the sea and the high land, a large la presents itself, extending to the south-east furth than the eye could ken.

The captain wished to see more of the co to the westward; but finding he could not, t wind freshening, and being apprehensive of ice coming down upon them, he relinquished design.

The season was now so far advanced, and usual time of the frost setting in now approac ing, Captain Cook declined any further attemp this year, to discover a passage into the Atlan Ocean, in any direction. His attention w more devoted to search for some conveni spot where he might obtain a supply of wo and water, and how he should pass the win in cultivating the sciences of navigation a geography.

* The pieces of ice that formed the outer edge of the main body, were from forty or fifty yards in extent, to four or five; and had probably been accumulating for several winters. The captain, however, observed that many pieces had been partly washed away, while the under part continued firm for several fathoms round that which appea above water, like a shoal round a high rock. He measu the depth of water upon one, and found it fifteen feet, consequently that the ships might have sailed over it.

SECTI

SECTION XXX.

Proceed along the Coast of Asia—Burney's Island—Cape Serdze Kamen—The East Cape of Asia—Bay of St. Lawrence—Two other Bays—Beering's Cape Tschukotskoi—Steer for the Coast of America—Cape Darby—Bald-Head—Captain Cook searches for Wood and Water—Cape Denbigh—Attended by the Natives—Besborough Island—Captain Cook's Interview—Mr. King's with the same Person—Mr. King sent to examine the Coast—Visits from the Natives—Produce of the Country—Norton's Sound—Discovery of Stuart's Island—Description of—Cape Stephens—Point Shallow-Water—Shoals on the North American Coast—Pinnacle Island—The Resolution springs a Leak—Arrive at Oonalashka—Abundant Supplies of Fish—Intercourse with the Natives, &c.—Mr. Isinglaff comes on Board—Account of the Islands visited by the Russians—Their Settlement at Oonalashka—Description of the Natives—Manner of Building, &c.—Fish and Fowls—Quadrupeds—Vegetables—Repositories of the Dead, &c.

HAVING stood off till their soundings were eighteen fathoms, they made sail to the eastward along the coast, being now well convinced, that it could only be the continent of Asia. Early on the 30th of August, they made sail, and steered such a course as they thought would bring them in with the land. At ten they obtained a sight of the coast, bearing south-west, at the distance of four miles. About twelve, the mist dispersing, they had a view of the coast; it was almost covered with snow, which had fallen very lately. At length it was found to be an island, at four or five miles distant, bearing south-west half south: it was moderately high, and four or five miles in circumference, with a steep rocky coast *.

On the 2d of September, at eight in the morning, the most advanced land to the south-eastward, had an insular appearance; but a quick succession of thick showers of snow settled on the land, and concealed from our navigators a great part of the coast. In a short time after, the sun, which had not been visible for near five days, broke out at intervals between the showers, and in a great degree annihilated the fog, so that they obtained a perfect sight of it, and perceived that the whole was connected. Cape Serdze Kamen was twelve or thirteen leagues distant, their soundings were twenty-two fathoms, and the distance of the nearest part of the shore was about two leagues †.

On the 6th, at four in the morning, they had a sight of the American coast, near Sledge Island; and, at six in the evening, the island was at the distance of about ten leagues, bearing north-east. On the 7th, at eight in the evening, they made a near approach to the land, Sledge Island bearing north-west, about eight leagues distant. At this time they observed a light on shore; and two canoes, freighted with people, came off towards them. They brought to, that the strangers might have an opportunity of approaching them; but they disregarded all their tokens of amity, and kept at the distance of about a quarter of a mile. In consequence of which they thought proper to leave them, and proceeded along the coast.

On the 9th, at day-break they continued along

* Captain Cook was now convinced of what he had long before imagined, that this was the country of the Tschutski, or the north-eastern coast of Asia; and that Beering had proceeded thus far in 1728: that is to the head which is denominated *Serdze Kamen*, having a rock upon it which represents the figure of a heart. It is an elevated promontory, with a steep rocky cliff fronting the sea.

† Ranging along the coast, and the weather being fair, they saw several of the natives, and some of their habitations; the latter of which had the appearance of hillocks of earth. Reaching St. Lawrence's Bay, they saw some of the natives, as well as others on the opposite side of the Bay. Not one of them, however, came off to the ships; which was very remarkable, as the weather was not unfavourable, and as those whom they had lately visited had no cause to be displeased with them. These people must certainly be the Tschutski, whom the Russians had not subdued.

The Bay of St. Lawrence is about five leagues in breadth at its entrance, and four leagues in depth, becoming narrower towards the bottom. In the afternoon our navigators saw what they had supposed to be a rock, but was afterwards discovered to be a dead whale, which some Asiatics had killed, and were conveying to the shore. They endeavoured to conceal themselves behind the fish, to escape the observation of the Europeans; but they might have avoided that unnecessary trouble, as they proceeded on their course without deigning to take notice of them.

the coast, and perceived land which they supposed to be two islands; the one bearing east, the other south-west. Not long afterwards they found themselves near a coast covered with wood; a pleasing sight to which they had not lately been accustomed. As they advanced northward, land was seen in the direction of north-east; which proved a continuation of the coast on which they now were. They also perceived high land over the islands, seemingly at a considerable distance beyond them. This was supposed to be the continent, and the other land the isle of Alashka; but it appeared doubtful whether they should discover a passage between them, as the water gradually continued shoaling while they proceeded towards the north. Two boats were therefore sent a-head to sound; and Captain Cook ordered the Discovery, as drawing the least water, to lead, keeping nearly in the middle, between the coast and the most northerly island. Thus they continued their course till three in the afternoon, when their soundings did not exceed three fathoms and a half. In no part of the channel could a greater depth be found, by sounding it from one side to the other; it therefore appeared highly necessary to return.

They continued to ply back during the night, and, by day-break on the 10th, had deepened the water about six fathoms. Being then about three miles from the west shore, Captain Cook, attended by M. King, went with two boats, in search of wood and water. They landed in that part where the coast projects into a bluff head, composed of perpendicular *strata* of a dark blue rock, partaking of glimmer and quartz. Adjoining to the beach is a narrow border of land, then covered with long grass: the ground beyond rises abruptly; and towards the top of this elevation a heath is observed, abounding with berries of various kinds: further onward, a level country is thinly covered with birch, willows, and small spruce-trees. The tracks of deer and foxes were seen upon the beach; on which also lay a great quantity of drift-wood. Plenty of fresh water was also to be procured.

Returning on board, Captain Cook intended to bring the ships to an anchor here; but the wind shifting, he stretched over to the opposite shore, in hopes of finding wood there also; and anchored at eight o'clock in the evening, near the southern end of the most northerly island; as they then supposed. The next morning, however, they found it to be a peninsula, united to the continent by a low neck of land, on each side of which a bay is formed by the coast. They plied into the southernmost of these bays, and cast anchor again; the point of the peninsula, to which the name of Cape Denbigh was given, being about a league distant in the direction of north-west*.

Lieutenant Gore, being now dispatched to the peninsula for wood and water, reported that there was but little fresh water, and that wood was difficult to be got at, on account of the boats grounding at some distance from the beach. He returned, however, in the evening, with the launch loaded with wood. The next morning at eight, all the boats, and a detachment of men with an officer, were sent to procure wood from the place where Captain Cook had landed on the 10th †.

Before night on the 13th, the ships were furnished with an ample supply of wood; and a dozen tons of water were also conveyed to each of them. On the 14th a party was detached on shore to cut brooms, and the branches of spruce trees for brewing beer.

Doubts being still entertained, whether the

* Several of the natives were seen upon the peninsula, some of whom came off in a canoe. To one of these men Captain Cook gave a knife, and some beads, with which he seemed highly gratified. The Europeans made significant signs to him to bring them some provisions, when he instantly quitted them, and paddled towards the shore. Happening to meet another man, coming off with two dried salmon, he took them from him: and, when he returned to the ship, he would not deliver them to any person but Captain Cook. Other inhabitants came off soon afterwards, bringing dried fish, which they bartered for different trifles. They had no aversion to tobacco; but they were particularly desirous of knives.

† On Sunday the 14th a family of the natives repaired to the spot, where the party were engaged in accumulating wood. It consisted of a husband, the wife, and their child, accompanied by a person who was exceedingly deformed. The husband was almost blind, and neither he, nor his wife, appeared so respectable as many of those they had been accustomed to see on the coast. Both of them had the lower lips perforated, and they had glass beads in the possession, resembling those which had been seen among their neighbours.

Iron seemed most entitled to their approbation: for for knives which had been fabricated from an old iron hoop the captain purchased four hundred pounds weight of fish that had been recently caught by them. The captain gave the child, who was a female, a few beads, which so affected the mother that she immediately burst into tears; it had the same operation on the father and the cripple; and at last to complete the concert, upon the child itself. But the music was of short duration.

coast they were now upon, belonged to an island, or the continent of America, Lieutenant King was dispatched, with two boats, well manned and armed, to make such examinations as would tend to remove all difference of opinion on the subject. He was directed not to be absent more than four or five days, and if any unforeseen accident should force the ships off the coast, the rendezvous was to be at the harbour of Samganaodha*.

No difference appeared respecting the size and features of these people, and those which our Europeans had seen on every other part of the coast, except King George's Sound. Their dress which was principally composed of the skins of deer, was fashioned in the same taste; and they had adopted the practice of perforating their lower lips, with the same mode of ornamenting them. Their habitations were situated close to the beach, consisting merely of a sloping roof, without side-walls, formed of logs, and covered with earth and grass. The entrance is at one end, and just within it the fire-place. A small aperture is seen at a little distance from the door of this mansion, to give the smoke an opportunity of making its escape.

Captain Cook imagined that this peninsula had anciently been an island; many presumptive proofs existing of the sea having formerly flowed over the isthmus; and, even at this time, it appeared to be kept out by a bank of sand, stones, and wood, which had been thrown up by the waves†.

When Mr. King returned, he reported that he had proceeded with the boats, about three or four leagues farther than the ships had been able to go; that he then landed on the west side; that from the heights he could perceive the two coasts join, and the inlet terminated in a small river or creek, before which there were banks of sand or mud; and in every part shoal water. From the elevated situation in which Mr. King surveyed the Sound, he could discern many spacious vallies, with rivers flowing through them, well wooded and bounded by hills of a moderate height.

On this inlet Captain Cook bestowed the name of Norton's Sound, in honour of Sir Fletcher Norton, afterwards Lord Grantley, a near relation of Mr. King. The bay is situated on the south-eastern side of it, and is denominated *Chacktoole* by the natives. It is not a very excellent situation, being exposed to the south and south-west wind, nor is a harbour to be met with in this Sound.

Captain Cook now began to reflect that it was high time to quit these northerly regions, and retire to some eligible place during the winter, where he might procure provisions and refreshments. He did not consider the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul in Kamptchatka could furnish a sufficient supply of those articles; and instantly concluded that no situation was so convenient for his purpose as the Sandwich islands: to those therefore he formed a resolution of proceeding. But a supply of water being previously necessary, he resolved to search the coast of America for a harbour, by proceeding along it to the southward. If he did not succeed in that respect, his intention was to reach Samganoodha, the appointed place of rendezvous, if the ships should happen to be separated.

Early on the 17th of September, they weighed anchor with an easterly breeze, and attempted to pass within Besborough Island; but were prevented by meeting with shoal water. At daybreak on the 18th, they saw land, which proved to be an island. This spot, to which the name of Stuart's Island was given, is seventeen leagues

* On the 15th the ships removed over to the bay on the south-side of Cape Denbigh, where they cast anchor in the afternoon. Soon after which many of the inhabitants came off in canoes, and exchanged dry salmon with them for several of their trivial articles. The next morning nine men visited them, each in a separate canoe. They cautiously approached the ship, and drawing up abreast of each other, favoured our navigators with a song; while one of their company accompanied it with ludicrous gesticulations and motions, and another beat upon a sort of drum.

† Lieutenant King returned from his expedition on the 16th, at seven in the evening. He had set out at eight at night on the 14th. The crews of the boats rowed incessantly towards the land, till one in the morning of the 15th. They afterwards set their sails, and stood across the bay. About three they again made use of their oars, and by two in the afternoon, had got within two miles of Bald Head, under the lee of the high land. All the men in the boat belonging to the Resolution, except two, were at that time so oppressed with fatigue and sleep, that Mr. King's utmost endeavours to urge them on were absolutely ineffectual. At length they became so completely exhausted, that they dropped their oars, and even fell asleep at the bottom of the boat. In consequence of this, Mr. King, and two gentlemen who accompanied him, were under the necessity of laying hold of the oars; and they landed, soon after three o'clock, between Bald-Head, and a point that projects to the eastward.

distant from Cape Denbigh, and about seven leagues in circumference. The greatest part of the coast of the continent is low land, though high land was perceived up the country. It forms a point opposite the island, which was named Cape Stephens. Some drift wood was seen on the shores, both of the island and of the continent; but not a tree appeared to be growing upon either. Before they reached Stuart's Island, they passed two little isles situate between them and the main land. As they ranged along the coast, several of the natives appeared upon the shore, and apparently invited them to approach.

They steered then for the most southern part of the continent in sight, till eight in the evening, when the depth of water having decreased to less than four fathoms, they tacked, and passed the night in standing off and on. When they tacked, the southernmost point of land, which was named Shallow Water, bore south-east, at the distance of seven leagues. After much chagrin, they deemed it necessary to quit a coast, upon which they could no longer navigate with safety; they therefore hauled the wind to the northward, and the water gradually increased to eight fathoms.

Nothing remarkable occurred till the morning of the 25th, when the gale increasing, they were reduced to two courses, and close-reefed main-top-sails. In a short time after, the Resolution sprung a leak under the starboard buttock, which was so considerable as to keep one pump continually employed. They would not venture to put the ship upon the other tack; being apprehensive of getting upon the shoals that lie to the north-west of Cape Newenham; but continued to steer towards the west till the 26th, they then wore and stood to the eastward; when the leak ceased to give them any further trouble. They were now convinced, to their great satisfaction, that it was above the water-line. The gale ceased, but the wind continued some days longer at south and south-west*.

The next day, in the afternoon, our navigators anchored in the harbour of Samganoodha; and on the following morning the carpenters were employed in sheathing and repairing the ships. Berries, in great plenty, being found ashore, one third of the people were required to go, by turns, to gather them. Great quantities were also procured from the natives. If there were any remains of the scurvy, among the people of either ship, these salutary berries, and the use of spruce-beer, which they are permitted to partake of every other day, would effectually eradicate it.

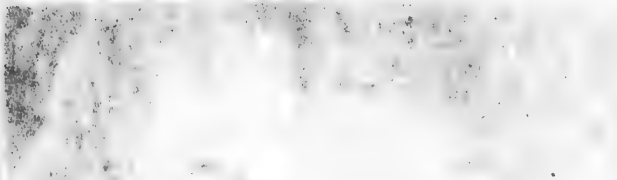
They were also supplied with a quantity of fish, particularly salmon, both fresh and dried. Some of the fresh was in the highest perfection; but there was also an inferior sort. Drawing the seine they caught, at different times, a great many salmon trout; and a halibut that weighed two hundred and fifty-four pounds. They afterwards had recourse to hooks and lines. A boat was daily sent out, which seldom returned without eight or ten halibut; a quantity more than sufficient for the consumption of all the people†.

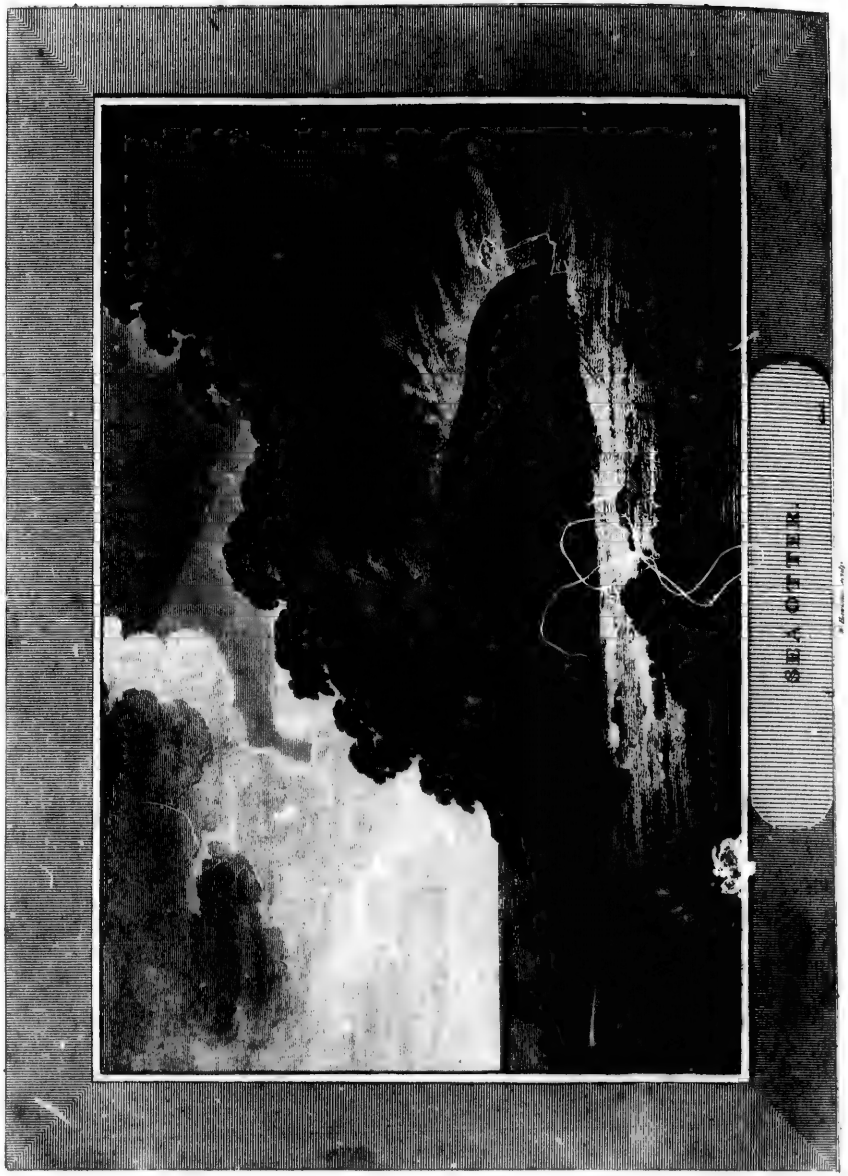
On the 10th Lediard returned with three Russian seamen, or furriers, who, with several others, resided at Egoochshac, where they had a dwelling-house, store-houses, and a sloop of thirty tons burthen. They were all three sensible intelligent men, and ready to communicate any information that might be thought useful. But, not having an interpreter present, they could not perfectly understand each other.

* On the 2d of October, at day-break, our navigators saw the island of Oonakashka, in a south-east direction; but as the land was intercepted by a thick haze, they were not certain of their situation till noon, when the observed latitude determined it. They hauled into a bay, ten miles to the westward of Samganoodha, distinguished by the name of Egoochshac; but finding very deep water, they did not choose to continue there. The natives visited them several times, bringing with them dried salmon, and other fish, which they exchanged with the seamen for tobacco. A few days before, every ounce of tobacco in the ship had been distributed among them, and the quantity was quite inadequate to their demands: yet, such thoughtless and improvident creatures are British sailors, they were as lavish in making their bargains, as if they had landed at a port in Virginia.

† On the 8th, Captain Cook received a very singular present from a native of Oonalashka. It was a rye loaf, or rather a pye in the form of a loaf, as it enclosed some salmon, highly seasoned with pepper. The giver, whose name was Derramoushki, brought a similar present for Captain Clerke, and a note to each of the commanders, written in a language which none of the people understood. It was reasonably apprehended that these presents were made by some Russians in the neighbourhood, and therefore the captains, returned, by the same messenger, to these unknown friends, a few bottles of rum, wine, and porter, as a token of acknowledgment of their favours. They also sent, with Derramoushki, Corporal Lediard, an intelligent corporal of the marines, to gain some farther information, with orders, that, if he met with any Russians, he should by some means endeavour to inform them that they were Englishmen, the friends and allies of their nation.

The




SEA OTTER.

The three Russians having remained all night ith Captain Cook, visited Captain Clerke the rt morning; after which they departed, perfect- satisfied with the reception they had met with. In the evening of the 14th, while Captain Cook d Mr. Webber were at a village near Sam- noodha, a Russian landed there, who proved be the principal person of that country in this d the adjacent isles. His name was Erasim regoriff Sin Ismyloff. He arrived in a canoe rrying three persons, attended by twenty or irty smaller canoes, each conducted by one an. On their landing, a small tent was con- ructed for Ismyloff, of materials which had rived with him, and they afterwards made kers for themselves of their canoes and paddles, hich they covered with grass. Ismyloff invited e captain and Mr. Webber into his tent, and before them some dried salmon and berries. e had the appearance of being a sensible man, t the captain had the mortification of not being le to converse with him, except by signs, figures, d other characters: he invited him on board e following day, in consequence of which he rived, with all his attendants.

The captain found him well acquainted with e geography of those regions, and with all the coveries which had been made in that quarter the Russians. On seeing the modern maps, immediately pointed out their errors. But myloff, and the others affirmed, that they were irely acquainted with the American continent the northward. According to the information tained from Ismyloff and his countrymen, the ussians have several times attempted to get a oting, upon that part of the continent that lies ntiguous to Oonalashka, and the adjoining nds, but have constantly been repulsed by the tives, whom they pronounce a very treacherous ople. They mentioned two or three captains, principal men who had been murdered by m; and some of the Russians exhibited wounds ich they said they received there.

On the 16th Ismyloff offered Captain Cook a -otter skin, which he said was worth eighty bles at Kamtschatka; but the captain thought per to decline the offer, though he accepted some dried fish, and a few baskets of the lily, or *saranne* root. On the 19th Ismyloff made him another visit, bringing with him two charts, which he permitted Captain Cook to copy. They were both manuscripts, and bore every mark of authenticity. One of them comprehended the Penshinskian sea; the coat of Tartary, as low as the latitude of 41° north; the Kurile Islands, and the peninsula of Kamptschatka. The other chart comprehended all the discoveries that the Russians had made to the eastward of Kamptschatka.

After these Russians had given Captain Cook all the information they could, they assured him that they knew of no other islands, except those that were represented upon the chart; and that no Russian had ever visited any part of the American continent to the northward, except that which is opposite the country of the Tschutskis*.

Mr. Ismyloff had considerable knowledge in astronomy, and in the most useful branches of the mathematics. Captain Cook made him a present of a Hadley's octant; and though it was probably the first he had ever seen, he soon made himself acquainted with most of the uses to which that instrument could be applied.

In the morning of the 22d. they attempted to get out to sea, with the wind at south-east, but were disappointed: In the afternoon of the 23d, they were visited by a Russian named Jacob Jvanovitch Soposnicoff, who commanded a small vessel at Oomanak; a man of great modesty, and less addicted to the immoderate use of strong liquors than the Russians generally are. He seemed to know what supplies could be procured at the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, and the value of the respective articles, more accurately than Mr. Ismyloff.

After they had contracted a kind of intimacy with these Russians, many of them occasionally visited them at their settlement on their island, where they always met with a very favourable reception. This settlement consisted of a dwelling-house, and two store-houses. There was also a number of Kamtschadales, and Oonolashkans, as servants to the former. Some other of the natives, who seemed independent of the Russians, lived at the same place. They all re-

* If Mr. Stahlin was not egregiously imposed upon, at could induce him to publish a map so extremely er- eous as that of the New Northern Archipelago, in which many of these islands are jumbled together without any re- gard to truth or authenticity, though he ventures to style it, "a very accurate little map."

side

side in the same house; the Russians at the upper end, the Kamptschadales in the middle, and the Oonalashkans, or natives, at the lower end; where a large boiler is fixed to accommodate them in the preparation of their food, which chiefly consists of the produce of the sea, with the addition of roots and berries*.

The people of Oonalashka are rather below the middle stature, plump and jolly, with swarthy chubby faces, black eyes, and middling beards. Their hair is long, straight, and black; which the men wear loose behind, and cut before: the women usually wear it formed into a bunch.

Both sexes adopt the same fashion with regard to dress, the only difference is in the materials. The frocks of the women are m[illegible] of seal-skin; those of the men, of the skins of birds; both of which descend below the knees. This constitutes the whole dress of the females, but the men wear an additional frock, composed of gut, which water cannot penetrate; it has also a hood to it, which is drawn over the head. Many of them wear boots; and all of them an oval-snouted wooden cap, with a rim to admit the head. They dye these caps of various colours, and round the upper part of the rim affix the long bristles of some sea-animal, on which glass beads are strung. They make no use of paint, but the women slightly puncture their faces; and both sexes perforate the under lip, which they ornament with pieces of bone.

Their food consists of fish, and other sea animals, birds, roots, and berries; most of which is eaten raw. Boiling and broiling are the only modes of cookery which seemed to be adopted by them; the former of which was probably taught them by the Russians. Some of the[m] have small brass kettles, and those who ha[ve] not such a utensil, make one of a flat stone, w[ith] sides of clay.

Captain Cook was present, when the chief [of] the island dined on the raw head of a la[rge] halibut, just caught. Before any part of it w[as] given to the chief, two of his servants devour[ed] the gills, after having only squeezed out [the] slime. One of them then cut off the head of [the] fish, washed it in the sea, and afterwards seat[ed] himself by the chief; having previously pull[ed] up some grass, upon which the head was place[d], the rest being strewed before the chief. He th[en] cut large pieces from the cheeks, and plac[ed] them within the reach of the chief, who swallow[ed] ed them with seeming satisfaction. Havi[ng] finished his meal, the remainder of the head w[as] cut in pieces, and given to the attendants, w[ho] tore off the meat with their teeth, and gnaw[ed] the bones with an appetite truly canine.

Though the Oonalashkans do not besmear th[eir] persons with paint, they are as filthy in th[eir] houses, as those savages who adopt that hor[rid] practice. Their habitations are thus construct[ed]: they dig an oblong pit in the ground, of ab[out] fifty feet in length, and twenty in breadth, [or] proportionably of smaller dimensions. Over t[his] excavation they form the roof of wood, wh[ich] they cover first with grass, and then with ear[th], giving the whole structure the external appe[ar]ance of a dunghill. Towards each end of [the] roof, a square opening is left, which gives a[dm]ittance to the light; one of them being also [in]tended to go in and out by, with the assistan[ce] of a kind of ladder. Some of the houses ha[ve]

* The Russians are such adepts in cookery, that they can render an indifferent article palatable. They can even make an excellent dish of whales' flesh; and they form a kind of pan-pudding of salmon-roe beaten up fine and fried, which is a good substitute for bread. Except the juice of berries, which they usually sip at their meals, they have no other beverage than pure water; and it is a fortunate circumstance for them that they have nothing stronger.

As the island furnishes the inhabitants with food, so it does, in some measure, with clothing. This is principally composed of skins, appropriated to particular uses. The upper garment resembles a waggoner's frock, extending to the knees. They have also one or two waistcoats, a pair of breeches, a fur cap, and a pair of boots: the soles and upper leathers of the latter article being made of Russia leather, and a kind of strong gut serves as a protection for the legs. Ismyloff, and Ivanowich wore a calico frock, and a silken shirt.

Many Russians are settled on the principal islands bet[ween] Kamtschatka and Oonolashka for the purpose of collec[ting] furs. Their grand object is the otter, or sea-beaver; [the] skins of an inferior, nature assists in the completion of [their] cargoes.

The native inhabitants of this island appear to be a pe[ace]able and inoffensive race; and, with respect to honesty, [they] might serve as a pattern to the most civilized nation u[pon] earth; but if a judgment may be formed from their neighbo[urs] with whom the Russians are unconnected, it seems doub[tful] whether this was their original disposition, or whether [it is] the consequence of their present state of subjection. It [ap]pears, indeed, that the Russians have been under the [ne]necessity of making some severe examples before they co[uld] bring the islanders into tolerable order. At present, h[ow]ever, the greatest harmony subsists between the Rus[sians] and the natives.

also an entrance below. Round the sides and ends of these huts, the families, (several of which live together) have their separate apartments, where they sleep and work; not upon benches, but in a concave trench, dug round the inside of the house, and covered with mats: so that this part of the house is tolerably clean and decent. The middle of the house, which is common to all the families, is not entitled to the same commendations; for though it is covered with dry grass, it is a receptacle for every kind of filth.

Their household furniture consists of buckets, wooden bowls, spoons, matted baskets, and perhaps a Russian kettle, or pot. All these utensils are neatly formed, though no other tools were seen in the possession of the inhabitants than a knife, and a kind of hatchet. Most of these people smoke and chew tobacco, and have the additional qualification of taking snuff*.

These people produce fire both by collision and attrition: the first by striking two stones against each other, on one of which a quantity of brimstone has been previously rubbed. The latter is performed with two pieces of wood; one of which is flat, and the other is a stick of about eighteen inches in length: the pointed end of the stick is pressed upon the other, whirling it nimbly round as a drill; and thus fire is speedily procured: This method is not only practised by these people, but also by the Kamtschadales, the Greenlanders, the Otaheitans, the New Hollanders, and the Brazillians

Our navigators saw no weapons among the natives of Oonalashka, either of the offensive or defensive kind. It cannot be supposed that the Russians found them in such a defenceless state; for it seems probable, that, for their own security, they have disarmed them. Political motives may likewise have induced the Russians not to suffer these islanders to have any large canoes, for it can hardly be supposed that they had none such originally, as they were found among all their neighbours. None, however, were observed here, except two or three that belonged to the Russians.

Their canoes are smaller than any of those which our navigators had seen upon the coast of America; from which, however, they differ but little in their construction: the framing being of slender laths, and the covering of seal-skins. They are about twelve feet in length, eighteen inches in breadth about the middle; and twelve or fourteen inches in depth. They occasionally carry two persons; one of whom sits in the seat, or round hole, which is nearly in the middle, and the other is stretched at full length in the canoe. Round the hole a rim of wood is attached, about which gut-skin is sewed, which may either be drawn together, or opened like a purse. They make use of a double-bladed paddle, which is held by both hands in the middle, striking the water with a quick and regular motion, first on one side, and then on the other. The canoe, thus impelled, goes at a great rate, and in a direction perfectly straight†.

Here are whales, porpoises, halibut, salmon, trout, sword-fish, cod, soals, and several other sorts of fish. Salmon and halibut are found in the greatest plenty; and on these the inhabitants are principally supported. Seals, and the tribe of sea animals, are less numerous here than they are in many other seas. This is, in some measure, reasonably accounted for, from the population of

* They did not seem to be destitute of other instruments, except sewing needles, their own being formed entirely of bone: with these they sew their canoes, fashion their habiliments, and perform very curious embroidery. Instead of thread, they use the fibres of sinews, which they split to the thickness they require. All sewing is performed by the women: they are the shoe-makers, taylors, and boat-coverers. They manufacture mats and baskets of grass, which are both strong and beautiful: in most of their work they appear not to be deficient either in perseverance or ingenuity.

No fire-place was seen in any of their habitations: with lamps, they are not only lighted, but heated; and though their construction is simple, they seem to answer the purpose for which they were intended. They are made of a flat stone, hollowed on one side like a plate; in the hollow part they put the oil, mixed with some dry grass, which serves for the purpose of a wick. Both sexes occasionally warm themselves over one of these lamps, by placing it between their legs, under their garments, and sitting over it for some minutes.

† Their implements for hunting and fishing are ingeniously made of wood and bone, varying but little from those used by the Greenlanders. The only difference is in the point of the missile dart, which, in some of them, does not exceed an inch in length; but those of the Greenlanders, as we are informed by Crantz, are about eighteen inches in length. These darts are usually made of fir, of the length of about four feet. The natives throw these darts to the distance of eighty or ninety yards, with great velocity and precision. These people are exceedingly expert in striking fish, both in the sea, and in rivers. They are also adepts in the different modes of fishery with hooks, lines, nets, and wears. Their hooks are formed of bone, and their lines of twisted sinews.

these regions; as the inhabitants destroy these animals for their food and attire. Sea-horses, however, are found in great abundance about the ice; and the sea-otter is hardly any where to be met with but in this sea. Our navigators sometimes saw an animal that blew after the manner of whales: it was larger than a seal, but it resembled that animal about the head; its colour was white, with dark spots interspersed. It was probably the *manati*, or sea-cow*.

The few land birds that they observed appeared to be the same as those they had been accustomed to see in Europe; but there may perhaps be many others which they had not an opportunity of observing. A beautiful bird was shot in the woods at Norton Sound, which is sometimes found in England, known by the appellation of chatterer. Among the birds seen by the people belonging to the ships, were the bull-finch, the yellow-finch, the wood-pecker, and the tit-mouse.

Their excursions and observations being wholly confined to the sea-coast, they acquired little knowledge of the animals or vegetables of the country. There are no deer at Oonalashka, or any of the neighbouring islands; nor have they any dogs, or other domestic animals. Foxes, and weasels were the only quadrupeds perceived by our navigators; but the natives informed them that they had also hares, and the *marmottas*, mentioned by Krasheninikoff. Hence it appears that the inhabitants are indebted to the sea, and the rivers, for the greatest share of their food. From the same sources they derive their wood for building, and other necessary purposes; for not a tree is to be seen growing upon any of the islands, nor on the neighbouring coast of the continent. Insects and reptiles were not numerous; a few musquitoes and lizards were observed†.

Plants are found in great variety at Oonalashka; many of which are also common in Europe, as well as Newfoundland, and other parts of America: some of them are also found in Kamtschatka. Of these the *saramne*, or lily root is the principal; it is about the size of a root of garlick, and composed of a small number of cloves and grains: when boiled, it appears like saloop, and the taste is thought agreeable by some persons. Among the food of the natives, some other wild roots are entitled to a degree of approbation; as the stalk of a plant, resembling Angelica; with berries of different sorts, such as cranberries, hurtle-berries, bramber-berries, and heath-berries. Also a small red berry, which in Newfoundland is termed the partridge-berry; and another brown berry, not generally known. The last has the flavour of a sloe, but is unlike it in every other respect: eaten in a considerable quantity, it is very astringent ‡.

The Oonalashkans bury their dead on the tops of hills, and raise a kind of hillock over the grave. One of the natives, who attended Captain Cook in a country jaunt, pointed out several of these repositories of the dead. One of them, by the side of a road, had a heap of stones over it; and all who passed it added another to the heap. Several stone hillocks were also observed, which seemed to have been artificially raised; some of which appeared to be of great antiquity. Respecting their notions of a deity, and a future state, no information could be procured; nor of their diversions or amusements. They are cheerful and friendly to each other, and treated our navigators with the utmost civility.

The Russians would form no amorous attachments with their women, on account of their not being Christians. The English, however, were

* Water-fowls, both in quantity and variety, are less common here than in the northern parts of the Atlantic ocean. Some, indeed, were seen here, which our navigators did not remember to have noticed in other countries: particularly the *alca monochroa* of Steller, and a black and white duck, which they apprehend was different from the stone-duck, described by Krasheninikoff in his history of Kamtschatka. It is remarkable that penguins, which are frequently observed in many parts of the world, are not to be met with in this sea. Albatrosses are also extremely scarce here.

† With respect to the drift-wood on the shores of these islands, little doubt can be entertained of its coming from America; for, though there may be none on the neighbouring coast, a sufficient quantity may grow farther up the country, which may be broken loose by torrents in the spring, and brought down to the sea. Large quantities may also be wafted from the woody coasts, though situated at a greater distance.

‡ Several plants which were serviceable to our navigators, were rejected by the Russians and the natives: among these were pea-tops, wild purslain, cresses, a sort of scurvy-grass, and a few others; they partook of these, however, either in soups or in salads. The vallies and low grounds abound in grass, which grows very thick, and to a great length: insomuch that our navigators were of opinion, that cattle might subsist in Oonalashka in every season of the year, without being housed. The soil, in many places, seems capable of producing grain and vegetables; but, at present, the Russian traders, and the natives, seem contented with the spontaneous productions of nature.

lea

...e scrupulous, and some of them had reason to ...pent, that the women of Oonalashka encou...ged their addresses; for they suffered by a ...lady which was not wholly unknown in that ...untry. The natives are also subject to the ...ncer, and few of them enjoy a long life. Our ...vigators did not see a man or woman that they ...pposed had attained the age of sixty years, and ...ey beheld very few who seemed to have sur...ved fifty.

Though the inhabitants on this north-western side of America, resemble the Equimaux and Greenlanders in person, dress, weapons, &c. our adventurers were much less struck with that, than with the affinity of the dialects of the Greenlanders and Esquimaux, and those of Oonalashka and Norton's Sound. Hence there is reason to suppose, that all these nations are of the same extraction.

SECTION XXXI.

...parture from Samganoodha—Amoghta—An elevated Rock—Repass the Stratt between Oonolashka and Onella—Proceed to the South—A Man killed on board the Discovery—Mowee discovered—Visited by the Natives—Visit from Tereeoboo, a Chief—Owhyhee discovered—An Eclipse—Eulogium on the Natives of Owhyhee—Visits from the Islanders—Joined by the Discovery—Mr. Bligh examines Karakakooa—Anchor in the Bay.—Description of Karakakooa Bay—Many of the Natives surround the Ships—Despotic Authority of the Chiefs—Receive a Visit from Koah—Description of the Morai at Kakooah—Offering to Captain Cook at the Morai—Observatories erected—The Spot of which is tabooed—Method of curing Meat in the Tropical Climates—Society of Priests discovered—Ceremony at the Reception of Captain Cook—Arrival of Tereeoboo—The inhabitants reduced to Obedience by firing a Musquet—Remarkable Ceremony—Visit from Tereeoboo.

ON the 26th of October our navigators sailed from Samganoodha harbour, when they ...ered to the westward. They intended to pro...d to the Sandwich Islands, to pass some of the ...ter months there, and then advance in their ...gress to Kamtschatka, so as to arrive there ...out the middle of May in the ensuing summer. ...is resolution being formed, Captain Cook gave ...ptain Clerk orders how to proceed, in case a ...eration should happen: Sandwich Islands ...ng appointed for the first place of rendezvous; ...d Petropaulowska, in Kamtschatka for the ...ond.

Having got out of the harbour, they were ...ried to the western part of Oonolashka by the ...ning. Here the wind was at south, and blew ...heavy squalls, accompanied with rain, hail, ...d snow. In the morning of the 28th, the ...ength of it was much abated; but towards the ...ning it increased to a very hard gale, attended ...h rain. At six in the morning of the 29th, ...y discovered land, which they supposed to be ...e island of Amoghta. Steering to the north...t, they discovered, at eleven o'clock, a rock ...ated like a tower. About three in the afternoon, they shortened sail, and hauled the wind, being unable to get through the strait between Oonolashka and Onella before night. On the 30th, about three in the afternoon, they got through the strait, Cape Providence bearing west-south-west.

On the 2d of November, the wind was south: in the evening a violent storm occasioned them to bring to. Several guns were fired by the Discovery, which were immediately answered by her consort; and she joined her again the next morning at ten. On the 7th a cormorant flew many times round the ship: as these birds seldom go far from land, it was supposed there was some at no great distance, though none was then to be seen. Having but little wind in the afternoon, Captain Clerke came on board with some unpleasant intelligence: he informed the captain that, the second night after they departed from Samganoodha, the main tack of the Discovery gave way, when one man was killed, and the boatswain, with two or three others, wounded.

On the 26th, at day-break, land was discovered, extending from south-south-east to west. They stood for it, and now perceived that their discovery

discovery of the group of the Sandwich Islands had been very imperfect, as those which they had visited in their progress northward, all lie to the leeward of their present station. Unable to weather the island, they bore up, and ranged to the westward. They saw people on many parts of the shore, with several houses and plantations. The country appeared to be well wooded and watered: the latter was particularly evident, as the streams, in various places, were seen falling into the sea.

It being extremely necessary to procure an ample supply of provisions at these islands, which could not have been accomplished if a free trade with the natives were to be allowed, Captain Cook issued an order, prohibiting all persons from trading except those appointed by himself or Captain Clerke: and those were under limitations of trading only for provisions. Injunctions were also published against the introduction of women into the ships, except on certain stipulated conditions; but anticipation had prevented the good effect of this injunction, the evil having already been almost universally adopted.

Some canoes came off about noon, and supplied our adventurers with a quantity of cuttle-fish, in exchange for nails and pieces of iron. Of fruit and roots they brought very little, but said they had plenty of them in their island, as well as of hogs and fowls. The evening being clear, they supposed the westernmost land that they could see, to be an island, distinct from that off which they now were. Having no doubt that the natives would return to the ships the next day, with the produce of their country, they plyed off the whole night, and stood close in shore the next morning. At first they had few visitors, but, towards noon, many of them made their appearance, bringing with them bread-fruit, potatoes, tarro, plantains, and small pigs, all of which they exchanged for nails and iron too the Europeans having few other articles to di pose of.

In the afternoon of the 30th, when they w off the north-east end of the island, some m canoes came off to the ship. Most of these pertained to Terreeoboo, a chief who came one of them. He made Captain Cook a pres of two or three pigs; and a little fruit was p cured by bartering with the other people. the expiration of about two hours, they departed, except seven or eight of their compa who chose to remain on board. A double sail canoe arrived soon after; which they tow astern the whole night. In the evening, other island was discovered to the windwa which, among the natives, was known by appellation of *Owhyhee:* that which they h been off for several days, was called *Mowee.*

On the 1st of December, at eight in the mo ing, Owhyhee extended from south-east south-west. Perceiving they could fe Owhyhee, they stood for it; when such of th visitors as came from Mowee, not choosing accompany them, thought proper to embark their canoes, and went ashore. On the they saw, with surprise, the summits of mountains of Owhyhee covered with snow. A proaching the shore, some of the natives ca off to them, who at first appeared a little s but were easily prevailed on to go on board. length they were even induced to return to island, and bring off such articles as were wa ed. They had plenty of visitors after th people had reached the shore, who brought w them a tolerable supply of pigs, with a reas able quantity of fruit and roots. On the they again traded with the natives, but recei no very considerable addition to their stock provisions*.

Having kept at a reasonable distance from ro

* Captain Cook having procured an ample quantity of sugar, and knowing that a decoction of it made a very palatable beer, he ordered some of it to be brewed for their general use. But when this beverage was prepared, not one of the crew would deign to drink it. The Captain having had no other motive for recommending this liquor, than that of preserving their spirits for a colder climate, neither exerted his authority, nor had recourse to persuasion to induce them to drink it; but he thought proper to order that no grog should be served in either of the ships. The Captain and his officers constantly drank this sugar-cane beer, whenever materials could be procured for br ing it. Some hops, which were on board, added greatly the perfection of it, and it was doubtless extremely wh some; though the inconsiderate seamen alledged that it injurious to their health.

Innovations on board a ship, though ever so much to advantage of the seamen, are sure to incur their dis probation. Portable soup, and sour-krout, were at f condemned by them as improper food for human bei Few commanders have introduced more useful varieti food into their ships than Captain Cook has done.

coast till the 13th, they stood in again, more to windward; and, after having traded with the natives who came off to them, they returned to sea. The wind continued at south-east the 16th; on the 17th it was variable; and on the greatest part of the 18th it was continually veering. Sometimes it blew in squalls, and sometimes it was calm.

At noon, on the 20th, the south-east point bore south, at the distance of three leagues; in the afternoon they were visited by some of the natives, who came off in their canoes, bringing with them a few pigs and plantains; the latter were highly acceptable, as our adventurers had been without vegetables for several days: but this supply was so inconsiderable, that it was hardly sufficient for the consumption of a day; they therefore stood in the next morning, till within four miles of the land, when a number of canoes came off, laden with provisions. Trade was then carried on between the parties till four in the afternoon; when, having obtained a tolerable supply, they made sail, stretching off to the northward*.

At eight in the morning of the 22d, they tacked to the southward, and entertained hopes of weathering the island. They would indeed have succeeded, if a calm had not ensued, and committed them to the mercy of a swell which impelled them towards the land, from which they were not above the distance of two leagues. Some light puffs of wind, however, removed them from all danger. While they were becalmed, some islanders came off with hogs, fowls, and fruit. One of the canoes contained a goose, which, with regard to magnitude, was hardly equal to a Muscovy duck. The plumage was of a dark grey, and the bill and legs were black.

After purchasing the articles which the natives had brought off, they made sail, and stretched to the north. At midnight, they tacked, and stood to the south-east. Supposing the Discovery would see them tack, the signal was omitted; but it afterwards appeared that she did not see them, and continued standing to the north; for the next morning, at day-light, she was not to be seen: but, as the weather was now hazy, they could not see far; it was therefore probable that the Discovery might be following them. At six in the evening, the southernmost part of the island bore south-west, the nearest shore about seven miles distant: consequently they had succeeded in their endeavours in getting to the windward of the island†.

On the 30th they began to be in want of fresh provision, but a calm prevented them from approaching the shore. A breeze, however, sprung up at midnight, which enabled them to stand in for the land at day-break. At ten the islanders visited them, bringing a quantity of fruit and roots, and only three small pigs. Desirous of traffic, our adventurers brought to, but were shortly interrupted with excessive rain. They were, indeed, too far from the shore; nor could they venture to go nearer, as they could not, for a moment, depend upon the wind's continuing where it was. Before day-break, on the first of January, the atmosphere was laden with heavy clouds, and the new year was ushered in with a heavy shower. At ten, however, the rain ceased, and the sky became clear‡.

---

thers have, indeed, been driven to the necessity of trying uch experiments. But it was by certain deviations from stablished practice, that he was enabled, in a great degree, o preserve his people from the scurvy, which has probably estroyed more British sailors in their peaceful voyages, han the enemy in military expeditions.

* The people of this island were extremely candid and ingenuous in their dealings with our navigators. It is but justice to observe, that they never attempted to over-reach or impose upon them in their respective exchanges, nor ever basely condescended to be guilty of a single theft.

† The Discovery was still invisible; but as the wind was favourable for her to follow them, they naturally expected that she would shortly join them. At length, however, it was conjectured that she was gone to leeward, in order to meet them that way, not having been able to weather the north-east point of the island.

‡ Being now about five miles from the shore, some canoes arrived with hogs, fruit, and roots. They traded with the inhabitants till three in the afternoon, when having procured a tolerable supply, they made sail, in order to proceed to the lee side of the island, in search of the Discovery. They stretched to the eastward till midnight, when the wind favoured them; and they went upon the other tack. The 2d, 3d, and 4th of January were spent in running down the south-east side of the island, standing off and on during the nights. The natives frequently came off to them, at the distance of five leagues from the shore, but never ventured to bring much with them; either from a fear of losing their articles in the sea, or from the uncertainty of the market. Our adventurers procured from them a quantity of salt, of a most excellent quality.

In the morning of the 5th, they passed the south point of the island, on which a considerable village is situated; many of whose inhabitants thronged off to the ship with hogs and women. It was impossible to prevent the latter from coming on board; they were strangers to delicacy, and even to decency, seeming to have visited the strangers with no other view than to make a tender of their persons.

Possessing a quantity of salt, our adventurers only purchased such hogs as were large enough for pickling; but they could seldom procure any that exceeded the weight of sixty pounds. They had, fortunately, some vegetables remaining, for they were now scantily supplied with any of those productions; and from the appearance of that part of the country, it seemed incapable of producing them. The explosion of a volcano appeared to have made general devastation in the neighbourhood. The natives having now left them, they ran a few miles down the coast in the evening, and passed the night in standing off and on.

The next morning they were again visited by the natives, who came laden with articles of commerce as before. Between ten and eleven, they had the pleasure of seeing the Discovery coming round the south point of the island, and she joined them about one. Captain Clerke immediately came on board the Resolution, and informed Captain Cook, that, having cruised four or five days where they were separated, he plied round the east side of the island, but meeting with unfavourable winds, he had been driven to some distance from the coast. One of the islanders, at his own request, continued on board the whole time, though opportunities presented themselves of leaving the ship.

On the 8th, at day-break, they perceived that the currents had carried them back considerably to windward, and that they were off the south-west point of the island: in consequence of which they brought to, that the inhabitants might have an opportunity of trading with them. Having four men and ten women on board, who came the preceding day, the company of the females was found very disgusting to Captain Cook; they therefore stood in shore, on the 9th, about noon, in expectation of getting rid of their guests: when, some canoes coming off, they embraced that opportunity of sending them away *.

The Bay of Karakakooa is situated on the west side of the island of Owhyhee. It extends about a mile in depth, and is bounded by two low points of land, at the distance of half a league from each other. On the north point, which is barren, stands the village of Kowrowa. A more considerable village, named Kahoora, appears in the bottom of the bay, near a stately grove of cocoa-trees. A high rocky cliff, inaccessible from the sea-shore, rises between them. Bordering on the south-side of the coast, the land has a rugged appearance; beyond which the country rises gradually, and abounds with cultivated inclosures. The habitations of the people are irregularly and plentifully scattered about in the vicinity. Our navigators moored at the north-side of the bay, and within a quarter of a mile of the shore.

The inhabitants, perceiving their intention of anchoring here, came off in great numbers, to testify their extreme joy on the occasion, by singing, shouting, and the most extravagant gestures. The decks, sides, and riggings of the ships are bounded with them. Women and children, who could not procure canoes, swam round them in great multitudes; some of whom, being unable to get on board, amused themselves by playing in the water.

Among the chiefs who came on board the Resolution, was a young man, named Pareea, who was generally acknowledged as a person of great authority. He informed Captain Cook that he was a *Jakanee* †, to the sovereign of the island, who was then engaged on a military expedition at Mowee, and was expected to return

* A few canoes came off to them with some hogs on the 13th, but they had no vegetables, which were now much wanted. On the 16th canoes arrived from all quarters: before ten o'clock in the morning, a thousand persons were supposed to be about the two ships, most of the canoes being crowded with people, and laden with hogs, and other productions of the island. Our navigators were not apprehensive that any hostile measures were projected against them, as none of these people had a weapon with them of any description. Trade and curiosity were their only inducements. One of these visitors, however, took a boat's rudder from the ship, but he was not detected till it was too late to recover the pilfered article. Thinking this circumstance would afford a proper opportunity, of shewing these people the use of fire-arms, Captain Cook ordered two or three musquets, and as many four-pounders, to be fired over the canoe which carried off the rudder. But as the shot was not intended to take effect, the surrounding multitude of natives were rather more surprised than frightened.

At the approach of night, the greater part of their visitors retired to the shore; but several of them, at their own earnest request, were permitted to sleep on board. It afterwards appeared that curiosity was not their only motive, as several articles were missing the next morning: the captain, however, in consequence of these, and other petty depredations, came to a resolution not to admit so many visitors to continue with them on any future night.

† It was not clearly understood whether this was a name of office, or whether it was expressive of some degree of affinity.

a few days. Some presents from Captain Cook obtained his friendship, and he was found extremely serviceable. They had not been long at anchor, when the Discovery had so many people hanging on one side, that she was observed to heel considerably; and the crouds could not be prevented from pressing into her. Apprehensive of disagreeable consequences, Captain Cook expostulated with Pareea on the injury the vessel might sustain, when he instantly cleared her of her incumberances, and dispersed the canoes that surrounded her*.

Both these chiefs were prepossessing, not only in their figures, but in their countenances. Kaneena, whose portrait was drawn by Mr. Webber, was an extraordinary character. His height was about six feet, his features regular and expressive; his deportment easy, firm, and graceful, and his eyes dark and brilliant.

But though the inhabitants had hitherto acted fairly and honestly, the case was now exceedingly altered: the multitude of islanders in every part of the ships, afforded frequent opportunities of pilfering without danger of discovery; and even if detected must have escaped with impunity from their inferiority in number. To the encouragement of their chiefs, this change might also be attributed; for, as the booty was often traced to the possession of some great man, little doubt can be entertained that these depredations were made at their instigation.

When the Resolution had got into her station, Pareea and Kaneena brought a third chief on board, whose name was Koah. He was represented as a priest, and one who had early distinguished himself as a warrior. He was a little old man, of an emaciated figure, with sore eyes, and his body covered with a leprous scurf, occasioned by the immoderate use of *ava*. Being led into the cabin, he ceremoniously approached Captain Cook, threw a piece of red cloth over his shoulders, and, retreating a few paces, made an offering of a small pig, after delivering a long and elaborate harangue. At the conclusion of this ceremony, Koah dined with the captain, eating plentifully of the viands that were set before him; but, like many of the islanders in these seas, he could hardly be prevailed on to taste wine or spirits a second time. In the evening, Captain Cook, Mr. King, and Mr. Baily, accompanied him on shore. When they landed on the beach, they were received by four men, carrying each a wand tipped with dogs' hair, and audibly pronouncing the word Orone†. The crowd which had been collected on the shore, retired at their approach; and not an individual was to be seen, except a few lying prostrate on the ground, near the humble mansions of the adjacent village.

Here it may be necessary to describe the *Morai*, or burying place, situated on the beach of Kahooa. It consisted of a solid square of stones, of the length of forty yards, the breadth of twenty, and the height of fourteen. It was flat on the top, and surrounded by a wooden rail; on which were exposed the skulls of those wretched captives who had been sacrificed on the death of their chiefs. A ruinous wooden building appeared in the centre of the area, connected on each side by a stone wall, dividing the whole space into two equal parts. Five poles, of twenty feet in height, supported an irregular scaffold, on the side next the country; and on that towards the sea, two small houses presented themselves, having a covered communication‡.

They now beheld, advancing in solemn procession, and entering the top of the Morai, ten men carrying a live hog, and a large extended

* Hence it appears that the chiefs have a despotic authority over the inferior people. A similar instance happened on board the Resolution. When the crowd impeded the necessary business of the ship, application was made to Kaneena, a chief; who, as soon as the grievance was mentioned, ordered the natives immediately to quit the vessel: in an instant the offenders all leaped overboard, except one person, who loitered behind, and seemed unwilling to obey. Kaneena, enraged at this contempt of his authority, took hold of him immediately, and threw him into the sea.

† Captain Cook was generally known by this appellation, among the natives of Owhyee. It was also a title of rank and generation.

‡ Koah conducted them to the top of this structure; at the entrance of which they saw two large wooden images, with distorted features, having a long piece of carved wood, descending from the top of their heads, of a conical form inverted: the other parts were covered with red cloth. Here Captain Cook was received by a tall young man, with a long beard, who solemnly presented him to the images, chanting a kind of hymn, in which he was accompanied by Koah. They were then conducted to the side of the Morai, where five poles were erected: at the foot of which twelve images were ranged in a semicircular form, the middle figure having an elevated table before it, on which a putrid hog was extended; and under it, some potatoes, plantains, bread-fruit, and pieces of sugar-cane. The Captain was ushered to this spot by Koah; who, taking down the disgusting hog, held it towards him; when having again addressed him in a vehement and tedious speech, he permitted it to fall upon the ground.

piece

piece of red cloth. Being advanced a few paces, they stopped and prostrated themselves; and Kairreekeea, the tall young man, advancing towards them, received the cloth, and presented it to Koah, who wrapped it round the captain, and made him an offering of the hog*.

They were next conducted into the other division of the Morai, where a space of twelve feet square, was sunk about a yard below the level of the area. Descending into this, the captain was instantly seated between two idols; Koah supporting one of his arms, and Mr. King the other. A second procession of natives now arrived with a baked hog, a pudding, some bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and other vegetables. As they drew near, Kaireekeeah placed himself before them, and presented the hog to Captain Cook, in the usual manner; chanting as before, and regular responses were uttered by his companions †.

This strange ceremony being concluded, they quitted the Morai; Captain Cook distributed among the populace, some iron, and other articles; with which they were highly gratified. The men with wands ushered them, in procession, to the boats, repeating sentences, as before. Most of the natives then retired, and the remaining few prostrated themselves as our navigators passed along the shore. They immediately went on board, full of the idea of what they had seen, and well satisfied with the generous dispositions of their new friends. The respect paid to the person of the captain, was so flattering as to be almost bordering on adoration.

The next morning Mr. King went on shore, with a guard of eight marines, having received orders to erect an observatory; and to make choice of such a situation as might enable him to superintend and protect the waterers, and the other working parties that might be on shore. Observing a convenient spot for this purpose, Pareea offered to exert his power in their behalf, and proposed pulling down some houses that would have obstructed their observations. The generous offer was, however, declined, and a potatoe field adjoining to the Morai, was fixed on; and, to prevent the intrusion of the natives, the place was immediately consecrated by the priests, by fixing their wands round the wall which inclosed it.

This interdiction the natives call *taboo*, a word of very extensive operation; but in this instance it procured our adventurers more privacy than they could have wished. No canoes attempted to land near them till they had obtained the permission. The men indeed, at their request, would bring provisions into the field; but all their endeavours could not prevail upon the women to come near them. This circumstance afforded matter of amusement for their friends on board, who were daily visited by multitudes of people (particularly of females) who were so extremely numerous that they were often obliged to clear the vessel, that they might have room for the performance of their necessary duties. Two or three hundred women were sometimes compelled to jump instantly into the sea, where they continued to swim and play till they could be re-admitted.

Pareea and Koah left our navigators on the 19th of January, to attend Tereeoboo, who had landed on a distant part of the island. The pre-

* Captain Cook was now whimsically situated aloft, swathed in red woollen, and tottering on a rotten scaffolding. In this ludicrous character, he was entertained with the chanting of Koah and Kaireekea, sometimes in concert, and sometimes alternately. While they were thus vocally employed, Koah let the hog drop, and he and the captain immediately descended. Koah then conducted the captain to the images before mentioned, to each of which he snapped his fingers, sneering contemptuously at them as he passed them. He then presented him to the figure in the centre, which from its red covering appeared to be in the highest estimation. Before this venerable personage he prostrated himself; and kissed it, requesting Captain Cook would follow his example. In this particular, and through the whole of the ceremony, the captain was obedient to the directions of this chief.

† The offering being performed, the natives seated themselves opposite to them, and began the dissection of the baked hog: they also engaged in the operation of breaking the cocoa-nuts; and peeling the vegetables. Others were employed in brewing the ava, by chewing it according to the practice of the Friendly Islands. Kaireekeeah, the adopted the same delicate office of chewing part of the kernel of a cocoa-nut, and wrapped it in a piece of cloth with which he deliberately rubbed the Captain's face, hea hands, arms, and shoulders. The *ava* was then hand round, and when every one had enjoyed a taste of it, Ko and Pareea pulled the flesh of the hog in pieces, and we in the very act of putting some of it into their mouths Mr. King had no particular objection to being fed by Pare who was remarkably cleanly in his person; but when a pie was presented by Koah to Captain Cook, he could n swallow a morsel of it, the putrid hog being uppermost his recollection; and the reluctance was considerably i creased by the old man's excess of civility in chewing for him.

cess of curing the flesh of animals in tropical climates, by salting, though long thought impracticable, is then particularly mentioned; but should we introduce the whole of the detail, we might probably incur the imputation of being too digressive in our department.

Our navigators had not been long settled at the Observatory, before they discovered in their neighbourhood the habitations of a society of priests, whose regular attendance at the Morai had much excited their curiosity. Their dwellings were erected round a pond, inclosed within a grove of cocoa-trees, which separated them from the beach, and the other part of the village, and gave the situation an air of religious seclusion. Hearing of these circumstances, Captain Cook resolved to pay them a visit; and, supposing the manner of his reception would probably be singular, he took Mr. Webber with him, to enable him to give a drawing of the scene.

When he arrived at the beach, he was conducted to *Harre-no-Orono*, or the house of Orono. Arriving at this sacred place, he was seated at the foot of a wooden idol. Here Mr. King again performed the office of supporting one of his arms. He was then arrayed in red cloth, and Kaireekeea, with twelve priests, presented a pig with the usual solemnities. The pig was then strangled, and thrown into the embers of a fire, which had been provided for that purpose. When the hair was singed off, a second offering was made, accompanied with chanting: after which the deceased animal was placed, for some time, under Captain Cook's nose; the body being stretched, and a cocoa-nut placed at his feet. This part of the ceremony being ended, the performers seated themselves; and the *ava* was brewed and distributed. A baked hog was then brought in, and they were fed in the manner before related*.

Our Europeans indeed had less reason to approve of the behaviour of the warrior chiefs, than of that of the priests. In their intercourse with the warlike chiefs, they always found them sufficiently attentive to their own interests; and, exclusive of their propensity to stealing, they practised other artifices equally dishonourable. In the following instance, a circumstance which we mention with regret, Koah was too principally concerned. The chiefs, when they make presents of hogs, are always generously rewarded. In consequence of which, our navigators were supplied with more than they could consume. On these occasions Koah, who daily attended them, requested that he might have those which they did not absolutely want. A pig was one day presented to them by a man whom Koah introduced as a chief, which they knew to be the same pig that had, a short time before, been given to Koah. Suspecting the imposition, they found, upon further enquiry, that the pretended chief was one of the common people; and, from a variety of other concurrent circumstances, they were fully convinced that they had frequently been the dupes of similar imposition.

On the 24th they were not a little surprised to find, that no canoes were suffered to put off from the shore, and that the natives confined themselves to their houses. At length, however, they were informed that the bay was tabooed, and all intercourse with our Europeans interdicted, on account of the arrival of Tereoboo. As this was totally unexpected, the ships were consequently deprived of their usual supply of vegetables.

On the 25th, our navigators endeavoured, by threats and promises, to induce the inhabitants to approach them: and they so far succeeded in their attempts, that some of them were venturing to put off, but a chief was observed to be extremely active in driving them away. To make him desist, a musquet was instantly fired

* While our navigators continued in the bay, whenever Captain Cook came on shore, he was attended by one of these priests, who went before him, proclaiming that the *Orono* was landed, and ordering the inhabitants to prostrate themselves. The same person also attended him constantly on the water, standing in the bow of the boat, with a wand in his hand, giving notice of his approach to the natives who were in canoes, on which they instantly ceased paddling, and fell on their faces till he had passed.

But the civilities of this society extended beyond mere ceremony and parade; the party on shore were daily supplied by them with hogs and vegetables, more than sufficient for their subsistence; and canoes, laden with provisions, were regularly dispatched to the ships. Nothing, in return, was either demanded or intimated. Their manner of bestowing favours seemed more like a conscientious discharge of a religious duty, than the mere result of liberality. On their asking to whom they were indebted for this profusion of munificence, they were informed, that it was at the expence of Kaoo, the chief priest, and grandfather to Kaireekeea, who was then attending the sovereign of the island.

over his head, which had the desired effect, and refreshments were soon after to be had as usual. In the afternoon the ships were privately visited by Terreeoboo, attended only by one canoe, which contained his wife and family. He continued on board till about ten o'clock, when he returned to the village of Kowrowa.

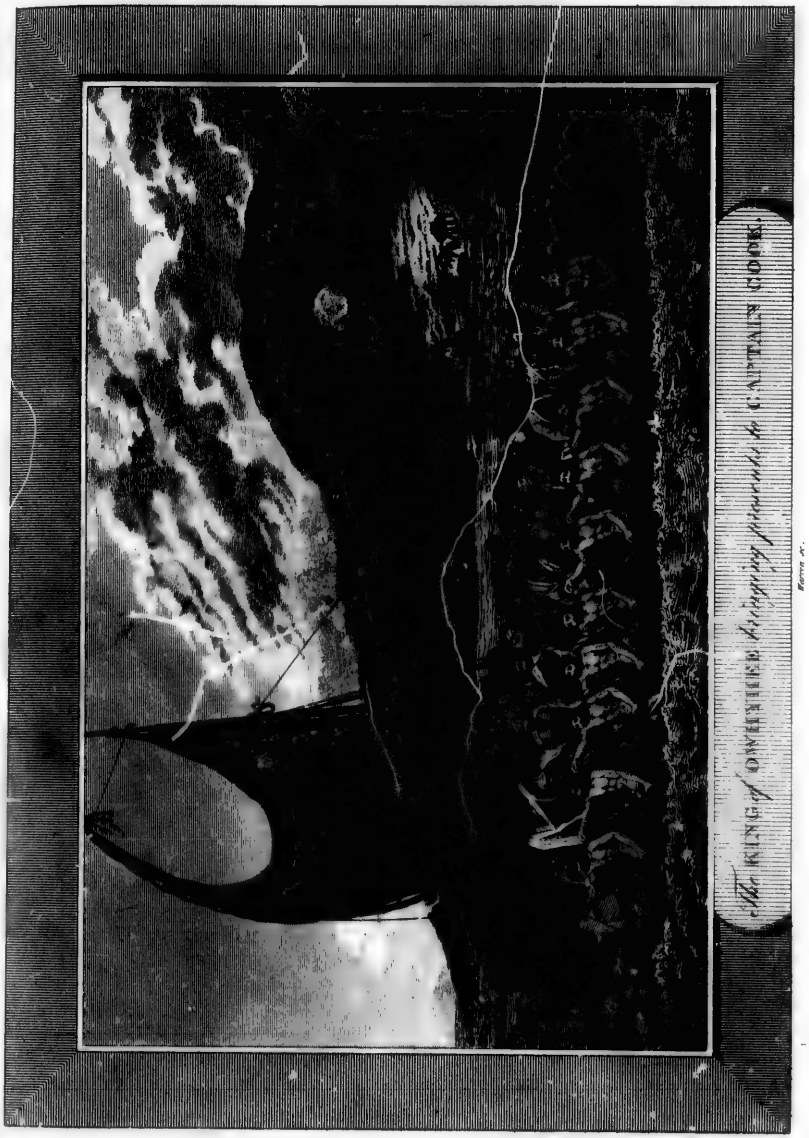
On the following day the king, in a large canoe, with his attendants in two others, paddled in great state from the village towards the ships. In this magnificent display, Terreeoboo, and his chiefs, were in the first canoe, arrayed in splendid feathered cloaks and helmets, and armed with daggers and long spears. In the second came the venerable Kaoo, the chief priest, accompanied by his brethren, with enormous idols exhibited on red cloth. These monstrous figures were made of wicker-work, and curiously ornamented with feathers of a variety of colours: each eye was a large pearl oyster, with a black nut placed in the centre of it; a double row of the fangs of dogs was stationed in each of their mouths, which, like the rest of their features, seemed wonderfully distorted. The third canoe was filled with hogs and vegetables. As they proceeded, the priests chanted their hymns with great solemnity. They afterwards paddled round the vessels, and advanced towards the shore, at the beach where our navigators were stationed.

When Mr. King perceived them approaching, he ordered their little guard to receive the sovereign; and Captain Cook perceiving he was inclined to go on shore, went thither also, and arrived nearly at the same time. They were then conducted into the tent, where the king took his seat with great solemnity; soon after which he rose up, and gracefully threw over the Captain's shoulders, the feathered cloak that he himself wore, placed a helmet upon his head, and presented him with a curious fan. Five or six other cloaks, all rich and valuable, were spread at the Captain's feet *.

The formalities being ended, Captain Cook conducted Terreeoboo, and several of his chiefs, on board the Resolution. They were respectfully received; and the captain, as a compensation for the feathered cloak, put a linen shirt upon his sovereign, and girt his own hanger round him. All this time, not a canoe was suffered to appear in the bay; and those natives who did not remain within their huts, lay prostrate on the ground.

* Four large hogs were then brought forward by his Majesty's attendants, with bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and sugar-canes. The ceremony was concluded by the King's exchanging names with Captain Cook, which, among all the Islanders of the Pacific Ocean, is esteemed the strongest pledge of friendship.

A procession of priests now advanced, followed by a train of people leading large hogs; and others laden with plantains, potatoes, &c. By the countenance and gestures of Kaireekeea, they perceived the venerable personage who headed the procession, was the chief priest, on whose bounty they had so long subsisted. Having a piece of red cloth in his hands, he wrapped it round the shoulders of Captain Cook, and, in the usual form, presented him a pig. He was then placed near his Majesty; and Kaireekeea, with his attendants, began their vocal ceremonies; Kaoo, and the chiefs, assisting in the responses.



THE KING of OWHYHEE presenting a CAPTAIN COOK.

Plate V.

SECTION XXXII.

Hospitality of the Natives—Addicted to thieving—Conduct the Visitors up the Country—Description of a Boxing Match—Death of William Watman—Attention of the Priests at his Funeral—Rail and Images of the Morai purchased—Natives inquisitive respecting their Departure—The supposed Object of their Voyage—Buffoonery of one of the Natives—Magnificent Presents from Terreeoboo—The Natives wish Mr. King to remain among them—The Vessels quit the Island—The Resolution damaged in a Gale—Mysterious Behaviour of the Islanders—Theft committed on board the Discovery—The Thieves pursued—Scuffle between the Natives, and our Navigators—The Pinnace attacked and plundered—Attempt at the Observatory—The Discovery's Cutter stolen from the Buoy—Methods pursued for its Recovery—Captain Cook invites the King and his two Sons on board—Their going opposed by his Wife and the Chiefs—A Contest on the Occasion—One of the Chiefs killed—The Consequences—A Chief threatens Captain Cook, and is shot by him—A general Attack ensues—Death of Captain Cook—Sketch of his Character.

THE civil and inoffensive behaviour of the inhabitants, effaced every idea of danger among them. Our navigators did not hesitate to trust themselves among them at all times, and in all situations. The officers ventured frequently up the country, either singly, or in small parties, and sometimes continued out the whole night. To relate their various acts of civility and generosity, would be an endless task. Upon all occasions, they were anxious to afford every assistance in their power, and appeared happy if the tender of their services was accepted. Many innocent arts were practised to attract their notice, or to delay their departure. They were solicited by some to take a draught of the milk of cocoa-nuts, or partake of what their humble huts afforded; and by others they were encircled by a company of young women, whose skill and agility entertained them with songs and dances.

But though their good-nature and gentleness were highly pleasing, like all the other islanders of these seas, they had a propensity to stealing. This was a distressing circumstance to our Europeans, as it sometimes compelled them to exercise severity, which they would gladly have avoided. Some expert swimmers were once detected under the ships, drawing out the clinching nails from the sheathing. This practice was thought so injurious to the vessels, that it was deemed expedient to fire shot at the offenders; but this punishment they thought proper to evade, by diving under the ship's bottom. It was therefore thought highly necessary to make an example of one of them, by flogging him on board the Discovery.

A large party of gentlemen, from the two ships, set out, about this time, on an excursion into the country, to examine into natural productions; and afforded Kaoo a fresh opportunity of exercising his civility and generosity. As soon as he was informed of their departure, he sent a considerable quantity of provisions, with orders that due attention and assistance should be granted them, by the inhabitants of those districts through which they were to pass.

Captain Clerke, who was generally confined on board by ill health, paid Terreeoboo his first visit at his residence on shore. He was received with the usual formalities on these occasions; and, on his return, (though the visit was unexpected) he received a present of thirty large hogs, with an abundant supply of vegetables.

As our Europeans had not seen any of their sports or athletic exercises, the natives, at their request, entertained them in the evening with a Boxing Match. Though in many respects these rencounters were inferior to those exhibited at the Friendly Islands, a short account of them may probably be acceptable*.

William Watman, a seaman of the gunner's crew,

* A vast concourse of people were assembled on an even spot of ground at a little distance from their tents. A long space was left vacant in the centre of them, at the upper end of which the judges were seated under three standards; from which hung slips of cloth, of various colours, the skins of two wild geese, some small birds, and a few bunches of feathers. The sports being ready to begin, a signal was given by the judges, and instantly two combatants appeared: they advanced slowly, drawing up their feet very high behind, and rubbing their hands along the soals. As they drew near

crew, died this day; this event is the more particularly mentioned, as death had not been common among them. He was pretty far advanced in years, and much respected for his attachment to Captain Cook. He served twenty-one years as a marine; and then entered as a seaman on board the Resolution in 1772.

At the request of Terreeoboo, the remains of this worthy seaman were buried on the *morai*, with great ceremony and solemnity; old Kaoo, and his brethren, attending as spectators, and behaving with the greatest decorum. When the people began to fill up the grave, they approached it with reverential awe, throwing in a dead pig, some plantains, and cocoa nuts. For three successive nights they surrounded it, sacrificing hogs, and performing their accustomed ceremonies of hymns and prayers, which continued till the morning. A post was erected at the head of the grave, and on it a piece of board was nailed, relating the name and age of the deceased, with the day of his departure from this life. The natives assured our Europeans that this memorial should be permitted to remain, so long as such frail materials could endure.

The ships being in want of fuel, Captain Cook requested Mr. King to treat with the priests for the purchase of the rail surrounding the *morai*. Doubting the decency of this overture, he apprehended the bare mention of it would incur the heavy charge of profanation; but in this he was exceedingly mistaken: they expressed no surprise at the impropriety of the question, and the wood was readily delivered to them, without stipulating for any thing in return. Whilst the people belonging to our navigators were taking it away, he saw one of them with a carved image, and, upon enquiry, was informed that the whole sem circle had been carried to the boats. Thou the natives were spectators of this business, th made no complaints; but, on the contrary, assi ed in the removal. Though Mr. King mention these particulars to Kaoo, he seemed perfect indifferent about the matter, requesting only t centre image to be restored; which was i mediately complied with.

Terreeoboo, and his chiefs, had long been i portunate to know the time of their departu Mr. King was therefore anxious to learn wh opinion they entertained of our Europeans, a what they supposed to be the object of th voyage. He took particular pains to get sat factory information on these points; but all th he could discover was, that they supposed th had left their native country on account of t scantiness of provisions, and that they visit them in expectation of being better fed. T was certainly a rational conclusion, consideri the meagre appearance of some of their cre the voracity with which they devoured their fre provisions, and their anxiety to purchase of it much as they were able. One circumstanc however, puzzled the natives exceedingly, wh was that of not having any women among them

Terreeoboo, in wishing to gain intelligen respecting the departure of our navigators, i perhaps no other view in his enquiries tha desire of having sufficient notice, to prep suitable presents for them at their departure; when they mentioned to him their intention quit the island in two days, a kind of proclam tion was immediately issued through the villag requiring the people to bring in their hogs a vegetables, for the king to present to the *Orono*

near, they frequently surveyed each other from head to foot, accompanied with a contemptuous sneer, casting several arch glances at the spectators, distorting their features, and practising a variety of affected gestures. When they were advanced within the reach of each other, they stood with both arms held out straight before their faces, at which part every one of their blows was aimed: they struck with a full swing of the arm, without attempting to parry, but they endeavoured to elude their adversary's attack by stooping, or retreating. The battle was speedily decided; for if either of them fell, whether by an accident or a blow, he was declared vanquished, and the victor proclaimed his triumph by a variety of strange gestures, which usually excited a loud peal of laughter among the spectators. The successful combatant waited to receive a second antagonist; and, if again victorious, for a third. As these games were given at the desire of our navigators, it was generally expected that some of them would have engaged with the natives; but, though some of the Europeans were urged to engage, they paid no attention to their solicitations, having forgot the transactions at the Friendly Islands.

* It was entertaining to see the inhabitants stroking sides, and patting the bellies of the sailors (who were m improved in sleekness since their arrival in the island telling them, partly by signs, and partly by language, it was time for them to depart; but if they would return next bread-fruit season, they should be better able to sup their wants.

† At the beach our navigators were entertained with the fooneries of a native. In his hand he held an instrument music; bits of sea-weed were fastened round his neck; strong netting encircled his legs, on which were attach some rows of dogs' teeth. His dancing was accompa with grimaces, and unnatural distortions of the f Wrestling and boxing matches contributed to the diversi of the evening; and the Europeans, in return, exhibi the few fire-works they had remaining.

The 4th of February being fixed for their departure, Terreeoboo invited Captain Cook and Mr. King, to attend him to Kaoo's residence on the 3d. On their arrival, they found the ground covered with large quantities of cloth; red and yellow feathers, in great abundance, fastened to the fibres of cocoa-nut husks; and many hatchets, and other articles of iron ware, which had been received from them in barter. Not far from these was an immense quantity of vegetables; and near them several herds of hogs. It was at first imagined that the whole was intended as a present for our navigators; but they were informed by Kaireekeea, that it was a tribute to the king from the inhabitants of that district. And accordingly, as soon as our Europeans were seated, they saw all the bundles brought, and laid severally at Terreeoboo's feet; the cloth, feathers, and iron were also exhibited before him.

The king was highly pleased with this affectionate mark of duty from his people; and selected about a third of the iron articles, a third of the feathers, and some pieces of cloth: these he ordered to be set aside by themselves; and the remainder of the cloth, hogs, vegetables, &c. were afterwards presented to Captain Cook and Mr. King.* The value of this present far exceeded every thing of the kind which had ever taken place, either at the Friendly or Society Islands. The large hogs were salted for sea store; but the smaller pigs, and the vegetables, were divided among the crews.

They quitted the *morai*, and got their observatories on board: the *taboo* was removed, and with it its magical effects. The instant they had left the place, the people rushed in, and vigilantly searched, hoping some valuable articles might be left behind. Mr. King being the last on shore; and waiting for the return of the boat, some of the inhabitants prevailed on him to sit down among them, expressing their regret at his intending to leave them, and would hardly permit him to depart. Having had the command of the party on shore, during the time they were in the bay, he had an opportunity of becoming well acquainted with the natives, and they with him*.

In the morning of the 4th of February they unmoored, and sailed out of the bay, attended by a great number of canoes. Captain Cook intended to finish the survey of Owhyhee, before he visited the other islands, hoping to find a road better sheltered than Karakakooa Bay. On the 5th, and the following day they, had calm weather, and consequently their progress to the north was slow. Terreeoboo gave an additional proof of his regard for Captain Cook, by sending after him a liberal present of hogs and vegetables. In the morning of the 6th, they were a-breast of a deep bay, called by the natives Toe-yah-yah. They entertained hopes of finding a commodious harbour in this bay, as they observed several fine streams of water to the north-east, and the whole appeared to be well sheltered. These observations seeming to tally with the very favourable accounts given of them by Koah, them aster was sent in the pinnace, with Koah as his guide, to observe and examine the bay†.

After encountering several gales of wind without receiving any material injury, in the morning of the 8th they found the fore-mast had given way. This accident, after much deliberation, induced Captain Cook to return to Karakakooa bay. Early in the morning of the 10th, in a heavy squall, they found themselves close in with the breakers, to the northward of the west point of Owhyhee. They had hardly room to avoid them, and fired several guns to alarm the Discovery,

* When notice was given of the departure of the Europeans, Mr. King was very strongly urged to remain behind, pictures of the most flattering kind having been repeatedly made him. When he endeavoured to excuse himself, by assuring them that Captain Cook would not permit it, they proposed to conceal him among the mountains till after the departure of the ships. On Mr. King's assuring them that the captain would not sail without him. Terreeoboo and Kaoo formally waited on Captain Cook, (whom they supposed to be his father) requesting he might be permitted to remain behind. The captain avoided giving an absolute refusal to a proposal so generously intended, by saying he should return thither the following year, and then he would endeavour to oblige them.

† Mr. Bligh, who had been dispatched upon this business, landed at a village on the north side of the bay, where he was shewn some wells of water, which were not proper for their purpose. Proceeding further into the bay, where he expected to meet with good anchorage, he found the shores were low, and a flat bed of coral rocks extended along the coast, and upwards of a mile from the land. During this time, Koah, (who had now altered his name to that of Britannee out of compliment to our navigators) contrived to slip away, being probably afraid of returning, as his information had proved erroneous.

and give her notice of the danger. The weather became more moderate in the afternoon, and a few canoes ventured to come off to them; when they were informed that much mischief had been occasioned by the late storms, and that a great many canoes had been lost. During the remainder of the day, they kept beating to the windward, and, in the evening, were within a mile of the bay; but they stood off and on till day-light in the morning, when they anchored nearly in their old station.

The whole of the 11th, and part of the 12th of February were devoted to the getting out the fore-mast, and conveying it on shore. As it had sustained considerable damage, several days would probably be required for making the necessary repairs. Messrs. King and Baily caused the observatory to be taken on shore, and the tents to be pitched on the morai, under the guard of a corporal, and six marines. A friendly intercourse was also renewed with the priests, who, for their additional security, tabooed the place with their wands, as before.

On their coming to anchor, they were astonished to find a reception so very different from that which they had before experienced: no shouts, bustle, or confusion, but a solitary deserted bay, with here and there a canoe passing along the shore. Though allowances ought to be made for the diminution of their curiosity; yet the hospitable treatment they had met with, and the friendly footing on which they parted, induced them to expect every demonstration of joy on their return. While they were forming conjectures on this extraordinary appearance, the whole mystery was explained by the return of a boat which had been sent on shore, bringing intelligence that Terreeoboo was absent, and that the bay was tabooed*.

It is extremely difficult to draw any certain conclusion from the actions of a people, with whose language and customs we are but imperfectly acquainted. It is certain, however, that affairs were conducted in their usual quiet course, till the 13th of February. In the evening of the day, the officer commanding the Discovery's watering party, came to inform Mr. King, that several chiefs had assembled near the beach, and were driving away the natives, who had been hired to assist the sailors in rolling down the casks to the shore. At the same time he declared that their behaviour seemed exceedingly suspicious, and he supposed they intended to give him some further disturbance. At his request he allowed him to take a marine with him, but permitted him to have only his side arms. In a short time the officer returned, and acquainted Mr. King that the islanders had armed themselves with stones, and were become very tumultuous. He therefore went himself to the spot, attended by a marine, with his musquet. Seeing him approach, they threw away their stones; and on Mr. King's appeal to some of the chiefs, the mass of the people were driven away.

Quietness being restored, Mr. King went to meet Captain Cook, who was coming on shore in the pinnace. He related to him the particulars of what had recently happened, and received orders to fire a ball at the offenders, if they again behaved insolently, and began to throw stones. Mr. King therefore gave orders to the corporal that the sentinels' pieces should be loaded with ball, instead of shot.

On their return to the tents, they heard a continued fire of musquets from the Discovery, which they perceived was directed at a canoe that was hastening towards the shore, with one of the captain's small boats in pursuit of it. They supposed this firing to be in consequence of some theft, and Captain Cook ordered Mr. King to follow him, with a marine armed, and endeavour to arrest the people as they landed. They accordingly ran towards the place where the canoes was expected to come ashore, but were too late; the people having quitted it, and made their escape into the country before their arrival†.

But an affair of a more serious and unpleasant nature

* Though this account was thought satisfactory by many persons, others were of opinion, that there was something very suspicious in the behaviour of the natives, and that the *taboo*, on pretence of the king's absence, was a mere evasion, to give him time to consult his chiefs in what manner they should be treated. They never could ascertain whether these suspicions were well founded, or whether the natives had given a genuine narrative of the business. It is probable, indeed, that their sudden return, for which they could perceive no apparent cause, might occasion some alarm; yet the conduct of Terreeoboo, who on his supposed arrival the next morning, came immediately to visit Captain Cook; and the natives, from that moment, renewing their friendly intercourse with them; seemingly evinced, that they neither meant, nor apprehended a different kind of conduct.

† At this time they knew not that the goods had been already restored,

nture had happened during their absence. The officer, who had been sent in the small boat after the thieves, and who was returning on board with the goods that had been restored, observing Captain Cook and Mr. King in pursuit of the offenders, thought it necessary to seize the canoe that was drawn up on the shore. Unfortunately this canoe belonged to Parreea, who arriving at that instant from on board the Discovery, claimed his property, with many protestations of his innocence. The officer persisted in detaining it, in which he was encouraged by the crew of the pinnace then waiting for Captain Cook. A scuffle ensued, in which Parreea was knocked down by a violent blow on the head, with an oar. The natives, who were collected about the spot, and who had hitherto been peaceable spectators, instantly attacked the Europeans with such a shower of stones, that they retreated with precipitation, and swam off to a rock at a considerable distance from the shore. The pinnace was instantly plundered by the natives, and would have been demolished, if Parreea had not interposed; who had not only recovered from his blow, but, at that instant, had totally forgot it.

Having dispersed the crowd, he beckoned to our adventurers to come and take possession of the pinnace; and afterwards assured them that he would exert all his influence to get the articles restored which had been purloined. After their departure, he followed them in his canoe, with a midshipman's cap, and some other articles of the plunder. Having expressed much concern at what had happened, he wished to know if the *orono* would kill him, and whether he might venture to come on board the next day. Being assured that he would be kindly received, he joined noses with the officers, (their usual token of friendship) and paddled over to the village of Kowrowa*.

Early the next morning Mr. King went on board the Resolution for his time-keeper; when in his way, he was hailed by the Discovery, and was informed that their cutter had been stolen during the night, from the buoy, where it had been moored. When he arrived on board, he found the marines arming, and Captain Cook engaged in loading his double-barrelled gun. While he was communicating to him the particulars of what had happened in the night at the *morai*, he precipitately interrupted him to inform him of the loss of the Discovery's cutter, and of the measures that were to be resorted to for its recovery. It was his general practice, in all the islands of this ocean, when he had been plundered of any article of consequence, to get the king, or some of the principal erees on board; where he detained them till the property was restored. As this method had hitherto been successful, he was resolved to adopt it on the present occasion; and ordered that every canoe should be stopped, which attempted to leave the bay: protesting that he would seize and destroy them, unless the cutter could be recovered on friendly and peaceable conditions. In consequence of this resolution the boats of both ships, properly manned and armed, were stationed across the bay: and, before Mr. King quitted the ship, some great guns were fired at two canoes, that were endeavouring to escape.

Between seven and eight o'clock, Captain Cook and Mr. King quitted the ship together: the former in the pinnace, with Mr. Phillips and nine marines: and the latter in the small boat. The last orders received from Captain Cook by Mr. King, were, to endeavour to quiet the minds of the natives on their side of the bay, by assuring them that they should not be injured; to keep his people continually together, and to be strictly on his guard. After delivering this admonition, a separation took place, the captain going towards

stored, and imagining, from what they had observed, that they might be of importance, they did not choose to slacken their endeavours to recover them; and, having enquired of the natives what course the people had taken, pursued them till it was almost dark; when they began to think the islanders amused them with false information in their pursuit, and came to a resolution of giving up the search.

* When Captain Cook was informed of these transactions, he was exceedingly concerned; and, while they were returning on board, he expressed his fears that the islanders would oblige him to use some violent measures. He very judiciously added, "They must not be permitted to suppose that they have gained an advantage over us." It was, however, too late to take any material steps that evening; but he ordered that every islander should be immediately turned out of the ship. After this order was executed, Mr. King returned on shore; and, as the events of the day had much staggered their confidence in the natives, a double guard was posted on the *morai*, with orders to give notice to Mr. King, if any people were seen lurking about the beech. At eleven o'clock five of the natives were observed crawling round the bottom of the *morai*. Though they approached with great caution, they were at last discovered, and immediately fled. At midnight another of them ventured near the observatory, when a sentinel fired over him, and he also fled. Nothing of importance occurred duringthe remainder of that night.

Kowrowa, where the king resided, and Mr. King proceeded to the beach. His first care, on going ashore, was to issue strict orders to the marines to remain within the tent, to load their musquets with ball, and on no consideration to quit their arms. He afterwards attended Kaoo and the priests, at their respective huts, and explained to them the reason of the hostile preparations, which had so exceedingly alarmed them. He found they were fully informed of the cutter's having been stolen, and assured them, that, though the captain was determined to recover it, and to punish the authors of the theft; yet that they, and all the people of the village, on their side, had not any occasion to be alarmed, or to apprehend the least danger or inconvenience. He requested the priests to communicate these particulars to the people, and entreat them not to be alarmed, but to continue peaceable and quiet. Kaoo, with great emotion, asked Mr. King, if any harm was to happen to Terreeoboo? He assured him there was not; and he and his party seemed perfectly satisfied with this assurance.

Captain Cook having, in the mean time, called off the launch, which was stationed at the north point of the bay, and taken it with him, proceeded to Kowrowa, and landed with the lieutenant and nine marines. Proceeding to the village, he was respectfully received; the people as usual prostrating themselves before him, and bringing their accustomed offerings of small hogs. Perceiving that his intention was not suspected, he enquired for Terreeoboo, and the two boys, his sons, who had been his constant guests on board the Resolution. The youths returned with the natives, who had been sent in search of them, and immediately conducted Captain Cook to the house where the king had slept The old sovereign had just awoke, and after some conversation respecting the loss of the cutter, from which the captain was convinced that he was not privy to it, he invited him to accompany him on board the Resolution, and to pass the day with him. The king readily accepted the invitation, and rose immediately to accompany him.

Every thing now appeared to be in a prosperous train; the two boys were already in their pinnace, and the rest of the party proceeding to the water-side, when an elderly woman, named Kaneekabareea, the mother of the youths, and one of the king's favourite wives, came after him, pathetically beseeching him, her eyes replete with tears, not to venture to go on board. At the same time two chiefs, who came with her, took hold of him, and insisted on his proceeding no farther; compelling him instantly to sit down. The natives, who were collecting in vast numbers along the shore, and had probably been alarmed by the firing of the great guns, and the appearance of hostilities in the bay, gathered together round Captain Cook and the king. Thus situated, the lieutenant of marines, observing his men were huddled together in the crowd, and consequently rendered incapable of using their arms, if there should appear to be a necessity for it, proposed to the captain to draw them up along the rocks, close to the water's edge. The populace making a space for them to pass, the lieutenant ranged them up in a line, within thirty yards of the place where Terreeoboo was at that time sitting*.

Though this enterprise had now failed, and was abandoned, the captain's person did not appear to be in the least degree in danger, till an accident happened which gave a fatal turn to the affair. The boats, which had been stationed across the bay, having fired at some canoes that were attempting to get out, had unfortunately killed one of their principal chiefs. Intelligence of his death arrived where Captain Cook was, just when he had parted from the king, and was walking deliberately towards the shore. The ferment it occasioned was but too apparent, and the women and children were hastily sent away. The men appeared in their war-mats, and armed with spears and stones. One of the natives, having in his hand a stone, and a long iron spike, (called by the natives a pahooa) approached the captain, flourishing his weapon in defiance, and threatening to throw the stone. The captain desired him to desist; but the

* The old sovereign continued, all this time, in the same position, on the ground, with the most evident marks of terror and dejection in his countenance: Captain Cook, unwilling to abandon the object for which he had come on shore, urged him to proceed. On the other hand, whenever the king manifested an inclination to follow him, the chiefs who stood round him interposed; at first with prayers and entreaties, and afterwards with force and violence, absolutely insisting on his remaining on shore. Captain Cook now perceiving that the alarm had spread too generally, and that there was little probability of getting him off without much blood-shed, thought it prudent to give up the point; observing to Mr. Phillips, that, to compel him to go on board, might occasion the loss of many of the lives of the inhabitants.

Islander repeating his menaces, he fired a load of small shot at him. The native having his mat on, which the shot could not penetrate, it had no other effect than to irritate and encourage them. Vollies of stones were thrown at the marines; and one of the erees endeavoured to stab Mr. Phillips with his Pahooa, but not having succeeded, he received from him a blow with the but-end of his musquet. Captain Cook now fired his second barrel, loaded with ball, and killed one of the most violent of the natives. A general attack with stones immediately followed, which was answered by a discharge of musquetry from the marines, and the people in the boats. The natives received the fire with great firmness; and before they had time to charge again, they rushed in upon them with dreadful shouts and yells. What followed was truly a scene of horror and confusion!

Four of the marines retreated among the rocks, and were supposed to fall a sacrifice to the fury of the enemy; three others were dangerously wounded; and the lieutenant, who had been stabbed between the shoulders with a pahooa, having fortunately reserved his fire, shot the man from whom he had received the wound, at the instant he was preparing to repeat the blow. Our unfortunate commander, the last time he was distinctly seen, was standing at the water's edge, and calling out to the boats to cease firing, and to pull in*.

Such was the fate of our excellent commander! After a life so eminently distinguished by successful enterprize, his death, as far as regards himself, can hardly be reckoned premature; since he lived to accomplish the great work for which he seems to have been designed. How sincerely his loss was lamented, by those who owed their security to his ability and conduct, it is impossible to describe; and the task would be equally difficult to represent the horror and dismay which followed so dreadful a catastrophe. Let us therefore turn from so calamitous a scene, to the pleasing contemplation of his character and virtues.

SECTION XXXIII.

Transactions at Owhyhee—After the Death of Captain Cook—Bravery of Mr. Phillips—The Islanders obliged to retire—The Party at the Morai—An Attempt to storm the Morai—Our Navigators quit the Morai—Pacific Measures resolved on—Mr. King has an Interview with Koah—Contemptuous Behaviour of the Natives—Two of the Islanders fired at—Part of the Body of Captain Cook brought by one of them—Additional Provocations from the Natives—Great Guns fired at them—Kakooa burned—Bravery of one of the Natives—The Bones of Captain Cook brought—Which are committed to the Deep—Leave Karakakooa Bay—In Quest of a Harbour on the South-Side of Mowee—Driven to leeward by the Current—Pass Tokoorowa—Proceed to Woahoo—Description of the North-east Coast—Proceed to Atooi—Anchor in Wyamore Bay—The Natives not so friendly as before—Insolence of the Natives—They steal Mr. King's Hanger out of his Hand—Their Insolence at the Water-side—Are fired at by Two Marines—One of them wounded—Visit from the contending Chiefs—Departure.

IT has already been observed that four of the marines, who attended Captain Cook, were killed by the inhabitants on the spot. The others, with Mr. Phillips, their lieutenant, threw themselves into the sea, and escaped, being protected by a brisk fire from the boats. On this occasion, a singular instance of heroism, and of affection for his men, was displayed by Mr. Phillips; for

* It was supposed by some of those who were present, that the marines, and those who were in the boats, fired without the captain's orders, and that he was anxious to prevent the farther effusion of blood. It is therefore probable, that, on this occasion, his humanity proved fatal to him: for it was observed, that whilst he faced the natives, none of them had offered him any violence; but, when he turned about to give his orders to the boats, he was stabbed in the back, and fell with his face into the water. On seeing him fall, the islanders set up a general shout, and his body was dragged inhumanly on shore, and surrounded by the enemy, who, snatching the dagger from each other's hands, displayed a savage eagerness to have a share in his destruction.

he had hardly got into the boat, when, seeing one of the marines, who was but an indifferent swimmer, struggling in the water, and in danger of being taken by the enemy, he leaped into the sea to his assistance, though much wounded himself; and, after receiving a blow on the head from a stone, which had nearly forced him to the bottom, he caught the poor fellow by the hair, and brought him off in safety.

Our Europeans, for some time, kept up a constant fire from the boats, to afford their unfortunate companions, if any of them continued in existence, an opportunity of effecting their escape. These continued efforts, seconded by a few guns fired from the Resolution, at length compelled the enemy to retire.

When the general consternation, which the intelligence of this calamity had diffused throughout both crews, had a little subsided, their attention was called to the party at the *morai*, where the mast and sails were on shore, under the guard of only six marines. It is impossible to describe the emotions which agitated the minds of Mr. King and his attendants, at this station, during these occurrences on the other side of the bay. Being only at the distance of a mile from the village of Kowrowa, they saw distinctly an immense crowd collected on the spot where Captain Cook had just before landed. They heard the firing of the musquets, and perceived much bustle and agitation in the multitude. They afterwards beheld the islanders retreating, the boats retiring from the shore, and passing and repassing, in great stillness, between the ships. Where so valuable a life was concerned, he could not avoid being alarmed by such new and menacing appearances.

On hearing the report of the musquets, Mr. King's first business was to assure the natives, who were assembled round the wall of their consecrated field, that they should not meet with any molestation; and that, at all events, he was inclined to continue on peaceable terms with them. They continued in this situation till the boats had returned on board; when Captain Clerke, perceiving, through his telescope, that they were surrounded by the natives, and apprehending they intended to attack them, ordered two four-pounders to be fired at them. Fortunately these guns, though well aimed, did no execution; but they gave the natives a convincing proof of their powerful effects: one of the balls broke a cocoa-nut tree in the middle, under which a party of them were sitting; and the other shivered a rock that stood near them*.

He waited impatiently for the return of the boat, and after a quarter of an hour's torturing anxiety and suspence, his fears were confirmed by the arrival of Mr. Bligh, with orders to strike his tents immediately, and to send on board the sails that were repairing. At the same instant their friend Kaireekeea, having also received intelligence of the death of Captain Cook, from an islander who had arrived from the other side of the bay, approached Mr. King, and with manifest sorrow and dejection in his countenance asked him whether it was true †.

Having stationed the marines on the top of the *morai*, which formed a strong and advantageous post, and given the command to Mr. Bligh, with directions to act solely on the defensive, Mr. King went on board the Discovery, to confer with Captain Clerke on the perilous situation of their affairs. He had no sooner quitted the spot, than the natives began to annoy our navigators with stones; and he had hardly reached the ship before he heard the firing of the marines. He therefore returned instantly on shore, where he found affairs were becoming every moment more alarming. The islanders were arming, and putting on their mats: and their numbers were rapidly increasing. He could also perceive

* As Mr. King had, just before, given them the strongest assurances of their safety, he was sorry for this act of hostility; and, to prevent a repetition of it, dispatched a boat to acquaint Captain Clerke, that he was then on the most friendly terms with the islanders; and that, if an occasion for altering his conduct should arrive in future, he would hoist a jack as a signal for him to afford him his assistance.

† The situation of the party was now highly critical and important: their own lives, and the issue of the expedition, were involved in the same common danger. The mast of the Resolution, and the greater part of the sails were on shore, under the protection of only six marines. The loss of these would have been irreparable; and though the natives had not then shewn a disposition to molest the party, it was impossible to answer for the consequences, when the narrative of the transaction of Kowrowa might produce. Mr. King therefore pretended to disbelieve the report of the Captain's death, and endeavoured to prevail on Kaireekeea to encourage the deception; apprehending that either the fear of their resentment, or the successful example of their countrymen, might induce them to seize the favourable opportunity, which then presented itself, of giving them a second blow.

several

veral large bodies marching towards them, along e cliff which separates Kahoora from the north le of the bay, where Kowrowa is situated.

They began the attack upon our navigators th stones, from behind the walls of their in-sures; and, not being opposed, they con-quently became more daring. A few resolute llows having crept along the beach, under ver of the rocks, presented themselves at the ot of the *morai*, with a view of storming it the side next the sea, where only it was ac-sible; and they were not dislodged till after y had stood a considerable quantity of shot, d seen one of their associates fall.

A strong reinforcement from both ships land-g about this time, the natives retreated behind ir walls; which afforded Mr. King an op-rtunity of conferring with their priests. He t one of them to exert his endeavours to effect accommodation; and to propose to them, that they would desist from throwing stones, he uld not suffer his men to fire. This truce was reed to, and our navigators were permitted to nch the mast, and carry off the sails, astrono-al instruments, &c. without molestation. As on as they had quitted the *morai*, the islanders k possession of it, and some of them threw a stones which were productive of no mis-ief*.

While they were thus engaged in concerting me plan for future operations, a concourse of e natives still kept in possession of the shore; d some of them, coming off in canoes, approach-the ships, insulted the crews by various marks defiance and contempt. It was difficult, on ese occasions, to restrain the seamen from the e of their arms; but, pacific measures having en resolved on, the canoes were suffered to turn unmolested.

Mr. King was now ordered to proceed towards e shore with the boats of the two ships, well manned and armed, with a view of bringing the natives to a parley, and of obtaining, if possible, a conference with some of the chiefs. If he succeeded in the attempt, he was to demand the dead bodies, and particularly that of Captain Cook; to threaten him, in case of a refusal, with the resentment of our Europeans; but not to fire, unless attacked; and not to go ashore on any consideration. Mr. King and his detachment left the ships about four in the afternoon, and, as they approached the shore, saw every indication of a hostile reception. The natives were perpetually in motion, the women and children retiring, the men putting on their war-mats, and arming themselves with spears and daggers. It also appeared, that, since the morning, they had thrown up breast-works, along the beech, where Captain Cook had landed.

When our European party were within their reach, the islanders threw stones at them with slings, but effected no mischief. Concluding, from these appearances, that all attempts to procure a parley would be ineffectual, unless some ground for mutual confidence could be given, he ordered the armed boats to stop, and went alone in a small boat, with a white flag in his hand; the meaning of which was immediately understood by the natives, as it produced an universal shout of joy among them. The women returned from the side of the hill, to which they had retired; the men took off their mats, and all sat down together by the water-side, extending their arms, and inviting Mr. King on shore.

Though this behaviour indicated a friendly disposition, he still entertained suspicions of its sincerity; but when he saw Koah resolutely swim off towards the boat, with a white flag in his hand, he thought it prudent to return this mark of confidence, and therefore received him into the boat, though armed; a circumstance which did not tend to lessen Mr. King's suspicions; he having

* Mr. King arrived on board the Discovery between eleven and twelve, where he perceived that no decisive plan had been adopted for the regulation of their future proceedings. The recovery of Captain Cook's body, and the restitution of the boat, were objects which, on all hands, were agreed to be insisted on: and Mr. King declared it as his opinion, that some vigorous methods should be adopted, if the demand of them should not be instantly complied with. He added, that nothing seemed to him more likely to encourage the islanders to commit new outrages, than the appearance of our navigators being inclined to an accommodation, which could only be imputed to fear or weakness.

On the other hand it was urged, in favour of more conciliatory measures, that the mischief was already done, and was therefore irreparable; that the natives, on account of their former friendship and kindness, had a strong claim upon our regard; and that, therefore, to engage in a vindictive contest with them, might not only subject them to the imputation of unnecessary cruelty, but would occasion considerable delay in the equipment of their ships.

Captain Clerke concurred in the latter opinion, observing that, "caution and severity is ever invidious, and the rigour of a preventive measure, when it is the most successful, leaves its expediency the least apparent."

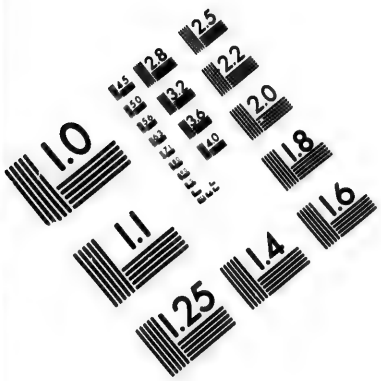
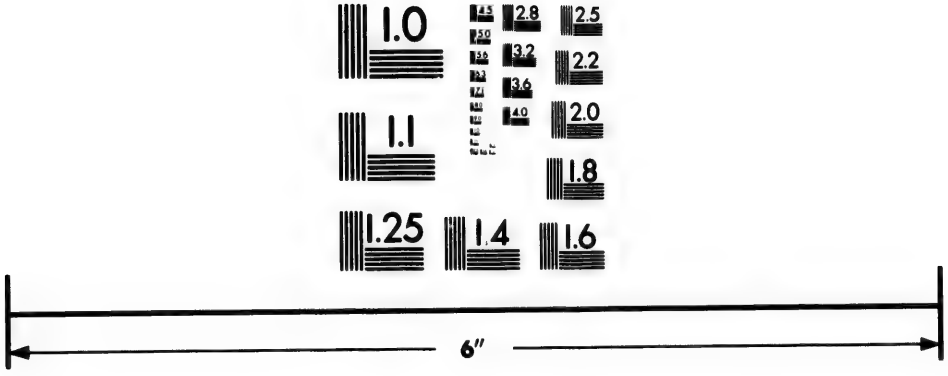
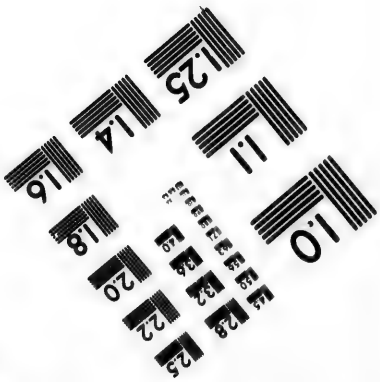


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)





Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

having long entertained an unfavourable opinion of that chief. The priests had, on all occasions, represented him as a person of a malicious temper, and no friend to our adventurers; and the repeated detections of his fraud and treachery had convinced them of the truth of these assertions.

When Koah approached Mr. King, with feigned tears, and embraced him, Mr. King was so fully convinced of his duplicity, that he took hold of the point of the *pahooa*, which he had in his hand, and turned it from him. He then mentioned the nature of his business, and informed him that he came to demand the body of Captain Cook, and to declare war against the islanders, unless it was instantly restored. The chief assured him that this request should be complied with as soon as possible, and that he would undertake the business himself. Then, after requesting a piece of iron of Mr. King with the most consummate assurance, he leaped into the sea, and swam ashore, calling out to his countrymen that they were all friends again!

The Europeans waited almost an hour, in great anxiety, for his return; during which time the other boats had approached so near the shore, that the persons in them conversed with a party of the islanders at a little distance; by whom they were assured that the captain's body had been cut to pieces, and carried up the country: but Mr. King knew not of this circumstance till after his return to the ships.

At length Mr. King began to express some degree of impatience at Koah's delay; upon which the chiefs repeatedly urged him to land: assuring him, that if he would go in person to Terreooboo, the body would certainly be restored to him. Finding they could not prevail on Mr. King to go ashore, they endeavoured to decoy his boat among some rocks, that they might acquire the power of separating him from the other boats. These artifices being clearly seen through, Mr. King was desirous of breaking off all communication with them.

After various deceptions, delays, negotiations, and hostile preparations, one evening about eight o'clock, when it was extremely dark, a canoe was heard paddling towards the ship; and as soon as it was seen, both the centinels on deck fired into it. Two of the natives were in the canoe, who immediately roared out "Tinnee," (their usual method of pronouncing Mr. King's name) saying they were friends, and had something for him that belonged to Captain Cook. Coming on board, they threw themselves at the feet of the officers, and appeared terrified. Fortunately neither of them was hurt, though the balls of both pieces had passed through the canoe; one of them constantly attended Captain Cook; and though a man of distinction in the island, could hardly be prevented from performing for him the most humiliating offices of a menial servant. After lamenting, with many tears, the loss of the *Orono*, he informed them that he had brought a part of his body. He then produced a small bundle, which he took from under his arm; and words cannot describe the horror with which the party were seized, on finding it a piece of human flesh of the weight of about ten pounds. This, he said, was all that now remained of the body; the rest having been cut to pieces, and burnt; but that the head, and all the bones, except what belonged to the trunk, were in the possession of Terreeoboo, and the other ereas; that what they now beheld had been allotted to Kaoo, the chief of the priests, to be used in some religious ceremony; and that he had delivered it as a proof of his innocence, and of his attachment to them*.

They pressed their two friendly visitors to remain on board till the morning, but in vain. They informed them that if this transaction should ever be made known to the king, or any of the chiefs, it might probably be attended with the most fatal consequences to their whole society. To prevent which, they thought it necessary to visit them in the dark: and the same caution, they affirmed, was equally requisite in returning on shore. They also declared, that the chiefs were eager to revenge the death of their countrymen; and, above all things, cautioned them not

* This gave our navigators an opportunity of learning whether they were cannibals, and they were willing to avail themselves of it. After several modes of endeavouring to get satisfactory intelligence on this point, they at last put the direct question, Whether they had not fed on some of it?—When they instantly testified as much horror at the idea as any European could have done; and asked, whether that was the practice among them. They afterwards demanded, with great earnestness, and apparent apprehension, "When the Orono would come again, and how he would behave to them on his return?—The same enquiry was often made afterwards by others: and this idea corresponds with the general tenor of their conduct towards him, which indicated that they considered him as a superior being.

place any confidence in Koah, who, they ured us, was their implacable enemy, and hed for an opportunity of fighting them.

From the information of these men, it appeared t seventeen of their countrymen were slain, in first action, at Kowrowa, five of whom were iefs; and that Kaneena, and his brother, their rticular friends, were unfortunately of that mber. Eight were killed at the observatory; ree of whom were of the first distinction.

Early the next morning, our navigators received nother visit from Koah. Mr. King was much agrined to find, that, notwithstanding the most ident marks of treachery in his conduct, and positive testimony of the priests, that he ould be permitted to carry on the same farce, d represent them as the dupes of his hypocrisy. eir situation, was, indeed, become awkward d unpleasant; none of the purposes for which ese pacific proceedings had been adopted, ving been in the least promoted by it. No isfactory answer had been given to their deands; they appeared to have made no progress wards a reconciliation with the natives; they ll remained on the shore in hostile positions, as determined to oppose the landing of our Euroans; and yet it was absolutely necessary that ey should attempt landing, as their getting an ple supply of water would not admit of any ger delay.

About twelve o'clock, the natives perceiving at our navigators persisted in their inactivity, reat numbers of them, after displaying every thod of defiance, marched off over the hills, d never made their appearance afterwards. hose, however, who remained, were not less aring and presumptuous. One of them had the dacity to come within musquet-shot a-head of e ship; and after throwing several stones at the ew, waved over his head the hat which had elonged to Captain Cook; whilst his countrymen shore were exulting, and encouraging his audacity. Our navigators were much enraged at this insult, and, collecting together on the quarter-deck, begged they might no longer be exposed to such provocations; entreating to be permitted, by Captain Clerke, to embrace the first fair occasion of avenging the death of their much-lamented commander. Mr. King having acquainted the captain with what was passing, he ordered some great guns to be fired at the islanders on shore; and declared to the crew, that, should they be molested at the watering-place, the next day, they should be at liberty to chastise the enemy.

It is remarkable, that, before they could bring their guns to bear, the islanders had suspected their intentions, from the bustle and agitation which pervaded the whole ship, and had retired behind their walls and houses: our navigators were therefore obliged to fire almost at random; though the shot produced all the effects they could desire: for, soon after, they beheld Koah paddling towards them with the utmost expedition; and, on his arrival, received intelligence that several people had been killed. Among these was Maiha Maiha, a principal *Eree*, nearly related to the king*.

During the night, the usual precautions were taken for the security of the ships; and as soon as it was dark, their two friends who had visited them the preceding night, came off again. They assured them, that, though the chiefs had been greatly alarmed at the effects of the great guns, they had by no means relinquished their hostile intentions, and cautioned them to be upon their guard. The next morning the boats of the two ships were sent ashore for water, the Discovery being warped close to the beach to protect them in that service. They soon discovered that the intelligence which had been conveyed to them by the priests was not without foundation, and that the natives were determined to annoy them whenever a favourable opportunity presented itself†.

Thus

* Not long after Koah's arrival, two boys swam from e *morai*, towards the vessels, each armed with a long ear. Coming near our navigators, they solemnly began chant a song, frequently mentioning the word *Orono*, and inting to the village where Captain Cook had lost his life. aving sung upwards of ten minutes in a plaintive strain; ring which time they continued in the water, they proeeded to the Discovery, and delivered up their spears: ter continuing there a short time, they returned on shore. ur navigators could never discover the object of this remony.

† The villages, in this cluster of islands, are generally situated near the sea, and the adjacent ground inclosed with stone-walls, of about three feet in height. These walls, which our Europeans at first supposed to have been intended for the division of property, were now found to serve as a defence against invasion, for which purpose they were erected. They consist of loose stones, which the inhabitants can shift from place to place with great celerity, as the direction of the attack may occasionally require. In the sides of the mountain, near the bay, they have also holes or caves, of considerable depth, the entrance of which is

Thus opposed, our navigators were obliged to be so far attentive to their own safety, that, during the whole afternoon, only a single ton of water was filled. As it was therefore found impossible for them to perform this service, till their assailants were driven to a distant quarter, the Discovery was ordered to dislodge them with her great guns. This being accomplished, by means of a few discharges, the men landed without molestation.

The islanders, however, had the effrontery to make their appearance again, soon after, in their usual mode of attack; and it was thought necessary to burn down some straggling habitations near the wall, behind which they had taken shelter. In executing these orders, it may be admitted that our Europeans were hurried into acts of unnecessary acts of cruelty and devastation. Some allowance ought certainly to be made for their resentment of repeated insults, and for their natural desire of revenging the death of their beloved commander. But their conduct strongly evinced, that the greatest precaution is requisite in trusting, even for a moment, the discretionary use of arms in the hands of private soldiers, or seamen, on such occasions.

Directions were given only to burn a few straggling houses, which afforded shelter to the islanders; the commanding officer was therefore astonished to see the whole village in flames; and before the arrival of a boat, which was immediately sent to stop the progress of the mischief, the houses of their constant and worthy friends, the priests, were all on fire. It was not without reason, therefore, that Mr. King lamented the illness which confined him on board that day. The priests had always been under his protection; but the officers, then on duty, having seldom been ashore at the *morai*, were unacquainted with the circumstances of the place. Had he been present himself, he might probably have preserved their little society from destruction*.

About this time, an elderly man was taken prisoner, bound, and conveyed on board the Resolution, in the same boat, with the heads of his two countrymen. Horror was pourtrayed in his countenance: but he experienced a sudden transition to immoderate joy, when he was untied and informed that he might depart in safety. The venerable native convinced them that he was not deficient in point of gratitude, by afterwards returning with presents of provisions, and rendering them other services.

Soon after the destruction of the village, a man was seen coming down the hill, attended by fifteen or twenty boys, holding pieces of white cloth, green boughs, plantains, &c. in their hands. It happened that the persons who composed this pacific embassy, received the fire of a party of our Europeans. They were not intimidated, however, from continuing their procession, and the officer upon duty came up soon enough to prevent a second discharge. Approaching nearer, it was discovered that the principal person was their much esteemed friend Kaireekeea, who had fled when the village was first set on fire, and had now returned, expressing his desire of being set on board the Resolution.

On his arrival, he appeared extremely grave and pensive. They endeavoured to convince him of the absolute necessity there was of setting fire to the village, by which his habitation, and those of his brethren were unintentionally consumed. He accused them of ingratitude, and want of friendship, and informed them of the whole extent of the injury they had sustained; many circumstances of which were unknown to our adventurers till the present moment. He assured them, that, relying on the promises Mr. King had made them, as well as on the asseverations of the men who had brought them some of Captain Cook's remains, they thought it unnecessary to remove their effects back into the country, as the other inhabitants had done, but had deposited every valuable article of their own, as well as what they had collected from them, into a house close to the *morai*, where they had the mortification to see it all set on fire by them.

secured by a fence of a similar kind. From behind both these defences, the natives perpetually harrassed the watering party with stones; nor could the small force they had on shore, with the advantage of musquets, compel them to retreat.

* In escaping from the flames, some of the inhabitants were shot, and the heads of two of them were cut off, and taken on board by the seamen. The fate of one unhappy islander was lamented by all our Europeans. As he was proceeding to the well for water, he was shot at by one of the marines. The ball struck his calibash, which he immediately threw from him, and fled. He was pursued into one of the caves, already noticed, and defended himself with the greatest intrepidity; till at length, after having two of our Europeans at bay for a considerable time, he expired covered with wounds.

selves. Coming on board, he saw the heads of his countrymen, lying on the deck; at which he was exceedingly shocked, and earnestly desired they might be thrown into the sea; Captain Clerke readily complying with the request. The watering party returned on board in the evening, having met with no farther interruption. They passed a disagreeable night on board, the lamentations they heard from the shore being extremely dreadful. They had nothing to console them, but the pleasing hope that there would be no future occasion for such severities*.

The natives being now convinced that it was not want of ability to punish them, which had hitherto induced them to tolerate their provocations, desisted from giving them any further molestation; and in the evening, a chief, named Eappo, whom they had seldom seen, though they knew him to be a man of the first distinction, came with presents from Terreeoboo to sue for peace. These presents were accepted, and the chief was dismissed, with an answer similar to what had been given before—That no peace would be granted, till the remains of Captain Cook should be restored.

They were informed by Eappo, that the flesh of all the bodies of their people, who had been slain, and even the bones of the trunks, had been burnt; that the limb-bones of the marines had been divided among the inferior chiefs; and that the remains of Captain Cook had been thus disposed of: the head to a great chief called Kahooopeou; the hair to Maiha Maiha; and the arms, legs, and thighs to Terreeoboo. After it was dark, several of the natives came off with vegetables; and Kaireakeea also sent them two large presents of the same denomination.

The next day was chiefly employed in sending and receiving messages between the parties. Eappo requested that one of their officers should go on shore, and offered to remain on board, in the mean time, as a hostage. This proposition was not acceded to, and he left them with a promise of bringing the bones the following day.

Between the hours of ten and eleven on the 20th, a number of the natives were seen descending the hill, in a kind of procession, each man having two or three sugar-canes on his shoulders; and some bread-fruit, plantains, and taro in his hand. They were preceded by two drummers, who, when they came near the water-side, sat down by a white flag, and began to beat their drums; while those who had followed them, advanced, one by one; and having deposited the presents they had brought, retired in the same order. Eappo soon afterwards appeared in a long feathered cloak, bearing something with great solemnity in his hands; and having seated himself on a rock, he gave a signal that a boat should be dispatched to him.

Captain Clerke, imagining the chief had brought the bones of Captain Cook, (which was really the case) went in the pinnace himself to receive them, and ordered Mr. King to attend him in the cutter. When they arrived at the beach, Eappo came into the pinnace, and delivered the bones of Captain Cook, wrapped carefully up in a large quantity of new cloth, and covered with a spotted cloak of black and white feathers. He afterwards attended the gentlemen to the Resolution, but refused to go on board, probably from a sense of decency, not choosing to be present at the opening of the bundle†.

Eappo, and the king's son, came on board the following morning, bringing with them the

* The next morning, the treacherous Koah came off, as usual, to the ships. His perfidy being now sufficiently manifest, Mr. King was permitted to treat him as he thought proper. When he approached the side of the Resolution, chanting a song, and offering a hog, and some plantains, to Mr. King; that gentleman ordered him to keep off, and never presume to make his appearance there again without the bones of Captain Cook, lest his life should pay the forfeit of his repeated breaches of faith. He did not appear much mortified with this reception, but immediately returned on shore, and joined a party of the natives who were throwing stones at the waterers. The body of the young man, who had been slain the preceding day, was found this morning, at the entrance of the cave. Soon after which they beheld several of the natives carrying him off on their shoulders, chanting as they marched along.

† In this shocking parcel they found both the hands of Captain Cook entire, which were well known from a remarkable scar on one of them; the skull, with the scalp separated from it, and the bones of the face wanting; the scalp, with the ears adhering to it; the bones of both the arms; those of the thighs and legs joined together, but without the feet: the ligaments of the joints were entire, and the whole exhibited proofs of having been in the fire, except the hands, which had the flesh left upon them, and were cut in several places, and crammed with salt; supposed to have been with a view of preserving them. The skull was without a fracture, but the scalp had a cut in the back part of it. The lower jaw and feet, which were wanting, had been taken by different chiefs; but Terreeoboo was active in his endeavours to recover them.

remaining

remaining bones of Captain Cook, the barrels of his gun, his shoes, and some other trivial articles. Eappo protested that Terreeoboo, Maiha Maiha, and himself, were anxiously desirous of peace; of which they had now given the most convincing proofs; and that they had been prevented from giving those proofs sooner by the other chiefs, many of whom still continued disaffected to them. He sincerely lamented the death of six chiefs, who had been killed by the Europeans, some of whom were among their best friends. He said the cutter had been taken away by Pareea's people, perhaps to revenge the blow he had received; and that it had been broken up the following day*.

During the morning of the 22d, not a canoe made its appearance in the bay, the *taboo* not being yet taken off. At length Eappo came off to our adventurers, who assured him they were now perfectly satisfied; and that, as the *Orono* was buried, all remembrance of what had passed was buried with him. They afterwards requested him to take off the *taboo*, that the islanders might bring provisions to them as usual. In a short time the ships were surrounded with canoes. Many of the chiefs came on board, lamenting the disaster which had unfortunately happened, but expressing their satisfaction at their reconciliation. Such of their friends, as did not favour them with a visit, sent presents of hogs, and other provisions. Even the treacherous Koah came off with an intention to visit them, but he had the mortification to be peremptorily refused admittance.

Being now ready for putting to sea, orders were given that the ships should be unmoored. About eight in the evening, all the natives were dismissed; Eappo, and the worthy Kaireekeea, took an affectionate leave of them; when they weighed anchor, and stood out of Karakooa bay. The islanders, assembled on the shore, were numerous; who, as they passed along, received their gratulatory farewels with every mark of affection and good will.

Having cleared the land about ten, they stood to the northward, with a view of searching for a harbour. They found themselves, the next morning, driven to leeward, by a swell from the north-east; and a fresh gale from the same quarter, drove them still farther to the westward. At day-break on the 24th, they were standing towards a small barren island, named Tahoorowa. They passed the south-west side of this island, without being able to approach the shore. The westernmost point is rendered remarkable by a small hillock, south of which a fine sandy bay presents itself, and several huts are observed, interspersed with cocoa-trees. In the course of the day, several of the natives visited our adventurers, and brought provisions with them. They were no strangers to the unfortunate disasters at Owhyhee, and seemed much agitated at the death of Kaneena, and his brother. In whatever light they might consider this business, it produced no ill effect in their behaviour, which was exceedingly civil and obliging†.

The principal object here, was to water the ships with the utmost expedition; for which purpose Mr. King was sent on shore in the afternoon, with the launch and pinnace, laden with casks. He was accompanied by the gunner of the Resolution, and attended by a guard of five marines. Multitudes of people appeared upon the beach, by whom they were kindly received at first; but after they had landed the casks, they began to be extremely troublesome‡.

Their situation now demanded all their circumspection;

* The last solemn offices were now to be performed to the great and excellent commander. Eappo was dismissed with orders to *taboo* the whole bay; and, in the afternoon, the bones, having been previously deposited in a coffin, were committed to the deep with the usual military honours; the funeral service being decently performed on the occasion. The feelings of our Europeans, at this melancholy moment, can better be conceived than expressed!

† After touching at Woahoo, where they were disappointed respecting the water, Captain Clerke resolved to proceed to Atooi. The country about Woahoo appeared to be in fine cultivation. Being anchored in their old station, several canoes brought them visitors; but there was not that appearance of cordiality in their manner, and pleasantry in their countenances, which was observable in their former visit. As soon as they were on board, one of them declared that our Europeans had communicated a disorder to the women, which had killed many persons of both sexes. He was, at that very time, afflicted with the venereal disease, and minutely described its alarming progress. As no appearance of that disorder had been seen before their first arrival, it was reasonably apprehended that they were the authors of that irreparable mischief.

‡ Endeavouring to form a circle, for the trading party, according to his usual practice, Mr. King observed a man taking hold of the bayonet belonging to one of the soldier's musquets, and endeavouring to force it from his hand. Mr. King advanced immediately towards them, when the native quitted

cumspection: Mr. King enjoined, that not a man among them should presume to fire, or have recourse to any other act of violence, without positive commands. As soon as he had given these instructions, he was called to the assistance of the watering party, where he found the natives greatly inclined to mischief. They had peremptorily demanded, for every cask of water, a large hatchet; and as this demand had not been complied with, they would not suffer the sailors to roll them to the boats.

As soon as Mr. King had joined them, one of the natives approached him, and made the same insolent demand. That gentleman told him, as a friend, he was welcome to a hatchet; but he certainly would carry off the water, without paying any thing for it; and instantly ordered the pinnace men to proceed; at the same time ordering three marines from the trading party, to protect them. This spirited conduct so far succeeded, as to prevent any daring attempt to interrupt our navigators; but they persevered in their teasing and insulting behaviour. Some of them, under pretence of assisting the sailors in rolling the casks towards the shore, gave them an opposite direction; others snatched the hats from off the people's heads, pulled them backward, tripped up their heels, &c. The populace diverting themselves, all the time, with shouting, sneering, and laughing. Though they preserved a kind of deference and respect for Mr. King, they obliged him to contribute his share towards their stock of plunder. One of them approached him, in a very familiar manner, and artfully diverted his attention, whilst another seized his hanger, which he held carelessly in his hand, and ran away with it. Insolence, like this, was not to be repelled by force. It was, however, necessary for every one to be upon his guard. While the Europeans were getting the casks into the launch, the natives, supposing they should have no further opportunity of plundering, grew more daring and insolent. Every thing was now in the boats, and only Mr. King, Mr. Anderson, and a seaman of the boat's crew, remained on shore. As the pinnace lay beyond the surf, through which they were under the necessity of swimming, Mr. King ordered the other two to make their way as well as they could, and informed them that he should follow them.

They both refused to obey this order; and a contention arose who should be the last on shore. Some hasty expression had just before been used by Mr. King to the sailor, which he considered as such a reflection on his courage, as to demand his resentment; and the old gunner, finding a point of honour started, thought he could not avoid taking a part in it. In this whimsical situation they perhaps might long have remained, had not the dispute been immediately settled by the stones, which began to fly plentifully about them, and had they not heard the cries of the people from the boats to make haste, as the natives were following them into the water with clubs and spears. Mr. King arrived first at the pinnace, and perceiving Mr. Anderson was so far behind, as not to be entirely out of danger, he ordered one musquet to be fired; but, in the hurry of executing his orders, the marines fired two. The natives fled immediately, leaving only one man and a woman on the beach. The man made several attempts to rise, but was not able, having been wounded in the groin. The islanders speedily returned; and, surrounding the wounded man, brandished their spears with an air of defiance. But, by the time they had reached the ships, some chiefs were supposed to have arrived, by whom they were all driven from the shore*.

The next day, being the 2d of March, Mr. King was again ordered on shore with the watering party. Having narrowly escaped the pre-

ted his hold, and retired; but quickly returned, with a ar in one hand, and a dagger in the other: it was with utmost difficulty that his countrymen could restrain him n engaging with the soldier. This affray originated m the native's having received from the soldier a trifling cture with his bayonet, to induce him to keep without line.

During their absence, Captain Clerke had been under at anxiety for their safety: but these apprehensions had n much aggravated by his misunderstanding some of the ives, with whom he had been conversing on board. The quent mention of the name of Captain Cook, with other

strong and circumstantial descriptions of death and destruction, made him conclude that they had received intelligence of the unfortunate events at Owhyhee, to which they alluded: but all they had in view was to make known to him the wars that had arisen in consequence of the goats which Captain Cook had left at Onecheow, and that the poor goats had been slaughtered while the property of them was contested. Captain Clerke happening to apply these shocking representations to the deplorable misfortunes at Owhyhee, and to an indication of revenge, fixed his telescope on them the whole time; and when he saw the smoke of the musquets, ordered the boats to put off to their assistance.

ceding day, Captain Clerke augmented their force from both ships, so that they had now a guard of forty men under arms. But this precaution was found to be unnecessary; for the beach was left entirely to themselves, and the ground tabooed. Hence they concluded, that some of the chiefs had visited this quarter, and had generously taken this step, that they might be accommodated with safety. Several armed men appeared on the other side of the river, but never attempted to molest them. Their women came over, and seated themselves close to them on the banks; and, about noon, some of the men were prevailed on to bring them hogs and roots. When our adventurers had left the beach, they came down to the sea-side, and one of them maliciously threw a stone at them: but as h insolent conduct was highly censured by the re their resentment soon subsided.

The next day they completed their wateri without much difficulty; and, on their retu to the ships, they were informed that sever chiefs had been on board, and had endeavour to palliate the conduct of their countrymen, attributing their riotous behaviour to t quarrels then subsisting among the princip people of the island; and which had been d destruction of all order and subordination. T dispute originated about the goats, which th had left at Oneeheow the year before; they bei claimed by Toneoneo, as that island was a d pendency of his *.

SECTION XXXVI.

Account of the Sandwich Islands—Extent of Owhyhee, the largest of the Group—The adjace Country described—Snowy Mountains—Volcanic Appearances—Interior Parts—Account of Hermit—Description of Mowee—Ranai—Morotoi—Tahoorowa—Woahoo—Atooi—Oneeheo Tahoora—Climate—Quadrupeds—Birds—Vegetables—Description of the Sandwich Isles co tinued—Origin of the Natives—Pernicious Consequences of using Ava—Population—Manne and Customs—Restraints on their Women—Their Ingenuity and Docility—Dress of the Men Dress of the Women—Villages, Houses, Food—Diversions—Fondness for Gaming—Excelle Swimmers—Arts and Manufactures—Beauty of their Mats—Fishing-Hooks—Weapons.

BEFORE our navigators take a final leave of the Sandwich Islands, they give a general account of their situation, and natural history; with strictures on the customs and manners of the natives. This group consists of eleven islands. Their names, according to the natives, are Owhyhee, Atooi, Woahoo, Mowee, Morotoi, Oreehoua, Morotinnee, Tahoora, Ranai, Oneeheow, and Kaahowrowa. All these are inhabited, except Tahoora and Morotinnee. Besides the islands thus enumerated, the Indians mention another, named Modoo-papapa, or Komodoopapapa, situated to the west-sout west of Tahoora. It is low and sandy, and o visited for the purpose of catching turtle a water-fowl.

Captain Cook distinguished this cluster by t name of the Sandwich Islands, in honour of t Earl of Sandwich, under whose administrati he had enriched geography with so many valu ble discoveries. Owhyhee, the most easterly these islands, and much larger than any of the is of a triangular figure, and almost equilater The angular points constitute the northe

* On the 6th they were visited by an Indian, who brought a piece of iron on board, to be formed into the shape of a *pahooa*. It was the bolt of some large ship-timbers. None of the people in the ship could discover to what nation it belonged; but, from the shape of the bolt, and the paleness of the iron, they knew it was not English. On enquiry, the native informed them, that it was taken out of a large piece of timber, which had been driven upon their island, since they were there in January 1778. In the morning of the 8th, they weighed, and proceeded towards Oneeheow, and at three in the afternoon, anchored in twenty fathoms water, nearly on the same spot as in 17 They were incommoded in the night, and the two follow days, with a strong gale from the eastward; but the weat being more moderate on the 12th, the master was sent to north-west side of the island, in search of a more conv ent place for anchoring. In the evening he returned, h ing found a fine bay, with good anchorage, in eight fathoms water. A small village was observed on the no side of the bay, to the eastward of which were four w of excellent water.

southern, and eastern extremities. The circumference of the whole island is about 293 English miles. A mountain, named *Mouna Kaah*, which rises in three peaks, and is continually covered with snow, may be discerned at the distance of forty leagues. It separates the district of Amakoos from that of Aheedoo. To the northward of the mountain, the coast is composed of high and abrupt cliffs, from which many beautiful cascades of water descend. The country rises inland with a gradual ascent, and is intersected by narrow deep chasms. It appears to be well cultivated, and has several villages scattered about it. The snowy mountain is very steep, and its lowest part abounds with wood *.

The coast of Kaoo exhibits a dismal prospect, the whole country seeming to have undergone an entire change from the consequences of some dreadful convulsion. The ground, in many places, is covered with cinders, and intersected with blackish streaks, which seem to point out the progress of a *lava* that has flowed not many centuries ago, from Mouna Roa to the shore. The south promontory strongly represents the exhausted cavities and dregs of a volcano. But though this part of the island has a dreary aspect, it is more populous than the verdant mountains of Apoona.

The south-western parts of Akona are nearly in the same state as those of the adjoining district of Kaoo; but the country further towards the north, has been well cultivated, snd is exceedingly populous. The district of Koaarra extends from the most westerly point, to the northern extreme of the island. This country, as far as the eye could discern, appeared to be fertile and populous, but no fresh water was to be found.

The following account of the interior parts of Owhyhee, is given by a party, who set out on an expedition up the country, chiefly with an intention of reaching the snowy mountains. Having procured two of the islanders to serve them as guides, they quitted the village about four in the afternoon of January the 26th. Their course was easterly, inclining a little to the south. The country within three or four miles of the bay has been already described; but the hills afterwards rose with a less gradual ascent, which brought them to some extensive plantations, consisting of the *taro*, or eddy root, and sweet potatoes, with plants of the cloth tree. The *taro* of the Sandwich Islands was thought the best the party had ever tasted †.

Proceeding on their journey, early the next morning, they filled their calabashes at a well about half a mile from their hut. After they had passed the plantations, they arrived at a thick wood, to which the islanders frequently repair for the purpose of catching birds. The party having advanced nine or ten miles in the wood, found themselves suddenly within sight of the sea, and not very far from it. In this dilemma they thought proper to walk back to an unoccupied hut, where they had left some of the party, with the small remnant of their provisions. Here they passed the second night, during which the air was immoderately sharp.

Being now in want of provisions, they saw the necessity of returning to some of the cul-

* When their ships doubled the east point of the island, they beheld another snowy mountain, called by the natives *Mouna Roa*. It was flat at the summit, and perpetually involved in snow. According to the tropical line of snow, as determined by Monsieur Condamine, from observations made on the Cordilleras in America, the height of this mountain must be, at least 16,020 feet. The peaks of Mouna Kaah, appeared to be about the height of half a mile; and, as they are wholly covered with snow, the altitude of their summits must be at least 18,400 feet.

† The party stopped for the night at the second hut they observed among the plantations, when they supposed themselves at the distance of about seven miles from the ships. From this spot the prospect was delightful. They had a view of the vessels in the bay before them; to the left, a range of villages was seen, interspersed with groves of cocoa-nut trees, spreading along the shore; and to the right a beautiful well-cultivated plantation. Near this spot, the natives pointed out to them, the residence of a hermit, who, in early life, had been a great chief and warrior. As they approached him, they prostrated themselves, and then presented him with some provisions: his behaviour was easy, frank, and cheerful. He did not appear to be much surprised, when he first saw our Europeans, and though pressed to accept of some of their curiosities, he thought proper to decline the offer, civilly withdrawing to his cottage. The party represented him as the oldest person they had ever seen, and that he was at least a hundred years of age.

Greatly were our travellers surprised, that, in this early part of their ascent, they should find the cold so intense; but, not having a thermometer with them, they could only form their judgment of it from their feelings. They found it, however, so extreme, that they could hardly get any sleep, and the islanders could not sleep at all; both parties being disturbed, during the whole night, by their reciprocal and continued coughing.

tivated

tivated parts of the island. When they arrived at the plantations, they were surrounded by the islanders, from whom they purchased a supply of necessaries; and prevailed on two of them to accompany them as guides; their former servants in that department having deserted them. They were now nine in number. As they passed through the woods, they found many unfinished canoes and huts in different places, but no inhabitants were to be seen. During the night, the cold was more intense than before.

The next morning, which was the 29th, they set out early, intending to make a noble effort to reach the snowy mountain; but their spirits were greatly depressed, on perceiving that their miserable pittance of water, which they had discovered the preceding night, was expended. They now entered into a consultation, whether they should proceed any further, or be satisfied with the sample they had already seen of the snowy mountain.

They had no longer a path to direct their steps; their road was become extremely fatigueing, and grew more inconvenient as they advanced. The ground was almost every where broken into deep fissures, which, being slightly covered with moss, occasioned continual stumbling; the intervening space consisted of a surface of loose lava stones, which broke under their feet; and the ground sounded hollow as they walked upon it. These, and other discouraging circumstances, deterred them from proceeding; especially as they found their conductors so averse to going on, that they doubted whether they could be prevailed on to remain out another night. At length they came to a determination of returning to the ships, after taking a survey from the tallest trees they could discover. From this elevation they perceived that they were surrounded with wood towards the sea: they were unable to distinguish, in the horizon, the sky from the water; and between them and the snowy mountains, a valley presented itself of about seven or eight miles in breadth.

The travellers passed the night at a hut in the second forest; and the following day, before noon, they found themselves nine or ten miles to the north-east of the ships, towards which they marched through the plantations. In their progress, they did not observe a spot of ground, that was susceptible of improvement, left unplanted. Expressing their surprize at seeing several fields of bay, they were informed, that it was intended to cover the grounds where the young *taro* grew, to preserve them from being scorched by the rays of the sun. They observed a few scattered huts, among the plantations, which afforded occasional shelter to the labourers; but they did not see any villages at a greater distance from the sea than four or five miles.

Having thus related the principal circumstances that occurred in an expedition to the snowy mountain at Owhyhee, an account of the other islands of this groupe, may probably be expected *.

The climate of the Sandwich Isles is perhaps more temperate than that of the West India Islands, which are in the same latitude, but the difference is inconsiderable.

* That which is next in size, and nearest in situation to Owhyhee, is Mowee. It is about eight leagues north-north-west from Owhyhee, and is one hundred and forty geographical miles in circumference: the northern shores, like those of the island of Owhyhee, afford no soundings; and the country bears the same aspect of fertility and verdure.

Ranai is about nine miles distant from Mowee and Morotoi, situated to the south-west of the passage between those two islands. It abounds in roots, such as sweet potatoes, *taro*, and yams.

Morotoi is at the distance of two leagues and a half to the west-north-west of Mowee. Yams are its principal produce. It is supposed, however, to contain fresh water. The coast, on the southern and western sides of the island, forms several bays, that promise a tolerable shelter from the trade winds.

Tahoorowa is a small island off the south-western part of Mowee, from which it is nine miles distant. It is without wood, and the soil wants fertility. Between it and Mowee stands the little isle of Morotinnee, which has no inhabitants.

Woahoo is about seven leagues to the north-west of Morotoi. It appears to be the finest of all the Sandwich Islands: the verdure of the hills, the vast variety of wood and lawn, and the whole face of the country presented to view, could hardly be exceeded.

Atooi lies twenty-five leagues to the north-west of Woahoo. Its produce is nearly the same as what the other islands of this cluster furnish; but the inhabitants greatly excel all the people of the neighbouring islands, in the management of their plantations.

Oneeheow is about six leagues to the westward of Atooi. It produces plenty of yams, and of the sweet root called *tee*.

Oreehoua and Tahoora, are two small islands, situate in the neighbourhood of Oneeheow.

The quadrupeds of these islands are confined to three sorts: hogs, dogs, and rats. The dogs, like many of those which are seen at Otaheite, have pricked ears, long backs, and short crooked legs. No variety was observed in them, except in their skins; some being perfectly smooth, and others having long rough hair. They seem naturally sluggish, but perhaps that may have been occasioned more by the treatment they have received, than by their natural disposition. They are usually fed with the hogs, and often left to herd with those animals. Our navigators say they do not recollect a single instance of a dog being made a companion here, as is the custom in Europe. The practice of eating them seems indeed an insuperable bar to their being admitted into society. There being no beasts of prey, nor objects of chace in these islands, the social qualities of the dog, its fidelity, attachment, and sagacity, will probably remain unknown to the natives.

Our navigators were upwards of three months, either cruising off the coast, or in the harbour at Owhyhee; during all which time, the crews of both ships had constantly a large allowance of fresh pork; their consumption of that article, being computed at sixty-puncheons of five hundred weight each. About sixty more puncheons were salted for sea-store: and the greater part of this supply, was drawn from the island of Owhyhee; though it was generally admitted that their consumption did not occasion any scarcity of that article.

The birds of these islands are numerous, but the variety is not great. Some of them may vie with those of any country in point of beauty. Three or four species appear to belong to the *cachili*, or honey-suckers of Linnæus. One is rather larger than a bull-finch; its colour is a glossy black, and the thighs of a deep yellow. Another is of a bright scarlet; its wings black, with a white edge, and its tail black. The third variegated with brown, yellow, and red. The fourth is green, with a yellow tinge. They also saw a small bird of the fly-catcher kind; a species of thrush, with a greyish breast; and a rail, with short wings, and no tail. Ravens of a dark brown colour, are met with here, but they are extremely scarce. Here are also owls, petrels, curlews, and gannets; plovers of two species, a large white pigeon, &c.

The vegetable produce of the Sandwich Isles differs little from that of the other islands in the Pacific Ocean. The *taro* is here cultivated in great perfection. The bread-fruit trees thrive here. The sugar-canes of these islands grow to an extraordinary size. One of them was brought to our navigators at Atooi, whose circumference was eleven feet and a quarter. At Oneeheow they saw some large brown roots, from six to ten pounds in weight, resembling a yam in shape. The juice, of which it yields a considerable quantity, is very sweet, and answers many of the purposes of sugar.

The inhabitants of the Sandwich Islands are doubtless of the same extraction with those of the Friendly and Society Islands, of New Zealand, the Marquesas, and Easter Island. This fact is not only evinced by the general resemblance of their persons, and the striking similarity of their manners and customs; but seems clearly to be established by the identity of their language. From what continent they originally emigrated, and at what particular time these migrations happened, cannot easily be ascertained. It has been remarked that they bear strong marks of affinity to some of the Indian tribes, which inhabit the Ladrones and Caroline Isles; and the same affinity may again be traced among the Malays and Battas. The period of their migrations is probably remote, as they are very populous, and have no tradition of their own origin, but what is evidently fabulous.

The natives of the Sandwich Isles, in general, rather exceed the middle size, and are well made. They walk gracefully, possess much agility, and are capable of enduring fatigue; though, upon the whole, the men are said to be inferior, with respect to activity and strength, to the inhabitants of the Friendly Islands; and the women are less delicate in their formation than the Otaheitean females. Their complexion is somewhat darker than that of the Otaheiteans; and they are less attractive in their persons than the females of the Society Isles. Many of both sexes, however, exhibited open intelligent countenances; and the women, in particular, have excellent teeth and eyes, with an engaging sweetness in their manner.

The hair of these people is of a brownish black, neither uniformly curling, like that of

the African negroes, nor uniformly straight as among the American Indians, but varying, in this respect, like the hair of Europeans. There is one striking peculiarity in the features of the people of this great nation, that there is always observeable a fulness of the nostrils, without any flatness or spreading of the nose. Some persons have imagined, that this may be the effect of their customary method of salutation, which is performed by pressing together the extremities of their noses.

That superiority which is observeable in the persons of the Erees, through all the other islands, is also found here. Those were generally well formed, when the lower class of the people were subject to all the variety of form and figure, that is seen among the populace of other countries*.

Though it is supposed that the ava does not uniformly shorten life, it certainly brings on a premature and decrepid old age. Fortunately the use of it is made a peculiar privilege of the chiefs. The young son of Terreeoboo, when about thirteen years of age, frequently boasted of his being permitted to drink *ava*, and exhibited, with marks of exultation, a spot on his side that was beginning to grow scaly. When Captain Cook first visited the Society Islands, this pernicious drug was very little known among them. On his second voyage he found the use of it very prevalent at Ulietea; but it had still gained very little ground at Otaheite. When he was last there, it made such dreadful havock, that he hardly knew any of his old acquaintances. It is constantly drank at the Friendly Islands, but so much diluted with water, that hardly any ill consequences ensue, At Atooi it is used with great moderation; on which accou the chiefs of that island, are a much finer set men, than those of the neighbouring island Kaoo, and Kaireekeea were prevailed on by o navigators to abstain from it, and they recover amazingly during the short time they afterwar remained in the island†.

Our adventurers found these islanders markably kind and hospitable. Whenever th went on shore, each of the natives struggled be foremost in presenting little presents for the acceptance; bringing provisions and refres ments, or testifying some other token of the respect. The aged received them with tears joy, and were highly gratified with being pe mitted to touch them. They were continual drawing comparisons between our Europea and themselves, with marks of extreme humili The young women were also tender and enga ing, and seemed much attached to our a venturers, till it was discovered that th had too much cause to repent of their acquai ance.

In point of natural capacity, these people a not below the common standard of the hum race. The excellence of their manufactur and, their improvements in agriculture, refle great honour on them. Their eagerness of curi sity, and the various expedients they had i vented, for working the iron obtained from the were strong indications of docility and ingenuit Our adventurers saw two instances of insa persons among these people. One of them w a woman at Oneeheow; the other, a man Owhyhee. From the extraordinary attenti paid to these poor lunatics, it appeared, th the opinion of their being divinely inspire

* Instances of deformity were more frequent here, than in any of the islands visited by our navigators. While they were cruising off Owhyhee, two dwarfs came on board; one of whom was an old man four feet two inches high; the other was a woman of nearly the same stature. They also saw, among the natives, three who were hump-backed, and a young man, who had ever been destitute of hands and feet. Besides these particular defects, many of the natives are subject to boils and ulcers, which some of our Europeans ascribed to the vast quantity of salt, usually eaten with their fish and flesh. Though the Erees are subject to none of these complaints, many of them suffer dreadfully from the immoderate use of the *ava*. Those who were the most affected by it, had their eyes red and inflamed, their limbs emaciated, their bodies covered with a whitish scurf, and their whole frame trembling and paralytic.

† Notwithstanding the irreparable loss our Europeans sustained by the sudden resentment and violence of the people, it must be acknowledged that they are of a mi and affectionate disposition, equally remote from the gravi and reserve of the Friendly Islanders, and the levity a volatility of the Otaheiteans. They appear to live in t utmost harmony and friendship with each other. The w men, who had children, shewed the greatest attention them from motives of affection; and the men assisted domestic offices with an alacrity that did honour to th feelings. It must, however, be remarked, that they a much inferior to the inhabitants of the other islands, in th best criterion of civilized manners, the respect paid to t female sex. The women here, are not only denied the pr vilege of eating with the men, but are forbidden to regale superior kinds of food. Turtle, pork, several kinds fish, and some species of plantains, they are forbidden partake of.

which prevails in most of the oriental nations, is also countenanced here *.

The Sandwich Islanders, almost universally, suffer their beards to grow. There were indeed a few, among whom was the aged king, who cut it off entirely; and others wore it only on the upper lip. That variety with respect to the mode of wearing the hair, which prevails among the other islanders of this ocean, is also observable here. Besides which, they have a fashion peculiar to themselves; they cut it close on each side of the head, down to their ears, and leave a ridge extending from the forehead to the neck.

Necklaces, consisting of strings of variegated shells, are worn indiscriminately by men and women. These people also wear an ornament, in the form of the handle of a cup, about two inches in length, and one and a half in breadth, made of wood, stone, or ivory, highly polished: this is hung round the neck with fine threads of twisted hair, often many times doubled. Instead of this ornament, some of them wear a small human figure on their breast, made of bone, and suspended in the same manner.

Both sexes use the fan, or fly-flap. The most common sort is formed of cocoa-nut fibres, loosely tied in bunches, to the top of a polished handle. The tail feathers of the cock, and the tropic bird, are used for the same purpose. But those which are held in the highest estimation, have the handle formed of the leg or arm bones of an enemy killed in battle. These are carefully handed down, from father to son, as trophies of an immense value †.

The common dress of the men consists only of a piece of thick cloth, called the *maro*, about twelve inches in breadth, which passes between the legs, and is fastened round the waist. Their mats, some of which are beautifully manufactured, are of various sizes, but generally about five feet in length, and four in breadth. These they throw over their shoulders, and bring forward before: they are, however, but seldom used, except in time of war. Besides their ordinary dress, there is another appropriated solely to their chiefs, and worn only on extraordinary occasions. It consists of a feathered cloak and cap, or helmet, and has a magnificent appearance.

The common dress of the women has a close affinity to that of the men. They wrap round the waist a piece of cloth that reaches half way down the thighs; and sometimes, in the cool of the evening, they throw loose pieces of fine cloth over their shoulders, like the women of Otaheite. The *pan* is another dress, chiefly worn by the younger part of the sex. It is formed of the thinnest and finest sort of cloth, wrapped several times round the waist, and descending to the leg, so as to have the appearance of a short full petticoat.

Their necklaces are composed of shells, or of a shining hard red berry, with dried flowers of the Indian mallow, formed into wreaths. They have another elegant ornament, termed an *eraie*, which is sometimes fastened round the hair, in the manner of a garland; and sometimes worn round the neck. It is a kind of ruff formed with great ingenuity, of small feathers, woven together so closely, that the surface may be said to vie with the richest velvet in smoothness: the ground is generally red, with alternate circles of black, green, and yellow.

These islanders dwell together in small towns or villages, containing from about one hundred to two hundred houses, built tolerably close to each other, but without order or regularity. They are usually flanked, towards the sea-side, with loose detached walls, intended perhaps for shelter and defence. Some of the best houses have a court-yard before them, railed in very neatly, with smaller habitations for servants erected round it.

The inferior class of people feed principally on fish and vegetables, such as bread-fruit, plantains, sweet potatoes, sugar-canes, yams, and

* It seems probable, that the practice of feeding on the bodies of their enemies, was originally prevalent in the Islands of the Pacific Ocean; though it is not now positively known to exist in any of them, except New Zealand. The offering up human victims, still universally obtains among these islanders; and it is not difficult to conceive, why the inhabitants of New Zealand should retain the repast, which was perhaps the concluding part of these horrid rites.

† The practice of *tatooing*, or puncturing the body, prevails here, and in all the islands in this ocean; though it is only at New Zealand, and the Sandwich Isles, that the face is tatooed. The New Zealanders perform this operation in elegant spiral volutes, and the Sandwich Islanders in straight lines, intersecting each other at right angles. Some only tatoo an arm; others an arm and a leg. They have a singular method of tatooing the tip of the tongues of some of the females, the meaning of which, if it has any meaning, is not generally known.

taro,

taro. People of superior rank, have also the flesh of dogs and hogs, dressed in the mode of cookery adopted at the Society Isles. They also eat domestic fowls, which are far from being plentiful, or in any great degree of estimation. They salt their fish, and preserve them in gourd shells, not with a view of providing against scarcity, but from the decided preference they give to seasoned food. Their cookery resembles that of the Friendly and Society Islands; and though some of our Europeans disliked their taro puddings, for their sourness, others were of a different opinion*.

They usually rise with the sun, and retire to their repose a few hours after sun-set. The Erees amuse themselves in making canoes and mats; the Towtows are principally employed in the plantations, and in fishing; and the women are the manufacturers of cloth. The young persons, of both sexes, delight in dancing; and, on more solemn occasions, are entertained with wrestling and boxing-matches, like the natives of the Friendly Islands; to whom, however, they are much inferior in these respects.

Their dances bear a stronger resemblance to those of the New Zealanders, than to the Friendly or Society Islanders, and are introduced with a solemn kind of song. Their music is of a rude kind; no other instruments appeared among them than drums of various sizes. Their songs, however, which they are said to sing in parts†, and which they accompany with a gentle motion of their arms, like the inhabitants of the Friendly Islands, have a very pleasing effect.

They are much addicted to gambling; one of their games resembles that of draughts, but, from the number of squares, seems to be much more intricate. In their play, they move blac and white pebbles, from one square to another. Their manner of playing at bowls, has some affinity with the European methods. They hav frequent races between boys and girls, on th event of which very spirited wagers are betted. Our adventurers saw one of these islanders beat ing his breast, and tearing his hair, in a rage for having lost three hatchets at one of the races; to purchase which he had parted with almost the whole of his property‡.

Their method of agriculture, as well as na vigation, resembles that of the other Islands o the Pacific. They are proficients in sculpture in staining cloth, and in the manufacture o mats. Our navigators saw several curious spe cimens of their sculpture, in the wooden bowls in which the *Erees* drink *ava*. The figures are neatly finished, and accurately proportioned. They manufacture their cloth in the same manner and of the same materials, as at the Society and Friendly Isles. They extract their colours from the same berries, and other vegetables, which are used by the Otaheiteans for this purpose. They form their mats of the leaves of pandanus; and these, as well as their cloths, are beautifully wrought in patterns, and stained with a variety of colours.

Their fishing hooks are of various sizes and figures, but those principally used are in the shape of a small-fish. They make their hooks of bone, mother of pearl, or wood, pointed and barbed with little bones or toitoise-shell. Those used for catching sharks are very large, being generally seven or eight inches in length. The line used for fishing and making nets, is usually formed of the bark of the *touta*, or cloth tree.

* They are very cleanly and decent at their meals, and their method of dressing both their meat and vegetables, was generally acknowledged to be superior to the British cookery. It is the constant practice of the Erees to begin their meals with a dose of the extract of pepper-root, or *ava*. The women, as before observed, eat apart from the other sex, and are prohibited from feeding on pork, turtle, and some particular species of plantains. But they so far disregarded this interdiction, that they would privately eat pork with our Europeans; yet they never could be prevailed upon to taste the two latter articles of food.

† Some connoisseurs in music have very much doubted this circumstance of their singing in parts. Captain Burney, however, and Captain Phillips of the marines, both of whom have some knowledge of music, strongly assert, that they did sing in parts; that is, they sung together in different notes.

‡ Both sexes are surprisingly expert in swimming, which is considered among them not only as a necessary art, but also a pleasing recreation. Their encounters with the surge and the billows in Karrakakooa bay, display astonishing skill, activity, and contempt of danger. The amazing courage and address, with which they perform their wonderful manœuvres, are almost incredible. The following accident shews that children, at an early period, may be taught to lose all apprehensions of the danger of water, and set its perils at defiance.

A canoe, with a woman and her children, happening to be overset, one of the children of about four years of age seemed highly delighted with what had happened, swimming about at its ease, and playing a number of frolics, till the canoe was brought to its former position.

it is of different degrees of fineness, and may be continued to any length. They have also a superior sort made of the bark of the *areemah;* and the finest is composed of human hair. They make a cordage of a stronger kind from cocoa-nut fibres, for the rigging of their canoes.

Their gourds are used for a variety of domestic purposes. Some of them grow to such an enormous magnitude, as to be sufficiently capacious to contain ten or a dozen gallons. The better to adapt them to their respective uses, they give them different shapes, by fastening bandages round them during their growth. Thus, some of them are in the form of a dish to hold their provisions, &c. Others are of a long cylindrical form, for receiving fishing-tackle, &c. and others in the shape of a long-necked bottle, in which water, &c. is kept.

Their pans used in the process of making salt, consist of earth, lined with clay. The salt in general use at Oneeheow and Atooi, during the first visit of our adventurers, was brownish, and rather dirty; but that which they afterwards procured at Karakakooah bay, was white, and of an excellent quality.

The weapons of these people are daggers, spears, slings, and clubs. The dagger, which they call by the name of *Pahooa,* is made of a black heavy wood that resembles ebony. It is from one to two feet in length, having a string passing through the handle, by which it is suspended to the arm. The blade is rounded in the middle; and the sides, which are sharp, terminate in a point. This is a very destructive instrument in close engagements. Their spears, which are of two kinds, are formed of a hard wood, not unlike mahogany. One sort is from six to eight feet in length: the other, with which the warriors they saw at Atooi and Owhyhee were chiefly armed, are from twelve to fifteen feet in length.

Their slings resemble common slings, with this difference, that the stone is lodged on matting instead of leather. Their clubs are of various shapes and sizes, formed of different sorts of wood, and roughly executed.

SECTION XXXVII.

Further Account of the Sandwich Islands—Classes of the People—Power of the Eree-Taboo—Authority of the Erees—Tyranny of Pareea—Punishment of Offences—Their Religion—Society of Priests—The Orono—Idols—Religious Ceremonies—Human Sacrifices—Ideas of a future State—Marriages—Remarkable Instance of Jealousy—Funeral Ceremonies on the Death of a Chief—Transactions in a Second Expedition to the North, by the Way of Kamtschatka—Quit Oneeheow—Steer for Awatska Bay—Prepare for a cold Climate—Seamen, like Children, in some Respects—Sudden Change of Climate—Leaking of the Resolution—See Kamtschatka—Continued Showers of Sleet—The Resolution enters Awatska Bay—Discover St. Peter and St. Paul—Curious Mode of Travelling.

THE people of the Sandwich Islands are divided into three classes. The first are the Erees, or chiefs of each district; one of whom is superior to all the rest, and is called at Owhyhee *Eree-Taboo,* and *Eree-Moee.* The first name expresses his absolute authority; and the latter implies that, in his presence, all must prostrate themselves. The second class appear to enjoy a right of property, but have no authority. The third are called *towtows,* or servants, who have neither rank nor property*.

Whether the lower class can secure their property

* The Erees seem to have unlimited power over the inferior classes of people, many instances of which occurred daily. On the other hand, the people are implicitly obedient. It is remarkable, however, that the chiefs were never seen to exercise any acts of cruelty, injustice, or insolence towards them; though they frequently exercise their power over each other, in a most tyrannical degree. This will clearly appear from the two following instances.

A chief of the lower order had behaved with great civility to the master of the ship, on his examination of Karakakooa Bay; Mr. King, on a future day, took him on board the Resolution, and introduced him to Captain Cook, who

perty from the rapacity of the great chiefs, our navigators cannot positively say, but it appears to be well protected against theft and depredation. Their houses, plantations, hogs, and cloth are left unguarded, without fear or apprehension. In the plain country, their possessions are separated by walls; and, in the woods where horse-plantains grow, they use white flags to discriminate property. These circumstances indicate, that, where property is concerned, the power of the chiefs is not arbitrary; but so far limited as to afford encouragement to the lower orders to cultivate the soil, which they occupy individually and distinctly for their respective emolument.

Very imperfect accounts are given respecting their administration of justice. If a quarrel has arisen among the lower class of the people, the matter is referred to the decision of some chief. If an inferior chief offends one of superior rank, his punishment is dictated by the feelings of the superior at that moment. If he should fortunately escape the first transports of his rage, methods may probably be found out, through the mediation of others, to compound for his offence, by the whole, or a part of his effects.

Their religion is nearly the same as that of the Society and Friendly Islands. In common they have all their *morais*, their *whattas*, their sacred songs, and their sacrifices. The ceremonies are longer and more numerous here, than in the islands above mentioned: and though, in all these places, the performance of their religious rites, is committed to a particular class of people; yet our adventurers never found a regular society of priests till they arrived at Kakooa, in Karakakooa bay. *Orono* was the title bestowed on the principal of this order; a title seeming to imply something highly sacred, and which almost received adoration in the person of Omeeah. The privilege of holding the principal offices in this order, is limited to certain families. Omeeah, the *Orono*, was Kaoo's son. It was also observed that the son of Omeeah, an infant of the age of five years, had always a number of attendants, and such other marks of attention shewn him, as never were observed in any similar instance. Hence it was concluded, that his life was an object of importance, and that he would eventually succeed to the exalted dignity of his father *.

A party of our Europeans were conducted to a large house in a bay south of Karakakooa, in which they beheld the black figure of a man, resting on his toes and fingers: the limbs were well proportioned, and the whole beautifully polished. The name of this figure was *Mace*; round which thirteen others were placed, with rude and distorted limbs. These were said to be the Eatooas of deceased chiefs, whose names they repeated. These people also admit into their houses, ludicrous and obscene idols, not unlike the Priapus of the antients.

Many voyagers have remarked, that the Society and Friendly Islanders pay adoration to certain birds; and that custom seems prevalent in these islands. Ravens are probably the objects of it, as Mr. King saw two of these birds perfectly tame at Kakooa, and was informed they were Eatoos: he offered several articles to exchange for them, but they were all refused; and he was earnestly requested not to injure or offend them †.

With respect to their opinions of a future state,

engaged him to dine with them. While they were at table, Pareea entered, whose countenance expressed the highest indignation at seeing their guest so honourably entertained. Seizing him by the hair of the head, he would have dragged him out of the cabin, had not Captain Cook interfered. After much altercation, no other indulgence could be obtained (without quarrelling with Pareea) than that their guest should be permitted to remain in the cabin, on condition that he seated himself on the floor, while Pareea occupied his place at the table. An instance somewhat similar occurred, when Terreeoboo came first on board the Resolution; when Maiha-maiha, who attended him, seeing Pareea upon deck, turned him ignominiously out of the ship.

* It has been already observed, that the title of *Orono* was bestowed upon Captain Cook; and it is certain that these islanders considered our Europeans as a race of beings superior to themselves; frequently repeating that the great Eatooa lived in their country. Great variety of idols were to be seen on the *morais*, and about the houses of these people, on which they bestow different names; but they were held by them in very little estimation, from their contemptuous expressions of them, and from their selling them for trifles. They had generally, however, a particular figure in high favour, on which they bestowed all their adoration whilst it continued a favourite. They cloathed it in red, beat their drums in honour of it, sang hymns before it; placed bunches of red feathers, and variety of vegetables at its feet: and frequently displayed a pig, or a dog, to rot on the whatta near which it was exposed.

† Human sacrifices are more common here than in any of the islands visited by our navigators. They have re-

course

…ite, our adventurers received very defective in-
…rmation. On asking them whither the dead
…ere gone? They said, the breath, which they
…nsidered as the immortal part, was fled to the
…atooa. They also attempted to describe a place,
…hich they suppose to be the abode of the dead;
…t they seemed to have no idea of rewards and
…nishments.

Marriage is a compact which seems to exist
…ong them: it has already been mentioned,
…at, when Terreeoboo had left his queen
…orarora at Mowee, another woman cohabited
…ith him, by whom he had children, and seemed
…rticularly attached to her; but, whether poly-
…my is permitted, or whether it is mixed with
…ncubinage, nothing can be decisively said.
…domestic concerns among the lower class of
…ople, one man and one woman seemed to have
…e direction of the house, and the children were
…bordinate to them, as in civilized countries.

At Karakakooa Bay, our navigators had an
…portunity of seeing part of their funeral rites.
…earing of the death of an old chief near their
…servatories, some of them repaired to the
…ace, where they perceived a number of people
…embled. They were seated round an area,
…nting the house where the deceased chief lay;
…d a man, with a red feathered cap, came to
…e door, continually putting out his head, and
…wling most lamentably; accompanied with
…rid grimaces, and violent distortions of
…e. A large mat was afterwards spread upon
…e area, and thirteen women and two men came
…t of the house, and sat down upon it in three
…al rows; three of the women, and the two
…n, being in front. Feathered ruffs decorated
…e necks and hands of the women; and their
…oulders were ornamented with broad green
…ves, curiously scollopped. Near a small hut,
…one corner of this area, half a dozen boys were
…ced with white banners, and *taboo* sticks. The
…mpany seated on the mat, chanted a melancholy
…e. About an hour having passed in these
…remonies, more mats were spread, when the
…d chief's widow, and about four other elderly
women, walked solemnly out of the house; and, seating themselves before the company, wept most bitterly; many others joining in the melancholy dirge. They continued thus, with little variation, till late at night, when our adventurers left them.

At day-light in the morning, the people were dispersed, and every thing was perfectly quiet. Our navigators afterwards desired to know how the body was disposed of? Some women of rank, at that time approaching, signified to them, that their presence interrupted the performance of some necessary rites. Soon after they had left them, their cries and lamentations assailed their ears; and when they saw them a few hours afterwards, the lower part of their faces was painted black.

They had also an opportunity of observing the ceremonies on the funeral of a person of a lower class. Hearing dismal lamentations issue from a miserable hut they entered it, and perceived two women, whom they supposed to be mother and daughter, weeping over the body of a man who had that instant expired. They immediately covered the body with a cloth; then, lying down near it, they spread the cloth over themselves, beginning to chant a melancholy hymn, after repeating *Aweh madoaah! Aweh tanee*—Oh my Father! Oh my Husband! In one corner of the house, they beheld a younger daughter prostrate on the ground, having black cloth spread over her, and repeating the same expressions. Quitting this mournful scene, they saw a great number of the neighbours collected together at the door, on this occasion, who were all perfectly silent, but wonderfully attentive to their present melancholy duty. The place of interment for the chiefs, is the *morai*, or *heree erees;* and those who are inhumanly sacrificed on the occasion, are buried near them.

On the 15th of March, at seven in the morning, they stood to the south-west, in expectation of falling in with the island of Modoopapappa. At four in the afternoon, a large canoe overtook them, in which were ten persons, inhabitants of

…re to these horrid rites on the commencement of a war, …previous to any battle, or other signal enterprize. The …h of a chief demands a sacrifice of one or more *towtows*, …ording to the rank he bears: no less than ten were …med to suffer on the death of Terreeoboo. …mong their religious customs, the knocking out their …e-teeth may be classed with great propriety. Most of the common people, and several of the chiefs, had lost one or more of them; and this ceremony was considered as a propitiatory sacrifice to the Eatooa, to avert his anger; on the same principle as the cutting off a part of the finger at the Friendly Islands, to express the violence of their grief at the decease of a friend.

Oneeheow,

Oneeheow, who were proceeding to Tahoora to catch birds; particularly tropic and man-of-war birds. At day-break the next morning, Tahoora bore east-north-east, distant about five or six leagues.

On the 18th they saw several boobies, and man-of-war birds, which induced them to look out sharply for land. They had fine weather and a moderate wind till the 23d, when it increased to a strong gale, and continued about twelve hours. Afterwards it became more moderate. In the morning of the 26th, they supposed they saw land to the west-south-west; but discovered the mistake after sailing sixteen leagues in that direction; and, night approaching, they again steered west. They pursued this course, without much alteration in the wind, till the 29th. For some days past, they had met with several turtles, one of which was so diminutive as not to exceed three inches in length*.

On the 11th the latitude was 35° 30′, and the longitude 165° 45′. They saw plenty of sea-birds, and several bunches of sea-weed. The Discovery also passed a log of wood; but no other signs of land appeared.

On the 12th the wind came gradually round to the east, and increased to a very strong gale. They had been incommoded by a leak, but having been always able to keep it under, it gave them but little concern till the 13th, when a sudden inundation deluged the whole space between decks, and created much alarm. The water which had lodged in the coal-hole, not finding a passage into the well, had forced up the platforms over it, and instantly set every thing afloat. Their situation was the more grievous, as they could not devise any means of relieving themselves. They could think of no other expedient, than to cut a hole through the bul head, which separated the coal-hole from fore-hold, and thus form a passage for the wa into the well. This passage being made, greatest part of the water ran into the we when they were enabled to get out the rest wi buckets. The leak was now so much increas that the people were constantly employed pumping and baleing till the 15th, at noo The men submitted cheerfully to this excessi fatigue; and their sufferings were the more into rable, as they had not a dry place to sleep but, to afford them some consolation, they w permitted to have their full allowance of grog

The inclemency of the northern climate now severely felt: on the 18th they had sno sleet, and strong gales from the south-we which, considering the season of the year, the quarter from which the wind came, rather a remarkable circumstance. The sud alteration from the sultry heat which they felt the beginning of the month, to the extreme they then experienced, must have occasion great inconvenience.

On the 21st, in the forenoon, they saw a wh and a land bird. As the water appeared mud they sounded in the afternoon, but found ground with a hundred and forty fathoms of li During the three preceding days, they saw large quantity of wild-fowl, somewhat resembli ducks. This usually indicates the vicinity land; but no other signs of it had been obser since the 16th, in which time they had upwards of a hundred and fifty leagues.

The wind shifted to the north-east on the 2 The cold was so intense, that the ropes w frozen to such a degree, that it was a busines difficulty to force them through the blocks.

* The continuation of the light winds, with the unsettled state of the weather, induced Captain Clerke to abandon his plan of keeping within the tropical latitudes. In consequence of which they began to steer north-west by north, which they continued till the 6th of April, when they lost the trade wind. The fine weather, which they experienced between the tropics, had not been misemployed in causing the boats to be repaired, and other necessary duties to be performed. There were other cares, which had the preservation of the health of the crews for their object; and these occupied a great number of the people. Captain Cook's established orders of airing the beds, having fires between decks, smoking them with gun-powder, and washing them with vinegar, were invariably observed. Those who know not the habits and disposition of seamen, require to be informed, that they are so accustomed to be directed by their officers, respecting the care of themselves, that they tract the thoughtlessness of infants. Had they been suf to act according to their own discretion, the whole would have been naked before half the completion of voyage. It might reasonably be supposed, from their be experienced a voyage to the north the preceding year, they would have been particularly attentive to these ma but such reflections never operated upon them; for, as as they returned to the tropical climates, their fur jac and other articles appropriated for cold climates, kicked about the decks as useless and insignificant; th every one among them knew they were to make an voyage towards the pole. The officers, however, o them to be taken up, and put into empty casks, w they were preserved till the time arrived when it necessary they should be restored to their respective ow

the 23d, at six in the morning, the land presented itself in mountains covered with snow; and a high conical rock was observed at the distance of three or four leagues. Shortly after they had taken this imperfect view, a thick fog again appeared. As soon as the weather cleared up, they stood in to take a nearer survey of the country, when a most dreary prospect presented itself. The coast seemed straight and uniform; without bays or inlets; the ground from the shore rising in hills of a moderate elevation, behind which were ranges of mountains, whose summits penetrated the clouds. The whole seemed covered with snow, except the perpendicular sides of some cliffs, which would not permit that article to rest upon them.

The wind continued blowing strong from the north-east, with thick hazy weather, from the 24th to the 28th; insomuch that the ship resembled a complete mass of ice. The shrouds were so completely incrusted with it, as to have their dimensions doubled: the most experienced seamen among them declaring, they had never experienced such continued showers of sleet, and that extremity of cold which they had now to encounter. The inclemency of the weather, the difficulty of working the ships, and the incessant duty required at the pumps, rendered the service intolerable to most of the crew; some of whom were much frost-bitten, and others confined with colds. They continued standing four hours on each tack, having soundings of sixty fathoms, when within three leagues of the land, but no sounding at double that distance.

In the morning of the 28th the weather cleared up, and a light breeze continued from the same quarter. A fine warm day encouraged the people to expect a thaw; they were therefore busied in taking the ice from the rigging, masts, and sails, to prevent its falling on their heads. At three in the afternoon, a fair wind sprung up from the northward, with which they stood in for Awatska Bay. The mouth of the bay opens in the direction of north north-west. On the south side, the land is moderately high. Three remarkable rocks lie in the channel between them; and, on the opposite side, a single rock of considerable height. Having passed the mouth of the bay, which extends about four miles in length, a circular bason presents itself, of twenty-five miles in circumference, in which they anchored about four o'clock, in six fathoms water, wishing to escape a shoal mentioned by Muller to lie in the channel*.

In the morning of the 29th, Mr. King was sent, with the boats, to examine the bay, and deliver the letters to the Russian commander, which they had brought from Oonalashka. It is probable that the inhabitants had not, by this time, either observed the ships or the boats; for, even on the ice, no appearance of a living creature could be seen in the town. When they advanced farther on the ice, a few men were observed hurrying backwards and forwards, and a sledge, drawn by dogs, with one inhabitant in it, came down to the sea-side, opposite to them.

Whilst they were gazing at this unusual sight, and admiring the great civility of this stranger, who they supposed was coming to their assistance, they were astonished to see him suddenly turn short round, and direct his course towards the ostrog. They were equally chagrined and disappointed at this abrupt departure, especially as their journey over the ice began to be attended with much difficulty and danger. At every step they took, they sunk almost knee-deep in the snow: and, though there was tolerable good footing at the bottom, the weak parts of the ice were not discoverable, and they were continually in fear of breaking through it.

The sight of another sledge advancing towards our adventurers, afforded them some comfort; but, instead of coming to relieve them, the driver stopt, and called out to them. Mr. King instantly held up Ismyloff's letters; in consequence of which, he turned about, and went rapidly back.

* Great quantities of loose ice drifted with the tide in the middle of the bay; but the shores were entirely blocked up with it. Plenty of wild fowl were seen, and large flights of Greenland pigeons, together with ravens and eagles. They examined every corner of the bay, expecting to discern the town of Saint Peter and Saint Paul; which from the accounts given them at Oonalashka, they supposed to be a place of strength and consequence. At last they perceived, to the north-west, some miserable log-houses, and a few conical huts, raised on poles, amounting to about thirty, in the whole; which, from their situation, they were induced to conclude to be Petropaulowska. But, in justice to the hospitable treatment they found there, they are compelled to acknowledge that their disappointment was the source of much entertainment to them; for in this wretched extremity of the earth, beyond conception barbarous and inhospitable, out of the reach of civilization, barricadoed with ice, and covered with summer snow, they met with the tenderest feelings of humanity, joined to a nobleness of mind, which would have done honour to any nation upon earth.

Unable to draw any conclusion from this strange behaviour, they proceeded towards the ostrog with great circumspection; and, when they were within about a quarter of a mile of it, they observed a body of armed men advancing towards them. To avoid giving them any alarm, and to preserve a peaceable appearance, Mr. King and Mr. Webber marched in front, and the men, who had boat-hooks in their hands, were placed in the rear. The armed party consisted of about thirty soldiers, preceded by a person with a cane in his hand.

Within a few paces of them he halted, and vainly endeavoured to inform him that they were English, and had brought these dispatches from Oonalashka. Having attentively examined them, he conducted them towards the village in great silence and solemnity, frequently halting his men, and causing them to perform different parts of the manual exercise; to convince them, that, if they should presume to offer any violence, they would have to deal with those who knew what they were about.

Arriving at length at the residence of the commanding officer of the party, they were ushered in; and, after giving orders to the military without doors, their host made his appearance, accompanied by the secretary of the port. One of Ismyloff's letters was now opened, and the other sent off by a special messenger to Bolcheretsk, a town on the west-side of the peninsula of Kamptschatka, where the Russian commander of this province generally resides*.

The officer, at whose house they were entertained was a serjeant, and also the commander, of the *ostrog*. After he had recovered from the surprize which their arrival had occasioned, nothing could exceed the kindness and hospitality of his behaviour. His house, indeed, was intolerably hot, but exceedingly neat and clean. After Mr. King had changed his wet clothes, which the serjeant's civility enabled him to do, by furnishing him with a complete suit of his own, they were requested to partake of a dinner, which was doubtless the best he could procure; and, considering the visit was unexpected, was conducted with some ingenuity. To have prepared soup and *bouille*, much time would have been required; instead of which, some cold beef was sliced, and boiled water poured over it. After that they were regaled with a large roasted bird, the taste of which was inimitable, though they were unacquainted with its species. Their liquor was such as the Russians distinguish by the name of *quass*, and was the most indifferent part of their entertainment. The serjeant's wife served up several of the dishes, and was not permitted to sit down at table†.

On their return, they saw the boats towing the ship towards the village, and, about seven they moored close to the ice, at the distance of half a league from the *ostrog*. On the morning of the 30th, the carpenters were set to work to stop the leak, which had occasioned them so much trouble during their last run. It appeared to have been occasioned by some sheathing falling off from the larboard-bow, and of course the oakum was washed out from between the planks. The weather was now so warm in the middle of the day, that the ice began to break away very fast

* It appears strange that the natives had not seen the Resolution the preceding day, when they anchored in the bay; nor this morning till the boats approached the ice. The first sight of the ship had given them great alarm, and the garrison was instantly put under arms. Two field pieces were placed before the commander's house; and powder, shot, and lighted matches instantly produced.

† Having finished their repast, during which time the conversation was limited to a few bows, and other personal tokens of mutual respect, they wished to communicate to their host the cause and objects of their visits to this port. As Ismyloff had probably written to them on the same subject, in the letters they had delivered, they readily conceived the meaning of the adventurers; but as there was not a person in the place, who knew any other language than Russian and Kamptschadale, they found it extremely difficult to comprehend what he endeavoured to communicate to them. After some time spent in their attempts to understand each other, the sum of the intelligence they had procured appeared to be, that though they could not be supplied plentifully with stores and provisions at this place, they were to be procured in abundance at Bolcheretsk. That the commander would readily supply them with what they wanted; but that, till the serjeant had received orders from him, neither he, nor any of the natives, could even venture to go on board the vessel.

It being now time for our adventurers to depart, a sledge drawn by five dogs, and a driver, was instantly provided for each of their party. The sailors were greatly delighted with this mode of conveyance; and it gave them additional satisfaction when they discovered, that the two boat-hooks had a sledge appropriated solely to themselves. These sledges are so light, and so judiciously constructed for the purposes they are intended, that they moved safely and expeditiously over the ice; though difficulty and danger attended their operations on foot.

last, and almost choaked up the entrance of the bay. Several of the officers paid their visits to the serjeant, by whom they were received with great civility. Captain Clerke made him a present of two bottles of rum, supposing he could not send him any thing more acceptable; in return for which, he received some excellent fowls of the grouse kind, and about twenty very fine trouts.

On Sunday the 2d of May they had heavy showers of snow, and the weather was so irregular that the carpenters could not proceed in their business. Two sledges were observed to drive into the village on the 3d, when Captain Clerke ordered Mr. King on shore, to enquire whether any answer was arrived from the commander of Kamptschatka; which, according to the serjeant's information, might be reasonably expected about this time. The distance from Bolcheretsk to St. Peter and St. Paul, by the usual route, is about one hundred and thirty-five English miles. The dispatches were sent off by the dogs on the 29th, at noon; and returned with an answer, as they afterwards found, early this morning: it appears, therefore, that they were little more than three days and a half in performing a journey of two hundred and seventy miles.

The return of the commander's answer was, however, concealed from them for the present; and on Mr. King's arrival at the serjeant's, he was informed that he should hear from him on the following day. While Mr. King was on shore, the boat in which he came, and another, were bound fast by the ice. Thus situated they were obliged to continue on shore till the evening, when some of them were conveyed in sledges to the edge of the ice, where the boats from the ship took them off; and the rest continued all night on shore.

It froze intensely during the night, but, in the morning of the 4th, the floating ice was drifted away by a change of wind, and the boats were instantly set at liberty. In the forenoon, about ten, several sledges arriving at the edge of the ice, a boat was dispatched from the ship to conduct the persons who were in them on board. One of them was a Russian merchant from Bolcheretsk, named Fedofitsh; and the other a German, known by the appellation of Port, with dispatches from Major Behn, the commander of Kamptschatka to Captain Clerke*.

Our adventurers were much diverted with the fears and apprehensions of these people; and especially with an account, given by Mr. Port, of the serjeant's extreme caution the day before. On seeing Mr. King and some other gentlemen come on shore, he privately conveyed him, and the Russian merchant, into the kitchin; where they were concealed, to give them an opportunity of listening to their conversation, that they might be enabled to discover whether they were Englishmen or not.

Imagining, from the appearance of Mr. Port, that he might possibly be retained as the commander's secretary, he was treated accordingly, and was invited, with the Russian merchant, to dine with Captain Clerke. Soon, however, from a variety of circumstances, they began to suspect that he was no more than a common servant; but, not choosing to sacrifice their little comforts to their pride, they avoided an explanation, by not permitting such a question to be proposed to him; he therefore continued on the same footing of equality with our navigators; and they, in return, enjoyed the advantage of his abilities as a linguist.

* When they arrived at the edge of the ice, and saw distinctly the magnitude of the ships, which were then within about two hundred yards of them, they appeared to be exceedingly alarmed; and, before they would venture to embark, stipulated that two of the boat's crew should remain on shore, as hostages for their safety. It afterwards appeared that Ismyloff, in his letter to the commander, had misrepresented these ships as two small trading boats (for what reasons they could not conceive) and, as the serjeant had only seen the ships at a distance, he had not rectified that mistake.

When they arrived on board, they still perceived, from their great timidity and caution, that unpleasant apprehensions were entertained. They were elated, however, when the German found a person among them, with whom he could enter into conversation. Mr. Webber spoke that language fluently, and convinced them that they were Englishmen and friends. Mr. Port, being introduced to Captain Clerke, delivered him the commander's letter. It was written in the German language, and merely complimentary, inviting him and his officers to Bolcheretsk. Mr. Port also informed Captain Clerke that the major had been misinformed respecting the size of the ships, and the service in which they were employed; and that they were suspected to be little better than pirates.

SECT.

SECTION XXXIX.

Stores and Provisions scarce at St. Peter and St. Paul—Exorbitant Demands of a Merchant—Party dispatched for Provisions—Proceed up the River Awatska—Hospitality of the Toion Karatchin—Journey on Sledges—Remarkable hot Spring at Natcheekin—Embark on the Bolchoireka River—Generosity of Major Behn—Bolcheratsk described—Entertainments Dancing—Instance of Generosity in the Sailors—Major Behn's Departure, and extraordinary Character.

AIDED by their interpreter, they were now enabled to converse with the Russians with tolerable facility. Their first enquiries were naturally directed, to the means of procuring a supply of fresh provisions and naval stores; particularly the latter, for the want of which they had been a long time in distress. On enquiry, it appeared, that the whole country about the bay, could furnish no other live cattle than two heifers; and these the serjeant readily engaged to procure for them. Their next applications were made to the merchant, whose terms for serving them was so extremely exorbitant, that Captain Clerke thought it necessary to send an officer to the commander at Bolcheretsk, to learn the price of stores in that quarter.

Captain Clerke having thought proper to fix upon Mr. King for this service, he ordered him to prepare for setting out the following day, together with Mr. Webber, who was appointed to accompany him as interpreter. That day and the next, however, proved too stormy for beginning such a journey; but, on the 7th of May, they set out in the ship's boats to proceed to the entrance of the Awatska, where the country boats were to meet them, to conduct them up the stream. Captain Gore was now added to their party, and they were accompanied by Mr. Port, and the Russian merchant, with two cossacks, having been previously furnished with warm furred cloathing; a precaution which they soon found was extremely necessary, as it began to snow briskly immediately after their setting out*.

The men being exceedingly fatigued, and darkness would have increased the difficulty navigating the river, they declined all thoughts of advancing on their journey that evening. They fixed upon a place, which was tolerably well sheltered, and clearing it of the snow, erected a small marquée, which they had provident taken with them; and, with the assistance of good fire, and some excellent punch, passed the night agreeably. The Kamptschadales were very expeditious in cooking their provisions; but our adventurers were surprized at finding they had brought with them their utensils for making tea, thinking it a most intolerable hardship if they cannot regale themselves with that beverage two or three times a day.

As soon as it was light on the second day, they proceeded on their journey, and before they had made much progress, they were met by the *Toion* or chief Karatchin, who had been apprized of their coming, and had provided canoes that were lighter, and better contrived for navigating the higher parts of the river Awatska. They now proceeded very rapidly, the Toion's people being very expert in that kind of business. At last they arrived at the *ostrog*, named Karatchin, and the seat of his command, where they were received at the water-side by the Kamtschadale men and women, and some Russian servants belonging to Fedositsh. They were all attired in their best habiliments †.

Quitting the river, our adventurers were to perform the next part of their journey upon sledges; but the thaw had been so great in the day

* The breadth of the mouth of the Awatska is about a quarter of a mile, but it gradually became narrower as they advanced. Having proceeded for some time, they passed several branches. For the first ten miles, the general direction of the river, from the bay, is to the north; and afterwards it turns to the eastward. Six men were employed in pushing them with long poles, three of them being at each end of the boat; and proceeded against the stream, the rate of about three miles an hour. The conductors endured this severe labour for ten hours; stopping only once, for a short space of time, to take a little refreshment.

† The ostrog was pleasantly situated by the side of river, and consisted of three log-houses, nineteen *balagans* or summer-habitations, and three *jourts*, which are hous... nin...

a Merchant—
of the Town
Embark on
ntertainments
nd extraordina

fatigued, and
the difficulty
ined all thoug
ey that evenin
ch was tolera
f the snow, ere
y had provident
he assistance of
unch, passed t
hadales were ve
ovisions; but o
finding they h
ls for making t
hardship if th
that beverage t

e second day, th
d before they h
met by the *Toi*
been apprized
canoes that we
or navigating t
tska. They no
ion's people bei
business. At t
ed Karatchin, a
they were recei
amtschadale m
ervants belongi
ttired in their be

venturers were
eir journey upo
n so great in t
da

gainst the stream,
ur. The conduct
hours; stopping o
e a little refreshme
ted by the side of
s, nineteen *balagan*
ts, which are hou

The Manner of Travelling in Winter in
KAMTSCHATKA.

day-time, they could not set out till the snow was become firm by the coldness of the evening. Thus were they furnished with an opportunity of walking about the village; which was the only place in this country, that they had seen free from snow. The leaves of the trees were just budding, and the verdure was strongly contrasted with the surrounding hills, which remained covered with snow. The soil seeming capable of producing common vegetables, they were astonished at not finding a spot of it that had been cultivated. Nor were the inhabitants possessed of any sort of cattle. Their situation, during the winter months, must be wretched beyond conception. They were, at this time, removing from their *jourts* to their *balagans*, which gave our adventurers an opportunity of surveying both these sorts of habitations. The people kindly invited them into their humble mansions; cheerfulness and content were displayed in every countenance, to which the approaching change of season might probably contribute.

Returning to their hosts, supper was prepared for them; and, when the repast was ended, they entertained the *Toion* and his wife with some punch. Captain Gore, with his wonted generosity, made them some valuable presents: after which they retired to the kitchin, leaving our adventurers in the other room; on the benches of which they spread their bear-skins, and took a short repose. But the melancholy howlings of the dogs awakened them about nine the same evening. While the baggage was lashing upon the sledges, their horrid noise continued; but as soon as they were yoked, and the party all prepared for travelling, a cheerful yelping succeeded, which ceased the instant they marched off*.

During the winter, the dogs are fed with offals of dried and stinking fish; and even this wretched food is withheld from them, a day before they undertake a journey: nor are they permitted to taste a morsel of food, till they arrive at the end of it. They frequently fast for two entire days, in which time they will perform a journey of very great extent. These dogs resemble the Pomeranian breed in shape, but they are considerably larger†.

Having proceeded about four miles on their journey, it began to rain, which, added to the darkness of the night, greatly disconcerted them. After some consultation, it was agreed, that they should continue on that spot till day-light; when they accordingly wrapped themselves up in furs, and waited patiently for the morning. About three o'clock they were summoned to proceed; the guides being apprehensive, that if they waited any longer, they might probably be stopped by the thaw, which would equally prevent their advancing or returning. Though they had many

under ground. The *Toion*, to whose habitation they were then conducted, was a plain decent man, sprung from a Russian mother by a Kamtschadale father. His house, like the rest in this country, consisted of only two apartments: the furniture of the outer room was a long narrow table; and the inner apartment, which was the kitchen, was but scantily furnished. But the hearty welcome, and kind attention of the host, more than compensated for the poverty of the habitation. The wife of the *Toion* was an excellent cook, and served their guests with various sorts of fish and game. Whilst they were dining in this miserable hut, at the extremity of the habitable globe, a solitary half-worn pewter-spoon attracted the attention of our adventurers. Its form or fashion had nothing singular, and the word *London* was stamped upon the back of it. Language cannot express the feelings which this trifling circumstance gave birth to. Those who have been long absent from their native country, will readily conceive what inexpressible transport such an occurrence may occasion.

* The length of the body of one of these sledges is about four feet and a half, and the breadth one foot. It is made in the form of a crescent, of light tough wood, fastened together with wicker-work; and, among people of rank, is elegantly stained with red and blue; the seat being covered with furs or bear-skins. They seldom carry more than one person at a time, who sits aside, with his feet on the lower part of the sledge, having his baggage and provisions in a bundle behind him. The usual number of dogs employed in drawing this carriage, is five; four of them yoked two and two, and the other acting as leader. Great attention is shewn in training up the leader, which frequently becomes very valuable, on account of his steadiness and docility. When the dogs are inattentive to their duty, the rider chastises them by throwing his crooked stick at them. Should the driver happen to lose his stick, it is said, the dogs immediately discover it; and if he should not be steady and resolute, they will instantly set off full speed, and never stop till their strength is exhausted, or till the carriage is overturned and dashed to pieces, or hurried down a precipice, when all are buried in the snow.

† Not choosing to rely on their own skill, they had each a man to conduct the sledge, which, from the condition the roads were then in, proved a very laborious business. Mr. King was attended by a good-natured cossack, who was so very imperfect in his business, that he was continually overturned, which afforded entertainment to his companions. The party consisted of ten sledges in the whole: that which conducted Captain Gore, was made of two lashed together, and abundantly supplied with furs and bear-skins; it had ten dogs, yoked four a-breast. The carriages laden with baggage, were also drawn by that number of animals.

The Manner of Travelling in Winter in KAMTSCHATKA.

difficulties to encounter, principally occasioned by the adverse condition of the road, they arrived at the *ostrog* of Natcheekin, at two in the afternoon. It is situated on a small stream, which falls into the Bolchoireka at some distance below the town*.

The next morning they embarked on the Bolchoireeka, but they were greatly impeded by the shallows; and, though the stream was rapid in many places, they frequently had ripplings and shoals, and were under the necessity of hauling the boats over them. The country, on each side of the river, was romantic, but not sufficiently diversified. Nothing was exhibited to gratify curiosity, except now and then the sight of a bear, or a flight of wild-fowl. This, and the following night, they slept under their marquée, on the banks of the river.

On the 12th, at day-light, they had passed the mountains, and were entering an extensive plain, covered with shrubby trees. At nine they reached an *ostrog*, named Opatchin, about fifty miles from Natcheekin. Here they found a serjeant, and four Russian soldiers, who had been two days waiting for their arrival, and who immediately dispatched a light boat to Bolcheret with intelligence of their approach. A magnificent canoe, completely furnished with skins and furs, was prepared for their reception, and they were commodiously equipped. The remainder of their passage was performed with great facility and expedition; the river growing more rapid as they descended, and they were less obstructed by shoals.

On their approaching Kamtschatka, they supposed, from an appearance of great stir and bustle, that their reception was to have been in form. This was an unpleasant circumstance, as decent apparel had long been very scarce among our adventurers; and their travelling dresses consisted of a strange assemblage of the modes of India, Europe, and Kamtschatka. To make a parade through the metropolis in this motley trim, they thought would appear highly ridiculous. The commander, however, proposed to receive them at the water-side, which was accordingly complied with. The manner in which they were received by him, was the most engaging that could be conceived; but they had the mortification to discover, that he had almost forgotten the French language, so that the satisfaction of conversing with him was wholly confined to Mr. Webber, who spoke the German, which was his native tongue.

Major Behm was accompanied by Captain Shmaleff, the next in command, and another officer; the whole body of merchants attending also. They were conducted to the commander's house, where they were received politely by the lady, who had prepared tea and other refreshments for them.

The first compliments being over, Mr. Webber acquainted the Major, by the directions of Captain Gore, that they were distressed for want of naval stores, fresh provision, flour, and other necessaries; but they were convinced they could not receive much assistance from him. Here the Major interrupted Mr. Webber, by observing that he should not bestow a thought upon the difficulties of supplying their wants; he only wished to know what articles they stood in need of, and the time he could be allowed for procuring them. After expressing thanks for his obliging condescension, an account of the naval stores, &c. which our navigators were desirous of purchasing, was presented; when he was also informed, that they intended to persecute their voyage about the 5th of June†.

Early

* The ostrog consists of one log-house, the residence of the *Tion*, one *jourt*, and five balagans. Our adventurers were received with the same hospitality as at Karatchin, and in the afternoon were conducted to a remarkable hot-spring, in the vicinity. Before they came very near it, they beheld a steam rising from it, as from a boiling caldron; and when they approached it, they sustained a strong sulphureous effluvia. The main spring forms a bason of about three feet in diameter; besides which, there are several lesser springs, of the same degree of heat, in the adjacent ground: a spot, consisting of about an acre, was so extremely hot, that a person could not remain two minutes in the same place. The water flowing from these sources, supplies a small bathing pond, and afterwards forms a rivulet, which, at the distance of about one hundred and fifty yards, is received by the river. Great cures are said to have been effected by this bath in rheumatism, scorbutic ulcers, and many other disorders.

† Supposing our adventurers might be fatigued, and required repose, the commander begged leave to conduct them to their lodgings at about seven o'clock. In going along, they passed two guard-houses, where the men were turned out under arms, in compliment to Captain Gore; and were conducted to a neat decent house, which the Major had chosen for their residence, while they continued at Kamtschatka. Two sentinels were posted at their door, and a serjeant's guard in an adjoining house. Having thus disposed of our adventurers, the Major took his leave, promising

Early in the morning they received the compliments of the commander, of Captain Shmaleff, and the most respectable people of the town; who all honoured them with visits soon after. The two former having, after they had retired to rest, enquired of Mr. Port, what articles were most pressingly required on board the ship; they insisted on their sharing with the garrison under their command, in the small stock of provisions they had then remaining.

They thankfully accepted the liberal offer of these hospitable strangers; on condition that they should be informed of the price of the articles they received from them, that Captain Clerke might draw upon the Victualling-Office in London, for the amount. This was positively refused, though repeatedly urged; the Major always stopping them short by saying, "that his mistress would be highly gratified at his rendering every assistance in his power to the English, who are her good friends and allies; and that it would give her a particular satisfaction to find, that, in such remote regions, her dominions had afforded any relief to vessels engaged in such important services."

He added, that he could not, therefore, act contrary to the principles of his empress, as to think of receiving any bills; but, if they insisted on it, they might give a bare memorandum of the articles he might supply them with, which he would transmit to the court of Russia, as evidence of his having performed his duty. This matter being adjusted, he begged to be informed respecting their private wants; saying he should consider it as offering him an affront, if they applied to any of the merchants, or had dealings with any person except himself*.

He felt this compliment, as it was intended he should; and was much struck at beholding, in one view, the whole of that coast on the side of Asia and America, which his countrymen had been so many years employed in acquiring an imperfect knowledge of. They dined this day at the commander's, who, ever studious to gratify their curiosity, had prepared variety of dishes, dressed in the Russian and Kamtschadale manner, as well as several in the English style. The afternoon was occupied in taking a view of the town, and the adjacent country. Bolcheretsk is situated in a low swampy plain, extending to the sea of Okotsk, being about forty miles in length. It lies on the north side of the Bolchoi-reka, or Great River.

The depth of the river, below the town, is six to eight feet, and the breadth a quarter of a mile: at the distance of twenty-two miles, it empties itself into the sea at Okotsk, where it is capable of admitting pretty large vessels. No corn, of any kind, is cultivated in this part of the country; and the Major's garden, is the only one that has been planted. In general, the earth was covered with snow; such parts as are free from it, are full of black turfy hillocks. Twenty or thirty cows were seen, and the commander had six good horses. These, and their dogs, are their only tame animals. It being necessary for them to keep a great number of the latter; they can only rear such cattle as are a match for them in strength and size; for, during the whole of the summer season, the dogs are turned loose to provide entirely for themselves; and are sometimes so ravenous that they will even venture to attack a bullock.

The houses in Bolcharetsk are all in the same fashion, consisting of logs of wood, and thatched. The Major's habitation is considerably larger than the rest, having three capacious rooms, which are neatly papered; but the talc,

ing to visit them the following day. Our fellow traveller, Mr. Port, and a soldier, of a rank between that of serjeant and a corporal, were fixed upon to be their male domestics; and they had a house-keeper, and a cook. In the course of the evening, they were honoured with a number of civil messages, from the principal inhabitants of the town, politely observing that they would not immediately visit them, as such an intrusion would add to their fatigue, and that they would do themselves that honour the next morning. Such politeness, in so uncultivated and desolate a country, formed a contrast highly in favour of its inhabitants.

In return for such singular generosity, they had little to bestow but their admiration and their thanks. At this moment, however, Mr. King recollected, that Captain

* Clerke had sent him a set of the engravings to Captain Cook's second voyage, desiring him to present it, in his name, to the commander; who, being an enthusiast in every thing relative to discoveries, received it with delight, as nothing could have been more acceptable. Captain Clerke had also given Mr. King a discretionary power of permitting the commander to see a chart of the discoveries made in the present voyage; and, judging from his situation and disposition of mind, that he would be gratified by such a communication; though, from motives of delicacy, he had only asked a few general questions on the subject, Mr. King reposed in him that confidence, which his whole conduct so richly merited.

which

which covered the windows, gave them a very mean appearance. The town consists of low buildings, in rows of five or six habitations each, connected by a passage extending the whole length of them; having the kitchen and store-house on one side, and the dwelling apartments on the other. There are also barracks for the Russian soldiers and cossacks, a church, a court-room; and, at the end of the town, a number of Balagans. The number of the inhabitants is between five and six hundred.

They made a private application, the next morning, to Fedositch, the merchant, to purchase some tobacco, the sailors having been deprived of that delicious article for upwards of a year. Like other similar transactions, this circumstance was immediately made known to the commander; and soon after, they were surprised to find in their habitation, four bags of tobacco, weighing upwards of a hundred pounds each; which the Major requested might be presented to the sailors in his name, and that of the garrison under his command. By the same conveyance, they received twenty loaves of sugar, and as many pounds of tea, which the officers were entreated to accept of, as it was understood they were almost destitute of those articles. A present was also sent from Madame Behm to Captain Clerke, consisting of figs, rice, honey, butter, and other necessaries, attended with her best wishes, that, in his infirm state, they might prove serviceable to him *.

Being engaged to dine this day with Captain Shmallaff, he varied their amusements, by entertaining them with an exhibition of dancing, in the Russian and Kamtschadale style. No description can convey an adequate idea of this uncouth entertainment. The figure of the Russian dance had some analogy to those of the English hornpipes, and consisted of one, two, or four performers at a time. Their steps were exceeding short and quick, hardly raising their feet fr the ground: their arms were hung down close the sides, the body remaining the whole ti erect, and immoveable, except when the pe formers passed each other, when the arm w raised with an awkward motion. But if t Russian dance was ridiculous, the Kamtschad was infinitely more so: the principal intention this dance, is to represent the clumsy gestures the bear; which would be uninteresting to d cribe minutely. The body, however, was ways bowed, and the knees bent, whilst the ar were employed in imitating the tricks and at tudes of that awkward animal.

Much time having been consumed by o adventurers in their journey to Bolcheretsk, a being informed that their return would probab be more tedious, they thought it necessary acquaint the Major this evening, with their i tention of departing the following day. Th could not think of leaving their new acquai ance without regret, and were agreeably su prised, when the Major promised to accompa them, if they would remain with him one d longer; as he should receive great pleasure returning with them to St. Peter and St. Paul that he might be perfectly satisfied, that nothi which could be done to serve them, should omitted †.

The next morning being fixed on for the d parture of our adventurers, they retired early their lodgings, where they found three travelli dresses, made after the Kamtschadale mo which the Major had provided for them. Th had indeed no inconsiderable load of baggag for, exclusive of the commander's favours, Ca tain Shmallaff, and several other individuals, d played many instances of generosity ‡.

On their return, they did not arrive at Op ch

* They attempted in vain, to oppose this profusion of bounty, by representing to him that his liberality required to be restrained, or he would bestow on them the whole stock of the garrison. But his answer was uniformly to the following effect. "That he had been in distress himself, and he was sensible that we must now be in that situation."

† Our adventurers dined this day with the commander, who, wishing to shew us some samples of the manners and customs of the country, invited all the principal inhabitants of the town, to his house in the evening. The dresses of the women were splendid, after the Kamtschadale fashion. The wives of the officers of the garrison displayed much taste, some habited in the Siberian, and some in European style. The whole had the air of some enchan scene, in the midst of a dreary desert. The entertainme of this night were dancing and singing.

‡ On the 16th, in the morning, they were preparing their departure, when they were invited to take their le of Madame Behm, in their passage to the boats. On q ting their apartments, they saw all the soldiers and cossa of the garrison drawn up on one side; and, on the oth were all the male inhabitants of the town, in their best parel; the body of the people all joining in a melanch song, appropriated to such occasions, according to custom of the country. Thus they proceeded to the bo

six till the 17th in the evening; on the 19th, they reached Natcheekin, crossed the plain to Paratchin on the 20th, and proceeded down the Awatska river on the 21st. In the course of their journey, they were much pleased at the cheerfulness, with which the *Toions*, and their Kamtschadales assisted them at the different ostrogs. On seeing the Major, joy appeared in every countenance; and their sorrow was very apparent, when he informed them that he should speedily leave them.

A messenger had been dispatched to Captain Clerke, from Bolcheretsk, with an account of their reception, and of the Major's intention of returning with them; and at the same time apprizing them of the day he might probably expect to see them. Our adventurers saw, when they approached the harbour, all their boats coming towards them. The men were all clean, and the officers as spruce as their wardrobes would enable them to be. The Major was gratified with the healthy appearance of the seamen, and was surprised to observe, that many of them had no other covering than a shirt and trowsers, though it really snowed at that very instant.

The next morning, Mr. King conducted the Major to the ships, when he was saluted with thirteen guns, and received every possible mark of distinction and respect. He was attended by the commander of a Russian galliot, two merchants from Bolcheretsk, a master of a sloop, and the priest of the village of Paratounca. After visiting Captain Clerke, and taking a view of the two ships, he returned to dinner on board the Resolution. In the course of the afternoon, the curiosities which had been collected during the voyage, were displayed before him, and an assortment of each article presented to him by Captain Clerke. On this occasion, justice will not permit us to pass over an instance of great generosity and gratitude, among our British sailors; who, being informed of the handsome present of tobacco, that was made them by the Major, voluntarily requested that their grog might be withheld, and their allowance of spirits presented, on their part, to the garrison of Bolcheretsk. This extraordinary sacrifice could not but excite admiration, considering how much a sailor felt on the abridgment or deprivation of his grog. The officers, however, would not permit them to suffer by their generosity, and substituted, in the room of the small quantity of brandy, which the Major consented to accept, an equal quantity of rum. This, with a dozen or two of Cape wine, for Madame Behm, and some other trivial presents, which they were enabled to make, were politely accepted. The tobacco was distributed the next morning among the crews of both vessels; every man who smoked or chewed tobacco, being allowed three pounds; the others only one pound.

Major Behm, having resigned the command of Kamtschatka, intended to repair speedily to Petersburgh; and he now expressed his willingness to convey any dispatches they might choose to commit to his care. Such an opportunity was not to be neglected; and Captain Clerke requested him to take the charge of some papers relative to their voyage, to the British Ambassador at the Russian Court.

The Major was alternately entertained in the two ships, the three following days. He took his leave on the 25th, when he was saluted with thirteen guns; the sailors, at their own request, testifying their regard for him by three cheers. Mr. King and Mr. Webber attended him, the next morning, a few miles up the Awatska river, where the Russian priest, and his family were waiting to bid a last adieu to their commander.

Though our navigators had not been long acquainted with Major Behm, his behaviour had inspired them with the highest esteem for him; and they could not think of parting with one, to whom they were under such infinite obligations, without indulging the most tender feelings. Exclusive of the stores, which might probably be carried to a public account, the private presents received from him amounted to upwards of two hundred pounds. But even his generosity was exceeded by the delicacy with which his favours were conferred, and his ingenious endeavours to prevent the receiver's feeling the weight of obligations, they were unable to requite. "The service in which our navigators

the commander, preceded by the drums, and other music of the garrison. Here they were received by Madame Behm, accompanied by several ladies splendidly attired. Having partook of some refreshment provided for them, they advanced to the water-side; and, having taken leave of Madame Behm, after assuring her that the sense of the hospitality of Bolcheretsk would remain indelible in their hearts, they were too much affected not to hasten into the boats. At putting off, they received three cheers, which they gratefully returned.

were employed," he said, "was for the general benefit of mankind; and entitled *them* to the offices of humanity, and the privilege of citizens, in whatever country they might be driven."—That by affording *them* such relief as was in his power, he knew he was acting agreeably to the wishes of his empress; and that he could not so entirely forget her character, or his own honour as to barter for the performance of a duty."

The Major, exclusive of his relieving the present distresses, was not unmindful of the future wants; and presented the Captain with written paper, enjoining every Russian subject to assist them to the utmost of their abilities.

SECTION XLI.

Transactions in a Second Expedition to the North, by the Way of Kamptschatka—Transactions at Petropaulowska—Abundant Supply of Fish—Supply of Rye Flour—Celebration of his Majesty's Birth-Day—Eruption of a Volcano—Appearance of the Country—Cheepoonski Noss—Kronotskoi Noss—Tschukotskoi Noss—Isle of Saint Laurence—East Cape of Asia—Obstructions from the Ice—Some Sea Horses killed—Asia and America seen at the same Time—Attempt to pass the Ice—Critical State of the Discovery—Sea-Horses killed—Greatly obstructed by the Ice—Damages sustained by the Discovery—Resolve to proceed to the Southward—at which the Crews rejoice—The Island of St. Lawrence—Island of Mednoi—Death of Captain Clerke—Enumeration of his Services.

As the preceding section terminated with a narrative of the return of the party from Bolcheretsk, and of the departure of Major Behm; an account of the transactions which passed at Petropaulowska during their absence, will naturally follow.

On the 7th of May, a short time after they had quitted the bay of Awatska, a large piece of ice drove against the Resolution, and brought home the small bower anchor; which occasioned the other anchor to be weighed, and the ship was moored again. The carpenters, who were occupied in stopping the leek, found it necessary to take off great part of the sheathing from the bows; and many of the trunnels appeared to be loose and rotten. On the 11th, heavy gales blew from the north-east; but the weather becoming more moderate in the afternoon, and the ice having drifted away as far as the mouth of the harbour of Petropaulowska, they warped close to the shore, for the greater convenience of procuring wood and water, and moored again.

On the 12th, a party was detached on shore to cut wood, but as the snow still covered the ground, very little progress was made in that service. The beach being clear of ice on the 15th, a party was sent out to haul the seine, and caught a plentiful supply of flat fish for the companies of both ships. From this time they quitted the harbour, they were even overpowered with vast quantities of fish from every quarter. The presents which were sent them, consisted principally of herrings, trout, flat-fish, and cod. The people of the Discovery at one time, surrounded such a quantity in the seine, that fearing they should break the net they found it necessary to throw out a considerable number; and the cargo, when landed, was still so abundant, that, besides reserving a sufficient stock for immediate use, they filled several casks for salting; and, after they had sent on board the Resolution a reasonable quantity for the same purpose, they left behind several bushels on the beach.

The ice and snow now began rapidly to diminish, and plenty of celery, nettle-tops, and wild garlick were gathered for the use of the crews. The birch-trees were also tapped, and the sweet juice, of which they produced great quantities, was invariably mixed with the brandy allowed to the men. On the 16th a small bullock was killed, which the serjeant had procured for the ships' companies. It weighed two hundred and seventy-two pounds, and was served out to be the crews for their Sunday's dinner; being the first fresh beef they had tasted since the departure of their vessels from the Cape of Good Hope.

Hope in 1776; a period of almost two years and a half*.

The Russian hospital, near the town of St. Peter and St. Paul, was, on the first arrival of our navigators in that quarter, in a very deplorable state. All the soldiers were afflicted with the scurvy; and many of them to a very great degree. The other Russian inhabitants were in a similar condition; and even their friend the serjeant, by drinking too plentifully of the spirits he had received from them, had brought on himself, in a few days, some of the most alarming symptoms of that disease. Captain Clerke, anxious to relieve them from this lamentable state, put them under the care of the British surgeons, and gave orders, that a supply of sour krout, and malt for wort, should be furnished for their use. A wonderful alteration soon appeared in the figures of most of them, and their speedy recovery was principally attributed to the effects of the sweet wort.

On the 1st of June nine thousand pounds weight of rye flour were brought on board the Resolution; and the Discovery received a proportional quantity. They were supplied with this flour from the stores of Petropaulowsky. The men were now put on their full allowance of bread, which they had not before enjoyed since the time of their leaving the Cape of Good Hope†.

On the 6th, twenty head of cattle arrived, having been sent to our navigators, by the directions of the commander, from the Verchnei *ostrog*, on the river Kamtschatka, about the distance of one hundred miles from this place. Port, who, on account of his skill in languages, had been left with them, now took his leave of them, carrying with him the journals of their voyage, which Major Behm was to take charge of, and the packet that was to be forwarded by express.

About three in the afternoon of the 12th, they set sail; but, at eight, the tide making against them, and the wind being inconsiderable, they anchored again in ten fathoms water, off the mouth of Rakowina harbour; the ostrog being at the distance of about three miles. The next morning, at four, they got under way with the tide of ebb; and, as there was a perfect calm, the boats were dispatched a-head for the purpose of towing the ships. About ten, a south-easterly wind springing up, and the tide having turned, they were obliged to let go their anchors again, in seven fathoms, the ostrog bearing north half east, at the distance of a mile from the nearest land.

Captain Gore and Lieutenant King landed, in the afternoon, on the east side of the passage, where they observed the remains of spacious villages; and saw an old ruined parapet, with four or five embrasures. Not far from this spot, the ruins of some subterraneous caverns were visible.

They weighed anchor with the ebb tide, about six in the afternoon; but, two hours after, a thick fog coming on, they were under the necessity of bringing to. Before day-light on the 15th, they heard a rumbling noise, resembling distant thunder; and, when the day appeared, the sides and decks of the ships were covered, near an inch thick, with a fine dust like emery: the air was, at the same time, loaded and obscured with this substance; and, towards the volcano mountain, to the northward of the harbour, it was exceedingly thick and black. About noon, and during the afternoon, the loudness of the explosions increased, and they were succeeded by showers of cinders. Several small stones, which had undergone no alteration from the action of fire, fell with the cinders. In the evening they had dreadful claps of thunder, and vivid flashes of lightning; which, with the dark-

* John Macintosh, the carpenter's mate, died this evening, after having endured a dysentery ever since they had left the Sandwich Isles. He was a peaceable and industrious man. Though he was the fourth person they had lost by sickness during the voyage, he was the first of those, who, from his age and constitution, could be said to have had an equal chance of life with the rest of his companions. Whatman was about sixty years of age; and Roberts, and Mr. Anderson, from the decline which had manifestly commenced before their departure from England, would probably not have lived to a later period, under any circumstances.

Captain Clerke's health continued daily to decline, notwithstanding the salutary change of diet which Kamtschatka afforded him. The priest of Paratounca, though his habitation was sixteen miles from the harbour where their ships were stationed, supplied him daily with milk, bread, fowls, and fresh butter.

† They had fresh breezes, and heavy rains, on the 4th of June, which put a stop to the intended operation of dressing the ships, and obliged our navigators to content themselves with firing twenty-one guns, in honour of his Majesty's birth-day, and celebrating it, in other respects, as well as they could.

ness,

ness of the sky, and the sulphureous smell of the air, produced a very awful effect. Our navigators were, at this time, about eight leagues distant from the foot of the mountain.

The country had now a very different appearance from what it had at their first arrival. The snow, except on the summits and sides of the lofty mountains, had vanished; and the sides of the hills, which abounded with wood in many parts, were covered with a beautiful verdure. As it was the intention of Captain Clerke to keep in sight of the coast of Kamtschatka, as much as the weather would permit, in order to ascertain its position, they continued to steer towards the north-north-east. The volcano was then observed to throw up immense volumes of smoke; and they did not strike ground with one hundred and fifty fathoms of line, at the distance of twelve miles from the shore.

On the 18th the wind blew fresh from the south, and the weather became so thick and hazy, that it was then imprudent to make any further attempts to keep in sight of the land. But in order to be ready, whenever the fog should clear up, to resume their survey, they ran on in the direction of the coast (as represented in the Russian charts) and fired signal guns for the Discovery to proceed on the same course. At three in the morning of the 20th, the weather becoming clearer, they stood in towards the land; and, in the space of an hour afterwards, saw it a-head, at the distance of about five leagues. They had not, however, been long gratified with this view of the land, when the wind freshened from the south-west, bringing on a thick fog, which obliged them to stand off in the direction of north-east by east. The fog dispersing about noon, they again steered for the land, expecting to fall in with Kamtschatkoi Noss, and gained sight of it at day-break on the 21st. The south-west wind being soon after succeeded by a light breeze, that blew off the land, they were prevented from approaching the coast near enough to determine its direction, or describe its aspect. At nine in the evening they were six miles nearer the coast, when it appeared to form a projecting peninsula, and to extend about twelve leagues, nearly in the direction of north and south.

The season being too far advanced for them to make an accurate survey of the coast of Kamtschatka, it was the intention of Captain Clerke, in their course to Beering's Straits, to ascertain chiefly the situations of the projecting points of the coast *.

Nothing essential occurred till the 3d of July, between twelve and one, when they descried the Tschukotskoi Noss, bearing north half west, at the distance of about fourteen leagues. At five in the afternoon, they saw the island of St. Lawrence, in the direction of east three-quarters north; and also another island, which they had no certain knowledge of. Captain Clerke proposed to have a nearer view of it, but they were unable to weather the Isle of St. Lawrence, and were therefore obliged to bear up again, and pass them all to the leeward.

On the 6th of July, at noon, they observed a considerable number of large masses of ice; and observing that it adhered, in many places, to the shore on the continent of Asia, they were not surprised when they fell in, at three in the afternoon, with an extensive body of it, stretching towards the west. Discouraged by this appearance, their hopes of proceeding much farther to the north this year, than they had done in the preceding, were abandoned. Not having much wind in the afternoon, the boats were hoisted out in pursuit of sea-horses, great numbers of which were seen on the detached pieces of ice; but they returned without success, those animals being too shy to permit their enemies to come within gun-shot of them.

Having hoisted in the boats at seven in the evening, they stood to the north-eastward with a fresh southerly breeze, intending to explore the American continent. In this attempt they were disappointed, for on the morning of the

* On the 22d, they passed a dead whale, which emitted a most horrible smell, perceivable at the distance of about four miles: a considerable number of gulls, petrels, and other oceanic birds were regaling themselves upon it. At one in the afternoon on the 25th, the depth of water was so great, that they had no ground with a hundred and sixty fathoms of line. A fog prevented their making a nearer approach to the land, and they steered east by north. At the distance of about eight miles from the land, they observed a strong rippling, and, fearing they should meet with foul ground, they made sail to the north-east, along the coast. On heaving the lead, they found the depth of water to be twenty-four fathoms, over a bottom of gravel; and naturally concluded that the appearance above-mentioned was occasioned by a tide, then running to the southward.

…, they were stopped by a large body of ice, stretching from north-west to south-east. At two in the afternoon, on the 8th, they found themselves close to an expanse of ice, which, from the mast head, was perceived to consist of very large compact bodies, united towards the exterior edge; but, in the interior parts, pieces were observed floating in vacant spaces of the water *.

At eight in the evening an easterly breeze sprung up, with which they continued to steer to the southward; and at midnight fell in with many large bodies of ice. They endeavoured to push through them with an easy sail, that the ships might sustain no injury; and proceeding a little further towards the south, nothing could be perceived but a compact field of ice, stretching to the north-east, south-west, and south-east, as far as the eye could extend. This formidable obstacle prevented their visiting the Tscuhtski; for no space remained open, but back again to the northward; they therefore tacked at three in the morning of the 11th, and stood for that quarter.

They continued their northerly course, with a moderate breeze from the south, till ten in the morning of the 13th, when they again found themselves close in with a solid mass of ice, to which they could discover no limits from the mast-head, which effectually discouraged them from proceeding further.

As there was no probability of getting further to the north, Captain Clerke determined to make a final attempt on the coast of America for Baffin's Bay; as they had been able to advance the farthest on this side, in the preceeding year. Accordingly, they continued to work to the windward the remaining part of the day, with a fresh easterly breeze. At eight in the forenoon of the 16th, they had a strong gale from the south-west, when they found themselves in a manner embayed; the ice having suddenly taken a turn to the south-eastward, and encompassed them on all sides, but the south. In consequence of this, they hauled their wind to the southward, being then in twenty-six fathoms water, at the distance of twenty-five leagues from the American coast.

At five in the morning of the 18th, they continued their progress towards the north. They saw plenty of sea-parrots, small ice-birds, and a number of whales; and passed several logs of drift-wood. At one in the afternoon, they were close in with a firm united mass of ice, stretching from east to west-north-west. Though no sea-horses were perceived on the body of ice, they were extremely numerous on the detached fragments. About nine in the evening, a white bear was seen swimming close to the Discovery; it afterwards directed its course towards the ice, on which two others were also seen †.

To these animals they were indebted for several fresh repasts; their flesh indeed had a strong fishy flavour, but it was infinitely superior to that

* By the 9th they had sailed near forty leagues to the eastward, along the edge of the ice, without observing any opening, or a clear sea to the northward beyond it; consequently they had no prospect of making further progress to the northward at that time. On the 10th, at noon, they passed considerable quantities of drift ice, and a perfect calm ensued. There being great numbers of sea-horses on the pieces of ice that surrounded them, they hoisted out the boats, and dispatched them in pursuit of those animals. Being more successful on this occasion, than they were on the 6th, the people returned with three large ones, and a young one; after having killed or wounded several others. The persons of whom this party was composed, were witness of many striking instances of parental affection. On the approach of the boats towards the ice, all of them took their young ones under their fins, and endeavoured to escape with them into the sea. Some of the afflicted parents, whose cubs were killed or wounded, and left floating upon the surface of the water, rose again, and carried them down. After which they were observed bringing them, at intervals, above the surface, as if to accommodate them with the air; and then plunging them again under the water, with a horrid bellowing. The female in particular, whose cub had been killed, and taken into the boat, became so extremely furious, that she even stuck her two tusks through the bottom of the cutter.

† At one in the morning on the 19th, they became so completely embayed by the ice, that no opening was left but to the southward: to which quarter they therefore directed their course, returning through a remarkably smooth water, by the same way they had come in. They were unable to penetrate farther to the north than they had now arrived, when their latitude was 70° 33′, five leagues short of the point to which they had advanced the preceding summer. Two white bears being seen during the afternoon, in the water, some of the seamen immediately pursued them in the jolly boat, and were so fortunate as to kill them both; the larger, which was probably the dam of the younger, being shot first, the other would not desert it, though it might easily have escaped on the ice, while the men were re-loading their musquets; but continued swimming about till after it had been fired on several times, and at length received a fatal wound. The weight of the larger was four hundred and thirty-six pounds; that of the smallest, two hundred and fifty-six pounds.

of the sea-horse. On the 21st, at eight in the morning, the wind freshening, and the fog clearing away, they again saw the coast of America to the south-east, at the distance of about nine leagues, and hauled in for it; but they were once more stopped by the ice, and obliged to bear away to the westward along the edge of it.

A connected solid mass of ice, thus rendering every effort to approach nearer to the land, ineffectual, they relinquished all hopes of a north-east passage to Great Britain. Captain Clerke, now perceiving the impossibility of advancing further to the northward on the American coast, and supposing it equally improbable, that such an immense quantity of ice should be dissolved by the few summer weeks remaining, considered it as the best step that could be taken, to trace the sea over to the coast of Asia, in search of some opening that would admit him further north; or see what more could be attempted upon that coast, where he hoped to meet with better success.

Captain Clerke having determined to relinquish all further attempts on the coast of America, and to make his final efforts in search of a passage on the opposite continent, our navigators steered west-north-west, during the afternoon of the 21st of July, through an astonishing quantity of loose ice. In the morning of the 23d, the clear water, in which they continued to steer to and fro, did not exceed a mile and a half, and was every instant lessening. At length, after exerting their best endeavours to clear the loose ice, they were convinced of the necessity of forcing a passage to the south, which they accomplished about seven in the evening, but not without subjecting the vessel to very severe shocks. The Discovery was less successful; for, at eleven o'clock, when she had nearly got clear out, she became so entangled by massy pieces, that her progress was absolutely stopped; and, immediately dropping to leeward, she fell, broadside foremost, on the edge of a vast body of ice; and having, at the same time, an open sea to windward, the surf impelled her to strike with violence upon it. This mass, at length, so far broke or yielded, as to afford the crew an opportunity of making another effort to escape; but, unfortunately, before the ship gathered way enough to be under command, she again fell to leeward on another fragment; and the swell rendering it dangerous to lie to windward, and perceiving no prospect of getting clear, the pushed into a small opening, furled their sail and made the vessel fast with ice-hooks.

In this dangerous situation she was seen noon, at the distance of about three miles fro her consort, in a north-west direction. To a to their embarrassments, at half after four in t afternoon, the weather becoming thick and haz they lost sight of the Discovery. Their appr hensions were not removed, till they heard h guns in answer to theirs; and, afterwards, bei hailed by her, they were informed, that, upo the change of wind, the ice began to separat and that her people, setting all the sails, force a passage through it. It afterwards appeare however, that the vessel had rubbed off much her sheathing from her bows, and was becom very leaky, from the blows she had received falling upon the edge of the ice.

On the 24th they had fresh breezes from t south-west, with hazy weather, and steered the south-east till eleven, when their course w again obstructed by a large body of loose ic extending from north-north-east to south-sout east, to which they could discover no termin tion. They kept working to windward, and four in the afternoon it became calm. Prodig ous herds of sea-horses now appearing on ea side of them, the boats were hoisted out in pu suit of them: ten of them were killed, whi were thought sufficient for their use.

At two in the afternoon of the 27th, they sa the continent to the south by east, and at fo they were encompassed by loose masses of ic with the main body of it in view, stretching far as the eye could reach; beyond which th beheld the Asiatic coast. It now became nece sary to come to some determination, respectin the course they were next to steer; Capta Clerke therefore dispatched a boat, with the ca penters on board the Discovery, to learn th particulars of the injury she had sustained. The returned in the evening, with the report of Ca tain Gore, and of the carpenters, that the da mages sustained were such as would require thr weeks to repair, and that she ought speedily t be conducted to some port.

Thus finding a farther progress to the north and a nearer approach to either continent, block ed up with ice, they deemed it both injurious to the service, and fruitless with respect to th intention of the voyage, to make any further at tempt

tempts for the discovery of a passage. These considerations, added to Captain Gore's representations, induced Captain Clerke to sail for Awatska Bay to repair their damages there; and, before the winter should set in, take a survey of the coast of Japan*.

On the 17th of August, between four and five in the morning, they perceived land to the north-west, which they could not approach, the wind blowing from that quarter. They supposed this land to be the island Mednoi, which, in the Russian charts, is placed to the south-east of Beering's Island. It is elevated land, and was then apparently free from snow. They did not strike ground with one hundred and fifty fathoms of line.

Captain Clerke, being now unable to quit his bed, desired the officers would receive their orders from Mr. King; and directed that they should repair, with all possible expedition, to the Bay of Awatska. The wind continuing westerly, they steered a southerly course, till early in the morning of the 19th; when, after a few hours' rain, it blew from the eastward, and freshened to a strong gale. They made the most of it while it lasted, by standing towards the west with all the sail they could carry. On the 21st, about six in the morning, they saw a very high peaked mountain on the coast of Kamtschatka, called Cheepoonskoi Mountain, about twenty-five leagues distant †.

It would be injustice to Captain Clerke's memory not to proclaim, that, during the short time he commanded the expedition, he was remarkably zealous for its success. When the principal command devolved upon him, his health began rapidly to decline; and he was totally incapable of encountering the rigours of a high northern climate. But the vigour of his mind was uninfluenced by the decay of the body; and though he knew that his delaying to return to a warmer climate, was cutting off the only chance that remained for his recovery; yet, so attentive was he to his duty, that he would not suffer his situation to bias his judgment to the prejudice of the service; he therefore persevered in the search of a passage, till it was the opinion of every officer in the two ships, that it was impracticable, and that any further attempts would be equally hazardous and ineffectual.

* Joy illumined the countenances of every individual, when these resolutions were pronounced by Captain Clerke. They were weary of a navigation so pregnant with danger, and in which the utmost perseverance had not been rewarded with the smallest prospect of success. They turned their faces towards home, with delight and satisfaction, after an absence of three years, without apprehending what perils might yet await them, during the very long voyage they had still to make.

† At nine in the morning, on the 22d of August, Captain Clerke departed this life, in the thirty-eighth year of his age. He died of a consumption, which had evidently commenced before his departure from England, and of which he had lingered during the continuance of the voyage. His gradual decay had been perceptible by his friends, and gave them much concern; but his equanimity and firmness under his sufferings, his constant flow of cheerfulness, and a becoming resignation to his fate, afforded them some consolation. It was impossible not to compassionate, in an uncommon degree, a gentleman who had experienced a series of those difficulties and inconveniencies, which must be the inevitable lot of every seaman, and under which at length he yielded. He was bred to the navy from his youth, and had been in many engagements during the war that began in 1756. Particularly in that between the Bellona and Courageux, where, being stationed in the mizen-top, he was carried overboard with the mast, but was afterwards taken up without having received any injury. He was midshipman in the Dolphin, commanded by Commodore Byron, on her first voyage round the world, and afterwards served in the American station. In 1768, he made his second voyage round the world, as master's mate in the Endeavour; and by the promotion which took place during the expedition, he returned a lieutenant. In the Resolution he made a third voyage round the world, in the capacity of second lieutenant; and, soon after his return in 1775, he was appointed master and commander. When this expedition was ordered to be fitted out, he was appointed Captain of the Discovery, and to accompany Captain Cook; and, by the death of the latter, he naturally succeeded to the chief command.

SECTION

SECTION XLII.

Return to St. Peter and St. Paul—The Serjeant brings a Present for Captain Clerke—Funeral of Captain Clerke—Repair the Discovery—Occupations of the Ships' Crews—Letter from the Commander of Bolcheretsk to Captain Gore—Supply of Flour, Pitch, Tar, &c.—Account of a remarkable Exile—Bear-hunting and Fishing—The Serjeant disgraced—His Restoration—Church at Paratounca described—Manner of Bear-hunting—Account of the Bears and Kamtschadales—Inscription to Captain Clerke's Memory—Supply of Cattle received—Entertainments in Honour of the Empress—Present from the Commander—Geographical Description of Kamtschatka—Account of the Rivers Bolchoineka, Kamtschatka, Awatska, &c.—Soil, Climate, Volcanoes—Remarkable hot Spring at Natcheckin—Productions—Vegetables—Animals in general—Sables—Bears, Wolves, &c.—Amphibious Animals—Fish, the principal Article of Food—Whales—Salmon Fishery—Method of catching Salmon—Lakes abounding with Fish.

CAPTAIN King sent a messenger to acquaint Captain Gore with the death of Captain Clerke, who brought a letter from Captain Gore, containing an order for Captain King to endeavour to keep in company with the Discovery; and if a separation should unavoidably happen, to repair expeditiously to St. Peter and St. Paul. In the afternoon they had light airs, which continued till the 23d; when a fresh breeze springing up, they steered for the entrance of Awatska-Bay, which they saw about six in the evening. It was now a perfect calm; but, as the tide was favourable, the boats were sent a-head, and towed beyond the narrow parts of the entrance. On the 24th, at one in the morning, they dropped anchor, the ebb tide being then setting against them.

They weighed in the morning, went up the bay, and anchored before three in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul; and the Discovery followed them in a very short time. Soon after they had anchored, they were visited by their old friend, the serjeant (who was still the commanding officer of the place) who brought with him a present of berries, intended for Captain Clerke. He was much affected at hearing of his death, and beholding the coffin intended for his remains. As the deceased captain had particularly requested to be buried on shore, and named for that purpose the church at Paratounca, the serjeant was consulted on the necessary steps to be pursued upon the occasion.

After much investigation on this subject, intelligence was procured that De L'Isle, and some other Russian gentleman, who had died here, were buried near the barracks, at the ostrog of St. Peter and St. Paul; which was certainly a more eligible place than Paratounca, as the church was speedily to be removed thither. It was therefore determined to wait the arrival of the priest of Paratounca, who was instantly sent for, as being perfectly qualified to give satisfactory information on the subject. At the same time, the serjeant signified his intention of sending an express to the commander of Bolcheretsk, to acquaint him with their arrival. Captain Gore then begged to avail himself of that opportunity of conveying a letter to him, in which he requested that sixteen head of black cattle might be sent with the greatest expedition.

In consequence of the death of Captain Clerke, Captain Gore made out the new commissions on the 25th of August. He appointed himself to the command of the Resolution, and Mr. King to that of the Discovery. Mr. Lanyan, master's mate of the Resolution, who had served in that capacity, on board the Adventure, in the former voyage, was promoted to the vacant Lieutenancy *.

* Several arrangements took place, in consequence of these promotions. Lieutenants Burney and Rickman (from the Discovery) were appointed first and second Lieutenants of the Resolution; and Lieutenant Williamson first Lieutenant of the Discovery. Captain King also, by the permission of Captain Gore, took in four midshipmen, who had been serviceable to him in astronomical calculations. On the same day, our adventurers were attended by the worthy priest of Paratounca, who confirmed what the serjeant had related respecting the removal of the church; but submitted the choice of either place entirely to Captain Gore.

On Sunday the 29th of August, in the afternoon, the last sad offices were paid to Captain Clerke. The officers and crew of both vessels attended him in procession to the grave; the ships, at the same time, firing minute guns; and, at the end of the service, three vollies were fired by the marines. The body was interred under a tree, on a rising ground in the valley north of the harbour, where the store-houses and hospital are situated. The priest of Paratounca recommended this spot, supposing it would be very near the centre of the intended new church. The worthy pastor joined in the procession. All the Russians in the garrison attended on the occasion, adding to the awful solemnity.

An ensign arrived from Bolcheretsk on the 3d of September, with a letter from the commander to Captain Gore, informing him, that in a few days he might expect to see the cattle he had ordered; and that Captain Shmaleff, who succeeded Major Behm in his command, would pay him a visit, immediately on the arrival of a troop which he expected from Okotsh. The bearer of the letter was the son of Captain Lieutenant Synd, who had formerly been appointed to the command, of an expedition of discovery between Asia and America, and now resided at Okotsk. He informed them that he was directed to receive their directions, and to supply them with every thing that their service might require.

On the 5th of September, the parties that were on shore returned to the ship. On the 8th the Resolution hauled on shore, to repair some damages she had received from the ice. About this time, they began to make a strong decoction from a species of dwarf pine, which is extremely plentiful here. They knew it would be an admirable medicine for the scurvy, and supposed it would be found useful in making beer. They were particularly desirous of procuring a considerable supply, as most of their preventatives were either consumed, or had lost their efficacy by long keeping.

Having repaired the damages the Resolution had suffered by the ice, she hauled off from the shore the next morning. Sunday the 12th, was a day of rest; but, the weather continuing foul, the men could not employ themselves in gathering berries on the coast, or amuse themselves by any other pastime on shore. Ensign Synd returned to Bolcheretsk this day. The serjeant, being commander of the place, had hitherto been admitted to the tables of our navigators; and his company was additionally pleasing, from his being sensible and quick in his conceptions; and comprehended, better than any other person, a few Russian words they had acquired. Whilst Ensign Synd continued among them, he politely suffered him to enjoy the same privileges; but, when the new commander arrived from Okotsk, the serjeant, for some real or imaginary cause, fell into disgrace, and was no longer suffered to associate with his own officers.

On the 15th they had completed the stowage of the holds, got their wood and water on board, and were ready to put to sea at a day's notice; but they could not think of taking their departure, because the cattle were not yet arrived from Verchnei; and fresh provisions were now become the most important article of their wants. As there was an apparent prospect of fine weather, this was considered as a favourable opportunity of taking some amusement on shore. A party of bear-hunting was therefore proposed by Captain Gore, and the proposal was unanimously acceded to. On the 17th, they set out on this expedition; which was deferred till that day, to afford rest to the Hospodin Ivaskin, a new acquaintance lately arrived, and who was to be of the party. Major Behm had desired this gentleman, who usually resides at Verchnei, to attend our navigators on their return to the harbour, and assist them as an interpreter*.

Orders

* He is allied to a considerable family in Russia, and his father had been a general in the service of the empress. He had been page to the Empress Elizabeth, and bore an ensign's commission in her guards. At the age of sixteen he was *knouted*, had his nose slit, and was banished to Siberia: he was afterwards transported to Kamtschatka, and had been resided there thirty-one years. He was tall, and thin, and his visage was deeply furrowed with wriukles. In his whole figure, old age was strongly depicted, though he had hardly attained his fifty-fourth year.

Great was their disappointment when they discovered that he had totally forgotten the French and German languages: thus were they unfortunately deprived, of what they expected would have furnished a favourable opportunity, of acquiring ample information respecting this country. They had also promised themselves much satisfaction in hearing the history of this extraordinary man. The cause of his banishment remained a secret to the inhabitants of this country, but he was supposed to have been guilty of some atrocious offence. He assured them

Orders having been given to the first lieutenants of the two ships, that the rigging should be repaired, as far as the late supply of stores would permit, they proceeded on their hunting party, conducted by the corporal of the Kamptschadales: but, previous to their looking out for game, they proceeded to the head of Behm's harbour, an inlet on the west side of the bay, by the natives named Tarienska. As they advanced towards this harbour, they saw the Toion of St. Peter and St. Paul, in a canoe, with his wife and family. In pursuance of his advice, they now changed their route, and instead of going up the harbour, proceeded northerly towards a pool of water, not far from the mouth of the river Paratounca, which was much frequented by the bears.

As soon as they had landed, the wind unfortunately veered to the eastward, which destroyed their hopes of meeting with any sport, as there was not a probability of their finding any bears, knowing they were to the windward; those animals being so acute in scenting their pursuers, which, under such circumstances, enabled them to avoid danger. They determined therefore to return to their boat, and, having provided a tent for that purpose, passed the night upon the beach. The next day, having walked five or six miles, the party arrived at the sea-side. From hence a continued narrow border of ground adjoining to the sea, extended itself towards Cheapoonskoi Noss as far as they could see. It is covered with heath, and produces berries in great abundance. Here they were informed a number of bears might certainly be found, as they delighted much in feeding upon these berries. But as the weather was showery, it was unfavourable to the hunters; in consequence of which they directed their course along the plain: they saw, indeed, a few of those animals at a distance, but they could not possibly get within shot of them.

The diversion of bear-hunting was therefore abandoned, and that of spearing salmon was proposed; a number of those fish having been observed driving through the surf into a small river. Fortunately, the water afforded them a little provision; for they had not only been unfortunate in the chace, but they had also failed in their expectations of shooting wild fowl, after having almost depended upon a supply of them for their subsistence. From all these disappointments they began to think it advisable to return to the head-quarters.

The Kamptschadales, who attended them, attributed their not meeting with game, to their assembling in too large a party; and the unavoidable noise and bustle which was naturally occasioned by it. This judicious remark induced them to separate; Captain King, Ivaskin, and the corporal, forming one party; and the other consisted of Captain Gore, and the rest of the company. After passing the night under their tents they set out on the morning of the 19th, by different routes, meaning to take a kind of circuit round the country, and again to meet at St. Peter and St. Paul.

Captain King, and his subdivision, took the course of the river where he had fished for salmon; and, after being heartily soaked with heavy rain the whole morning, he and his associates took shelter in the afternoon in some old *Balagans*, which composed the ruins of a Kamptschadale village, not having seen a single bear since they separated from the rest of the company in the morning.

At first they were somewhat inclined to continue here during the night; but Hospodin, whose former severities had rendered unable to endure fatigue, and who was now extremely distressed from having his snuff-box exhausted of its contents, grew very importunate with them to return home. The old corporal had no objection to this proposal, and Ivaskin's entreaties prevailed.

At night they reached the ships, after having been twelve complete hours upon their legs. Poor Ivaskin seemed perfectly overcome with fatigue, which was rendered more poignant for want of a supply of snuff. Almost at every step his anxious hand sunk mechanically into his pocket, and instantly rose again with his hug

that, for twenty years, he had not tasted a morsel of bread, nor had been allowed any kind of subsistence; but had existed, all that time, with the Kamptschadales, on what his own toil and activity had procured by the uncertainty of the chase. Afterwards a small pension was allowed him, and his situation has been rendered less intolerable, since Major Behm was appointed to the command. That gentleman had caused his pension to be increased to a hundred roubles a year. Major Behm informed our navigators that he had obtained permission for him to go to Okotsk, where he was to reside in future; but that, for the present, he should leave him behind, as he might probably be useful to them as an interpreter, on their return to the bay.

empty box. On the arrival of the party at the feast, they congratulated each other on their not having absented themselves another day from their general rendezvous: the Hospodin's box was instantly replenished; and, regaling on an excellent supper, they forgot the troubles and disappointments of the journey.

The next day our navigators received the disagreeable information, that their friend, the serjeant, had suffered corporal punishment, inflicted by the command of the old *Put-parouchick*. None of them could learn the cause of his displeasure. Imagining, however, that the offence, whatever it might be, could not merit so disgraceful a chastisement, they were both sorry and angry at what had happened. They were, however, unwilling to remonstrate on this subject, till Captain Shmaleff should arrive: but, when they were next visited by the *Put-parouchick*, the coolness of their reception must have testified their resentment.

On the 22d of September, being the anniversary of the coronation of George the Third, twenty-one guns were fired; and as elegant a feast was prepared as the situation of our navigators would admit of. The arrival of Captain Shmaleff was announced the very moment they were sitting down to dinner. On his first appearance he informed them, that the reason of their not having received the black cattle was, that the very heavy rains at Verchnei, had absolutely prevented their setting out. So much politeness and generosity, demanding a grateful return, he was the next day saluted with eleven guns on his visiting the Resolution. Specimens of all their curiosities were presented to him; to which Captain Gore added a fowling-piece, and a gold watch. The next day he was entertained on board the Discovery; and on the 25th, he returned to Bolcheretsk.

Before his departure, he reinstated the serjeant in his command, without any application from them; having resolved to take the *Put-Parouchick* with him. He was, indeed, much offended with him for his severity in punishing the serjeant, as there did not appear to be any reasonable cause for inflicting such punishment. It may not, however, be impertinent to remark, that there are several gradations of rank among them, of which other countries are entirely ignorant; there being no less than four intermediate steps between a serjeant and a private soldier. Subordinate ranks in the sea-service are known to produce the most salutary effects, by creating emulation; in consequence of which the officers of superior rank are enabled to bestow an adequate reward on almost every degree of merit*.

Though the church of Paratounca is built of wood, it is superior to any building in that town, or in that of St. Peter and St. Paul. Among the paintings, with which it is adorned, are two pictures of those illustrious saints, which were presented by Beering; and which might vie with the first European performances in the intrinsic riches of their drapery; the principal parts of it consisting of thick plates of solid silver, in imitation of the foldings of the robes which decorate the figures.

Another hunting party was now proposed, when Captain King suffered himself to be directed by the clerk of the parish, who was much celebrated as a bear-hunter. About sun-set they repaired to one of the larger lakes: As it was essentially necessary that they should conceal themselves as much as possible, they found plenty of materials for that purpose, among the long grass and brush-wood which grew about the water's edge. They had not been long in this situation, before their ears were agreeably saluted with the growlings of the animals they were in pursuit of in almost every direction. Their eager expectations were soon after gratified by the sight of one of them in the water, swimming in a direct course to where they lay concealed. The moon, at this time, shone clearly, and as the animal advanced, three of the party fired at it almost at the same instant: the beast immediately turned short upon one side, making a most horrible noise, not to be discriminated as yelling, growling, or roaring, but constituting an assemblage of the whole three.

The animal was severely wounded, and reached

* The discipline of the Russian army, though so extremely remote from the seat of government, is remarkably severe, without exempting even the commissioned officers. Imprisonment, and a limitation to bread and water diet, is the punishment of the latter for trivial offences. An ensign at this place, informed our navigators that the punishment he received for engaging in a drunken frolic, was three months imprisonment in the black hole, restricted to bread and water only for subsistence; which had so debilitated his whole nervous system, that he never afterwards enjoyed a sufficient flow of spirits to qualify him for a convivial meeting.

the

the bank with difficulty; whence it retreated to some thick bushes, continuing to bellow forth its piteous complaints. The Kamptschadales, supposing it to be mortally wounded, thought it not advisable to rouse it again for the present. It then exceeded nine o'clock, and the night threatening a change of weather, they prudently resolved to return home, and wait till the morning for the gratification of their curiosity; when they accordingly repaired to the spot, and found the bear dead from the wounds it had received. It was a female, and larger than the ordinary size*.

In the spring of the year, bear-hunting is a very dangerous diversion, as these animals then first issue from their caves, after having passed the whole winter without food. Thus becoming exceedingly famished, they pursue the inhabitants by the scent; and prowling about, at a distance from their usual tracks, dart upon them unawares. The time of their copulation is also a dangerous season for meeting with these quadrupeds.

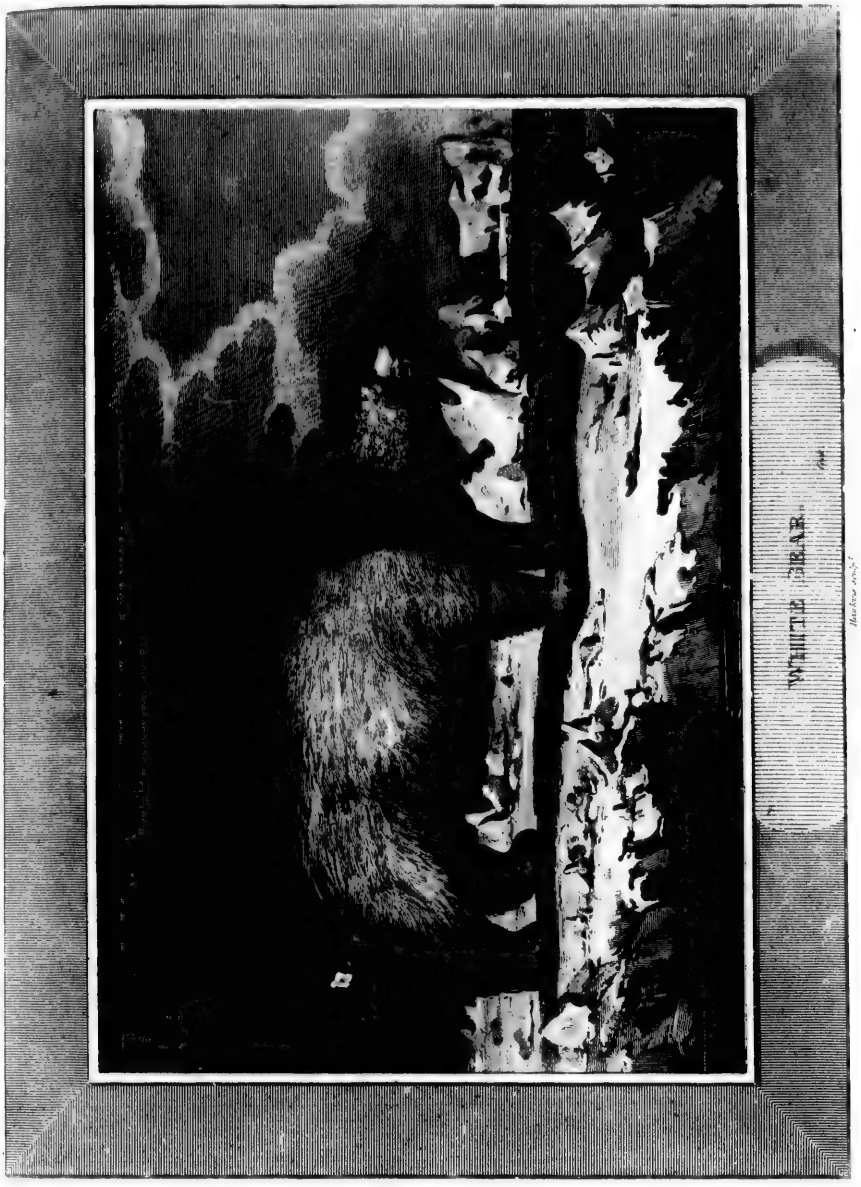
Many stories are related of these animals, by the Kamptschadales, who, from this circumstance, derive considerable advantage in hunting. They never venture to fire at a young bear, if the dam is upon the spot; well knowing, that if the cub should happen to be killed, she becomes so immoderately enraged, that if she can only obtain a sight of the offender, she is sure to be revenged of him; or die in the attempt. If the mother should be shot, the cubs continue near the body, after it has been a long time dead; demonstrating by the most unequivocal gestures and motions, the most poignant sorrow. Instead of commiserating their distress, the hunters embrace these opportunities of destroying them. If the veracity of the Kamptschadales may be depended on, the sagacity of the beast is almost as extraordinary as its natural affection.

Innumerable are the stories they relate to this effect. The following, among many others, is well attested. It is the stratagem practised by the natives to catch the barcins, which are too swift for them to expect success in pursuing them. These animals associate in great numbers, chiefly on low grounds, at the feet of rocks and precipices, where they delight in browsing. The bear pursues them by the scent, till he procures a view of them; and then cautiously advancing, takes care to secure a situation above them: at the same time hiding himself among the rocks as he approaches, till he is almost immediately over them, and near enough to execute his purpose. With his paws, he then pushes down large pieces of the rock, among the herd below; and if he perceives that his manœuvre has maimed any of the flock, he immediately pursues them. According to the injury the poor barcins have received, he either proves successful in overtaking them, or they escape by the rapidity of their flight.

The Kamptchadales thankfully acknowledge their obligations to the bears, for the little progress they have hitherto made, either in the sciences, or the polite arts. They confess they are indebted to them for all their knowledge in physic and surgery; that, by observing the herbs they have applied to the wounds they have received, and what they have recourse to when lame, guid and out of order, they have become acquainted with most of the simples used by them either in external or internal applications. They even admit the bears to be their dancing-masters, and their own practice seems to place this matter beyond dispute; for the bear-dance of the Kamptschadales is an exact copy of every attitude and gesture peculiar to that animal. And those attitudes are supposed to come the nearest to perfection, which most resemble the motions of that awkward creature.

* The method usually pursued in bear-hunting is thus related: The natives make it a rule to reach the ground, frequented by bears, about sun-set. On their arrival at the spot, their first business is to look out for their tracks, and particularly to attend to the freshest of them. These tracks are numerous between the woods and the lakes, and are often seen among the long sedge grass and brakes on the margin of the water. Having chosen a convenient spot for concealment, the hunters fix their crutches in the ground, on which they rest their musquets, putting them in a proper direction. They afterwards kneel, or lie down, as may be thought most eligible; and, having their bear-spears in readiness by their side, wait for the arrival of their game.

These precautions are necessary on many accounts, that the hunters may be enabled to make sure of their mark, the price of ammunition being so high at Kamptschatka, that the value of a bear will not purchase more of it than will be sufficient to load a musquet four or five times. It is very material on another consideration; for if the first shot should not render the animal incapable of pursuing, fatal consequences may ensue; the enraged beast repairs to the place, from whence the sound and smoke have been observed to issue, and furiously attacks its adversaries. In which case their safety depends, in a great measure, on their giving him a mortal stab as he advances towards them. Should he parry the thrust, and break in upon his opponents, the conflict becomes dreadful: the loss of a single life seldom gratifying the beast's revenge.


WHITE BEAR.

No occurrence of importance took place till the 30th, when Captain Gore went to Paratounea, to have an escutcheon placed in the church, which had been prepared for that purpose by Mr. Webber. The inscription on it mentioned the rank and age of Captain Clerke, and the object of the expedition, in which he was engaged at the time of his decease. To the tree, under which his body was interred, a board was affixed, with a similar inscription on it.

Previous to his departure, Captain Gore directed Captain King to get the ships out of the harbour, to be in readiness for sailing. A violent gale, which continued the whole day, prevented the execution of this order; but, on the 2d, both vessels warped out of the harbour, and anchored in seven fathoms water, not far from the *ostrog*. The day before they quitted the harbour, the cattle from Verchnei arrived; and that the men might have the full enjoyment of so seasonable a supply, by regaling on it whilst it was fresh, Captain Gore resolved to continue in the same station five or six days longer.

As our navigators have now taken leave of St. Peter and St. Paul, a short account of Awatska-bay, and the coast, may not be unacceptable; as it is perhaps the safest and most extensive harbour that has ever been discovered; and the only one, in this part of the world, that can admit vessels of considerable burthen. The entrance into Awatska bay is in the latitude of 52° 51′ north, and the longitude of 158° 48′ east. From Cape Gavareea to the entrance of Awatska bay, the coast takes a northerly direction, and extends about eleven leagues. Awatska-bay may be precisely known, by the two high mountains to the south of it. That nearest the bay is in the form of a sugar loaf; the other, which is more inland, is flatter and lower. The entrance into the bay is, at first, about three miles wide, and one mile and a half in the narrowest part: the length is about four miles, in a north-west direction. A bason, twenty-five miles in circumference, lies within the mouth; in which are the harbours of Rakoweena to the east, Careiuska to the west, and St. Peter and St. Paul to the north.

The harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, though small, is very convenient. Half a dozen ships may be commodiously moored in it; and it is also particularly convenient for giving them any kind of repairs. At the head of this harbour there is a watering place. The time-keeper on board the Resolution, which was exactly copied from Mr. Harrison's, stopped on the 27th of April, a few days before the arrival of our navigators at Awatska bay. During the voyage it had been carefully attended to, and had not been intrusted in any other hands than those of the Captains Cook and King. No accident, therefore, could have happened to it, to which its stopping could be attributed; nor could it have been occasioned by extreme cold, the thermometer being but little below the freezing point.

The peninsula of Kamptschatka is situated on the eastern coast of Asia, and is nearly in a north and south direction. The whole peninsula is somewhat in the form of a shoe; its greatest breadth being two hundred and thirty-six computed miles, extending from the mouth of the river Tigil to that of the river Kampstchatka; but, towards each extremity, it gradually becomes narrower. It is bounded on the north by the country of the Koriacks; by the north Pacific Ocean to the south and east; and by the sea of Okotsk to the west. A chain of high mountains, from north to south, extends the whole length of the peninsula, almost equally dividing it; whence several rivers take their rise, and pass into the Pacific Ocean, and the sea of Okotsk.

The three principal rivers are the Bolchoireka, the river Kamptschatka, and the river Awatska. The first discharges itself into the sea of Okotsk, and is navigable for the Russian galliots, five leagues from its mouth. The river Kamptschatka continues about three hundred miles, in the direction of south to north; and, after bending its course to the eastward, is received by the ocean, a little to the southward of Kamptschatkoi-Noss. The source of the Awatska river, is from the mountains between the Bolchoireka and the Bistraia. After running two hundred miles from north-west to south-east, it falls into Awatska Bay. The Tigil is also a considerable river: The smaller streams are not sufficiently important to be particularly noticed.

If a judgment may be formed of its soil, from its vegetable productions, Kamptschatka appears to be barren in the extreme. Neither about the bay, nor in any of the excursions of our navigators, did they ever see the smallest spot of ground, that had the appearance of a good green turf, or that seemed capable of improvement by cultivation. Stunted trees, thinly scattered over the whole face of the country, whose bottoms

were mossy, with a mixture of low heath, pronounced the most extreme sterility.

It must be admitted, however, that they saw at Paratounca, three or four stacks of excellent hay; and Major Behm assured them that the banks of the Kamptschatka, and the Bistraia, as well as several other parts of the peninsula, produce a quantity of grass of great strength and height, which is mowed twice in every summer. The fertility of this part of the country may probably be occasioned by its lying in the widest part of the peninsula, and consequently at the farthest distance from the sea on each side. Chilling fogs, and drizzling weather being prevalent along the coast, the parts adjacent must naturally be rendered incapable of improvement by agriculture*.

The climate, in the country adjacent to the river Kamptschatka, is allowed to be as serene and temperate, as in many parts of Siberia under the same latitude. They had neither thunder nor lightning whilst our navigators continued at Kamptschatka, excepting on the night of the eruption of the volcano; and they were informed by the inhabitants, that they were not often troubled with either, and never but in a slight degree. The severity of winter, accompanied with dreadful hurricanes of wind and snow, compels the natives to retire to their subterraneous habitations, as well for security as warmth. Major Behm informed our navigators, that the inclemency of the winter in 1779, was so great as to stop all intercourse between the inhabitants for several weeks†.

Springs of hot water are said to abound in this country. Our navigators only saw that at Natcheekin ostrog, which has already been described. Several others are noticed by Kraschenincoff, who also mentions two pits or wells, at the bottom of which the water boils with great impetuosity; a dreadful noise issuing from them at the same time and so thick a vapour as not to be penetrated by the keenest sight.

Among the principal trees in this peninsula are the birch, the poplar, the alder, and several small species of the willow, with two sorts of dwarfish cedars; one of which grows upon the coast, seldom exceeding two feet in height, and creeps upon the ground. Not only the birch but every other kind of tree in the neighbourhood of the bay, were stunted, and very small; the natives are therefore obliged to go a considerable distance up the country, to get wood of a proper size for their canoes, their *batagans*, and many other purposes.

This peninsula produces abundance of the shrub kind, as junipers, mountain ash, raspberry bushes, and wild rose-trees; also a variety of berries, as black-berries, blue-berries, cran-berries, crow-berries, and partridge-berries. These berries are used as a general sauce to their dried fish in winter. They also eat them in puddings, and make decoctions of them for their common beverage.

Two plants are found in this peninsula, which deserve particular attention. The first is called *sarana*, by the natives, and *Lilium Kamptschatcence flore atro rubente*, by botanists. The stem grows to the height of about five inches, and is not larger than that of a tulip. It is a maxim with the Kamptschadales, that Providence never deserts them, for those seasons that are prejudicial to the *sarana*, are always favourable for fishing, and, on the contrary, an unsuccessful fishery

* It may reasonably be supposed that the severity of the climate must be in due proportion to the sterility of the soil, of which it is perhaps the cause. Some of our navigators first saw this country in the beginning of May 1779, when the whole face of it was covered with snow from six to eight feet in depth. When they returned on the 24th of August, the foliage of the trees, and vegetation in general, appeared to be in the utmost state of perfection. The weather, during the remainder of that month, and the whole of September, was very changeable, but not severe. All the month of September, a moderate degree of temperature prevailed; but, when October began, the new-fallen snow again covered the tops of the hills, and the wind continued westerly.

In computing the seasons here, Spring ought to be omitted. Summer may truly be said to extend from the middle of June, till the middle of September; October may be considered as the Autumn of the year; and from that period to the middle of June, it is all dreary and dismal winter.

† Volcanos are numerous in this peninsula; only one of which have lately been subject to eruptions. That in the neighbourhood of Awatska has been already mentioned. The volcano of Tolbathick is situated on a neck of land between the river Kamptschatka and Tolbathick. The eruptions proceed from a high mountain, terminating in pointed rocks. A whirlwind of flames issued from it in 1739, which reduced the forests of the neighbouring mountains to ashes: a cloud of smoke succeeded, which darkened the whole country, but was dissipated by a shower of cinders, which covered the earth to the extent of about thirty miles. Three shocks of an earthquake, with only a minute's interval between each, succeeded those eruptions.

On the top of the mountain of Kamptschatka, which is said to be the highest in the peninsula, a third volcano presents itself. A thick smoke incessantly ascends from its summit, and it frequently has very dreadful eruptions.

month, is amply compensated by an exuberant *saranna* harvest. This article is variously used in cookery. When roasted in embers, it is thought a good substitute for bread. When baked in an oven, and pounded, it supplies the place of flour and meal, and is mixed in all their soups. It is extremely nourishing, and has a pleasant bitter flavour. Our navigators partook of the roots, boiled in the manner of potatoes, and found them very wholesome and agreeable.

The other plant alluded to, is sweet grass; the taste of which resembles that of sugar, though very hot and pungent. It has a hollow stalk, which consists of three or four joints, with large leaves issuing from each: when it attains its full growth, it is about six feet in height. It was formerly a principal ingredient in cookery, among the Kamptschadales; but, since the country has been in the possession of the Russians, it is chiefly appropriated to the purpose of distillation. From this plant a liquor is prepared, which the natives call *raka*, and is as strong as brandy. Seventy-two pounds of the plant, usually produce twenty-five pints of raka. Steller, however, informs us, that the spirits distilled from this plant *unscraped*, is very injurious to health, producing sudden nervous disorders.

A common well-known plant requires to be noticed here, as being more essential to the subsistence of the inhabitants than any other: it is the nettle. As neither hemp nor flax are produced at Kamptschatka, the nettle supplies materials for their fishing nets; on which their existence principally depends. For this purpose, the nettles are usually cut down in August, and, after being hung in bundles under their balagans the remainder of the summer, they are manufactured like hemp. It is then spun into thread by their fingers, and twisted round a spindle.

The number of wild animals, which this country produces, must always be considered as real riches; for no labour can be so productive of advantage, as what is employed upon their fisheries. And next to these, the animals that supply them ought to be considered; as the fox, the *zebilene*, or sable; the stoat, or *ermine;* the *isatis*, or arctic fox; the earless marmot; the varying hare; the weasel; the glutton, or *wolverene;* the wild sheep; rein deer; bears; wolves; dogs*.

The Kamptschatka sables are larger than those of Siberia, and their fur thicker and brighter; but those near the rivers Olekma and Vitime, are of a finer black. The sables of the Tigil and Ouka are allowed to be the best in Kamptschatka, a pair of these being frequently sold for five pounds sterling. The worst inhabit the southern extremity†.

For a description of the *isatis*, the reader is referred to Mr. Pennant's Arctic Zoology; the skin of which is but of little value. The varying hare is neglected on the same account: they are extremely numerous, and always become white during the winter. The earless marmot, or mountain squirrel, is a beautiful creature, much smaller than a squirrel; it feeds upon roots and berries, sitting on its hind legs whilst it eats, and conducting the food to its mouth with the paws: its skin is much esteemed by the Kamptschadales, being warm, light and brilliant. Like the plumage of some birds, when beheld in different lights, it seems to be of a variety of colours.

The *ermine*, or stoat, is not much regarded here, its fur being of the ordinary kind. The weasel is also neglected for the same reason. But the skin of the *wolverene*, or glutton, is in the greatest repute; a Kamtschadale thinking himself splendidly attired, when a small portion of this fur appears upon his garment. The women ornament their hair with its white pats, which is deemed a most superlative piece of finery. Supported by a superstitious maxim, an opinion prevails among the natives, that the angels are clad with the skins of these animals.

The bears which our navigators had an opportunity of seeing, were of a dun brown colour: they usually appear in small companies of four or five together; but in the season when the fish

* This country abounds with foxes, and among them are a variety of colours. The most common species indeed the same as the European, but their colours are vivid and brilliant. Some of a dark chesnut; others dark-coloured stripes; some are black; others of a brown; some are of a stone colour; and some few are entirely white. The quality of their fur is greatly superior that of the same animals in Siberia or America. Many devices are put in practice by the hunters to destroy this quadruped. Still, however, he preserves his character for craftiness and cunning, in all climates, and upon all occasions.

† The sable-hunter requires only a rifle-barrel gun of a very small bore, a net, and a few bricks. With the first they sometimes shoot them, when they appear on the branches. With the net they surround the hollow trees, in which they generally take refuge when they are pursued, and the bricks are put hot into the cavities to drive them out with the smoke.

quit

quit the sea, they push, in great quantities, up the rivers. In the winter months they are seldom seen. Of the skins of bears, warm mattrasses and coverings for beds are made; and of the same materials, bonnets, gloves, and harness for sledges are manufactured. The flesh is eaten, but the fat is held in the highest estimation.

The wolves appear only in the winter, prowling about in large companies, in pursuit of prey.

Rein-deer, both wild and tame, are common in many parts of the peninsula, but not in the neighbourhood of Awatska. It is remarkable that these animals are not used here, for the purposes of carriage, as they are by their neighbours to the north and east. But the use of dogs, in a great degree, precludes them from the advantage of rearing other domestic animals.

The *argali*, or wild mountain sheep, is in great plenty here; though an animal unknown in Europe, except in Corsica and Sardinia. Its skin resembles that of the deer, but its gait, and other particulars, proclaim its nearer affinity with the goat. Its head is ornamented with two large twisted horns, which, when the animal has attained his full growth, weigh from twenty to thirty pounds, and are rested on the quadruped's back when it is running. These creatures are remarkably swift and active, traversing the steepest and most cragged rocks with astonishing agility. Spoons, cups, and platters, are fabricated from their horns, by the natives, who frequently have one of them hanging to a belt, to facilitate their procuring water in their hunting expeditions. The flesh of this beautiful animal is sweet, and deliciously flavoured *.

Most of the northern sea-fowl frequent the coast and bays of Kamtschatka; and the inland rivers are plentifully stored with various species of wild ducks: one of which, called by the natives *a-an-gitche*, has a most beautiful plumage, and a melodious cry. The mountain duck, according to Steller, is peculiar to Kamtschatka. The plumage of the drake is transcendently beautiful. Many other water-fowl were observed, which, from their magnitude, appeared to be of the wild-goose kind.

In passing through the woods, our Europeans saw some eagles of a prodigious size, but could not determine to what species they belonged. They are said to be of three different kinds. The first is the black eagle, with a white head, tail, and legs. The second, which is erroneously called the white eagle, is, in reality, of a light grey. The third, which is a very common sort, is the stone-coloured eagle. Many of the hawk, falcon, and bustard kind inhabit this peninsula. Woodcocks, snipes, and grouse are also found here. Swans are numerous, and usually enrich the repast at all public entertainments. Wild fowl were so abundant in this country, that our navigators were frequently complimented with twenty brace at a time†.

The sea-otters found here, are, in all respects, similar to those they met with at Nootka sound. They were formerly plentiful here; but since the Russians opened a kind of commerce with the Chinese for their skins, where they bear a higher price than any other kind of fur, the hunters have so indefatigably pursued them, that not many are now remaining in the country. A few of them, however, are still found among the Kurile Islands, which are superior in quality to those of Kamtschatka, or Nootka Sound.

Fish is the principal article of food among the inhabitants of this peninsula, who cannot possibly derive much sustenance either from agriculture or cattle. The soil indeed produces wholesome roots and berries, but those alone cannot support the inhabitants; though they are found salutary, as correctives of the putrescent quality of their dried fish. Whales are frequently

* The dogs of this country, have already been said to resemble the Pomeranian breed in figure; but they are larger, and their hair is coarser. Though of a variety of colours, that of a light dun, or a pale dirty yellow, is the most prevalent. These poor animals are turned loose to shift for themselves about the latter end of May, and continue at liberty till the ensuing winter; but punctually return to their respective homes, when the snow begins to make its appearance. In the winter they subsist entirely on the head, back bones, and entrails of salmon, which are dried and preserved for that purpose; and even with this wretched food they are very scantily supplied. These dogs must be extremely numerous, as no less than five of them are yoked to a single sledge, only to conduct one person. Our navigators, in their journey to Bolcheretsk, had one hundred and thirty-nine of them, in the two stages of Karatchin and Natcheekin. It is a remarkable fact, that bitches are never employed on this business, nor dogs that have been castrated.

† No amphibious animals were now seen upon the coast, except seals, which are extremely plenty about the bay of Awatska. The otters were then pursuing the salmon, which were ascending the rivers in large shoals. Some of them are said to follow the fish into fresh water, and even to frequent the lakes which have any communication with the sea.

quently seen and taken in this country, and are useful for many purposes. Of their skins the soles of shoes are made, and belts and straps for many other purposes. The flesh is eaten, and the fat preserved for culinary uses, and for illuminating their lamps. With their whiskers they sew the seams of their canoes: nets are also made of the larger kind of fish, and they shoe their sledges with the under jaw-bone. Knives are formed from many of their bones; and they make excellent snares of their veins and nerves. There is hardly a part of a whale that is not found useful in this peninsula.

Flat-fish, trout, and herrings are found here in great abundance, from the middle of May till the 24th of June, the time of their departure. At one hawl, on the 15th of May, our navigators dragged out three hundred flat-fish, and a considerable quantity of sea-trout. The former are firm and well-flavoured, and studded with prickly knobs upon the back, like turbot. The herring season commences towards the latter end of May: they come in immense shoals, but continue no considerable time there. They are excellent; and our Europeans filled many casks with them. Large quantities of fine cod were also taken, some of which were also salted. Great numbers of small fish were likewise caught, which resembled smelts.

But, on the salmon fishery alone, the inhabitants principally depend for winter sustenance. On this coast, all the species of these that are known to exist, are said to be found here; but though shoals of different sorts are seen floating up the rivers at the same time, they are said to avoid mixing with each other; and regularly return to the river where they derived their existence, but not till the third summer. About the middle of May, the first shoals of salmon enter the mouth of the Awatska. This kind is called the tahavitsi, by the Kamtschadales, and is the largest, and most approved. Three feet and a half is their usual length, and their average weight from thirty to forty pounds. Their back is of a dark blue, with black spots, and the tail perfectly straight. They swim along the river with such velocity as to occasion great agitation in the water; a circumstance so important to the natives, that they are ever on the watch for them at the accustomed time; and when they perceive this powerful agitation, they drop their nets immediately before them. One of the first was presented to our navigators, but not without informing them, that it was the highest compliment they could confer upon them. Their fishing season for this species, begins about the middle of May, and continues till the end of June *.

All the lakes which communicate with the sea, abound with fish that have much the appearance of salmon, and generally weigh about five or six pounds. The natives, it is said, think them unworthy of the labour of catching them. These lakes, being generally shallow, the bears and dogs find no difficulty in capturing them in the summer season; and from the evidence of the quantities of bones appearing on the banks, vast numbers of them seem to have been thus devoured.

The natives dry the principal part of their salmon, and salt but very little of it. They cut a fish into three pieces: they take off the belly-piece first, and then a slice along each side of the back bone. The belly-piece is dried and smoked; the other slices are also dried in the air, and either eaten whole, as a substitute for bread, or reduced to a powder for paste and cakes. The head, tail, and bones, are dried and preserved for the sustenance of their dogs.

* There is a smaller sort of salmon, weighing from eight to fifteen pounds, called the red-fish, which assemble in the bays, and at the mouths of the rivers, early in the month of June. From that time till towards the end of September, multitudes of them are taken upon the eastern and western coasts, where the sea receives any fresh water; and also up the rivers, almost to their very source.

SECTION XLIII.

Account of Kamtschatka continued—Its Inhabitants—Conjectures on their Origin—Kamtschadal discovered by the Russians—Atlassoff makes the Inhabitants tributary—He is disgraced—a restored—The Kamtschadales revolt—Havock made by the small Pox—Russian Governme established—No Offence punishable with Death—Habitations—Dress—Account of the Kur Islands, &c.—Plan of future Operations—The Ships sail along the Coast—The Island of Spoo ska—The Isle of Paramousir—Many Birds observed—A violent Storm—The Ships sail f Japan—Japanese Coast—Two Japanese Vessels observed—Prosecution of the Voyage to China Violent Currents—Quantities of Pumice-stone—Some Chinese Fishing Boats seen—The Gra Ladrone Island.

THE inhabitants may be said to consist of three sorts: the Kamtschadales; the Russians, and Cossacks; and a mixture occasioned by their intermarriages. Steller, who was long resident in this country, and indefatigable in searching after knowledge on this subject, informs us, that the Kamtschadales are people of remote antiquity, and have inhabited this peninsula for many ages; and that they probably descended from the Mungalians. Others, however, have imagined they sprang from the Tongusian Tartars, and others from the Japanese.

The inhabitants have no tradition among them, of their having migrated from any other country; they believe they were created on this particular spot by their great god Koutkou, who prefers them to all his other creatures; that they are the happiest of all beings; and that their country far surpasses any other. That before the Russians and Cossacks came among them, they had not the most distant knowledge of any people except the Koreki: that till very lately they had not any intercourse with the Kuriles, and still later that they had any knowledge of the Japanese; that being acquired by means of a vessel that was wrecked upon their coast. It is further added, that when the Russians first got a footing in the country, they found it extremely populous*.

The Russians having made themselves masters of the vast extent of coast of the frozen sea, established posts and colonies. They discover that the wandering Koriacs inhabited part of t coast of the sea of Okotsk, and they found difficulty in making them tributary. These being very distant from the Kamtschadales, wi whom they had frequent intercourse, a knowled of Kamtschatka was consequently acquire To Feodot Alexieff, a merchant, the honour the first discovery is attributed in 1648. Th being separated from seven other vessels by storm, he was driven upon the coast of Kam schatka, where he and his companions remain a whole winter, but were afterwards cut off the Koriacs. This was partly corroborated Simeon Deshneff, who commanded one of t seven vessels, and was driven on shore near t mouth of the Anadir. But as these discoverer if they ever did really exist, did not live relate what they had discovered, a Cossack, name Volodimir Atlassoff, is the first acknowledg discoverer of Kamtschatka.

He was sent, in 1697, in the character of com missary, from fort Jakutsk to the Anadirsk, wi directions to summon the Koriacs to his assi ance, to discover, and render tributary, t countries beyond theirs. With sixty Russi soldiers, and the same number of cossacks, penetrated, in 1699, into the heart of the peni sula, and gained the Tigil. He levied a tribu upon furs, and proceeded to the river Kam schatka, on which he built an *ostrog*, now call

* Steller supposes them to have been descended from the Mungalians, from the words in their language having terminations similar to those of the Mungalian Chinese; and that the same principle of derivation is preserved in both languages: that they are short in stature, swarthy in their complexions, the face broad, the nose short and flat, the eyes small and sunk in the head, the legs small; and many other peculiarities are observeable among them, which a equally conspicuous among the Mungalians. He therefo concludes, that they fled for refuge to this peninsula, fr the rapacity of the eastern conquerors; as the Laplande retreated to the extremities of the north, from the advan of the Europeans.

Verchne

Verchnei; and, leaving a garrison of sixteen Cossacks, returned, in 1700, to Jakutsk, with great quantities of rich tributary furs. These he judiciously accompanied, and was rewarded for his services by the appointment of commander of the fort of Jakutsk; and, at the same time, received orders to return to Kamtschatka, with a reinforcement of a hundred Cossacks; with whatever might conduce to the completion and settlement of his new discoveries. Proceeding, with his force, towards the Anadirsk, he saw a bark on the river Tanguska, which proved to be laden with Chinese merchandize. He instantly pillaged this vessel, on which the owners remonstrated to the Russian court. He was afterwards arrested at Jakutsk, and conducted to a prison.

During this time Petop Serioukoff, who Atlassoff had left, quietly enjoyed the possession of the garrison of Verchnei; and, though he had not a sufficient corps to enforce the payment of tribute from the inhabitants, he had the address to traffic with them as a merchant, on very advantageous terms. His conciliating disposition caused him to be so highly esteemed by the natives of Kamtschatka, that they lamented his departure, when he set off to return to Anadirsk. He and his party were, however, attacked by the Koriacs, and unfortunately cut off in 1703. Other commissioners were successively dispatched into Kamtschatka, during the disgrace and trial of Atlassoff.

Atlassoff was reinstated in his command in 1706, and had the management of a second expedition into Kamtschatka, after having been instructed to ingratiate himself into the favour of the natives by all amicable means; but, on no consideration, to have recourse to compulsive measures; but, so far from attending to these instructions, he rendered the natives hostile to their new governors, by repeated acts of cruelty, and injustice, and created a mutiny of the Cossacks, who demanded a new commander

The Cossacks, having succeeded in displacing Atlassoff, seized his effects; and, having tasted the sweets of plunder, and living without controul, his successors were unable to reduce them to subjection. No less than three successive commanders were assassinated. From that period, to the grand revolt of the Kamtschadales, in 1731, the history of this country is an unvaried detail of revolts, massacres, and murders, in every part of the peninsula.

The revolt was principally occasioned by the discovery of a passage from Okotosk, to the river Bolcheireka, made by Cosmo Sokoloff. Before this period, the Russians could enter this country only on the side of Anadirsk; which furnished the natives with frequent opportunities of plundering the tribute, as it was conveyed out of the peninsula by so long a journey. But, after the discovery of this communication, the tribute could be safely and speedily exported; and military stores might now be conveyed into the very heart of the country. The natives were convinced that this circumstance would give the Russians a great advantage over them, and perhaps would shortly establish their dominion. They were therefore determined, to make one grand effort for their liberty.

Beering had, at this time, a small squadron on the coast, and had dispatched what troops could be spared from the country, to join Powloutski, in an expedition against the Tschutski. The time fixed on for carrying their plan into execution, was when Beering should have set sail. In consequence of this resolution, the revolt began as soon as the vessel disappeared. Every Russian and Cossack that could be found, was immediately put to death, and their habitations were reduced to ashes. A large party of them ascended the river Kamtschatka, took possession of the fort and *ostrog*, and slew all that were in them. Fortunately, the vessel was driven back to the harbour; for had she proceeded on her voyage, the total extirpation of the Russians must have ensued. The Cossacks, on their landing, perceiving their wives and children had been murdered, and their habitations consumed, were enraged almost to madness. They flew to the fort and attacked it with great fury; the natives defending it with equal resolution. The powder magazine, at length, took fire; the fort was blown up, and, with it, almost every man that was in it. Various rencounters and assassinations succeeded. Two of the leaders having been slain, another put a period to his own existence, having first dispatched his wife and children. Peace was now again established; and, from that period, no particular disturbances happened, till 1740, when a few Russians were slain

slain in a tumult: but no farther consequences ensued *.

The number of military in the five forts of Nichnei, Verchnei, Tigil, Bolcheretsk, and St. Peter and St. Paul, are about four hundred, including Russians and Cossacks. About the same number are said to be at Ingiga; which, though in the north of the peninsula, is under the command of Kamtschatka.

The Russian government, established over this country, is remarkably mild and equitable. The natives are permitted to choose their own magistrates, from among themselves, and in their own mode, who exercise the same powers they have ever been accustomed to. One of these, und the title of *toion*, presides over each ostrog, to whom all differences are referred; and who awards fines and punishments for all offences; referring only to the governor of Kamtschatka, such enormous or intricate transactions as he supposes himself not competent to the investigation of. The *toion* also appoints a civil officer under him, under the title of corporal, who assists him in the execution of his office, and acts as h deputy in his absence †.

Six vessels of about forty or fifty tons, a employed in the Russian service, between Okots and Bolcheretsk: about fourteen vessels are al employed by the merchants in the fur tra among the islands to the east. But the pri cipal and most valuable part of the fur trad lies between Kamtschatka and America. Beerin first discovered the islands in this quarter, 1741, and, as they were found to abound wi sea-otters, the Russian merchants sought anxious for the other islands seen by that navigator, sout east of Kamtschatka, named in Muller's ma the islands of St. Abraham, &c. In these e peditions, they fell in with no less than thr groups of islands. One about fifteen degre east of Kamtschatka; another, twelve degre east of that, and the third, Oonalashka, and t neighbouring islands ‡.

Their habitations are of three kinds; vi *jourts, balagans,* and *log-houses:* they inhab the first in the winter, and the second in t

* Though many of the inhabitants were lost, in quelling the rebellion of 1731, the country recovered itself, and became as populous as ever in 1767; when the small-pox was first introduced among them, by a soldier from Okotsk. It broke out with great fury, and was very dreadful in its progress. Twenty thousand persons were supposed to have died of this disorder in Kamtschatka, the Kurile Islands, and the Koreki country. The inhabitants of whole villages were sometimes swept away by this contagious malady. At the *ostrog* of Paratounca, no more than thirty-six native inhabitants remain, including men, women, and children; though it contained three hundred and sixty, before it was visited by the small-pox. Our Europeans passed no less than four *ostrogs*, in their journey to Bolcheretsk, which had not a single inhabitant in either of them.

† An edict issued under the late empress of Russia, that no offence should be punishable with death; but, in cases of murder, it is said, the *knout* is inflicted with such severity, that the offender seldom survives the punishment.

The Russians not only merit praise for the mildness of their government, but are also entitled to applause, for their successful endeavours in converting the natives to christianity; few idolaters being now remaining among them. The religion inculcated here, is that of the Greek church. In many of the *ostrogs*, free-schools are established, for the improvement of the natives, and the Cossacks, in the Russian language.

The articles imported from this country, consist entirely of furs; the management of which is under the direction of a company of merchants, appointed by the emperor. This business was formerly carried on by the way of barter, but every article is now purchased with ready money, no inconsiderable quantity of specie being circulated in that wretched country. The furs produce a high price, and t natives, from their manner of living, require few articl in return. The European sailors brought a great quanti of furs from the coast of America, and were equa delighted and astonished on receiving such a quantity silver for them from the merchants; but, not being a to purchase gin or tobacco with it, or any thing that co afford them entertainment, the roubles were thon troublesome companions, and only afforded amuseme the proprietors of them, by tacitly submitting to be kick about the deck. These men received thirty roubles of merchant, for a sea-otter's skin, and in the same propo tion for others; but when it was known that they h great quantities to dispose of, and that they were wh unacquainted with traffic, they were afterwards procur at a much cheaper rate.

‡ The mercantile adventurers also went as far Shumagin's Islands, of which Kodiak is the chief; b they met with so warm a reception there, for enforcing t payment of a tribute, that they never ventured so far aga According to the Russian charts, the whole sea; betwe Kamtschatka and America, is studded with Islands. It pretty certain, however, that only such islands as ha been enumerated, have been discovered in that sea, so of 60° latitude.

The persons of the natives having already been describe it is only necessary to add, that, in their stature, they a below the common height; which is accounted for by Ma Behm, from their marrying so very early; both sex usually engaging in the conjugal state at thirteen or fourte years of age. They are remarkably industrious, and m be very properly contrasted with the Russians and Cossack who are frequently supposed to intermarry with them, the sole purpose of being supported in laziness and sloth.

summer

mmer: the third were introduced by the Rus-ns, and are intended for the residence of the re wealthy people. To form a *jourt*, a kind f oblong square is dug about six feet deep in e earth; the dimensions of which must be pro-tioned to the numbers who are to inhabit it; veral persons usually living together in the e jourt. Strong wooden posts are fastened the ground, on which the beams intended to pport the roof are extended; the interstices tween the joists being filled up with wicker-ork; and turf is spread over the whole. The ternal appearance of a jourt, resembles a nd squat hillock. A hole, serving equally for himney, window, and door, is left in the centre, d the inhabitants enter and depart by the assist-ce of a long pole, having deep notches to ord a little security for the toe. On the side, other entrance is made even with the ground, propriated to the use of the women; but if a n passes in or out by this aperture, he ke-es as much an object of ridicule, as a sailor o descends through lubbers' hole.

A jourt consists of one apartment, forming oblong square. Broad platforms, made of ards, extend along the sides, at the height of out six inches from the ground, which serve sitting, or reposing on, being first covered h mats and skins. The fire-place is on one ; the provisions, and the culinary articles, g on the other. They usually retire to their rts, about the middle of October, and con-e in them till the middle of May.

n erecting a *balagan*, nine posts are fixed into earth, in three regular rows, at equal dis-ces, to the height of about a dozen feet from surface. About ten feet from the ground, ers are laid from post to post, and fastened strong ropes. The joists are placed upon e rafters, and a turf covering completes the r of the balagan. A conical roof is raised n this, by means of long poles, which are red to the rafters at one end, and meet to-er in a point at the top. The whole is ched with a coarse kind of grass. These mer habitations have two doors, opposite to other, to which they ascend with such ladders as are used in the *jourts*. In the lower part, which is entirely open, they dry their fish, vegetables, and other articles provided for the consumption of the winter. Six families generally live together in one *jourt*, but a *balagan* is seldom occupied by more than one at a time.

The *ishas* or *log-houses* are thus constructed: long timbers are piled horizontally, with the ends firmly connected, and the seams filled up or caulked with moss: the roof is sloping, and thatched with grass or rushes. Each of these log-houses has three apartments: one of which may be considered as a kind of entry, extending the whole width and height of the house, and is a receptacle for their lumbering articles, as sledges, harness, &c. This has a communication with their best apartment, which is in the middle, having commodious broad benches, calculated for eating or reposing on: a door points out the way from thence into the kitchen, nearly half of which is appropriated to an oven, or fire-place; which is let into the wall that separates the middle apartment and the kitchen, and is so constructed as to convey the heat to both rooms at the same time. Two lofts are placed over the kitchen and middle apartment, to which the inhabitants ascend by a ladder placed in the entry. Each apartment has two small windows made of talc, and among the lower ranks of the people of fish-skin. The boards and beams of their habitations are smoothed with a hatchet, the natives of this peninsula being unacquainted with the plane.

A town, which is here called an *ostrog*, consists of several habitations, of the kinds above described. *Balagans* are the most numerous; and it is somewhat remarkable, that our navigators never saw a house, of any kind, that was detached from an *ostrog*. In that of St. Peter and St. Paul, there are seven log-houses, nineteen balagans, and three jourts. Paratounca is nearly of the same magnitude. Karatchin, and Natcheekin, have more balagans and jourts, but not so many log-houses, as the former. Hence it appears that such is the most general magnitude of an ostrog*.

The people, situated to the north and south of

The dress of the Kamtschadale females has already been ed; that of the men is thus briefly given. The upper ent resembles a waggoner's frock; if it is for summer it is made of nankeen: if for winter, it is usually kin of some animal, with one side tanned, and the hair preserved on the other, which is worn uppermost. A close jacket of nankeen, or cotton stuff, is next under this; and, beneath that, a skirt of Persian silk, of a red, blue, or yellow colour. They also wear long breeches of leather, reaching below the calf of the leg. They have likewise boots,

of this country, being but imperfectly known, the following summary account of the Kurile Islands, and the Koreki and Tschutski, may not be unacceptable. The Kuriles are a chain of islands, running from the southern promontory of Kamtschatka to Japan. The inhabitants of the neighbourhood of Lopatka, who were themselves called Kuriles, gave these islands the same appellation, as soon as they became acquainted with them. Spanberg says they are twenty-two in number, exclusive of the very small ones. The northernmost island is called Shoomska, the inhabitants of which are a mixture of natives and Kamtschadales. The next, which is named Paramousir, is much larger than Shoomska, inhabited by the real natives. The Russians first visited these two islands in 1713, and added them to the dominions of the empress. The others, as far as Ooshesheer inclusive, are now made tributary.

Though Ooshesheer is the farthest island to the south of any under the dominion of Russia, the inhabitants are said to trade to Ooroop, which is the only one that has a good harbour for vessels of burden. Nadeegsda lies to the south of this, inhabited by a race of men who are remarkably hairy, and who, like the natives of Ooroop, liye in a state of perfect independence*.

A striking resemblance is observable between the fixed Koriacs, and the Kamtschadales; both countries alike depend on fishing for subsistence; and their clothing and habitations are similar. The fixed Koriacs are under the district of the Ingiga, and are tributary to Russia.

The wandering Koriacs are wholly occupied in breeding and pasturing deer, of which they possess immense numbers, a single chief having sometimes a herd of four or five thousand. The flesh of deer is what they principally feed on, and have a strong antipathy t fish. They erect no balagans; their only habitations having so resemblance to the Kamtschadale *jourts*; exce that in winter they are covered with raw de skins; and, in summer, with such as have be tanned. Their sledges are drawn only by dee and, when those animals are wanted, the her man adopts a cry that is familiar to them, wh they instantly obey by quitting the herd. T two nations of the Koriacs, and the Tschut make use of different dialects of the same la guage; but it has not any affinity to that of Kamtschadale.

The country inhabited by the Tschutski, bounded by the Anadir on the south, and exte to the Tschutskoi Noss. Like the wanderi Koriacs, they are chiefly occupied in the manag ment of the deer, with which their coun abounds. They are a well-made, warlike ra and are formidable neighbours to the Koriacs both nations, who are too often sensible of th depredations. The Russians have long end voured to bring them under their dominion, a have lost great numbers of men in their differe attempts to accomplish this purpose, but they ha not yet been able to effect it.

The board of admiralty having left a dis tionary power with the commanding officer the expedition, in case of not succeeding in discovery of a passage into the Atlantic Oce to return to England by whatever route should think best adapted for the farther i provement of geography; Captain Gore manded of the principal officers their sentime in writing, relative to the mode in which th orders might the most effectually be carried i execution. The result of their opinions, wh he fortunately found to be unanimous, a entirely coinciding with his own, was, that condition of the ships, the sails, cordage, rendered it unsafe to attempt, at so advanced season of the year, to navigate the sea betw

boots, made of skins, with the hair innermost. They wear a fur cap, with two flaps, which are usually tied up close to the head, though they are calculated to fall round the shoulders in bad weather. The Russians, who reside in Kamtschatka, wear the European dress; and the uniform of the troops, is a dark green, turned up with red.

* Spanberg, speaking of these people, says, their bodies are covered all over with hair, that they wear a loose striped silk gown, and many of them have silver rings pendant from their ears. Their being hairy all over the body, is also mentioned in the journal of the ship Castricom.

Many of the inhabitants of those islands, that are under the dominion of Russia, are now converted to christian and perhaps the time is not far distant, when comm will be advantageously carried on between Kamtsch and this extensive chain of islands, The Koreki cou consists of two distinct nations, called the *wandering* *fixed* Koriacs. Part of the isthmus of Kamtschatka i habited by the former; as well as the coast of the ea ocean, from thence to the Anadir. The nation of wandering Koriacs, extends westward towards the r Kovyma, and along the north-east of the sea of Oko to the river Penshina.

Asia and Japan, which would otherwise have opened to them a copious field for discovery; that it was therefore adviseable to steer to the eastward; and, in their way thither, to sail along the Kuriles, and particularly examine those islands that are situated nearest to the northern coast of Japan, which are represented to be of considerable extent, and independent of the Russians or Japanese. Should they have the good fortune to find any safe and commodious harbours in any of these islands, they supposed they might prove of considerable importance, as places of shelter for any future navigators, who might be employed in exploring these seas; or as the means of opening a commercial intercourse among the adjacent dominions of the two empires. Their next object was to survey the coast of the Japanese Islands; and afterwards to make the coast of China, as far to the north as they were able, and afterwards proceed along it to Macao.

This plan being adopted, Captain King received orders from Captain Gore, in case the two ships should separate, to repair instantly to Macao; and, at six in the evening of the 9th of October, having cleared the entrance of Awatska Bay, they steered to the south-east, the wind blowing from the north-west and by west. At midnight a perfect calm ensued, and continued till noon on the following day. Their depth of water being sixty and seventy fathoms, the people advantageously employed themselves in catching cod, which were exceedingly fine and plentiful. A breeze springing up from the west about three in the afternoon, they stood along the coast to the southward.

Between Awatska Bay, and Cape Gavatreea, there appear to be several inlets, which might flatter the navigator with hopes of procuring shelter and good anchorage; but they were assured by the Russian pilots that there are none which will admit vessels, even of the smallest size.

On the 12th, at six in the afternoon, they discerned from the mast-head, Cape Lopatka, the most southern extreme of Kamtschatka. Almost at the same instant, the first of the Kurile islands, named Shoomska, made its appearance, in the direction of west half south. The passage between Shoomska and Cape Lopatka, is mentioned by the Russians as being one league in breadth, and extremely dangerous, on account of the rapidity of the tides, and the sunken rocks off the Cape. On the 13th at daybreak, they descried the second of the Kurile Islands, named Paramousir by the Russians. In the course of the day, they observed several whales, and great numbers of gulls and albatrosses. Paramousir is the largest of the Kuriles that are subject to the dominion of the Russians *.

On the 26th, at break of day, they perceived high land towards the west, which proved to be Japan. At nine o'clock, they approached within about six miles of the land, which bore west three quarters south. Their depth of water was fifty-eight fathoms: but as the wind now failed them, they had proceeded, at noon, to no greater distance from the shore than three leagues. The most northerly land in view, was supposed to be the northern extreme of Japan. The neighbouring country is moderately elevated, and has a double range of mountains. It has plenty of wood, and exhibits a pleasing variety of hills and dales. Smoke was seen arising from several towns, or villages; and many houses were beheld in delightful cultivated situations.

During the continuance of the calm, that they might lose no time, they put their fishing-lines overboard, in ten fathoms water, but met with no success. At two in the afternoon, the

*On the 21st a land-bird, somewhat larger than a sparrow, though much resembling one in other respects, perched on the rigging, and was caught. During the afternoon another land-bird pitched on one of the ships, and was so much exhausted with fatigue, that it suffered itself to be taken, without attempting to escape, and expired a few hours afterwards. It was not larger than a wren, and had a tuft of yellow feathers on its head; the rest of its plumage was similar to that of a linnet.

These birds affording clear indications that the land was not at any very considerable distance; and the wind, after varying for a little time, settling at the north point in the evening, their hopes of falling in with the land increased, and they steered to the north-west; in which direction were situated, at the distance of fifty leagues, the southernmost islands, seen by Captain Spanberg, and reputed to be inhabited by hairy men.

On the 25th, at noon, flights of wild ducks were seen by our navigators; a pigeon lighted upon the rigging; and several birds, resembling linnets, flew about the ships with so much vigour, that they were supposed not to have been long upon the wing. They also saw a piece of bamboo or sugar-cane, and several small bundles of long grass. These being indications of the proximity of land, induced them to try for soundings; but they could not reach the bottom with ninety fathoms of line.

wind

wind blew fresh from the south. They kept on during the whole night, and till eight o'clock the following morning, when the wind shifting to the north, and becoming moderate, they made sail towards the land, which, however, they did not make till three in the afternoon. They continued towards the coast till eight in the evening, when their distance from it was about five leagues; and having shortened sail for the night, they steered in a southerly direction, sounding every four hours; but their depth of water was so great, that they did not find ground with a hundred and sixty fathoms of line.

They saw land again on the 28th, about six in the morning; at noon the northern extremity of it, bore north-west by north. At eight they were within the distance of two leagues from the shore. It unfortunately happened, that there was a haze over the land, which prevented them from distinguishing small objects on it. Not long after they observed a vessel, close in with the land, standing to the north along the shore; they also saw another in the offing, coming down on them before the wind. Excited by curiosity, every person on board came instantly upon deck to gaze at them. As the vessel to windward approached them, she hauled off to a greater distance from the shore; upon which, being apprehensive of alarming those on board of her by the appearance of a pursuit, they brought their ships to, and she sailed a-head of them, at the distance of four or five furlongs. They would have spoken to them, but Captain Gore perceiving, by their manœuvres, that they were much terrified, was unwilling to augment their apprehensions; and, supposing they should have many better opportunities of communicating with the Japanese, permitted them to retire without interruption.

Our navigators were not sufficiently near the vessel to remark any particulars respecting the men on board of her, who seemed to be six or seven in number: she was of the burden of about forty tons; and had only one mast, on which was hoisted a quadrangular sail, extended aloft by a yard, the braces of which worked forwards.

The wind blew fresh at noon, and was accompanied with much rain: by three in the afternoon it had considerably increased; the sea running as high as any of the people ever remembered to have seen it. About eight in the evening, the gale shifted to the west, without any diminution of its violence; and, by producing a sudden swell, in a direction contrary to that which had before prevailed, caused the ships to strain and labour extremely. The gale at length abating, and settling in the western quarter, they steered a southward course. On the 30th, at nine in the morning, they saw the land, at the distance of about sixteen leagues. It shewed itself in detached parts; but they were too far distant to ascertain, whether they were small islands or parts of Japan *.

Between five and six in the evening of the 1st of November, our navigators saw several Japanese vessels, close in with the land, some standing along the shore, and others appeared to be occupied in fishing. They beheld to the westward an exceeding high mountain, with a round summit rising far inland. No high ground appears in the neighbourhood of it, the coast being of a moderate elevation. In the morning of the 3d, our navigators found themselves, by their reckoning, upwards of fifty leagues from the coast; which circumstance, added to the consideration of the very uncommon effect of currents they had already experienced, the advanced period of the year, and the variable and uncertain state of the weather, induced Captain Gore to form the resolution of leaving Japan, and prosecuting the voyage to China †.

Our navigators proceeded to the south-eastward during the 4th and 5th of November, with

* On the 31st, at two in the morning, the wind blew in violent squalls, accompanied with lightning and rain. In the course of the day, several little birds of a brown plumage, resembling linnets, flew about the ships. On the approach of evening, the wind coming to the north-west point, they directed their course, with the birds, to the west-south-west, in order to regain the coast.

† That the reader may not suppose Captain Gore relinquished this object too hastily, let it be observed, in addition to the facts before stated, that *Kæmpfer* § assures us, the coast of Japan is the most dangerous in all the world, that it would have been extremely hazardous in case of distress, to have run into any of the harbours of that country; where, if authentic writers are to be believed, the natives have so great an aversion to a communication with strangers, that upon the slightest occasions, they are frequently prompted to the most flagrant acts of barbarity. Let it also be considered, that our navigators' vessels were in a leaky condition, that the rigging was so rotten as to require perpetual reparation; and that the sails were so entirely worn out, that they were incapable of withstanding the vehemence of a gale of wind.

§ Kœmpfer's Hist of Japan, Vol. I. p. 92, &c.

unsettled weather, attended with much lightning and rain. On each of those days they passed great quantities of pumice-stone, several pieces of which were taken up by some of the seamen, and weighed progressively from an ounce to about three pounds. It was supposed that these stones had been thrown into the water, by eruptions at different periods; many of them being bare, and the others covered with barnacles. At this time a number of porpoises were frisking round the ships, and several land-birds were seen*.

On the 14th, Mr. Trevenen, a young gentleman who accompanied Captain King in the Discovery, saw land in the direction of south-west, which had the appearance of a peaked mountain. At noon it was discovered to be an island; and at two in the afternoon, another was seen to the west north-westward. The second island, when beheld at a distance, appeared like two; and this being manifestly of greater extent than that to the southward, they directed their course towards it. At four, it bore north-west-by-west; but, not having sufficient day light to examine its course, they stood, during the night, upon their tacks.

The next morning, at six, they made sail for the southern point of the larger island, and about the same time, discovered another high island. About nine, they were abreast of the middle land, and within a mile of it; but Captain Gore, perceiving that a boat could not land, without running some risque from the surf that broke against the shore, continued his course to westward. The length of this island, in the direction of south-south-west, and north-north-east is about five miles. Its south point is an elevated barren hill, flattish on the summit, and when seen from the west-south-west, exhibits an evident volcanic crater. The sand, earth, or rock of which its surface was composed, displayed different colours; and a considerable part of it was believed to be sulphur, not only from its appearance, but from the strong sulphureous smell perceived by our navigators on their approach to the point. The Resolution having passed nearer the land, several of the officers on board that ship, thought they perceived streams issuing from the top of the hill. Hence Captain Gore bestowed on this discovery the appellation of Sulphur Island.

Captain Gore now directed his course to the west-south-west, for the Bashee Isles, expecting to procure from them such a supply of refreshments as might render it less necessary for them to continue long at Macao.

On the 27th at twelve o'clock, the weather became hazy: at six in the afternoon, having got to the west of the Bashee Isles, according to Admiral Byron's account, Captain Gore hauled his wind to the north-westward, under an easy sail, the wind blowing vehemently, and every circumstance seemed to indicate a tempestuous night. On the 28th, at four in the morning, the Resolution, which was then half a mile a-head of the Discovery, wore, and the crew of the latter, at the same time, perceived breakers close under their lee. At day-light they saw the island of Prata; and, between the hours of six and seven, they stood towards the shoal, but finding themselves unable to weather it, they bore away, and ran to the leeward. The extent of the Prata shoal is considerable; it being six leagues from north to south, and extends upwards of three leagues to the east of the island. They carried a press of sail during the remainder of the day, and kept the wind, which now blew from the north-east by north, in order to secure their passage to Macao.

In the morning of the 29th, they passed some Chinese fishing boats, the crews of which paid very little attention to them. As they were now nearly in the latitude of the Lema Islands, they made sail to the west by north, and after proceeding upwards of twenty miles, descried one of them nine or ten leagues to the west. The next morning they ran among the Lema Isles, which like the other islands on this coast, are destitute of wood, and uncultivated. About nine a Chinese boat, which had before been with the Resolution, came along-side the Discovery, with offers of a pilot, which Captain King declined, it being incumbent on him to follow his consort. Soon afterwards they passed the westernmost of the Lema rocks; but instead of hauling up to the north of the Grand Ladrone

* On the 9th they had a great swell from the east-south-east, and in the course of the day they observed another small land-bird, a tropic bird, some flying fish, and porpoises. They continued to pass different accumulations of pumice-stone; the amazing quantities of which, floating in the sea between Japan and the Bashee Isles, give rise to a supposition, that in this quarter of the Pacific Ocean, some great volcanic convulsion must have happened.

Island, as Lord Anson did in the Centurion, they sailed to leeward.

It was, however, a pleasing circumstance to see the Resolution soon after fire a gun, and display her colours, as a signal for a pilot. On repeating the signal, an excellent race was occasioned between four Chinese boats; and Captain Gore engaged with the man who arrived first, to conduct the ship to the Typa for thirty dollars; informing Captain King, by a messenger, that, as he could easily follow him with the Discovery, he might avoid that expence.

A second pilot, however, getting on board the Resolution, insisted on guiding the ship; and immediately laying hold of the wheel, began to order the sails to be trimmed. On this, a violent altercation arose, which was at length compromised, by their agreeing to divide the money between them.

In pursuance of the instructions given to Captain Cook by the Lords of the Admiralty, it now became necessary to demand of the officers and men, their journals, and whatever papers they might have in their possession, relative to the history of their voyage. Some degree of delicacy as well as firmness, was required in the execution of these orders. Captain King, therefore, assembled the Discovery's people on deck, and related to them the orders that had been received, and the reasons which, in his opinion, ought to induce them to yield a ready obedience. But he, at the same time, informed them, that whatever papers they wished not to have sent to the Lords of the Admiralty, should be sealed up in their own presence, and kept in his custody, till the intentions of their lordships, respecting the publication of the history of the voyage, were accomplished; after which they should be faithfully restored to them.

Captain King had the satisfaction to find, that his proposals met with the approbation, and the ready compliance of all the officers and men. Every scrap of paper, containing any of the transactions of the voyage, was instantly given up. Captain Gore made the same proposals to the people of the Resolution, who instantly complied with them.

SECTION XLV.

Ignorance of the Chinese Pilot—The Ships approach Macao—The Isle of Potoe—A Chinese Comprador comes on board—Captain King dispatched to Macao—Alarms occasioned at Canton—Anchor in the Typa—Captain King, &c. proceed to Canton—A Chinese Boat described—Suspicious Character of the Chinese—Observations respecting the City of Canton—Description of—Captain King visits a Chinese of Distinction—His Return to Macao—Price of Provisions at Canton—The Ships rendered more defensible—Orders of the French Court respecting Captain Cook—Quit the Typa—Soundings on the Macclesfield Bank—Steer for Pulor Condore—Cast Anchor in a Harbour of that Island—Captains Gore and King land there—Description of the principal Town—Habitation of the Chief—A Mandaren visits the Ships—Pulo Condore described—Animal and vegetable Produce—Persons and Disposition of the Inhabitants.

THEY stood on their tacks, during the afternoon, between the Grand Ladrone and the island of Potoe, having passed to the east of the latter. The tide beginning to ebb at nine o'clock, they cast anchor in six fathoms water; the town of Macao being at the distance of about ten miles, and the Isle of Potoe six or seven miles distant. Potoe is situated about two leagues to the north-north-west of that island: it is rocky, and of small extent.

On the 2d of December, in the morning, one of the Chinese contractors, under the denomination of *Compradors*, came on board the Resolution, and sold as much beef to Captain Gore as weighed two hundred and eighty pounds, besides a considerable quantity of eggs, oranges, and greens. The Discovery was allotted a proportionable share of these articles; and an agreement was entered into with the *Comprador* to provide them a daily supply, stipulating, however, that he must be paid before hand. As the pilot now pretended that he could conduct the ships further

ther, Captain Gore was under the necessity of discharging him; and they were left to their own guidance and direction.

In the evening, Captain Gore dispatched Captain King to Macao, to pay a visit to the Portuguese governor, and to request his advice and assistance in supplying our Europeans with provisions; which he supposed might be procured upon more reasonable terms, than the *Comprador* would undertake to furnish them. On Mr. King's arrival at the citadel, the fort-major informed him that the governor was indisposed, and was therefore unwilling to receive any visitors; but that he might rely on meeting with every assistance in their power. On Captain King's acquainting the major with his wishes, of proceeding immediately to Canton, and making application to the servants of the British East India Company, who then resided there, he told him, that he could not venture to furnish him with a boat till permission had been obtained from the Hoppo, or office of the customs; and that it was necessary to apply, for this purpose, to the Chinese government at Canton.

Captain King's mortification at this unexpected delay, could only be equalled by the extreme impatience, with which they had so long waited for an opportunity of receiving intelligence from Europe. It frequently happens, that, in the ardent pursuit of an object, we overlook the most obvious means of attaining it. This was precisely Mr. King's case at present; for he was returning, in a state of deep dejection to the ship, when the Portuguese officer, who accompanied him, asked him whether he did not mean to visit the English gentlemen at Macao. It is unnecessary to add, with what transport Mr. King received the information conveyed by this question; or the anxious hopes and fears by which his mind was agitated, as he and his companions proceeded to the house of one of their countrymen.

The reception they met with, though far from being deficient in civility or kindness, in their agitated state of mind, appeared to them rather cold and formal. In their enquiries, as far as they regarded objects of private concern, they indeed obtained but little satisfaction; but the events of a public nature, which happened since the period of their departure from England, now for the first time burst all at once upon them, overwhelmed their feelings, and almost deprived them, for some time, of the power of reflection.

The intelligence they had received concerning the state of the affairs of Europe, rendered them the more anxious to accelerate their departure; Captain King therefore renewed his endeavours to procure a passage to Canton, but could not, at that time, meet with success. He then dispatched a letter to the committee of the English supercargoes, to inform them of the reason of their putting into the Tygris, and to request their assistance in procuring them a passport, as well as in forwarding the stores they had occasion for, with all possible expedition.

The next morning, Captain King was attended on board by their countryman; who, acquainting them with the situation of the Typa, they weighed anchor about seven o'clock, and steered towards it; but the wind failing, they again came to, at eight, in three fathoms and a half, at the distance of three miles. The Portuguese fort was here saluted by the Resolution with eleven guns, a compliment which was returned by an equal number. Early on the 4th, they weighed again, and stood into the Typa, where they moored with the stream anchor and cable to the west*.

On the 9th Captain Gore received an answer from the committee of the English supercargoes at Canton, in which they promised to exert their best endeavours to procure the supplies of which they were in want, with all possible expedition; and assured him that a passport should be sent for one of their officers. The next day, an English merchant from one of the English East Indian settlements, applied to Captain Gore for the assistance of a few of his people, to navigate to Canton a vessel which he had purchased at Macao. Captain Gore, conceiving this to be a good opportunity for Mr. King to repair to that city, gave orders that he should take with him

* The *Comprador* with whom they at first engaged, having taken the liberty of going off with a small sum of money, which he had received in advance for the purchase of provisions, our navigators entered into a contract with another, who supplied both the vessels during the whole time of their continuance here. This was managed privately, and in the night, on pretence of its being inimical to the established rules of the port; but our navigators suspected that this caution was practised, either to enhance the price of the articles furnished by him, or of securing to himself the emoluments of his contract, without suffering the Mandarines to participate with him.

his second lieutenant, the lieutenant of marines, and ten seamen.

Though this was not precisely the mode in which Captain King could have wished to visit Canton, yet as it was uncertain when the passport would arrive, and his presence might be serviceable in expediting the necessary supplies, he did not hesitate to go on board the vessel; having left orders with Mr. Williamson to prepare the Discovery for sea with all possible dispatch; and to make such additions and improvements in her upper works as were required. Mr. King, and his attendants, quitted the harbour of Macao on the 11th; and, sailing round the eastern extreme of the island, steered a northerly course, leaving on their right hand as they passed along, Lanto Lintin, and several smaller isles. All these islands, as well as that of Macao, are destitute of wood; the land is barren, and uninhabited, except occasionally by fishermen*.

Monsieur Somerat asserts, that the river, higher up, is too shallow to admit vessels that are heavily laden, if the policy of the Chinese had permitted Europeans to navigate them up to Canton. With respect to this circumstance, however, it is difficult to decide, as no stranger, it is presumed, has been able to inform himself with certainty of the truth. The little islands, situated opposite the town, are appropriated to the several factories, who have built warehouses for the reception of the articles of merchandize, which are brought down from Canton.

At Wampu, Captain King embarked in a *sampane*, or Chinese boat, and proceeded to Canton, which is eight miles higher up the river. These *sampanes* are the neatest, and most commodious for passengers that Mr. King ever saw. They are of different sizes, broad upon the beam, almost flat at the bottom, and narrow at the head and stern; which are elevated and embellished with ornaments. A small waxen idol was placed in the stern, in a case of gilt leather. Captain King reached Canton in the evening, and landed at the English factory; where, though his arrival was wholly unexpected, he was received with every mark of attention and civility. Messrs. Fitzhugh, Bevan, and Rapier, were the gentlemen that then composed the select committee, the former of whom acted as president. They immediately gave Mr. King an inventory of those stores, with which the East India ships were able to supply them. He did not entertain the smallest doubt that the commanders were willing to assist them with what they could spare, but it was a great disappointment to him to observe in their list hardly any canvas or cordage; of both which articles they were principally in want. It was a consolation to him, however, to find that the stores were ready to be shipped, and that the provisions they required might be had at a day's notice†.

After Captain King had impatiently waited several days for the issue of his negociation without finding that the affair was in the least advancing towards a conclusion, he made application to the commander of an English country ship, who intended to sail on the 25th, and who offered to take on board the men and stores. While he was considering what steps he should take, the commander of another country ship brought him a letter from Captain Gore, importing that he had engaged this commander to bring their party from Canton, and to deliver their supplies, at his own risk, in the Typa.

The difficulties being thus removed, Mr. King had leisure to attend to the purchase of the stores and provisions, which he completed on the 26th; and on the following day the whole was delivered on board.

Captain Gore being of opinion that Canton

* As they approached the Bocca Tygris, which is about forty miles from Macao, the coast of China appeared to the eastward: in white cliffs. The two forts, commanding the mouth of the river, were, at this time, in the same state they were in when Lord Anson was there. That on the left, is a fine old castle, environed by a grove of trees, and has a pleasing and romantic aspect. Being retarded by contrary winds, they did not arrive at Wampu, though only nine leagues from the Bocca Tygris, till the 18th. Wampu is a small town, off which the ships who trade with the Chinese are stationed, in order to receive their respective ladings.

† Wishing his stay here to be as short as possible, he requested the gentleman to procure boats for him the next day; it being his intention to quit Canton, the subsequent one; but he was soon informed that such business was not to be transacted so expeditiously in the Chinese dominions, where many forms were to be complied with: and that it was not customary to grant such favours without mature deliberation. He was also reminded that patience was a virtue essentially necessary in China; and that they hoped they should have the pleasure of rendering the factory agreeable to him, for some days longer than he seemed inclined to favour them with his company.

ould be the most advantageous market fo- furs, d requested Mr. King to take with him about enty sea-otters' skins, which had chiefly been e property of their deceased commander, and dispose of them on the most advantageous rms: a commission which furnished him with opportunity of becoming acquainted with the nius of the Chinese for trade. Mr. King, ving mentioned these particulars to some of e English supercargoes, requested them to re- mmend him to some Chinese merchant of edit, who would offer him a fair price for em. They accordingly directed him to a member f the *Hong*, an appellation appropriated to a ciety of the principal merchants in the city, ho, being fully apprised of the nature of the siness, assured him that he might rely on his tegrity; and that, in such an affair, he should nsider himself as a mere agent, without aiming any profit for himself.

The skins being laid before the merchant, he amined them with particular attention, and terwards informed Captain King, that he could t venture to give more than three hundred llars for them. As the captain knew, from e price their skins produced at Kamptschatka, at he had not offered half their value, he de- anded a thousand dollars: the Chinese then anced to five hundred; and, at the same time, entioned a private present of porcelain and tea, nounting to one hundred more: he next pro- sed the same sum in money; and afterwards rose to seven hundred dollars. The captain then lowered his demands to nine hundred; and the parties, weary of the contest, agreed to divide the difference, and the sum of eight hundred dollars was finally determined on.

The accounts of Canton, and other parts of China, by Le Comte and Du Halde, have doubtless been perused by many of our readers. These authors have, however, been accused of exaggeration; for which reason the subsequent remarks, collected by Captain King, may not improperly be introduced. The circumference of Canton, including the old and new town, as well as the suburbs, is about ten miles. Le Comte has estimated the number of its inhabitants at one million, five hundred thousand; Du Halde, at a million; and M. Sonnerat has ascertained that their number does not exceed seventy-five thousand*. But as this gentleman seems as much inclined to depreciate whatever relates to the Chinese nation, as the Jesuits have been to magnify, his opinion does not claim an implicit reliance on†.

The military force of the province Quangtong, of which Canton is the capital, consists of fifty thousand men. Twenty thousand military men are said to be stationed in the city and its environs; and Captain King was assured that, on a commotion happening at Canton, thirty thousand troops were drawn together in the course of a few hours.

The streets of this city are long, and many of them narrow and irregular. They are substan-

* "J'ai verifié moi-meme, avec plusieurs Chinois, pulation de Canton," &c. "I have estimated the popula- of Canton, in which I was assisted by several intelligent inese, &c." Voyage aux Indes, &c. par M. Sonnerat, p. 14.

† But the following particulars may probably enable our ders to form a judgment on this point with a tolerable gree of accuracy. It is well known that Chinese habitations, general, occupy more space than is usually allotted to es in Europe; but the proportion of four or five to one, gested by M. Sonnerat, must be acknowledged to exceed truth. It may also be observed, that many of the ses, in the suburbs of Canton, are only engaged for the rposes of commerce, by merchants and opulent trades- n, whose families reside principally within the walls. should also be considered, that a Chinese family, upon average, is more numerous than that of an European; Mandarin, in proportion to his rank and property, ing from five to twenty wives; a merchant has from three ive. A person of the latter class at Canton, had, indeed, nty-five wives, and thirty-six children; but that was tioned to Captain King as a very extraordinary circum- nce. An opulent tradesman has generally two wives; but people of an inferior station have seldom more than one: they, however, have double the number of servants, employed by Europeans of the same rank. If we suppose a Chinese family to be larger by one third, and an European house less by two-thirds, than each other, a Chinese city will contain only half the number of people, which usually occupy a town of the same extent in Europe. On these suppositions, the city and suburbs of Canton may probably contain about one hundred and fifty thousand inhabitants.

Captain King heard various opinions respecting the number of inhabited *sampanes*, or Chinese boats; but none of the inhabitants supposed them to be under forty thousand. They are moored in rows, close to each other, a narrow passage being left, at intervals, that boats may conveniently pass and repass on the river. The Tygris, at Canton, being wider than the Thames at London, and the river, for the space of a mile, being covered in this manner, it should seem that this estimate of their number is not exaggerated: and should that be admitted, the inhabitants in the *sampanes* alone, each of which containing a family, must amount to almost three times the number which M. Sonnerat admits to be contained in the whole city.

tially paved with large stones, and kept generally clean. Their houses are built of brick, and are but one story high. Many of them have two or three courts backwards, in which ware-houses are erected. Some of the very inferior class, have their habitations composed of wood.

The houses of the European factors are built on a fine quay, and have a regular facade of two stories towards the river. Adjoining to these, a number of houses belonging to the Chinese, are let out to the commanders of vessels, or to merchants who want only an occasional residence.

As no European is suffered to take his wife with him to Canton, the English supercargoes live together, at a common table, which is supported by the company; and each of them has an apartment appropriated to himself, consisting of three or four rooms. Their residence here seldom exceeds eight months in the year, during which time they are generally occupied in the service of the company, and therefore they the more readily submit to the restrictions under which they live. They seldom visit within the walls, except on public occasions.

When the last ship departs from Wampu, they are obliged to retire to Macao; but they leave behind them what money they possess in *specie*, which Mr. King was assured sometimes amounts to a hundred thousand pounds sterling; and for which they have no other security than the seals of the viceroy, the Mandarines, and the merchants of the Hong.

During his residence at Canton, Captain King was accompanied by one of the English gentlemen, on a visit to a person of the first consequence in the place. They were received in a long gallery, at the upper end of which a table was placed, with a large chair behind it, and a row of chairs extending from it, on each side down the room. Being previously informed, that the point of politeness consisted in remaining unseated as long as possible, the captain readily submitted to this piece of *etiquette;* after which they were entertained with tea, and some fresh and preserved fruits. Their host was very corpulent, and had a dull unmeaning countenance; but displayed great gravity in his deportment.

He had acquired a little broken English and Portuguese; and when his visitors had taken their refreshment, he conducted them about his house and garden. A few observations having been made respecting the taste, manifested in the several improvements on the premises, the parties reciprocally took their leave.

Captain King, wishing to avoid the trouble and delay that might attend an application for passports, at first intended to go along with the supplies to Macao; but receiving an invitation from two English gentlemen, who had procured passports for four, he and Mr. Phillips accepted their offer of places in a Chinese boat, and entrusted Mr. Lannyon with the superintendance of the men and stores, which were to sail the following day.

In the evening of the 26th, Captain King took his leave of the supercargoes, having thanked them for their many obliging favours; among which he did not forget to mention a present of a large quantity of tea, for the use of the companies of both ships, and a large collection of English periodical publications. The latter were found a very valuable acquisition, as they not only afforded them much amusement, but some material information respecting what had happened in their native country during their absence.

While the party were absent from Macao, a brisk trade was carried on with the Chinese for their sea-otter skins, the value of which had augmented daily. One of their sailors procured eight hundred dollars for his stock; and a few of the best skins, which were clean, and had been carefully preserved, produced one hundred and twenty dollars each. The total amount of the value, in goods, and cash, that was received for the furs in both ships, was at least two thousand pounds sterling: and it was generally supposed that at least two thirds of the quantity, they had originally got from the Americans, were spoiled and worn out, or had been bestowed as presents in Kamptschatka*.

On the 30th Mr. Lannyon arrived with the

So great was the rage of the seamen for returning to Cook's River, and there procure another cargo of skins, by which they might be enabled to make their fortunes at once, that a mutiny was almost apprehended.

A very ludicrous alteration took place in the dress of the crew, in consequence of the barter which the Chinese had carried on with them for their sea-otter skins. On their arrival in the Typa, not only the sailors, but also the young officers, were in a very ragged condition; for as the voyage had already exceeded, by almost a year, the time it was first supposed they should remain at sea, nearly the whole of their original stock of European clothes had been lost, worn out, or repaired and patched up with skins, or other articles they had met with in the course of their expedition. But these so half-consumed articles of apparel were now mixed and eked out with the gaudiest silks and cottons which China could produce.

stores and provisions, which were soon proportionally stowed on board the two vessels. While they remained in the Typa, Captain King was shewn, in the garden of an English gentleman at Macao, the rock, under which Camoens, the celebrated Portuguese poet, was accustomed to sit and compose his Luciad. It is a lofty arch, consisting of one solid stone, forming the entrance of a grotto, dug out of the elevated ground behind it. Large spreading trees overshadow the rock, which commands a beautiful and extensive prospect of the sea, and the scattered islands about it.

On the 11th of January, 1780, two sailors belonging to the Resolution, absented themselves, with a six oared cutter; and, though diligently sought after both that and the succeeding day, no satisfactory intelligence could be procured. It was apprehended, that these seamen had been seduced by the expectation of acquiring a fortune, if they should return to the fur islands.

On the 12th of January, 1780, at noon, they moored and scaled the guns, which, on board the Discovery, then amounted to ten; they could therefore, by means of four addition ports, fight seven on a side, if it should be found necessary. On the Resolution also, the number of guns had been augmented from twelve to sixteen: and, in each of the vessels, a strong barricade had been carried round the upper works, and all other necessary precautions taken to give an inconsiderable force, a respectable appearance.

They thought it their duty to furnish themselves with these means of defence, though they were induced to believe, that the generosity of their enemies had rendered such a measure unnecessary. Captain King had been informed at Canton, that, in the public prints, lately arrived from Great Britain, mention was made of instructions having been found on board all the French ships of war, that had been captured in Europe, that if they should happen to fall in with the ships under the command of Captain Cook, they should suffer them to proceed unmolested on their voyage. The American congress, it was also said, had given similar orders to the vessels employed in their service. This intelligence being further confirmed by the private letters of several of the supercargoes, Captain Gore thought it incumbent on him, for the liberal exceptions their enemies had made in their favour, to refrain from availing himself of any opportunities of capture, which they might afford, and to preserve, throughout the voyage, the strictest neutrality.

Having got under sail at two in the afternoon on the 13th, the Resolution saluted the fort of Macao with eleven guns; and the salutation was returned with an equal number. The wind failing at five, the ship missed stays, and drove into shallow water; but she was hauled off without sustaining any damage. The calm continuing, they were under the necessity of warping out into the entrance of the Typa, which they gained by eight in the evening, and remained there till nine the next morning.

They now steered south half east, with a fresh breeze from the east-north-east point, without any remarkable occurrence, till the 15th at noon; when the wind shifting to the north, they directed their course rather more to the eastward, with a view of striking soundings over the Macclesfield Bank; which was accomplished on the 16th, at eight in the evening, and the depth of water was found fifty fathoms.

They had strong gales from the east by north, on the 17th, with a rough turbulent sea. On the succeeding day, the sea continued to run high, and the wind to blow with vehemence. They began to steer for Pulo Sepata, which they saw on the 19th about four in the afternoon. This island is denominated *Sepata*, from its resembling a shoe in figure: it is small, elevated, and unfertile. Having passed the island, they stood to the westward; and the violence of the wind abating in the morning of the 20th, they let out the reefs, and directed their course to the west by south for Pulo Condore.

At four in the afternoon, the extremes of Pulo Condore bore south-east, and south-west-by-west. They stood towards a harbour at the south-west end of Condore, and at six anchored in six fathoms water. They had no sooner let go their anchors, that Captain Gore fired a gun, to give the inhabitants notice of their arrival, and to lure them towards the shore; but it proved ineffectual. Early in the morning of the 21st, parties were dispatched to cut wood, Captain Gore's principal reason for touching at this island being to procure a supply of that article for the ships.

None of the islanders had yet made their appearance, though a second gun had been fired; the captain, therefore, thought it was advisable to go on shore in search of them, that they might traffic with them for such provisions as the place could supply them with. On this occasion he desired Captain King to accompany him on the

morning

morning of the 22d, but the wind blowing violently from the eastward, they did not think it prudent to coast in their boats to the town, but rowed round the northern point of the harbour.

After proceeding along the shore for about two miles, they perceived a road leading to a wood, and they immediately landed. Here the Captains Gore and King, attended by a midshipman, and four armed sailors, pursued the path which appeared to point directly across the island. They passed through a thick wood, up a steep hill, to the distance of a mile, when after descending through a wood of equal extent, on the other side, they arrived in an open level country, interspersed with groves of cabbage, palm, and cocoa-trees, and cultivated spots of rice and tobacco*.

He ordered a person to conduct the party to the town, as soon as an obstacle should be removed, of which they were not aware. On their first leaving the wood, a herd of buffaloes, amounting to about twenty, ran towards them, tossing up their heads, snuffing the air, and making a clamorous roaring. They had followed our Europeans to the huts, and were now drawn up in a body at an inconsiderable distance. The old man had signified to Captain King, that it would be extremely dangerous for the party to move, till the buffaloes were all driven into the woods; but so enraged were these animals grown at the sight of them, that this was not effected without much difficulty. The men, indeed, were unable to effect it; but, to the astonishment of Captain King and his companions, a few little boys speedily drove the animals out of sight. It was afterwards observed, that in driving and securing the buffaloes, which is done by putting a rope through a hole made in their nostrils, little boys were always employed, who could stroke and handle them with impunity, when the men could not venture to approach them.

The buffaloes being driven off, the party were conducted to the town which was about a mile distant; the road conducting to it passing through a deep whitish sand. It stands on the sea-side at the bottom of a retired bay, which affords shelter during the prevalence of the south-west monsoon.

The town consists of between twenty and thirty houses, built contiguous to each other: besides which there are six or seven others dispersed about the beach. The roof, the two ends, and that side which faces the country, are neatly constructed with reeds. The opposite side which fronts the sea, is entirely open; but the inhabitants, with a kind of screen made of bamboo, can exclude or admit as much of the air and sun as they think proper.

The islander who acted in the character of guide to the party, conducted them to the largest house in the town, belonging to the chief, or captain. At each extremity of this mansion was a room, separated by reeds from the middle space which was unenclosed on either side, and furnished with partition screens like the others. There was also a pent-house, projecting four or five feet from the roof, and running the whole length on each side. Some Chinese paintings, exhibiting both sexes in ludicrous attitudes, were hung at each end of the middle room. In this apartment the people were requested to seat themselves on mats, and *betel* was presented to them.

By means of money, and pointing at different objects in sight, Captain King met with no difficulty in making one of the company, who seemed to be the principal person among them, comprehend the principal design of his visit, and as readily understood from him, that the chief, or captain, was then absent, but would speedily return; and that no purchases of any kind could be made without his concurrence and approbation.

The party embraced this opportunity of walking about the town; and did not forget to search, though ineffectually, for the remains of a for-

* Here he perceived two huts, at the extremity of the wood, to which they directed their march. Before they arrived at these humble habitations, they were observed by two men, who instantly ran away from them; though all the peaceable and supplicating gestures were industriously exercised to conciliate their friendship. On reaching the huts Captain King, fearing the sight of so many armed men might terrify the natives, commanded his attendants to stay without, whilst he entered and reconnoitred alone. In one of the huts he found an elderly man, who was much terrified, and preparing to retire with the most valuable of his effects. A few signs, however, and particularly that most significant one of holding out a handful of dollars, and then pointing to a herd of buffaloes, and the fowls that were running in crowds about the huts, left him under no doubts respecting the real objects of the captain's visit. He pointed immediately to the spot where the town was situated, and made it clear to Mr. King's comprehension, that by repairing thither, he might be abundantly supplied with what he wanted.

which some Englishmen had built in 1702*, near the spot they were now upon.

On the 23d, in the morning, the launches of both the ships were dispatched to the town, to bring away the buffaloes they had before given orders for the purchase of; but they were obliged to wait till it was high water, not being able, at any other time, to make their way through the opening at the head of the harbour. On their arrival at the town, the surf broke against the beach with such fury, that it was not without great difficulty, that each of the launches brought a buffalo on board in the evening. The officers, employed in this service, declared it as their opinion, that not only from the violence of the surf, but also from the ferocity of the buffaloes, it would be highly imprudent to attempt bringing off any more in the same manner.

Having procured eight of these animals, our navigators, were at a loss to convey them properly on board. They could not venture to kill more than would be sufficient for one day's consumption, as, in such a climate, the meat would not keep till the following day. After consulting with the Mandarin on this point, it was determined, that the remainder of the buffaloes should be driven through the wood, and down to the bay where the two captains had landed the preceding day.

This plan was carried into execution; but the obstinacy and amazing strength of the animals, rendered it a difficult and tardy operation. Their mode of conducting them was, by putting ropes through their nostrils, and round their horns; but when they once became enraged at the sight of the people, their fury was beyond conception; tearing asunder the cartilage of the nostril, through which the ropes passed, and setting themselves at liberty; at other times, they broke or overthrew the trees, to which they were fastened as a supposed security for their obedience. All the endeavours of the men, on such occasions, to render these animals tractable, would have been ineffectual, had not some little boys been suffered to approach them; by whose puerile frolics and endearments, they were speedily appeased: and, when they were afterwards brought down to the beach, their frisky juvenile assistance, in playfully twisting the ropes about the legs of the creatures, occasioned their falling, and being the more easily conveyed into the boats†.

Whilst our Europeans were occupied in this business, two wells of excellent water were discovered; in consequence of which a party from each of the ships had been employed in providing a competent supply of it. A quantity of wood was also procured, that they might not be required to continue long in the Straits of Sunda, for recruiting their stock of these necessary articles.

Pulo Condore is elevated and mountainous, encompassed by several smaller islands. Its name implies the Island of Calabashes, being derived from two Malay words; *Pulo* signifying an island, and *Condore* a calabash, plenty of which fruit is here produced. It is of a semi-circular form, extending about eight miles from the most southerly point. Its breadth, in any part, does not exceed two miles.

With respect to animal and vegetable productions, Pulo Condore is much improved since the time it was visited by Dampier. Neither that navigator, nor the East-India Directory, mention any other quadrupeds than hogs, lizards, and guanoes: and the latter asserts, on the authority of Monsieur Didier, a French engineer, who surveyed this island in 1720, that none of the fruits and esculent plants, which are so frequently met with in other parts of India, are found here, except chibbols, water-melons, small gourds, little black beans, and a few potatoes. At present, besides the buffaloes, of which animals there are several large herds, our

* The English settled on this island in 1702, bringing with them a party of Macassar soldiers, who were hired to contribute their assistance in erecting a fort; but the president of the factory not fulfilling his engagement with them, they were determined upon revenge; and, one night, took an opportunity of murdering all the English in the fort. Those who were without the fort, hearing a noise, were greatly alarmed, and running to their boats, narrowly escaped with their lives to the Johore dominions, where they met with very humane treatment. Some of these afterwards repaired to Benjar-Masseau, in the island of Borneo, for the purpose of forming a settlement.

† A singularity in these Buffaloes, almost as remarkable as their gentleness and affection to children, was that, before they had been a whole day on board, they became as tame as possible. Captain King kept two of them, a male and female, for a considerable time, which were much cherished and esteemed by the seamen. Thinking a breed of animals of such magnitude and strength would have been an acquisition of some value, he intended to have brought them with him to England; but an incurable hurt being received by one of them at sea, he changed his resolution.

Europeans purchased here some very fine hogs, of the Chinese breed*.

Among the vegetable improvements of Pulo Condore, many fields of rice were observed. Oranges, pomegranates, cocoa-nuts, plantains, and several sorts of pompions, were also found here; though not in any great abundance.

Though the woods are populous with the feathered game, their sportsmen had little success in pursuing them. One of the gentlemen, however, shot a wild hen; and all the sporting party declared, that they heard the crowing of the cocks on every side; the sound of which was similar to that of the common cock, but somewhat shriller. Several of them were also seen up the wing. The hen, which had been shot, w of a speckled appearance, and appeared like a fu grown English pullet. Monsieur Sonnerat, in long dissertation, endeavours to prove that he w the first person who ascertained the country which this useful bird belongs, and denies th Dampier ever met with it at this island.

The inhabitants of Pulo Condore, who a fugitives from Cochin China and Cambodi are not numerous. They are swarthy in th complexion, short of stature, and of a we unhealthy aspect.

SECTION XLVI.

Departure from Pulo Condore—Description of the Country on the Straits of Banca—The Siste described—Enter the Straits of Sunda—Anchor at Cracatoa—Description of that Island—Proce to Princes Island—Supplies obtained there—Effects of the Climate of Java—Steer for the Ca of Good Hope—Anchor in Simon's Bay—Description of False Bay—The two Captains visit th Governors of the Cape—Anchor at Stromness.

OUR navigators weighed anchor on the 28th, and, having cleared the harbour, stood to the south-south-west for Pulo Timoan. On the 31st, at one in the afternoon they got sight of it. On the 2d. of February, at eight in the morning, they tried for soundings, continuing the same practice every hour, till they had passed the straits of Sunda, and struck ground with twenty-three fathoms of line. On the 3d, at day-break, they saw Monopin Hill, in the island of Banca. About nine in the evening, a boat came off from the Banca shore. The persons in her were hailed, in the Malayan tongue, to come on board; but no answer was returned†.

At eight in the evening on the 10th, the wind blew fresh from the west, accompanied with violent thunder, lightning, and rain. At three, the next morning, Captain King weighed anchor, and steered for Prince's Island. Light airs an calms prevailed till six o'clock the followi morning; at which time the Discovery weigh and made sail. The wind being fair, she came an anchor at twelve o'clock, off the south-easte extremity of Prince's Island, in twenty-six fathom wat at the distance of half a mile from th nearest part of the shore.

The Discovery had no sooner anchored, th Lieutenant Lannyon, who had been at th island in 1770, with Captain Cook, was se with the master to look for the watering-plac The brook from which the Endeavour had be furnished, was now found extremely salt. The were at length supplied with water, somewh brackish, but far superior to the other: th Discovery's people began watering here early o the 13th, and finished that service the same da

* Monkeys and squirrels are common in the woods; but they are so extremely shy, that it was difficult to shoot them. One species of the squirrel, observed here, was of a beautiful glossy black; another sort had brown and white stripes. This is denominated the flying-squirrel, from its having a thin membrane, resembling the wing of a bat, which extends on each side of the belly, from the neck to the thighs: by which it is enabled to fly from one tree to another at a considerable distance.

† At five in the afternoon on the 6th, they descried the Sisters, two islands of very small extent, plentifully stock with wood. At twelve, the next day, they had sight of t island of Java. About four in the afternoon, they perce ed two vessels in the straits of Sunda; one of which lay anchor near the Mid-channel Island, the other near t shore of Java. Captain Gore sent a boat to procure i telligence, which returned with information, that the larg of the two vessels was a Dutch East-India-Man, bound f Europe; and the other a packet from Batavia.

The natives, who came to them soon after they had anchored, brought a plentiful supply of fowls, and some turtles; the last, however, were generally very small. During the night it rained with great violence; and on the morning of the 14th the Resolution was seen to the north, steering towards the island; and, about two in the afternoon, she cast anchor close to the Discovery.

Our Europeans began to experience, from the time of their entering the straits of Banca, the pernicious effects of this noxious climate. Two persons on board the Discovery, became dangerously ill of malignant putrid fevers: many of the crew were attacked with disagreeable coughs; several were afflicted with excruciating pains in the head; and even the most healthy persons among them, experienced a sensation of suffocating heat with great languor, and a total loss of appetite.

But though their situation was thus unpleasant for a time, they had the inexpressible satisfaction of escaping from these destructive seas without the loss of a single person; owing, in a great degree, to the unremitting attention, that was now become habitual in the men, and to the prudent and salutary regulations introduced among them by Captain Cook. At the time of their departure from Prince's Island, and during their whole passage from thence to the Cape of Good Hope, the people of the Resolution were in a more sickly condition than those of the Discovery.

As soon as our navigators were clear of Prince's Island, they had a light breeze from the west-north-west point: but on the 20th, the wind again became variable, and remained so till the 25th, at noon, when it blew fresh from the northward with squalls.

From the 26th of February to the 28th of March, they had a regular trade wind from the south-east to east by south, accompanied with fine weather.

In the forenoon of the 6th, a vessel was observed to the south-west, standing towards our navigators; and the wind, soon after, beginning to blow from the same quarter, they prepared their ships for action. They now perceived, from the mast head, five more sail on their lee bow, steering an easterly course; but the weather becoming hazy, they lost sight of them all in the space of an hour.

On the 10th, at day-break, the land made its appearance to the north-north-westward, and, in the course of the morning, a Snow was seen bearing down to our navigators. She proved to be an English East India packet, and was now cruising with instructions for the China fleet, and other India ships. They left her, and continued their progress towards the Cape.

In the evening, False Cape bore east-north-east; but they were prevented, by the wind, from getting into False Bay, till the evening of the 12th, when they let go their anchors a-breast of Simon's Bay. They weighed the next morning, and stood into Simon's Bay. At eight o'clock, they came to anchor, at the distance of less than half a mile from the nearest shore. They found the Nassau and Southampton East India men lying here, in expectation of a convoy for Europe. The Resolution saluted the fort with eleven guns, and the compliment was regularly returned *.

On the 15th, Captain King accompanied Captain Gore to Cape-Town; and, the next morning, they waited on Baron Plattenberg, the governor, who received them with the utmost civility, politeness, and respect. The governor afterwards informed them, that all the nations then at war with England, had issued orders to their respective cruisers to suffer them to pass unmolested. This was certainly true with regard to the French and the Spanish nations; but some doubts appeared to remain with respect to the Americans.

During their continuance at the Cape, our navigators experienced the most friendly treatment, not only from the governor, but the principal inhabitants, as well Africans as Europeans. False Bay lies to the eastward of the Cape of Good Hope, and is frequented by vessels during the prevalence of north-westerly winds, which begin their exertions in May, and render it dangerous to remain in Table Bay. It is terminated to the eastward by False Cape, and to the westward by the Cape of Good Hope. The

* As soon as they had cast anchor, Mr. Brandt, the governor of this place, favoured them with a visit. This gentleman held Captain Cook in the highest esteem; and though he had, some time before, heard of his unfortunate catastrophe, he was much affected at the sight of the vessels returning without their old worthy commander. He was surprised at seeing most of the people so robust and healthy, as a report had been propagated, that only fourteen persons were left on board the Resolution, and seven in the Discovery. It is difficult to conceive what motive could have induced any person to circulate so wanton and infamous a falsehood.

width

width, at its entrance, is two miles; and the two Capes bear due east and west from each other.

Simon's Bay is situated about twelve miles from the Cape of Good Hope, on the western side; and is the only commodious station for shipping to lie in; for, though the road without it affords tolerable anchorage, it is rather too open, and not convenient for procuring necessaries; the town being small, and supplied with provisions only from Cape town, which is at the distance of about twenty-four miles.

In steering for the harbour, along the western shore, a small flat rock appears, known by the name of Noah's Ark; and about a mile to the north-eastward of it, there are several others, called the Roman rocks. These are a mile and a half from the anchoring place; and either to the northward of them, or between them, there is a safe passage into the Bay. The land, on the northern side of the Bay, is low and sandy; but the eastern side is very elevated. Two leagues to the eastward of Noah's Ark, stands Seal Island, whose southern part is declared to be dangerous, and not to be approached, with safety, nearer than in twenty-two fathoms water. There are many sunken rocks off the Cape of Good Hope, some of which appear at low water; and others constantly have breakers on them.

Having provided a sufficient quantity of naval stores, and completed their victualling, our navigators quitted Simon's Bay on Tuesday the 9th of May. On the 14th of the same month, they got into the south-east trade wind, and stood to the west of the islands of Ascension and St. Helena; and on the 12th of June they passed the equinoctial line, for the fourth time during their voyage. On the 12th of August they descried the western coast of Ireland, and endeavoured to get into Port Galway. This attempt, however, proved ineffectual; and they were compelled, by violent southerly winds, to stand to the north.

On the 22d of August, about eleven in th forenoon, both the vessels anchored at Stromnes from which place Captain King was dispatch by Captain Gore to inform the Lords of t Admiralty of their arrival. On Wednesday t 4th of October, the ships reached the Nore safety, after an absence of four years, two month and twenty-two days.

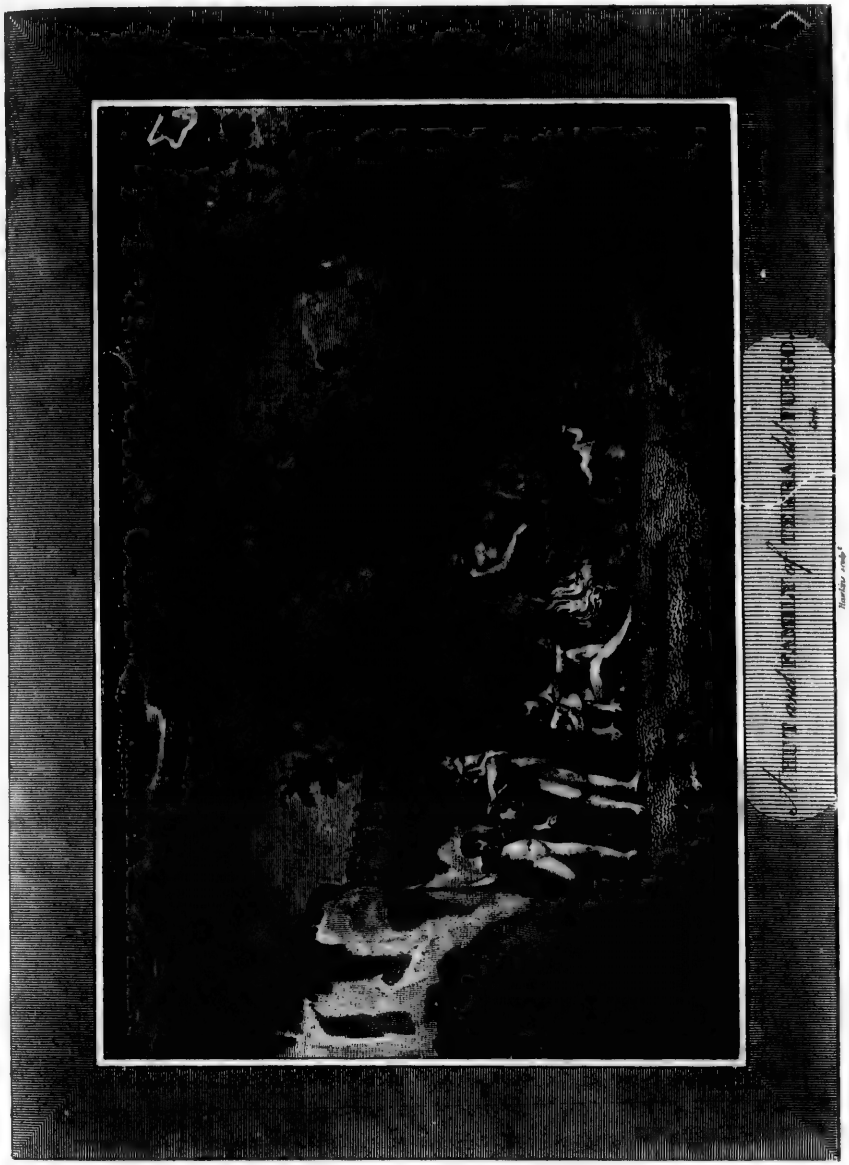
When Captain King quitted the Discovery Stromness, he had the satisfaction of leaving t whole ship's company in a perfect state of healt The number of sick persons on board the Resol tion did not then exceed two or three; and o one of them was incapable of service. In t whole course of the voyage, the Resolution l only five men by sickness; three of whom we in a precarious state on their departure fr Great Britain: the Discovery did not lose a m The reason has been already sufficiently explai ed; but, with all their salutary precautions, o navigators might, perhaps, in the end, have f the pernicious effects of salt provisions, had th not availed themselves of every substitute, whi their situation, at different times, afforded the

The preventives they principally relied o were portable soup and sour kraut; they h not an opportunity of trying the effects of t antiscorbutic remedies, with which they we amply furnished; as not even the slight symptoms of the scurvy appeared among t crew of either ship, during the whole voya Their malt and hops had also been kept as resource in case of sickness; but, on a caref examination of those articles at the Cape of Go Hope, they had entirely lost their sanati qualities. About the same time they opened so casks of oatmeal, flour, biscuit, pease, groa and malt, which, by way of experiment, th had put up in small casks, lined with tin fra and all these articles, except the pease, we found in a much better state than could ha been expected in the usual mode of package.

*** *We have to regret, that this enterprise proved fatal to its principal conductors: the Captains Cook and Clerke n returned; Captain King, debilitated by climate and fatigue, endured existence till he had published the Voyage, which immortalize his name, and retired to Nice in the Autumn of* 1784, *where he was cut off in the bloom of life.*

When Captain Cook entered upon his last voyage, his family consisted of a wife, and three sons; the second of whom lost on board the Thunderer man of war, about six months father the death of his father. The eldest son was appoi Master and Commander of the Spitfire Sloop of war; but, while she lay off Pool waiting for hands, in attempting to on board, during the night, he was driven to sea in a boat in a heavy gale of wind, and he and every person in the b perished: His body was afterwards found, and conveyed to Spithead, whence it was conducted to Cambridge, and buried his younger brother, who had suddenly died of a fever, and whose funeral he had attended about six weeks before.

VOYAG


Hamilton sculp.t

VOYAGE OF DISCOVERY

OF THE

NORTH PACIFIC OCEAN,

AND

ROUND THE WORLD:

UNDERTAKEN BY HIS MAJESTY'S COMMAND, AND PERFORMED IN THE YEARS 1790, 1791, 1792, 1793, 1794, and 1795.

IN THE

DISCOVERY Sloop of War, and Armed Tender CHATHAM,

UNDER THE COMMAND OF

CAPTAIN GEORGE VANCOUVER.

SECTION I.

Equipment and Departure of the Discovery and Chatham—Arrival at Teneriffe—Occurrences during the Passage to the Cape of Good Hope—Departure from thence to False Bay—Death of Neil Coil—Proceed towards New Holland—George the Third's Sound discovered—Departure from.

ON the 1st of January, 1790, Mr. Vancouver was appointed to the Discovery, and soon after removed to the Courageux. In December 1790, being constituted master and commander, he was again appointed to the Discovery; and in August 1794, without solicitation, promoted to the rank of post-captain. From this period he was constantly employed, till within a few weeks of his decease, which happened in May 1798, in preparing his journal for publication. Lieutenant William Robert Broughton was selected and chosen commander of the Chatham armed Tender, with the perfect approbation of Captain Vancouver, who had the honour of being allowed to name for this service the second and third lieutenants, and the master of the Discovery. The board of Admiralty gave directions that the Discovery and Chatham should be supplied, with all necessary articles for a service so long and arduous; that the stores from the naval arsenals should be chosen of the best sorts, and from materials of the best quality. In addition to the usual establishment, the vessels were furnished with a large assortment of seines, and various kindsof fishing tackle. Proisions of the most excellent kind were prepared at the victualling office; to which were added a large proportion of sour-krout, portable soup, the essence of malt and spruce, malt, hops, dried yeast, flour, and mustard seed.

The vessels being perfectly equipped by the 6th of January, 1791, the sails were bent, and the Discovery was in readiness to proceed down the river; but the repairs required by the Chatham, prevented her equipment so expeditiously. With a favourable wind the Discovery sailed on the 7th of January, and anchored in Long Reach about five in the evening: as her upper works were on a new construction, to answer some purposes of accommodation, doubts were entertained respecting her steering and other properties when in motion; but it appeared, in the course of this little trip, that she was handy, and in every other respect, a very comfortable vessel.

Various necessary occupations detained Captain Vancouver in Long Reach till the 26th, when, having taken on board his ordnance stores, and other requisites from Deptford dock yard, he proceeded to Portsmouth. Pursuant to his orders, he had also received on board *Towereroo*, an Indian from one of the Sandwich Islands, who had been brought from thence in 1789. He had passed his time in England, in great

obscurity, and seemed to have acquired few advantages from his residence in this country*.

Having completed his business with the dock-yard, he dropped to St. Helen's on the 3d of March, and the next morning proceeded down the channel, leaving the Chatham behind, as she was not perfectly ready to accompany him. On Saturday the 12th he arrived at Falmouth, where he was ordered to wait the arrival of the Chatham, and to receive his final instructions for the prosecution of the voyage. He received the latter from an Admiralty messenger on the 20th, but the Chatham did not make her appearance till the 31st; when Lieutenant Broughton, having orders to place himself under Captain Vancouver's command, received his necessary signals and instructions.

A gentle breeze from the north-east, at the dawn of the first of April, enabled the Discovery to sail out of Carrack road, in company with the Chatham, and at midnight the navigators bade a long adieu to their native shores. Towards the morning of the second, the wind shifting to the south, they stood to the westward, clear of the English channel, full of contemplative reflections on the remote and savage regions they were destined to explore.

Having no particular route prescribed to the Pacific Ocean, the captain had his choice of that which should appear to him the most eligible; he gave a preference to the passage by the way of the Cape of Good Hope, intending to visit the Madeiras to procure wine and refreshments. Sour Krout and portable broth had been for several days served on board each of the vessels, the store-rooms had been washed with vinegar, and the whole smoked with gun-powder mixed with vinegar. Instead of biscuit, the seamen were supplied with fresh soft bread.

On the 23d, the weather being fine and serene, the navigators saw the island of Porto Sancto, bearing south-west twenty leagues distant. Madeira being their object, they exerted every effort to gain Funchal road till the 25th, when the wind becoming extremely variable, prudential motives induced them to proceed towards Teneriffe as better calculated for the promotion of their plan. The wind, which had generally been from the west, veered round to the north and settled in the north-east, accompanied with pleasant weather. In the morning of the 28th the peak of Teneriffe was seen at about sixty leagues distant, and in the evening they reached the road-stead of St. Cruz, where the Discovery was placed in an excellent birth, and the Chatham at a convenient distance.

Accompanied by Mr. Broughton, and some of the other officers, Captain Vancouver on the 29th, waited on his excellency Senr. Don Antonio Guitierres, the governor-general of the Canaries, who was then resident in the city of Santa Cruz. His excellency received them politely, and expressed a desire of affording them any assistance, apologizing that the poverty of his country would not permit him to invite them to his table. Attended by the same party, the captain visited the city of Lagoona, which they surveyed and returned to Santa Cruz, having first dined with Mr. Rhoney, an Irish gentleman to whose hospitality they were much indebted, as no other person on the island, seemed inclinable to shelter them from the scorching rays of the sun, or bestow on them the smallest refreshment.

This morning the small bower cable was found cut through, supposed to have been occasioned by an anchor lying at the bottom; and thinking it probable that other lost anchors might be in the same vicinity, and considering this circumstance as a matter of serious concern, the Discovery weighed, went further out, and anchored in thirty fathoms water; where there was no danger of damaging the cables by anchors, which might have been lost by small vessels nearer the shore; as no other danger could be apprehended the bottom being unexceptionable. The swell having beaten violently against the shores for several days, had impeded the Chatham's endeavours of taking shingle ballast on board, and prevented its completion till the 7th, when the

* Unfavourable weather prevented the sloop from reaching the Downs till the 30th, where she was detained by a continuance of adverse winds till the 3d of February, when a strong gale conducted her down the channel. Passing the South Foreland about noon, John Brown, the carpenter's mate, unfortunately fell overboard, and was drowned; a loss much regretted by the whole crew, who held him in great esteem. On Saturday the 5th, the Discovery anchored at Spithead; where the captain, having discovered some defects in the ship's head, ordered the necessary alterations to be made; and his presence being required in London, he repaired thither, where he remained till the 27th. From thence he returned to Portsmouth with orders to proceed to Falmouth.

vessels put to sea, and directed their course to the southward*.

About noon on the 8th they lost sight of the Canaries, and, as the weather was favourable, they were enabled to make some excellent lunar observations. Their course was directed to the westward of the cape de Verd Islands, which they passed on the 14th. The fresh beef, procured at Teneriffe, being exhausted, portable broth and sour krout were again served to the ships' crews on the 18th. Nothing particular occurred till after they had crossed the tropic of Capricorn on the 12th of June, when the wind became extremely variable, as well in point of strength as in direction. Towards the latter end of the month, the weather was in general very pleasant, but unfortunately the Chatham sailed equally slow in light or fresh gales, which materially impeded the progress of the voyage. Having much business to perform at the Cape of Good Hope in the carpenter's department, the captain thought it became expedient that no time should be lost: he therefore determined to make the best of his way in the Discovery to the Cape of Good Hope, whether the Chatham was able to keep up with her or not: if she could, she was directed so to do; but if she could not, the necessary instructions were delivered to Mr. Broughton.

The wind was light and variable till the first of July; the Chatham remaining in sight till the evening, but was not visible in the morning. The wind became southwardly on the 7th, when they tried for soundings, but found no bottom with 140 fathoms of line. Many oceanic birds constantly attended the Discovery, consisting of albatrosses of three kinds, with a few small birds of the same tribe. Many of these had disappeared by the 7th, and some large blue petrels were observed.

At day-light on the 9th, the Cape of Good Hope was in sight, bearing east eight leagues distant, the Discovery passed the promontary, and the dangerous rocks in its neighbourhood and stood into False Bay, where in the evening, the weather becoming calm, she anchored in forty fathoms water, the Cape bearing west ten miles distant. With a light southwardly breeze in the morning of the 10th, she weighed anchor, and, assisted by her boats a-head towing the ship, she reached Simon's Bay at seven in the evening, where she anchored in twelve fathoms water. The day before a brig was seen in shore, which Captain Vancouver supposed to be the Chatham, but as his signals were unnoticed, he concluded that he was mistaken. The first conjectures, however, proved to be right, Mr. Broughton having informed him that the signal had escaped their attention. After their separation, the Discovery had out-sailed the Chatham but one night's run; as the latter had not hauled her wind, or shortened sail on Friday night, she was the next morning as near the land as the Discovery. Captain Vancouver was extremely happy to be informed by Mr. Broughton, that the crew of the Chatham, like those of the Discovery, were in the full enjoyment of health.

On the 11th, in the morning, an officer was dispatched on shore to acquaint the commandant of the port of the arrival of the two vessels, to request his permission to procure refreshments, stores, and neceesaries, and to erect their observatory; with which the commandant, whose name was Brandt, very obligingly complied. On the return of the officer, the garrison was saluted with eleven guns; a compliment which was instantly returned. After this reciprocal office was performed, the captain attended by Mr. Broughton and several of the officers, waited on Mr. Brandt, who received them with hospitality and politeness; and that gentleman kindly undertook, with the assistance of Mr. De Wit, of Cape Town, to procure for them the best commodities of every kind which the country could produce†.

All transactions were now finished with the

* It may be important to other navigators to be informed, that the wine, water, and beef at Teneriffe were extremely good; but vegetables, fruit, poultry, and live stock of every kind, were not only very indifferent, but extravagantly dear.

† Having overhauled their rigging, and caused some necessary repairs to be performed, the captain and Mr. Broughton paid their respects to Mr. Rhenius, the acting governor at Cape Town, to inspect the stores and provisions, the principal of which were to come from thence. Four of the seamen, whose constitutions were supposed unequal to the arduous task in which they were engaged, were sent on board the Warren Hastings East Indiaman, then at the Cape; an opportunity presenting itself of replacing them with others apparently more robust. The stores and provisions being forwarded from Cape Town on the 5th of August, the commanders took leave of their friends, from whom they had received much attentive civility: the observatory, with the instruments, were sent on board on the 9th.

shore,

shore, and a supply of provisions obtained for each vessel for eighteen months, with a due proportion of stores. The captain also took on board seven ewes and six rams, some garden seeds, vine cuttings, and other plants, which were supposed to prove valuable acquisitions to the friendly inhabitants in the South Sea Islands.

It is usual at the Cape of Good Hope, for such officers, as can conveniently be spared from the ship, to reside on shore: those belonging to the Discovery conformed to the old practice, but when Captain Vancouver returned, he was astonished to find that, within a few days, several of the people were indisposed with a dysentery, which at first seemed rather unimportant; but at length assumed a very serious appearance, some of the patients being extremely ill. The cause could not be ascertained; the crew had not been addicted to inebriety; their provisions were perfectly good and wholesome; no salutary measures, usually adopted, had been neglected; no indiscretions could be imputed to any individual, in the least calculated to produce so alarming a visitation, whose contagious influence suffered no person to escape unattacked: though Captain Vancouver, and his officers, felt it in a less violent degree than many others. The same disorder had also made its appearance on board the Chatham, and some transports bound to Port Jackson. It was at last attributed to a large Dutch ship lately arrived from Batavia, from which many men had been sent on shore to the hospital, some of whom died with that and other infectious disorders. The surgeon of the Discovery had also been suddenly and unaccountably seized, and reduced to an extreme state of delirium, without any other symptoms which indicated fever.

This situation at the eve of quitting a civilized country, was of a serious and distressing nature, and induced Captain Vancouver to become anxious to get to sea, left a worse species of disorder should be communicated to his people by the Batavian ship. But this resolution could not take effect till the 17th, when, about noon, a light breeze from the north-west, enabled him to sail, in company with the Chatham, out Simon's Bay, having given and received t salutation of eleven guns*.

In the evening the navigators directed th course to the southward, and during the nig the wind veered to the north-west, and bl hard; the Chatham was at a great distan astern of the Discovery, and not being in sight day-break, the latter hauled the wind, wh the former was seen about seven to the westwar and, having joined company, steered togeth The wind increased till the 20th, and then becam a violent storm. The sea ran excessively hig and the wind raised the spray into a kind of mi in one of the squalls, the Discovery again l sight of the Chatham. She was visited by number of albatrosses, and many other birds the petril tribe; on the 21st, about noon, again beheld her consort, and on her joini company, they resumed their course to the sout east under the foresail. This boisterous weath accompanied with thunder and lightning, co tinued almost without intermission till the 22 when it became more moderate.

The wind became still more moderate on t 23d; but the weather was unsettled, showers hail and rain frequently occurring, and a hea swell rolling from the northward and south-we several whales were amusing themselves abo the ship, but the oceanic birds were not so n merous as usual. The wind being gentle in t northern quarter, the captain of the Discove had an opportunity of sending on board t Chatham, when he received intelligence that, consequence of a violent sea having stove in t midship stern window on the 20th, it was deem necessary to bring to till that injury was repair

A gale on the 28th afterwards increased to storm, attended with heavy squalls, hail, ra and a most tremendous sea. On the violence the storm abating, the Discovery pursued easterly course, intending to pass in sight of t islands of St. Paul and Amsterdam. While t gale continued, she was visited by a great numb of oceanic birds; but the vicinity of land shoals was not indicated from such a circumstan

* To prevent a separation of the vessels, Mr. Broughton was provided with a list of rendezvous, and furnished with a copy of the instructions Captain Vancouver had received, with the route he intended to pursue. Though they had continued at the Cape longer than they had expected, they did not abandon the design of visiting New Holland; the captain therefore, on sailing from False Bay, appoin their next rendezvous off Lyon's Land, in about the 3 degree of south latitude, in case of separation to cr there two days, and not meeting with the Discovery, t to attend to the other instructions.

they are universally met with throughout the uthern ocean.

The weather which succeeded this storm was tremely pleasant, accompanied with a smooth . The flux still continued among the crew, ny of whom were much indisposed, though was hoped the present fair weather would con-bute to restore them; but the wind speedily veer-to the north-west, a fresh gale sprung up, the ther bore a threatening appearance, and the was obscured with gloomy clouds, from ch some rain proceeded. The sea, however, tinued smooth, and the weather was not un-asant. On the 4th the first seal that had en seen since their departure from the Cape, licked about the ship for some time; but the anic birds were almost invisible; their winged itors were now principally pintadoes, and other tle birds of the petrel tribe*.

Proceeding towards the coast of New Holland, navigators directed their course between the cks of Dampier and M. Marion, over an un-quented space: the situation of that part of w Holland which they meant to explore, being perfectly defined, and a probability existing d banks might extend far into the ocean, they ed, but could gain no soundings with a hundred d eighty fathoms of line. On the 19th they tinued, at certain intervals, to try for soundings, did not then reach bottom at the depth of undred and eighty fathoms.

On Friday morning, supposing the land could be at any considerable distance, the Chatham's nal was made to look out on the larboard m. A heavy gale of wind arose soon after d-day; but being unwilling, under such cir-mstances, to make too free with an unexplored st, the captain hauled the wind to the south-rd, under the foresail and storm staysails. wards sun-set land was said to be perceived m the mast-head to the north-east; but though s supposition did not amount to a certainty, it s extremely probable, as they had passed eral leagues over the space assigned to Lyon's nd in many of the maps. On the 24th they od to the north in quest of the land; but some of the officers imagining they saw it to the south-east, they hauled their wind again in that direction till noon: when, being disappointed, they again steered north. At night they found bottom at seventy fathoms depth, composed of white sand and broken shells: the gloomy appearance of this night rendered it necessary for them to carry a press of sail, to preserve an offing, as the soundings plainly demonstrated that the land was not far distant. During the night a hundred fathoms of line did not reach the bottom. About four in the morning of the 25th, the slings of the main yard were carried away, and before they could be replaced, the storm increased to so violent a degree that they were obliged to take in all their canvas but the foresail, to strike the top-gallant masts, and to get in the jib-boom and sprit-sail yard. Thus situated they remained till near sun-set, when finding no bottom with a hundred and ten fathoms of line, they stood to the north-west, fully expecting to meet the land in that direction. In a short time the gale abated, and the next morning a calm succeeded, when the damages sustained by the rigging in the boisterous weather, were repaired. Sounding could not then be gained at the depth of two hundred and twenty fathoms. A light breeze to the northward sprang up in the afternoon, and land was soon discovered: it seemed to be of a moderate height, and about ten or twelve leagues distant; no soundings to be gained with a hundred and twenty fathoms line. The wind veering to the north-west, they steered for the land, and approached it within three leagues, when bottom was found at the depth of sixty-five fathoms.

Early on the 27th they made all sail for the land, with a smooth sea and pleasant weather: in their progress the depth of the water gradually decreased to twenty four fathoms: about nine they were well in with the land, and bore away along the coast, which consisted of steep rocky cliffs to the water's edge, interspersed with sandy bays, islets, and rocks. The westernmost land now in sight is remarkable for its high perpendicular cliffs, forming a conspicuous promontory,

* On the 5th Neil Coil, a marine, fell a sacrifice to the caught at the Cape; he was a valuable man, and his was much regretted: another poor fellow was supposed be so much affected with his mate's dissolution, that he pped with unfavourable symptoms. Death having now commenced his career, it was uncertain when it would terminate; it was, however, highly satisfactory, that, in point of comfort and professional assistance, nothing had been neglected that might tend to the relief of the distressed, or to subdue and extirpate this formidable malady.

to which Captain Vancouver gave the name of CAPE CHATHAM*.

After a variety of ineffectual researches, a port presented itself, into which the Chatham was directed to lead. The weather had become thick and rainy, and was accompanied with much thunder and lightning; but the soundings continuing regular, they stood into the port, passing a high rocky bluff point in thirty fathoms water, directing their course close along its shore: the sounding suddenly shoaled to twelve fathoms, and afterwards gradually decreased till abreast of the second white sandy beach, where they anchored in six fathoms water.

The weather becoming delightfully serene and pleasant on the 29th, they found themselves snugly situated in a secure spacious sound. After breakfast, Captain Vancouver, accompanied by Mr. Broughton in the Chatham's cutter, Mr. Menzies, and Mr. Whidbey, proceeded in the yawl; first to attend the success of Lieutenant Puget who had been dispatched on a fishing party, and then to examine the sound, to see whether a more eligible situation could be found than that which they then occupied. The seine was hauled with little success: a stream of high-coloured fresh water, though well tasted, drained through the beach; and near it a clump of trees informed them that they could supply their present want of fuel. Bordering on this clump, a most miserable human habitation was beheld, which had not long ejected its tenants, as on its top the fresh skin of a fish was found, known by the name of leather jacket. The form of this humble mansion imperfectly resembled the half of a bee-hive, or a bee-hive vertically divided into two equ parts; constructed with some degree of uniformi with the bark of trees, and small green boug The back of it being opposed to the north-we seemed to indicate that those were the most pe vailing winds. Just within its front, which w entirely open, a fire had been made; but, exce the skin already mentioned, nothing was s that could give birth to the least suggestion which its poor inhabitant subsisted: the melan choly aspect of the surrounding country p senting, at the same time, little less than fami and distress.

Hoping to meet with some of the wretch inhabitants, the navigators proceeded along t shores of the sound to a high rocky point, whi was named the POINT OF POSSESSION. The sou branched into two arms; one immediately behi this point, extending in a circular form, abo a league across: the other lying about th miles to the north-east, seemed almost as spacio but had a narrower entrance: the neighbouri country presented a fertile and pleasing aspec

Early on the 30th, all the healthy men w ordered to employ themselves in cutting wo and providing water, while those who contin indisposed were directed to amuse themsel on shore. Perceiving it practicable, the s was placed nearer the spot whence the wood a water were procured: and the captain proceed in the yawl, which could now be spared, the further examination of the sound. Nea rocky cliff, on the south-west side, a sm shallow stream of excellent water was discover and on tracing its meanders through a copse,

* The flux still continuing to affect the health of several persons in each vessel, a little recreation was thought necessary to give energy to their enfeebled constitutions; the captain therefore determined to put into the first port he should discover, for which purpose he ranged the coast within three or four miles of its shores, which are moderately elevated. Dreary hills, producing little herbage, were stationed along the sea-side, but the interior country was pleasantly diversified and decorated with lofty forest trees; yet no smoke, or other indication of the country being inhabited, could be perceived. About noon a signal from the Chatham announced that a port was discovered to the northward; but it afterwards proving to be only a shallow bay, they soon bore away along the coast.

† The proper observations being made at this station, the British colours were displayed, and his Majesty's health drank with the usual formalities; possession was then taken of the country in the name of his present Majesty, for him, his heirs, and successors. As this was the first port our navigators had discovered, they honoured it with the name of KING GEORGE THE THIRD'S SOUND; the harbour behind Point Possession was called Prin Royal Harbour, that day being the anniversary of Royal Highness the Princess Charlotte Augusta Mat birth. Here no traces of the resort of the natives cou perceived, yet the effects of fire were seen on all the veg ble productions.

Having completed the ceremony of taking possess a passage was found into the north-eastern harbour, a extending across its entrance, on which there was three fathoms water. As the situation of the vessels see convenient for procuring what the sound might afford, captain determined to return on board, and avail hi of the benefits it presented. In going out of the harb the boats grounded on a bank they had not before obser which they found covered with oysters of a most delic flavour, on which they sumptuously regaled; and collec large quantities for their friends on board. they commem ted the discovery by naming it OYSTER HARBOUR.

navigators arrived at a deserted village of the natives, among the trees, containing about two dozen miserable huts; resembling that already described in fashion and dimensions, but did not appear to have been so recently erected. Among these structures, though of the humblest kind, distinctions were regarded; two or three huts, probably intended for those who were deemed superiors, were larger and more elegantly constructed than the others, but not loftier. Fires had been made in the fronts of all of them, but not recently, and hardly any signs appeared of their having been visited for some time. Though still anxious to ascertain the food on which the inhabitants of this village subsisted, they would require no casual information on that subject, as neither shells nor bones were found, on which conjectures could rationally be formed.

In one of the larger huts, perhaps the residence of a chief or superior, some beads, nails, medals, looking-glasses, and knives were deposited, as tokens of the friendly disposition of the new visitors; and to induce some of the natives who might be in the neighbourhood, though they had not been perceived by our mariners, to favour them with a visit. Having gratified their curiosity, in contemplating these humiliating scenes, they returned on board. And having, on the 4th of October, taken on board a supply of fire-wood, and a plentiful replenish of water, Messrs. Puget and Whidbey repaired to Oyster Harbour, with three boats, expecting to return with them richly laden with those delicious shell-fish. In this they were partly disappointed, as the wind which had blown a moderate breeze, was succeeded by a strong gale from the south-east, with a heavy swell, and prevented the return of the boats.

The gale moderating on the 5th, the boats returned, but not so well freighted as was expected, though they had a sufficient supply of oysters for all the convalescents, and furnished all hands with two or three excellent meals. A south-east wind, and a heavy sea in the offing prevented the departure of our navigators; Mr. Broughton was therefore employed in examining the eastern side of the sound. The same causes of detention still operating on the 7th, a party was formed for the further examination of Oyster Harbour, to gather some information respecting its natural productions; and, if possible, of the natives. Proceeding to the upper part of the harbour, they saw several large black swans, majestically swimming on the water; but when they were flying, the under parts of their wings and breast were discovered to be white. A more circumstantial description cannot possibly be given as they were extremely shy, and our adventurers but indifferent marksmen.

In the northern corner of the harbour they landed near a rivulet, and proceeded about a league by the side of it: though it was brackish itself, it received in its passage some smaller streams of most excellent water. It contained abundance of fine fish, and its banks were visited by black swans, curlews, and other wild fowl. On the sides of this stream, and on the shores of Oyster Harbour, the remains of several fish wears were found, evidently contrived by the wretched inhabitants of the country; some of them constructed with loose stones, and others with sticks and stumps of wood. It clearly appeared that great bodies of water, at some certain seasons, pass down this current; as the sides of the rivulet, for two or three hundred yards, is composed of sea-sand, and broken shells, and totally destitute of any vegetable production. The wears for taking fish, and the steps made in some of the largest trees for the purpose of ascending them, were doubtless the effects of rude manual labour; and, with the huts, were the only indications of human inhabitants existing in this country. No paths were traced, nor any smokes beheld: hence our adventurers seemed convinced that any further search for the natives would be ineffectual, and returned by a different route to the boats, perceiving in their way two more huts*.

* Not choosing to return empty-handed, they stopped at one of the oyster banks, loaded their boat with what they procured, and returned on board in the evening. On the 10th they entertained hopes of getting to sea; but the wind being rather more favourable on the 11th, they weighed, and turned out of the sound. At four in the afternoon they regained the ocean, intending to steer along the coast, but the wind obliged them to stand to the south-eastward. While they were getting under weigh, the captain caused to be deposited at the hut next the watering-place some knives, looking-glasses, and other trinkets, as a sort of payment to its owner, should he ever return, for the wood they had deprived him of: and to commemorate this visit, a pile of stones was raised near the stump of a tree they had felled; in which was left a bottle sealed up, containing a piece of parchment with the names of the vessels, and the commanders; with the date of their arrival and departure. Another bottle, with a similar memorandum was also deposited on the summit of Seal Island; where a staff was likewise erected, with a medal of 1789 affixed to it.

The

The unexpected detention by easterly winds, and the rapid advance of the season, restrained Captain Vancouver from prosecuting effectually his researches on this coast; but he did not absolutely abandon that favourite object, if the task should not prove too intricate and dangerous, or should not lead him too far out of his way. On the 20th at day-break he was within sight of land to the north-west, making like three islands; though on a nearer approach, the two westernmost were found to be connected to the main land, but the connecting of the northernmost not being clearly ascertained, it obtained the name of DOUBTFUL ISLAND.

The depth of water was now thirty fathoms; and the weather was delightfully pleasant. Doubtful Island, and the shores to the south-west of it, bore a strong resemblance to the rest of the coast; but to the north-east a different prospect was presented of high detached clusters of craggy mountains, on a base of level land, plentifully wooded. At noon, a high bluff point bore by compass N. 24 E. Soon after mid-day low land was perceived, stretching out from the high bluff point: breakers in two detached places were seen, at some distance from the land. At this time the depth of water was thirty-five fathoms. About six in the evening, the nearest land was a rocky island, about two miles in circumference, eight miles distant. At nine the depth of water had increased to forty fathoms. The captain, being thus situated, directed the Chatham to lead and sound; their depth gradually increased to fifty-four fathoms, and the coast i the morning of the 21st was in sight. The wi blew a light breeze, when they steered for lan till about nine, when they tacked in sixty fathom the land then in sight: which land was evidentl a rocky island, about a league in circuit, strongl resembling that which they had passed the pre ceding evening. As their researches on this coa terminated there, it obtained the name of TERMI NATION ISLAND.

The whole of this country presented a drear aspect, almost destitute of wood or herbage More oceanic birds were observed there tha on any other part of the shores. Besides severa sorts of tern, albatrosses and petrels appeared i great abundance. On the 23d they steered t the east-north-east, hoping to fall in with th land; and if it should take a more northerl direction, the Chatham was ordered to look ou three leagues on the larboard beam. The win suddenly shifting to the southward, accompanie with a heavy swell in that direction, whic evidently menaced the approach of boisterou weather, the Chatham's signal was made to join and their course was directed to east-south-east the captain not daring, as he was then circum stanced, to court the risk of bad weather, on a unexplored coast so beset with dangers. Th captain therefore thought it his duty to relinquis his favourite object of further examining th coast of this interesting country, and directin his route towards the Pacific Ocean.

SECTION II.

Description of the Country and Productions of the South-west Coast of Holland—Devastations b Fire—Arrival in Dusky Bay—New Zealand—Part from the Chatham—Discover the Snares— Proceed towards Otaheite.

THE researches of our navigators, in a survey of the extent of a hundred and ten leagues, afforded little essential matter, excepting such as appertained to King George the Third's Sound; the port of which is safe, and easy of access. Princess Royal harbour has a passage into it of the width of about a quarter of a mile; and towards the northern shore the depth is five six fathoms, but on the southern not exceedin three fathoms water, occasioned by banks of cor rock which are perfectly conspicuous, a not being subject to any violent agitations of th sea, are by no means dangerous*.

In the low lands extensive tracts were see occupi

* Oyster Harbour is only admissible for vessels of a middle size, from the shallowness of the water on the bar.

In navigating the sound, there is no danger that is sufficiently obvious to be avoided. The appearance of th coun

cupied by a kind of okerish swampy peat of a ry dark brown colour: through this soil most of streams direct their course, and to their impregtion in the passage, the general high colour of water is to be attributed. The stones which adventurers saw were chiefly of coral, with few black and brown pebbles, quartz, slate, two or three sorts of granite.

The climate is delightful, for though they to contend with some boisterous weather on r approach to the coast, it was such as might sonably be expected at the season of the vernal inox, and breaking up of the winter. The valescents in the flux received considerable efit here, though their health was not roughly re-established. It was therefore supsed that the climate and soil would probably oduce all the essentials of life, and many of its uries.

Respecting the subject of agriculture, Captain ncouver acknowledged himself unqualified enumerate scientifically the trees, shrubs, and ts with which the country abounds; but of two latter there appeared a great variety; among the most remarkable was the gumt, found in great quantities, answering the perties and description of that vegetable found Port Jackson, as related in Philips's voyage. ld celery was used to enrich the pease-soup, to form a palatable sauce for their salted t: this article, and samphire were the only ble vegetables to be procured; others were nerous, and produced a great variety of utiful flowers. The shrubs were abundant, of many species. The forest trees consisted of four different sorts; the most common of which resembled the holly, but they were not of the larger sort: that which the captain supposed to be the gum-tree of New South Wales, seemed to be a hard ponderous wood; and the larger trees were principally of this description: one of them was nine feet four inches in circumference, and of a proportionable height. Those which were employed as fuel were of the myrtle tribe, having an aromatic flavour; the wood of this tree burns cheerfully and consumes slowly*.

Of birds that inhabit the woods, the vulture is the most common: hawks, and all the falcon tribe are numerous. Those resembling the English crow, parrots, parroquets, and a great variety of small birds, were frequent visitors, and some of them sang delightfully; though all of them were so wild and timid that few specimens could be procured. Of the water fowl, the black swan was the most numerous of any of the aquatic birds in the neighbourhood of Oyster Harbour, but they were visible in no other place. Black and white pelicans, of a large sort, were observed at a distance; and ducks appeared in great numbers. A very singular one was shot of a darkish grey plumage, with a bag similar to that of a lizard hanging under its throat; it emitted such an intolerable effluvia of musk as to scent the whole ship. Many curlews and sea-pies were observed; and a few of the latter procured, which were thought a delicious repast. Besides the aquatic birds already enumerated, there were also shags, the common gull, two or three varieties of tern, and some penguins of a blueish colour †.

---

ntry along the coasts, resembles, in many respects, that Africa about the Cape of Good Hope. The surface apd to be principally composed of sand mixed with de vegetables, but the principal component part is coral; bank which extends along the coast being composed of and it is certain that the lead never descended to the om, without bringing up coral on its return.

For the benefit of future visitors to these regions, some cuttings and water-cresses were planted; and an assort of garden-seeds. Of the animal kingdom, excepting e of the aerial kind, little information could be pro; the only quadruped seen by our navigators was one kangaroo; though the fresh dung of these and other als feeding on vegetables, was frequently perceived.

With the productions of the sea, our navigators were consummately acquainted: some of the few fish they t were extremely excellent: the calipevar of Jamaica, nother resembling the snook, were not inferior to the nglish mullet in point of richness of flavour. These, and the common white mullet, rock-fish, mackarel, herrings, &c. very frequently fell to their lot, but not in any great abundance.

Whales and seals frequently surrounded the ship, when near the coast: of seals, in particular, a prospect of twenty at a time was no uncommon sight; and their appearing to be perfectly indifferent about avoiding the spectators, indicated their not being unaccustomed to such visitors. The throat and belly of these seals were almost white, the neck rising between the head and shoulders in a kind of crest, which, together with the black, was of a light brown colour, the hair was rough, and the carcase extremely poor.

† Reptiles, or noxious animals, were not numerous; only two or three yellowish snakes were seen, and they were thought good eating: these, and a few ugly clumsy lizards, seeming to compose the whole of that race of animals. Some beetles, muskitoes, and common flies were occasionally met with.

Little can be said of the human inhabitants of this country, as our adventurers were not so fortunate as to procure an interview with any one of them; but it appears probable that the natives are a wandering people, who sometimes make their excursions individually, and sometimes in considerable parties: this was apparent, from their habitations appearing singly, as well as forming villages of some extent.

Besides the habitation which Captain Vancouver visited, Mr. Broughton saw another of almost equal magnitude, about two miles distant from it, but it appeared to be more modern, the huts having been recently built and inhabited. It was erected in a swamp, perhaps for the convenience of water: one or two of the huts which composed it were larger than the rest. The trees of the greatest magnitude, in the vicinity of both villages, had been rendered hollow by fire, to afford shelter for some of the inhabitants. Upon stones placed within these hollow trees, fires had been made, which sufficiently proved that they had been occupied by the inferior members of the party, or those who wanted industry or ingenuity to build a wattled residence. Not an article of furniture was found in any of the houses: the only implements perceived were pieces of sticks intended as spears, in the formation of which manual labour was but slightly discernible; the bark indeed had been taken off, and the thick end burnt in the fire, which was scraped to a blunted point.

Totally ignorant of every mode of embarkation, they could not place much dependence on marine productions for their subsistence; yet it seems evident from the wears on the shores, that they occasionally resort to the sea, and to the rivulets for provisions. It was rather extraordinary, however, that the bones of fishes they had eaten were not to be perceived: and that so estimable a part of the produce of the sea as oysters and clams, should not form a proportion of their food, though the latter often exhibit themselves on the beaches, over which they must frequent walk; and the former, at low-water, may gathered on the shoals, in large quantities. did not appear that they had any knowledge these, of limpets, or any other shell fish fou among the rocks; or their hunger would lo since have conducted them to such excellent r sources; hence it may naturally be inferred th the land principally supplies their wants; t shyness of the feathered race, and the wildness the quadrupeds, sufficiently indicated that th were continually pursued.

The destructive operations of fire were evide in many places; and, in the excursions of o adventurers on shore, every spot which produc vegetables, gave irrefragable proofs of its effec Where the country was well wooded, the upp branches of the loftiest timbers were burne the vegetable productions had suffered great throughout the country, from the devastations fire. That element is frequently resorted to rude nations to improve the growth of herbag or as toils for taking the wild animals. Wh such measures are adopted in a dry season, t ravages may become very extensive; and the flammable quality of the gum plant, whi abounds in this country, may assist to prom that general havock.

The apprehensions of tremendous weather w ill founded; for though the swell on the 1 greatly increased, a gentle gale attended o navigators, with pleasant weather. They steer without any important circumstance interveni till they got sight of Van Dieman's Land on t 26th, twelve leagues distant; when soundi could not be gained at the depth of eig fathoms. Few oceanic birds were seen dur this passage. Having a fine gale on the 27 they shaped a course for Dusky Bay in N Zealand, and by signal to the Chatham the ca tain appointed Facile harbour in that bay as t place of rendezvous*.

The dysentery, though nearly subdued in be

* Mr. Collins, to his interesting account of the English colony in New South Wales, has subjoined some information concerning New Zealand: among which are the following particulars.—"The New Zealanders inter their dead; and "they believe that, the third day after the interment the heart "separates itself from the corpse, and that this separation "is announced by a gentle breeze of wind, which gives "warning of its approach to an inferior Ea-tooa (or "Divinity) that hovers over the grave, and who carries it "to the clouds. While the soul is received by the good "Ea-tooa, an evil spirit is also in readiness to carry the "impure part of the corpse another road, whence it "precipitated into the sea. Suicide is very common and "the Zealanders, and this they often commit by hang "themselves on the slightest occasions: thus a woman "has been beaten by her husband, will perhaps hang h "self immediately—It could not be discovered that t "have any other division of time than the revolution of "moon, until the number amounted to one hundr "which they term *Tu-iee E-tow:* that is One Etow, "hundred moons; and it is thus they count their age, "calculate all other events. *Collins.* p. 524.

sels, had left those who had been enfeebled by attacks in a very reduced state; the captain therefore was induced to make choice of Dusky Bay*, though it was inconvenient in point of anchorage. A favourable wind, and tolerably fine weather brought the Discovery within sight of the coast of New Zealand on the forenoon of the 2d of November, and she anchored, about nine the same evening, in the arm leading to Facile harbour, in forty fathoms soft bottom. About eleven the Chatham anchored in sixty fathoms water. Previous to moving the vessels, Captain Vancouver thought it necessary to survey and fix upon a situation convenient for his several employments, on which occasion he was accompanied by Mr. Broughton and Mr. Whidbey. After coming to a determination, they were alarmed on their return by the report of two guns; but as the wind had greatly increased since their departure from the ships, they concluded that this signal was occasioned by one or both of the vessels having been driven from their anchorage. Their conjectures were found to have been rationally formed: the Chatham indeed was stationary, but the Discovery was moving, and nearly abreast of Five Finger Point. Though several difficulties presented themselves, the captain did not despair of reaching the destination in Facile harbour before dusk. But about five a violent gust made great havock in the rigging, and the gale seemed to be increasing. Being in no narrow a channel to repair these damages, he steered immediately for Anchor Island harbour, which was fortunately to leeward of us, and anchored at the mouth of the cove, in twenty six fathoms. The gale increased in the night, and it became necessary to strike the lower yards and top-gallant masts. His apprehensions for the Chatham were not relieved till the next forenoon, when, by rowing over to the Petrel Islands, and walking across the land, he had the happiness to see her ride in perfect safety; but she was directly to windward, and the gale continued to increase. In the evening the wind began to be more moderate, but on the morning of the 5th it increased to a violent storm: from five to eight it blew a perfect hurricane, attended with torrents of rain. The Discovery was happily secure in a snug little harbour, but the sea beat so violently against the rock astern of her, that had the anchor or cable given way, inevitable destruction must probably have been the consequence. About nine a most tremendous gust occasioned the ship to roll exceedingly; a flash of lightning and a heavy crash of thunder instantly followed; but in the space of half an hour the weather was fair and pleasant. Mr. Broughton repaired to the Chatham, and found she had rode out the gale in a manner exceeding all expectation: he lost no time in getting under weigh, and worked into Facile harbour*.

The adventurers had delightful weather for these examinations, and returned on board in the afternoon of the 15th, though not without some disappointment, after three days' excursion; as none of the natives were to be found, nor any traces, that in the least indicated that the country was then inhabited; excepting one or two decayed and miserable huts which appeared to have been long deserted. Anchor Island harbour being perfectly secure, may be found convenient, when accident may hinder vessels from getting into Facile harbour. It may be necessary to remark, however, that Anchor Island harbour is not a convenient one to get to sea from, on account of its great depth of water, its narrow limits, and a sunken rock which was discovered in its western entrance.

The business with the shore being finished, and the rigging overhauled, the Discovery sailed out

* Finding that from these shores a supply of all their wants could be obtained, the captain set about the several repairs with the utmost expedition: parties were employed in cutting wood for fuel, timbers for spars, for brewing spruce-beer, repairing the sails and rigging, and other essential duties. A boat, conducted by four men, furnished abundance of fish for present use, and a surplus for those who should be inclined to have them salted.

By the 13th, these operations had been so indefatigably attended to, that a party of officers and gentlemen in the two boats, accompanied by Mr. Broughton in the Chatham's cutter, had leisure to attend Captain Vancouver over this spacious bay, hoping to become acquainted with some of the inhabitants, and to explore that part of the northern arm, which from Captain Cook acquired the name of, "NO BODY KNOWS WHAT." On the 14th it was found that the arm in which Captain Cook places Apparent Island, was divided into two branches, leaving that land a peninsula joined to the main land, by a narrow ridge of high mountains. Mr. Broughton undertook the southern branch, which he found winding in certain directions: the northern arm ran nearly straight about north-east for five miles, then, turning to the northward, ended in a cove with shallow water, in a north-western direction. The heads of these arms, in allusion to Captain Cook's name of their entrance, Captain Vancouver has called SOME BODY KNOWS WHAT.

of

of the cove on the 18th, with fine weather and a gentle breeze. On the following day, the Chatham having finished her business, stood out into the road-stead, which obtained the name of TEMPEST ROAD, from the storm she there rode out on their arrival; but seeing no probability of getting to sea, she returned into Facile harbour. On the 20th, at seven in the morning, a fresh breeze, accompanied with a very heavy swell, seemed to portend violence. The Discovery weighed, ran into Facile harbour, and anchored in thirty eight fathoms soft bottom: the Chatham was at anchor near her, and both vessels were conveniently stationed for embracing the first opportunity of proceeding to sea*.

As the navigators receded from the land, the wind from north-west increased, a swell at the same time coming on heavily: More wind was strongly indicated from the north-west by several circumstances. The Discovery therefore steered south under what sail she could carry, and made signals to the Chatham for a similar purpose. The lofty canvas of the former, however, had not been spread long before it was found necessary to reef the top-sails, get down the top-gallant yards, and strike the masts. The night was so dark that at ten the Chatham could not be perceived: at three in the morning on the 23d, the wind was so violent as to oblige them to furl the top-sails, and at that very moment they found six feet water in the hold. Many other alarming incidents occurred, and the gale was now become a furious storm. Torrents of rain fell, and darkness so profound accompanied it, that nothing could be seen at the distance of one hundred yards in any direction.

About nine in the forenoon of the 24th, the storm abated, and soon after the atmosphere became clear, but the Chatham was not then to be discovered. As Matavai Bay in Otaheite was the next appointed rendezvous, the captain supposed that Mr. Broughton would proceed with the Chatham to that port: keeping the wind on the beam, they steered south south-east, and about eleven o'clock were astonished at the sight of land, bearing east four or five leagues distant. At noon they were nearer the land, and as the weather became less hazy, they passed it at the distance of two or three leagues, when it appeared to consist of a cluster of seven craggy islands. They seemed destitute of verdure, and the largest, which is the most northernmost, is perhaps equal to all the rest in point of magnitude, seeming to be about three leagues in circuit. To these islands, which are better entitled to the name of rocks, from the sterility of their appearance, and the sort of weather to be expected in their vicinity, Captain Vancouver gave the name of the SNARES, as calculated to seduce incautious mariners into difficulties†.

After some nautical relations of several particulars, uninteresting to the general reader, the captain observed that a gentle gale, and pleasant weather, brought them in sight of land, on the morning of the 22d of December, which appeared like three small islands; but on a nearer approach, was found to be united. Assisted by a gentle south-east gale, with fine weather, they were within a league of the shore about three in the afternoon, though no bottom was found at the depth of a hundred and eighty fathoms. Several canoes approached the ship, who declined the most pressing invitations to come on board, but seemed extremely solicitous in their invitations for them to land; which they signified by waving their paddles towards the coast, and by an earnest request in the language of the Great South-Sea nation. The navigators bore away with an intent to go nearer to the shore, but soon again brought to, seeing two or three canoes hastily paddling towards the ship. At length four men, in one of the canoes, ventured to come near enough to the Discovery to receive some presents, with which he seemed highly gratified, though some of their countrymen manifested their disapprobation of such conduct.

* About noon on the 21st both vessels sailed out of Dusky Bay, gracefully thanking Heaven for its excellent refreshments, and the salubrity of its air. The health of the convalescents was now perfectly re-established; one person with a chronic complaint, and two who had received cuts in their legs, were all that could be found in the surgeon's list.

† The captain then expresses the concern he felt in beholding the only remaining sheep thrown overboard: out of thirty of these animals received at Portsmouth, no more than two of them ever came to the table; the rest died before the navigators had reached the equator. They were equally unfortunate in a parcel of weathers, ewes, and rams they procured at the Cape, intended as presents to their friends in the South-Sea Islands; two thirds of which being dead at that period, though they were taken on board in very excellent condition, plentifully supplied with wholesome food, sedulously attended, and provided with a comfortable lodging.

example, however, was instantly followed several of them*.

They were unarmed, and, (except a few fish) brought with them neither food, nor articles of manufacture: a few spears, and a club or two, were seen in some of the canoes; and two or three bags for stones were observed, with which they parted without reluctance. These people were doubtless of the Great South-Sea nation; speaking nearly the same language, and much resembling the Friendly Islanders. On this occasion, *Towereroo*, the Sandwich Islander, afforded little assistance: taken from home at an early period, and having been long absent, he hardly understood any thing of their language. Two or three of them remained about an hour on board, but it was impossible to procure any information from them. Even the most pressing inquiries with regard to the name of their island, were continually interrupted by invitations to go ashore. In the course of this imperfect conversation, the adventurers were induced to believe that the name of the island was Oparo; and that of their chief Koria: but though these names were not correctly ascertained, the captain distinguished the island by the appellation of OPARO, as it should appear to be better entitled to any other.

The south extremity of this island appeared to form a right angle; having, about half a mile to the south-east, a small detached inlet; its greatest extent is about six miles and a half, and it is, perhaps about eighteen miles in circuit. It is principally a cluster of high craggy mountains, with perpendicular cliffs, the vacancies between the mountains being rather chasms than vallies, in which there is no great appearance of plenty or fertility. The tops of six of the loftiest hills resembled fortifications, having a sort of block-house in the centre of each, with rows of palisadoes. What were supposed to be block-houses, were sufficiently capacious to contain a considerable number of persons, many of whom were seen, appearing to be upon duty, as they were moving about, and were the only inhabitants that could be perceived†.

Quitting Oparo, the navigators had a gentle breeze from the south-east; at eight on the 23d, the island was still visible. On the evening of the 25th they were in the vicinity of some low islands, discovered by Captain Carteret, called the Duke of Gloucester's Islands. Having a fresh gale at east on the 26th, they expected to reach Otaheite the following day; but a violent gale disappointed those expectations: this was accompanied with a torrent of rain till the 28th, when the rain ceased, and the wind became moderate.

The 29th presented them with a view of Matavai, or Osnaburgh island, at the distance of seven leagues. In the morning of the 30th, they stood for Matavai with all the sails they could spread: about eight o'clock a canoe came along side, having two pigs and some vegetables, as a present from the sister of Ottoo, residing in that part of the island which was then at no great distance. The natives informed the captain they had been two days looking out for him, in con-

* But it was attended with infinite difficulty to prevail on any of them to come on board: with a kind of reluctant confidence, one of them indeed complied with the reiterated request. On his entering the ship he trembled, and was greatly agitated: terror, astonishment, and admiration, seemed to take possession of him by turns; but on his being received kindly, and presented with a small iron adz, his countenance became more placid, though not without a strong appearance of perplexity. Having mentioned his reception to his surrounding countrymen, as many visitors as their appearance as could be commodiously entertained. They seemed perfectly acquainted with the uses to which iron might be applied, and how to estimate its value in European commerce. They almost forced articles composed of that metal from the hands of persons on board, and with the most courtesy presented, as an equivalent, some fish, fishing-lines, and other trifles, which they begged might be accepted as presents, and not considered in the light of barter or exchange. Looking-glasses, beads, and insignificant trinkets, at first attracted their attention, but when they perceived that articles of iron were easily obtained, they refused all other presents: they would not even accept of a few medals.

† From the number of canoes, so expeditiously assembled round our navigators, the shores were supposed to be preferred for the general residence of the inhabitants, and not the fortified hills in the centre of the island. About thirty canoes were seen, single and double, formed like those of the Society islands: they were neatly constructed, but very narrow. Some of the most magnificent accommodated about twenty-five or thirty men, of which three hundred were supposed to have approached the ship. Induced by these considerations, Captain Vancouver supposes the whole island to contain about fifteen hundred inhabitants. The natives were of a middle stature, and well proportioned, having open countenances, expressive of benevolence and hospitality. Each of them had his hair cropt; and, excepting a wreath of a broad-leaved green plant, worn by some of them about the waist, they were absolutely naked. Though the islanders of this ocean are much in the habit of tatowing, these people were without any of those marks.

sequence of information received from an English vessel then at anchor in Matavai bay. Captain Vancouver, without hesitation, concluded that this must certainly be the Chatham, of which he was soon after convinced. Mr. Broughton quickly repaired to the Discovery, taking with him a plentiful supply of the productions of this fertile country. Anchoring in Matavai bay about ten, the mutual gratulations on the meeting of the two principal navigators in this voyage, were much heightened by a reciprocal communication of the happy intelligence, that every individual belonging to the two vessels was in perfect state of health.

Captain Vancouver having judiciously prepared rules and orders, for the guidance of the persons belonging to his Majesty's sloop Discovery and Chatham tender, and directed that they might strictly be attended to, delivered a copy of them to Mr. Broughton, that they might be duly enforced on board the Chatham; and that gentleman, at the same time, delivered to the captain a narrative of his proceedings during the time of their separation.

SECTION II.

Mr. Broughton's Narrative of Occurrences during his Separation from the Discovery; with some Account of Chatham Island, &c.

ON the 22d of November, Mr. Broughton thought it expedient to deviate from a southwardly course and keep before the storm; its increased violence washed away the jolly boat about six the following morning. At noon the gale considerably abated, but the Discovery could not be perceived: the Chatham's separation from it seemed now completed, little chance remaining of their meeting again till their appointed rendezvous at Otaheite. About two in the afternoon, land was seen from the deck, appearing like a high island; about an hour afterwards, more land was seen to the southward, detached from the former: Finding it impracticable to weather this land, they bore up for a passage between the high island and the other land, which was found to be a cluster of small islets and rocks; and on all these rocks and islets the sea broke with great violence. Plenty of sea-weed was discovered, and the whole surface was strewed with birds of a blackish colour. This island, in honour of Captain Knight of the navy, was named Knight's Island.

After several nautical observations and occurrences, Mr. Broughton relates that he worked up into a bay, before he saw the natives which they had passed, and came to an anchor about a mile from the shore in twenty fathoms water. As the eastern point from the anchorage, was the termination of the island he had thus visited, Mr. Broughton gave it the name of POINT MUNNINGS. Accompanied by Mr. Johnston, the master, and one of the mates, he proceeded towards the shore in the cutter; and within the rocks, which project a little from the extreme of the bay, they found smooth water, and landed upon the rocks where they at first perceived the inhabitants: they were then, however, on the opposite side, but observing strangers examining their canoes, they ran towards them, which induced them to retire to the boat to wait the arrival.

As they approached, both parties endeavoured to enter into a kind of conversation, by signs, gestures, and speech, but found it difficult to be reciprocally understood. Mr. Broughton presented them with several articles, which they eagerly and joyfully received, though they did not attempt to give any thing in exchange: but as they seemed solicitous for the Europeans to land, Mr. Sheriff, leaving his arms behind him in the boat, went on shore. This circumstance excited the attention of two or three of them, who attended him towards the canoes on the beach, while the rest, amounting to about forty, continued with the Europeans, and seized every opportunity of attempting to take whatever came within their reach. They repeatedly beckoned the navigators to follow them to their supposed places of residence. They were indeed extremely desirous of receiving the Europeans on shore; but as they could not obtain any thing in return for their

...ast; and observing many of them armed with ...ears, it was thought highly imprudent to as...ciate with them; in consequence of which they ...k their leave*.

The woods, which afford a delightful shade, ...re in several places formed into arbours, by ...ding the branches when young, and closing ...m round with smaller trees. These arbours ...peared to have been lately slept in. Most of ...e trees in the woods grow in a luxuriant manner ...ter of small branches, to a considerable height, ...d consist of several sorts; but none of them ...med entitled to the appellation of a timber-...e. Returning from the woods, a few natives ...re seen approaching the Europeans, and saluta...ns were given and received by each party, by ...e ceremony of meeting noses, in the New ...aland fashion. Some trinkets were given the ...anders; but they seemed to have no idea of ...ttering, or making any return for favours con...rred.

To shew the inhabitants the effect of fire-arms, ...r. Broughton gave them some birds which he ...d killed, and pointed out to them the cause of ...eir death: on firing his gun, they seemed ...rrified at its report, and all retreated, excepting ...e old man who maintained his ground. As he ...emed to conduct himself in a kind of menacing ...anner, Mr. Broughton gave his fowling piece ...one of his own people, approached the island...r, shook him by the hand, and practised every ...ethod he could devise to obtain his confidence. ...bserving something in his hand, carefully rolled ...p in a mat, he was desirous of looking at it, when ...e native instantly gave it to another, who walked ...ay with it; but not till the lieutenant had dis...vered that it contained stones, fashioned like ...e *Patao Patoes* of New Zealand.

These islanders were extremely anxious to get ...ossession of our navigator's gun and shot-belt, and frequently exclaimed *Toohata*. Some of their spears were ten feet in length, and others six. Finding that nothing could be obtained here, the Europeans made signs of going to their supposed habitations, and intimated that they were in want of food. Three men armed, attended Mr. Johnston and Mr. Broughton along the river-side: the boat, with four hands, keeping near the shore as they walked, lest their assistance, might be required. Every one had orders to be prepared, but not to have recourse to their arms, till the lieutenant should issue directions to that effect.

The islander who had received the stones from the old man, had one of them now fixed at each end of a large stick about two feet in length. Not liking these appearances, the Europeans entertained some thoughts of embarking; but, on their suddenly facing about, the natives retired up to the beach to a fire which had been just made. Some conversation afterwards ensued, which was not of the most amicable kind, and many of the natives had provided themselves with bludgeons and other weapons. Repairing to the sea-side, which the Europeans had quitted for a short time, and being a-breast of the boat, the islanders became very clamorous; talked loudly to each other, and divided themselves in such a manner as nearly to surround the Europeans. A young man strutted towards Mr. Broughton, in a very hostile attitude; who, by distorting his person, turning up his eyes, and making hideous faces, displayed wonderful fierceness in his appearance and by his gestures. But when the lieutenant pointed his double-barrelled gun towards him, he thought proper to desist. The hostile intentions of these savages being thus evidently shewn, Mr. Broughton, wishing to avoid proceeding to extremities, ordered the boat immediately to take the Europeans on board.

* By way of ceremonial the navigators displayed the ...ion flag, turned a turf, and took possession of the island, ...hich Mr. Broughton named CHATHAM ISLAND, in honour ...the earl of Chatham, in the name of George the Third; ...der the presumption of their being the first discoverers. ...fter drinking his Majesty's health, a piece of lead was ...lled to a tree near the beach, with this inscription—"His ...Britannic Majesty's brig Chatham, Lieutenant William ...Robert Broughton commander, the 29th November, ...1791." And in a bottle, deposited near the tree, an ...scription to the same purport.

The canoes which were examined, resembled a small hand...row without legs, formed of a light substance, very neatly constructed: the breadth aft is three feet, and forward two, and the length eight or nine feet. They seem peculiarly calculated for fishing among the rocks near the shore. They could accommodate two or three persons, and were so light that two men could easily convey them to any reasonable distance, and one person could haul them into a place of security on the beach. The nets of these islanders were ingeniously formed; and they had scoop-nets, made of the bark or fibres of some tree or plant, and netted in equal mashes. On penetrating a little into the woods, no houses nor huts were observed, but large quantities of shells were seen; and several places where fires had been made.

During

During this interval, though they were strictly on their guard, the islanders began their attack, and before the boat could get in, Mr. Broughton was reluctantly compelled to fire one barrel, which being loaded with small shot would rather intimidate them than prove injurious, and enable them to embark without further molestation. Unfortunately, however, it proved otherwise; Mr. Johnston received so ponderous a blow upon his musquet that it fell to the ground, but before his opponent could get possession of it, Mr. Johnston recovered his position, and was obliged to fire, when the blow was again attempted. A marine and seamen near him had been forced into the water, and, justified by self-preservation, fired their pieces without orders. The gentleman having the charge of the boat, seeing the necessity for it, also fired at this instant, on which they precipitately fled.

It was a pleasing reflection to Mr. Broughton that no ill consequences had appeared to have arisen from this commotion, but he was almost instantly informed that one man was discovered to have fallen: a ball having broken his arm, and passed through his heart. The Europeans repaired towards the boat, but were compelled by the surf to walk to the place from whence they had originally intended to embark. As they retired, they perceived one of the natives return from the woods, who, placing himself by the side of the deceased, ejaculated a sort of dismal howl to express his lamentations*.

As not a single habitation was to be seen, the navigators considered this part of the island as a temporary residence of the inhabitants, for the purpose of procuring a supply of fish. Those which inhabit shells are very abundant here: claws of cray fish were found in their canoes; and as the birds were numerous about the sho it was generally apprehended that the sea f nished them with their principal means of su sistence. Black sea pies, spotted curlews, lar wood-pigeons, ducks, small sand-larks, and san pipers, are very numerous about the shores.

On returning to the vessel they got und weigh with a fresh gale at south-west. Abo six in the evening they passed Point Munnin which now appeared to be a low peninsula, o which more land was discovered to the sout ward, but the weather became too hazy to obt further information. From the bay, which M Broughton called Skirmish Bay to Point Mu nings, the shore is low, rocky, and woody. day-break on the 30th, they passed many patch of sea-weed, saw some Port Egmont hens, a several oceanic birds.

On the 15th of December the atmosphere b came dark, sultry, and gloomy, and torrents rain issued from the clouds, accompanied wi much thunder, lightning, and heavy squall which obliged the crew to be constantly expose till the 20th; when the wind, which had chang to the south, blew a moderate breeze, and fi settled weather ensued. On the 23d, at eight the morning, land was seen from the mast-hea which proved to be a small high island, i northern part forming an elevated hummoc from the fall of which the land continued leve and then gradually decreased to the other extre point. They steered for Otaheite; at noon th land over Point Venus bore west; in the afte noon it became southwardly, with dark gloom weather. Having reached within four miles the shore about five o'clock, some canoes ca off with cocoa-nuts and two small hogs, whic were immediately purchased. About nine th

* As the navigators approached their first landing place, they saw nothing like a habitation, though women and children were supposed to have been looking at them from the woods, as they were heard conversing with the natives on their arrival. On tracing some of the foot paths, great numbers of ear-shells were discovered, and recesses like those which were observed on their first landing. They distributed their remaining toys and trinkets among the canoes, as some little atonement for the injury they had been under the necessity of producing.

The men of this island are of a middling size, fleshy, and well-limbed, with black hair both on the head and beard. The young men had it tied in a knot on the crown of their heads, intermixed with black and white feathers; many of them had their beards plucked out. Their colour is dark brown, with plain features, and generally with bad teeth. Their skin was without marks, and they seemed clean in their persons. Their dress consisted of a seal or bear-skin tied with sinnet. Some were naked, except having a wo woven mat, fastened round their waists. No ornament appear to be worn, excepting by a few who sported a sor of necklace made of mother of pearl shells. Several of the had their fishing lines fastened round them. The old man among them, seemed to have no authority over the other They appeared to be a cheerful race; the conversation o the Europeans frequently exciting bursts of laughter amo them. On their first landing, their surprize and exclamatio exceeded all conception. They pointed to the sun, an then to the Europeans, seeming to intimate a desire of bei informed whether they proceeded from that luminous body

rt morning, they anchored in eight fathoms
ack muddy bottom*.

From young Otoo, the lieutenant received
is morning a present of two hogs, and a quan-
ty of fruit. Otoo the elder, now claiming the
ppellation of Pomurrey, was at Eimeo, having
efore signified his intention to come to Matavai
soon as he heard of Mr. Broughton's having
ached that place. His absence, however, oc-
sioned no inconvenience; for though they had
t been visited by any chief, the behaviour of
e people was perfectly friendly and civil, and
ey had been supplied with a sufficient quantity
excellent provisions on the most moderate
rms.

On the 29th Mr. Broughton received a very
eral present from Oparre, consisting of hogs
d delicious fruit, accompanied with a message
porting that he might probably arrive at Matavai the following day. In the evening, the weather being somewhat temperate, he landed at the back of Point Venus, and was received by the natives with the greatest cheerfulness. Their hospitality was exemplary, and their civility and attention infinitely impressive. The wind having shifted to the eastward, and being informed on the 30th, by some natives, that a ship was in sight, Mr. Broughton repaired instantly on shore, and had the inconceivable pleasure of perceiving it was the Discovery steering for the bay. About ten she hauled in between the reef and the Dolphin bank, and Mr. Broughton went on board to congratulate Captain Vancouver, and to acquaint him with such interesting particulars as had occurred on board the Chatham, since her separation from the Discovery.

SECTION IV.

Visit Otoo—Arrival and Transactions of Pomurrey—Arrival of Toow—Interview between him and his Sons—Death of Mahow—Ceremonies at the Morai, &c.

CAPTAIN Vancouver had hardly anchored before the ship was surrounded with canoes, laden with provisions and refreshments: the natives testified their joy at his arrival by a tender of their services, and by assuring him that he might rely upon their friendship. One or two among them assuming some little authority, intreated him not to permit the multitude to come on board, that no thefts might be committed, to destroy that amity which they were anxious to establish and support. Approving of this advice, he found no difficulty in carrying it into execution: he had only to request they would return to their canoes, and they submissively complied.

He discovered, on enquiry, that death had removed many of the friends he had left here in 1777; and that Otoo, with his father and brothers, were almost the only chiefs of his old acquaintance that were now in existence. The young king now took the name of Otoo; and Otoo the elder adopted that of *Pomurrey*, having transferred his name with his sovereign jurisdiction, though he appeared to retain his authority as regent. Mr. Broughton had received some presents from Otoo, who had requested him to visit him on shore at Matavai. Captain Vancouver had received no such invitation, but understanding from the natives, that his accompanying Mr. Broughton would be esteemed a civility, he did not hesitate to comply. The ship being secured,

* This being the place of rendezvous appointed by Captain Vancouver, it was a great disappointment not to find the Discovery in port; especially as her superiority in sailing was so great, that she might reasonably have been expected to precede the Chatham by at least a week. They had hardly anchored when the natives gathered round them, willingly bringing with them an ample supply of such refreshments as their country afforded. But several petty thefts being committed by some of the numerous visitors, they were required to repair to their canoes along-side; a restraint which they yielded to with the most perfect obedience and good humour. A heavy rain, accompanied with a severe tempest, continued the whole of the afternoon. On Mr. Broughton's first arrival, the whole shore was one uninterrupted beach, but when the evening approached, the torrents of rain which had descended, had occasioned an inundation of the river which broke its bank. A great concourse of the inhabitants, who assembled on this occasion, and beheld the bank forced by the impetuosity of the water, shouted with acclamations of joy; for had not this event taken place, their houses and plantations would probably have been much injured by so rapacious a deluge.

Captain Vancouver and Mr. Whidbey accompanied Mr. Broughton, to pay their respects to his Otaheitean majesty.

The surf obliging them to row round the point, they landed near the mouth of the river, and were ceremoniously received by the natives: a messenger was dispatched to announce their arrival to the king, and to inform him of their intended visit; who returned with a pig, and a plantain leaf, as a peace-offering to Captain Vancouver; accompanied with a congratulatory speech on the arrival of these gentlemen, with offers of every refreshment the country could afford. They proceeded along the beach, expecting to meet the young sovereign, till they approached the place where the river had broken its banks. There they received instructions to halt, under the shade of a palm-tree; and, after waiting a short time, were informed, that it was not usual for the king to cross the river to meet strangers, and they were therefore requested to go to him. A canoe attended to take them over; and having walked a few paces on the other side, the interview took place.

They found king Otoo to be a boy somewhat under ten years of age: he was clad in a piece of English red cloth, ornamented with pigeons' feathers hanging over his shoulders, and carried on the shoulders of a man. When the Europeans advanced within seven or eight paces of him, they were enjoined to stop, and the present intended for him exhibited. Though its magnitude and value excited the admiration of the bye-standers, the young monarch regarded it with an air of cool indifference: but, as much ceremony was required on this presentation, Captain Vancouver applied to an inferior chief named Moerree, to be his prompter, who willingly took the whole office upon himself. He was answerable for their peaceable and friendly intentions, and requested supplies of provisions, and a pledge of good faith towards them. The king afterwards condescended to say a few words, but he also required the aid of another to conclu his short oration. A ratification of peace a friendship being thus mutually acknowledge the ceremonies ended: when Otoo, shaki hands with them in the most familiar and hear manner, treated them with great cheerfuln and cordiality; having totally laid aside th grimace and pompous affectation of state, whi he displayed on their first introduction to him.

He informed Captain Vancouver, that h father was at Eimeo, now called *Morea*, a requested him to send thither a boat for hi for as the islanders were accustomed to ra misrepresentations, Pomurrey would not gi credit to the report of his arrival, till he h seen some of the Europeans, by whom he wou be convinced. Each of them was presented wi a quantity of gold cloth, a large hog, and so vegetables, after which they returned on boar perfectly satisfied with their visit and receptio Otoo having first declared, that if they should s without seeing his father, he should not only very sorry, but very angry*.

Pomurrey had a perfect recollection of Capta Vancouver, and every action and expression ind cated the sincerity of his professions of esteem In the afternoon his two wives and younger sister arrived, with several chiefs, attendant and ladies; each presenting Captain Vancouve on their coming on board, with cloth, hogs, a vegetables, in great abundance. It now seeme expedient that a suitable return ought to be ma to the whole group, regard being had to th rank and situation of each individual, and th captain endeavoured to perform his part wi great propriety and address.

A large party of royalty and chiefs honoure the Europeans with their presence at dinne which, though it flattered the guests, was cer tainly a subject of regret, as the weather wa extremely hot, and the cabin much crowde On this occasion the wives of Pomurrey, and th wife of Mahow were suffered to sit with the me

* Mr. Mudge, accompanied by Mr. Menzies, was dispatched on the 31st to the island of Morea for Pomurrey, and towards noon on the 2d. of January 1792, he returned with his friend Pomurrey, who was saluted, prior to his coming on board, with four guns from each vessel; with which he was extremely gratified.

It may not, however, be improper to observe, that as the preceding day ushered in the new year, and consequently was a holiday, every one had as much fresh pork and plum pudding as he chose; and, that they might not forget their friends in Old England by the voluptuous gratifications of Otaheite, a double allowance of grog was granted to toast their absent friends and sweet-hearts at home: it was, however, somewhat singular that the gunner of the Discovery was the only married man of the whole party.

…ble, and partake of the repast. But such an in…gence is so far from being common, that it would …extended to no other women on the island*.

On the 3d, the people on board the Discovery …re busy about their rigging, and other essential …ters. The weather continued sultry, and the …yal guests, with their crowd of attendants, still …ained on board, occasioning much confusion …d inconvenience; the captain therefore had re…rse to a little address, which was attended …th the success he wished. He informed Po…rrey that his attendance at the observatory on …ore would be constantly required, and he should …obliged to dine there. When he seemed pre…ring to leave the ship, Pomurrey assured him…t if he would call for him after dinner, the …ole party would disembark; but he did not …l to stipulate, at the same time, that he should …aluted on his landing from the encampment; …hich in the evening was complied with accord…ly. Mahow, who was extremely emaciated …d feeble, paid the Europeans a visit; being …able to walk, he was removed from place to place in a kind of litter. Many other chiefs were their constant attendants, who conducted themselves with great propriety, and seemed highly delighted with observing and animadverting on their different employments†.

Pomurrey's father, formerly known by the name of *Happi*, now called *Taow*, had arrived on the 7th, and was on board the Discovery, where he requested to see Captain Vancouver; in consequence of which Pomurrey, and his two next brothers, accompanied the captain, to pay their respects to their old sire, who had just arrived in a large canoe freighted with valuable articles as a present. An affecting interview succeeded. With wonderful regard the three sons embraced their venerable father; who, in acknowledging a grateful sense of their dutiful congratulations, exhibited feelings which drew tears from the whole party! A scene of filial effusions which would have done credit to the most polished nations‡.

A large party of the royal family, and of the different chiefs, dined at the marquée, after

* In the course of dinner and afterwards, Pomurrey …k a bottle of brandy, without diluting it. This threw …into such strong convulsions, that four strong men …incapable of holding him. After sleeping about an …r he arose, apparently as much refreshed with his nap …if he had retired perfectly sober. Captain Vancouver …postulated with him on this impropriety, and assured him …t inebriety was pernicious to health; but in vain—he …rmated that the captain was stingy of his liquor, and was …a jolly hearty fellow, in the true Bacchanalian sense of …words. Our navigator was now determined to let him …ave his own humour, and orders were given that he …uld be supplied with as much brandy and rum as he …ught proper to ask for; supposing he would speedily …convinced of its pernicious effects. In less than a week, …ed, he ceased calling for spirits, and was perfectly …isfied with a few glasses of wine at and after dinner.

† The wind, since the arrival of the Discovery, had …n eastwardly, and moderate, but it had now veered to …north with squalls and showers of rain. On the 5th a …lent gale broke the sea with irresistible fury in several …rts of the bay. On the 6th it became calm, and all hands were …ily employed in their several departments. After breakfast, …ptain Vancouver went on shore, where he was informed …t Otoo had, in the course of the two last days, been …ried about the encampment, in the very singular manner …t he was shewn when the captain first saw him. He …ited him to the marquée, and entreated him to visit the …s. Both these invitations, however, were declined, …d our navigator was given to understand, that should he …er the tents or ships, no inhabitant of these islands …uld again be admitted; and that every article or utensil …t be destroyed from which he had drank or tasted …ent: As the young monarch passed the greater part of the day about the encampment, Captain Vancouver asked his father if there would be any impropriety in sending him a glass of wine: he replied, "If I chose to have the glass broken, I was at liberty so to do; and enquired if he had abundance of such articles to spare?" Some wine was therefore conveyed to him in the shell of a cocoa-nut, which was drank by his majesty; after which the shell was instantly broken and thrown into the sea.

Pomurrey having frequently asked if there were any fireworks on board, and being answered in the affirmative, Saturday evening was the time appointed for their exhibition, and intelligence of the intended spectacle was industriously circulated over the greater part of the island.

‡ Some of the royal ladies having now joined the party, they all agreed to go on board the Chatham; but as Mr. Broughton had before been very liberal, and found it inconvenient to be very generous a second time, the guests, apparently dissatisfied, quitted the Chatham, and went on shore.

A scene soon after occurred, which formed a contrast to that on the meeting of the venerable parent with his three dutiful sons. It having been announced that Otoo was approaching, custom or *etiquette* required that the grandfather should pay homage to his grandson. A pig and a plantain leaf being procured, the venerable old man stripped to the waist, and when Otoo stood in the front of the marquée, the parent, whose limbs tottered with age, met his grandson, and on his knees presented this token of submission, at the same time humbly acknowledging his own inferiority. So little effect had this ceremony on the young monarch, that he seemed to view the humiliating situation of his grandsire with the most perfect indifference. Perhaps this sort of distant deportment is thought an essential appendage to the exalted situation of a sovereign.

which it was proposed that the English entertainments should commence. But, as a kind of prelude, some guns from the ships were requested to be fired, and the marines on shore were ordered to go through their exercise, and fire; when the whole of their proceeding was beheld, by the surrounding multitude, with surprize, terror, and admiration. On firing with great dispatch three rounds from the field-pieces, the fear of Pomurrey, who had requested this prelude, overcame his curiosity, and he acknowledged he was perfectly satisfied.

The fire-works had been well prepared and preserved, and were equal to any that are to be seen in Europe. An immense crowd assembled on the occasion in the evening. Rockets, balloons, flower-pots, and Catharine-wheels, were displayed in infinite variety; after which some water-rockets, &c. were produced, with which the exhibition closed, and the natives retired to their habitations, highly delighted with their entertainment, though some of them perhaps as much affected with terror, as with admiration. Pomurrey, with his two wives, came to breakfast the following morning, and expressed in the most exalted terms, their approbation of the performances of the preceding evening.

Poatatou arrived the following day, having sent before him a liberal present of cloth, hogs, vegetables, mats, &c. Captain Vancouver had been very intimate with this chief, when he last visited this country, and they perfectly recollected each other. He regretted that he had not arrived in time to enjoy the entertainments of the preceding day, having never been so fortunate as to be present at such an exhibition. *Poatatou* now called *Hildiea*, with his wife and sister, accompanied the captain on board; when, among other valuables, he presented his old acquaintance with an axe, which his sister was so highly delighted with, that *Hildiea* was obliged to use some force to prevent her wrenching it out of his hand, but by giving her an equivalent in other articles the lady became reconciled.

The business in the several departments was now in great forwardness, but an inconvenience was found in procuring fire-wood, there being few trees in the neighbourhood that did not bear fruit: on mentioning this circumstance to the chiefs with whom Captain Vancouver was acquainted, they engaged to supply more than the ships would contain, if he would furnish t axes for each of them; as, on such an occasi they could not afford to wear out their ow this was thought so reasonable a proposal tha was instantly acceded to. The conduct of natives, in this and other transactions, was unifor ly consistent with propriety: in every employme they were ready to assist the Europeans to utmost of their power, and thought themsel amply rewarded with the inconsiderable retu of a few beads or nails.

The departure of Pomurrey's family was p off from time to time, as they expected be conveyed home in one of the Discover boats, but as neither the boats nor the men co be spared for that purpose, Captain Vancouv was constantly honoured with their good compa at meals; and indeed their deportment at ta was now so much improved, that they genera conducted themselves with propriety. The c tain, among his visitors, had all the sovereigns the group of islands, excepting the daughter Opoone, who reigned over Bolaba and its a purtenances.

Hitherto Captain Vancouver had only receiv a few insignificant presents of provisions fr *Pomurrey*, who had lately expressed some co cern that he had not made a suitable return the favours which had been conferred upon h and this was the day appointed for adjusting th important point. About noon *Pomurrey* ca to the marquée, with a long train of attendan and preceded by three men, each bearing a pa or mourning dress*. Many others were lad with fowls, vegetables, and cloth; with a c lection of large hogs in the rear; forming togeth a grateful and valuable compensation. *murrey*, and his wives, dined with the c tain, after which they quitted the encampm to embark for Oparre. They were saluted fr the station on shore, on their way to get board the Discovery, where a canoe waited receive them.

At the dawn of day on the 14th, a message fr *Pomurrey* informed Captain Vancouver of t death of Mahow, which created little concer his relief from a wretched existence was direct by humanity to be considered a happy ev The captain desired the messenger to acqua *Pomurrey*, that he would attend the obsequies the deceased on the following day. On

* This is esteemed the most valuable present the country can afford.

morni

morning of the 15th he again returned with a request from *Pomurrey*, that he would not return to Oparre till Tuesday, when the interdiction* would be at an end.

As Mr. Broughton, Mr. Menzies, and some of the other officers of the Discovery and Chatham had made an excursion on the 13th towards Oparre, and the surrounding country; and as nothing material occurred in the neighbourhood during their absence, Captain Vancouver furnished the following observations which were communicated to him on their return.—The gentlemen embarked in a canoe belonging to Mowree king of Ulietea, who, with *Whytooa* and his wife, accompanied them towards Oparre. In their way they landed to survey the morai of *Tapoota tootatea*. Mowree went with them, and on approaching the sacred spot, desired the party to stop till he had addressed the Eatooa. He then seated himself on the ground, and began to pray before a watta, ornamented with a piece of carved wood, placed on a bundle of cloth and some red feathers. During this act of devotion, the names of the party were twice mentioned, as well as those of the several commanders who had visited the island. The names of *Keene Corge*, and *Britarne*, were also frequently expressed. When these preliminary ceremonies were finished, *Mowree* attended them over the morai, to give them a circumstantial explanation of the particulars.

Having left the morai, and proceeded about a mile westward, they arrived at the house of *Urripiah*, who was then at dinner with a company of Matavai friends; and whilst the European party were taking some refreshment, a messenger arrived from *Whytooah*, requesting their attendance at his abode, which was situated on the verge of the sea-shore, the plantations and gardens of which were decorated with great taste and ingenuity. *Whytooah* had made ample provision for their entertainment, a whole hog having been committed to the oven, which was almost ready for the table, with variety of other refreshments. In the afternoon they were visited by *Urripiah*, with some of his attendants; and the young king Otoo also complimented them with a visit: his approach was announced by the natives performing the ceremony of uncovering their shoulders. As propriety would not admit of his entering *Whytooa's* fence, they paid him their respects on the beach; whence, after receiving some trinkets, he accompanied his royal sister to meet *Pomurrey*. On paying their respects to the royal family, who had landed near them towards the evening, grief was so strongly depicted in the countenance of *Pomurrey*, that the cause of it was earnestly requested to be related. He replied, in a melancholy tone that "*Matooara Mahow* was dead." *Urripiah*, hearing the melancholy tidings, burst into a flood of tears; and a gloomy sadness reigned throughout the whole assembly. Advancing a little further, the Europeans observed the queen mother and *Fier-re-te* in tears, searching a bundle containing shark's teeth, with which the female natives torture themselves to occasion weeping. Each of the women selected an instrument for this purpose, and retired in sorrowful affliction†.

To remove the melancholy ideas occasioned by these

* While the interdiction continued, no communication was permitted between the inhabitants of *Oparre*, and those of the other parts of the island; a circumstance sufficiently made known by the display of flags in the path-ways: not a canoe was allowed to move along the shores; nor a fire to be kindled. The whole occasioning an astonishing degree of solemnity, expressive of the death of the chief, and of his importance and respectability.

† On the 16th in the morning the party were again honoured with a visit from Otoo and several chiefs, in their progress towards the morai: a canoe, with an awning, was soon after observed, paddling slowly to the same destined spot, containing the body of the lamented chief. Requesting to see *Pomurrey*, to obtain permission to attend the solemn ceremony, they were informed that he was gone to the morai, but would have no objection to their being present. They proceeded; and near a rivulet beheld the queen mother, *Fier-re-te*, and the widow of the deceased Mahow, weeping, and wounding their heads with the shark's teeth, which they had procured the preceding evening. A small part of the crown of the widow's head had been shaved, which appeared bloody; and other evident marks were visible of the dire effects of her sorrow. Fearing their intrusion might give offence, they took leave, and repaired to the morai, where the funeral ceremonies had begun. Five priests were seated before *Pomurrey*, chanting a prayer, and looking towards *Otoo*, who was seated on a man's lap: a bundle of cloth was held before him, containing emblematically the *Eatoo*, a name bestowed on all their deities. The body of Mahow, wrapped in red English cloth, was deposited under an awning in a canoe. The priests continued chanting their prayers, gradually exalting their voices till they ended in a very shrill tone. The person who performed the office of chief priest, was discovered to be their friend Mowree, whose prayer was longer and more fervent than the rest. It sometimes appeared to consist of an expostulation with the

these tristful solemnities, the party extended their excursion a few miles westward, till they arrived at *Pomurrey's* residence, which consisted of two large houses near the shore, lately erected. Here they were entertained with a heava, wantonly performed by a number of young girls. At a certain part of the dance, a fellow introduced himself among the performers, and very ludicrously and obscenely entertained the native audience; but the modest Europeans, expressing their abhorrence of such indecorous behaviour, the girls, in the concluding scenes, did not expose their persons below the waist. After bestowing some presents to the young actresses they retired, in order to return; when they soon arrived at the house of a chief, where *Whytooa* having prepared an excellent repast, they were sumptuously entertained. At length they returned to the encampment, extremely well satisfied with the excursion, on which they had been assiduously attended by several of the natives, who always struggled to be foremost in acts of civility and attention; and, in justice to their honesty, let it be remembered, that a trivial article had never been found missing that had ever been entrusted to their care and custody.

SECTION V.

Punishment of the Natives for Theft—Obsequies of Mahow—Articles stolen—Towereroo absconds —Brought back by Pomurrey—Sail from Matavai Bay.

ON the 17th Captain Vancouver was visited by Otoo, his uncles, and several other chiefs from Oparre. Two men having been detected in stealing a hat from the Discovery; and recollecting that many petty thefts had been committed at the encampment, the captain ordered the delinquents to be sent on shore, that they might receive proper punishment in the presence of their chiefs and countrymen; and the punishment ordered by the sentence was, to have their heads shaved, and receive a moderate manual correction.

A message was received from *Pomurrey*, requesting the captain's attendance at Oparre, "to *tiehah*," to mourn for the death of Mahow. Mr. Broughton and Mr. Whidbey accompanied him thither; where, on their landing, they were conducted to a temporary residence of *Pomurrey*, and introduced to him, his wives, and his sisters. Though some concern was apparent among them for the loss of their friend and relative, it was not equal to the affliction they expected to have witnessed on such an occasion. The corpse was laid on the *Tapapaoo*, at a small distance from the grand morai, and appeared to be in an advanced stage of the embalming process: the body was exposed to the sun; and, on their drawing near it, the covering was removed, which displayed it in a state of putrefaction. The skin had been anointed with cocoa-nut oil, and shone refulgently, but the offensive exhalations that were emitted, though impregnated with sweet scented wood, induced them to conclude that the whole mass would be speedily decomposed. *Pomurrey*, however, assured Captain Vancouver that the corpse was to continue a month in this place; in the course of another month it was to be exposed in some of the western districts, whence it was to be removed to Tiabaroo for another month: and, last of all, it was to be conveyed to the Morea, and there deposited with his forefathers in the morai of the family*.

The captain's friends had made so little progress with their axes, that, on the 18th, he entreated *Urripiah* to point out such trees as the

Divinity, adverting to the great plenty of the valuable productions of the island, notwithstanding which *Matooara Mahow* was permitted to die.

The procession advanced westward along the shore, followed by the canoe which contained the corpse, to the mouth of the rivulet, where three royal ladies still continued to exercise their grief, and who on beholding the canoe, burst forth into a dismal yell of lamentation; which kept pace with the repeated application of the shark's teeth, till the blood mingled with their tears. The canoe entered the brook, and proceeded towards another morai, where the ceremonies to be performed required secrecy, and the English gentlemen were not permitted to attend. It was supposed, however, that the body was then to undergo the process of embalming.

* The boat's crew guarded the paling that surrounded the tapapaoo; the piece of red cloth was presented to the widow, who spread it over the dead body: some vollies were then fired, and Captain Vancouver was directed to say, "*Tee no oea, Mahow.*" *That is for you, Mahow.* On some rain falling, the body was removed under cover, and carefully wrapped up.

might cut down themselves; this request was complied with, and they soon procured of the apple and bread fruit trees a sufficient quantity to supply their wants. The mourning for Mahow being ended, the royal females visited the navigators, and returned after dinner to Oparre. *Pomurrey*, his father, wives, brothers, sisters, and many others, appeared the next morning, cheerful and in excellent spirits. Sunday having been appointed for their departure, the evening preceding it was fixed on for a further display of fire-works; and *Pomurrey* returned to Oparre, to procure such supplies as he thought would be acceptable to them before they proceeded on their voyage.

Presents in abundance were received on b rd in the morning of the 20th, consisting of hogs, goats, fowls, roots, and vegetables, from their respective friends; who had hitherto conducted themselves with the greatest propriety, and who seemed to lament that their departure would so speedily take place. But in the midst of this happy intercourse, and apparent good harmony, a circumstance occurred which threatened to produce the destruction of that harmony. A bag containing a large quantity of linen, the property of Mr. Broughton, had been taken out of the marquée, *Moerree*, who had engaged to be cutter of wood, had sent none since the first or second day, nor had he returned the axes delivered to him. Something unfair was therefore strongly suspected. Several shirts had also, the preceding evening, been missing from the people's tents; and from a variety of circumstances it was evident, that the chiefs knew of the linen having been stolen, and were themselves supposed to be the projectors of the robbery.

Urripiah had prepared a heava near the encampment, for the amusement of the navigators, which Captain Vancouver thought proper to forbid the performance; informing *Urripiah* that, whilst his people were treacherous, no farther intercourse with them was required; and that, unless the articles purloined were immediately restored, he would enforce the restoration of them by the adoption of very serious measures. On this remonstrance he departed, and about noon one of the axes was returned, and with it a solemn promise of searching for the linen. Going on board the next morning, he was informed of another occurrence, which would contribute to interrupt the harmony which had so long subsisted. *Towereroo*, the Sandwich-islander, had eloped from the ship, in the course of the preceding night; and he had formed an attachment with the daughter of *Poeno*, the chief of *Matavai*, on whom he had lavished almost the whole of his property. This youth was weak, sullen, and obstinate, but though there was little probability that his services could ever be of any importance to the Europeans, it was thought expedient that his return should be insisted on, lest others should be induced to abscond from the vessels.

Pomurrey, in the presence of several other chiefs, asked Captain Vancouver, if, agreeably to his promise, he intended to display the fire-works that evening? To which he answered in the negative, alledging that when he made that promise, he knew not of the theft of the linen, and the elopement of *Towereroo;* in both of which unpardonable transactions many of the chiefs were accessaries. *Pomurrey* instantly replied, that *Towereroo* should be brought back the following day, either to the tents or the Discovery. The dinner being now served, ended the debate for the present; after which the brothers sallied out in search of the stolen linen, and speedily returned with a servant who had absconded. On examination, he accused Arreheah of being the thief, but acknowledged that being privy to the robbery, he had fled to avoid detection and punishment: this evidence was sufficient to prove himself an accomplice, and the captain, suspecting he was really the thief, ordered a halter to decorate his neck in *terrorem*, and sent him on board the ship to be confined in irons; with a positive assurance, that if the property was not restored, he should absolutely be hanged*. About noon on the 23d, the boat returned with the royal brothers, and *Towereroo*, attended by a fleet of canoes, laden with every species of provisions as presents from the royal family, and several other friends; carrying with them a profusion of valuable commodities on board, The

quantity

* A *mattow* had taken place, in consequence of the Captain's having confined a man named *Boba*, who had been suspected of being an accomplice in the theft of the linen; and of a report of the confinement of the queen-mother; but the misunderstanding among the parties was soon reconciled, and the effect of the mattow was consequently dissolved.

quantity was so great, that several laden canoes returned to the shore. *Pomurrey* and *Urripiah* observed, on the delivery of *Towererro*, that they had restored every thing in which Captain Vancouver was particularly interested; and that it was *Whytooa's* business to recover the linen for Mr. Broughton. The latter protested, that if the Europeans could remain till the morning, it should certainly be brought on board; but being now fully convinced, that little reliance could be placed on any of their assurances, the captain would not have waited to put his integrity to the test, had the wind been favourable.

Poatatou, and many other chiefs, finding the navigators intended to depart with the first fair wind, took their leave in the evening, lamenting the loss they should sustain; which was evidently increased by the neglect of a second display of fire-works. Many chiefs complained much of their having been disappointed, but the captain very judiciously replied, that, "If thefts, and other breaches of confidence had not been committed, and sanctioned, as he was confident they had been by the chiefs themselves, he should not have been under the painful necessity of denying them the promised entertainment, and they would have parted much better friends. On the arrival of another ship, he trusted, from this disappointment, they would all be taught to conduct themselves with more fidelity."

Pomurrey, and his wives, continued on board all night, and the next day produced no tidings of the linen. As not even a remote prospect remained that the navigators would regain their property, and as a favourable breeze from the eastward had presented itself for their service, on Tuesday the 24th, about ten in the morning, they sailed out of the bay. Pomurrey and his wives were their guests till they were beyond the reefs; they were now presented with an assortment of valuables, which gratified them exceedingly. Pomurrey requested, as a particular favour, that they might be saluted on their quitting the ship, which being readily complied wit they took a ceremonious leave.

The names of their sovereigns are highly ven rated by these people, and, on Otoo's accessio to the *Maro*, or girdle of royalty, a considerab alteration took place in the proper names of t chiefs; to which however it was not solely co fined, but extended to their language, forty fifty of the most usual words in conversatio having at present no affinity with their form meaning. Every inhabitant is compelled adopt the new acceptation, the neglect of whi is punished with extreme severity. Pomurr frequently took the liberty of correcting Capta Vancouver, on his sometimes accidentally usi the former mode of expression, declaring it w wrong, and that he ought not to practise it*.

During these hostile engagements, *Pomurr* married the queen-mother, a near relation of h enemy, Maheine: this lady has few pretensio to beauty, having a masculine appearance, a being destitute of external charms and femini softness; though possessing a mind, actuated those amiable qualities which most adorn t human race. So truly gracious was her di position, that it fully counterbalanced any d advantages she might labour under, in a deficien of personal attractions. The several revol tions which had taken place, and the particul of the intermarriages, &c. are purposely omitte as a minute detail of the birth, family, and co nections of the monarchs and chiefs of the islands, would be deviating from the plan t editor wishes to pursue.

Considerable alterations are introduced in military operations of these people. When th islands were first discovered, their wars we principally maritime; but they are now very d ferently conducted: though they have extend their excursions to remote parts, not a sing war canoe was seen belonging to Otaheite. Co versing with *Urripiah* on this subject, he assur Captain Vancouver, that in their late conte they had found them so unmanageable that th

* It may be necessary to relate, that shortly after the last departure of Captain Cook from these islands, many disputes had arisen between *Maheine* the usurping chief of Morea, and *Pomurrey*, (then Otoo) in some of whose wars *Maheine* was joined by other chiefs of the westward districts of Otaheite, by which means *Pomurrey* was unsuccessful, and his districts were laid entirely waste. Hence his majesty's benevolent intentions of rendering these people comfortable, became nearly frustrated. Most of the animals and pl which Captain Cook took care to deposit here, have fa a sacrifice to the ravages of war. The black cattle w conveyed to Morea, where they now remain; and, fr having bred, are now five in number, four cows and a b The latter, however, has received an injury, which will a period to further propagation, till some additional as ance is contrived.

d given them up, and prosecuted their enter-ces by land *.

Though much encomium has been deservedly owed on the beauty of the female inhabit-s of this country, they seem at present to have immoderate claim to admiration from their onal charms. The natives are sensible of , and freely admit that the cause of their present homeliness, is attributed to European visitors, to which many of their finest women have early fallen sacrifices. Beauty in this country, especially among the women, is a flower that quickly blossoms, and as quickly fades: it soon arrives to maturity, remains but a short time stationary, and rapidly decays †.

SECTION VI.

roceed to the Sandwich Islands—Arrive off Owhyhee—Visit from Tianna and other Chiefs—Leave Towereroo at Owhyhee—Arrival at Attowai—Transactions there—The Prince and Regent visit the Ships—Fidelity of the Natives.

HAVING parted from their friends on the 24th, the navigators directed their course the northward; and though they had been most ten months absent from England, they re now to be considered only as having just mmenced their voyage. But it was a satisfac-n to them, that they had not been retarded any inexcusable delays. A light easterly eeze brought them within sight of Titeroa; d on the 25th, they observed Morea and Ota-ite. Some of the inhabitants visited them om Titeroa, with a few fowls, fish, and cocoa-ts to barter. They were daily attended by antities of birds, which inhabit the low and lf drowned islands of this ocean: on the 8th February they deserted the Discovery, and on e 15th a few of them were seen again.

On the first of March a light breeze brought the navigators in sight of Owhyhee: as the day advanced, which was extremely pleasant, the wind, veering to the north-eastward, they were enabled to steer for the south point of Owhyhee, fourteen leagues distant. About midnight they passed to the westward of the south point of Owhyhee; and, in expectation of procuring some provisions and refreshments, as they passed the west course of this island, they sailed close within shore. In the morning of the 2d, they stood along shore to the northward: Several canoes came off with pigs and vegetables; among the latter were some excellent water melons. The natives, however, demanded an exorbitant return for these refreshments, and seemed perfectly indifferent about trading, or having any other com-

* Some circumstances respecting the young monarch *Otoo*, whom favourable hopes are entertained when he becomes an, deserve particular notice: among the first may be ckoned the curious restriction which prohibited his enter-g any of their habitations; his father, when *Otoo*, and vereign of the island, was not thus interdicted, but visited ir ships and tents as his inclination prompted, without awing upon the people those inconveniences, which would ve been the consequence of the young king's having done e same. The origin of this mysterious restraint Captain ncouver could never satisfactorily discover; but from rtain occurrences, he was induced to believe that a re-rkable ceremony would speedily take place, and occupy considerable space of time; after which *Otoo* will no longer carried on men's shoulders; but have his full liberty to lk about. It is also remarkable, that no person of con-quence or respec bility was ever seen about the young narch: even his nearest relations, though they honoured d venerated his high office, did not appear to manifest the st regard for his person.

† The European animals and plants deposited here by Captain Cook, and some other navigators, for the purposes of propagation, had been nearly destroyed by the late conflicts of contending parties. To the race of animals the present navigators could add but two Cape geese, and a gander: they planted some vine-cuttings which had flourished well on board, some orange and lemon trees, and an assortment of garden-seeds; but as nature has bountifully supplied this country with great variety of vegetables, the natives seem little desirous of any addition. The *ava*, and the cloth plant, are the principal articles which the Otaheitans take delight in cultivating. They have, however, a few indifferent shaddocks, some tolerably good maize, coarse radishes, and a few pods of capsicon: these seem to be the only productions of the numerous vegetable exotics that have been introduced into this island. Goats have fallen into dis-repute, from the inhabitants not relishing their milk, nor the flesh of the animal, on account of its deficiency of fat. A sufficient number of them were, however, selected to establish a breed of those animals on the Sandwich Islands, should they be found acceptable to the natives.

munication with the Europeans. At noon on the 3d, Karakakooa bore north about five miles distant. Several canoes having stood out to sea after the navigators in the morning, they now brought to that they might traffic with them; and were soon honoured with a visit from *Tianna*. He was received with that respect which was due to his distinguished character.

After some complimentary conversation, *Tianna* hastened to inform them, that since his return from China, he had resided on this island, where many severe conflicts had taken place, in which he had taken part with *Tamaahmaah* against *Teamawheere*, who had, since the death of *Terecoboo*, shared the government with *Tamaahmaah*. In one of these engagements *Tianna*, having shot *Teamawheere*, a complete victory was obtained, and the island was divided between the two chiefs.

Being informed that Captain Vancouver proposed going directly to the Leeward Islands, *Tianna* requested he might accompany him, and be permitted to take his wives and retinue to sleep on board; with which request the Captain thought proper to comply. *Tianna* viewed every transaction on board with attentive admiration, and seemed particularly surprized at the number of the crew. In the evening he held frequent conversations with *Towereroo*, and in the course of the night was several times upon deck to ascertain the number of persons on duty. The retinue of *Tianna* on this occasion, was intended to have been numerous: part of them were to attend him on board the Discovery, and the remainder to proceed in the Chatham: but after several consultations on this business, *Tianna* declined accompanying the navigators to Attowai.

But from the conversation he had held w *Towereroo*, he supposed that lad might be importance to him, and as he promised *To reroo* a handsome establishment, Captain V couver agreed to fix with *Tianna* for the p sent *.

Standing along shore with a light breeze the evening, the Captain was surprized on bei hailed from a large canoe, in broken English, questing to be admitted on board. This favo being complied with, the speaker proved to b youth named *Tarchooa*, a native of Attow who had accompanied a Mr. John Ingram, co manding an American ship laden with furs, fr north-west America. His present master, said, was a chief named *Kahowmotoo*, of gre importance. Captain Vancouver was immedia ly made known to this chief, who presented hi wish three fine hogs, for which he was repa by barter; but, like *Tianna*, he was greatly mo tified that he had not received an equivalent arms or ammunition †.

A light breeze advanced the Discovery t wards the north point of Owhyhee; on the 6t being well in with the island of Tahoorowa, t Chatham's signal was made to denote their situ tion in bearing up along the south side of th island; but as neither this, nor some previo signals had been acknowledged, the Chatham w supposed to have remained becalmed under t high land of Owhyhee: and Woahoo being a pointed their next rendezvous, a long separati could not be expected. In the afternoon, a fe natives visited them from Ranai, but they brou hardly any thing for barter; indeed the drea appearance of their miserable island apologize for their coming empty-handed. On the 7t

* *Tianna* having several goats in his possession, the captain did not present him with any of those animals; but he gave him some vine and orange plants, some almonds, and an assortment of garden seeds. After receiving several presents in return for ten small hogs, he took his leave of the captain about five in the afternoon, taking *Towereroo* with him. But though he was satisfied with his reception, and was to receive the salutation of four guns on his departure, he was evidently much chagrined at not being able to procure any fire-arms or ammunition; which was repeatedly and anxiously solicited by himself and all his countrymen, and as uniformly refused.

† The next morning they were abreat of the south point of Toca-yah-ho bay, near the residence of *Kahowmatoo*. That chief was extremely desirous of procuring vegetable productions, and was made very happy by receiving some fine orange plants, and a packet of different garden seeds to propagate which he promised the most diligent attentio

Tarchooa, who had now assumed the name of Jac which he preferred, had been retained by Mr. Ingram in t capacity of a servant, but was now elevated to the office interpreter in the service of this chief, for which he was unqualified. Jack expressed a desire of remaining on boar and to accompany the ship on her voyage. As he appear to be shrewd and active, the captain thought he might rendered useful, and accepted of his services on the st to which the chief consented, though not without a mixt of regret, and regard for Jack's future advantage. Af being saluted with four guns, and taking an affectiona leave of his interpreter, *Kahowmotoo* parted, but n without the most friendly assurance, that whenever t captain should do him the honour to visit his district, h should be abundantly supplied with refreshments.

the

they directed their course along the south-side of Woahoo, bearing west six or seven miles distance, whose eastern shores seemed like those of Ranai, consisting principally of high rocks, and precipices which fall perpendicularly into the sea. On the south-east part of this island, two remarkable prominences appear, about seven miles asunder. Continuing their course about nine, they hauled round the reef about a quarter of a mile from that point, and had soundings from twenty-two to ten fathoms, in which latter depth they entered about ten o'clock. The second promontory has on its top the appearance of a crater formed by volcanic eruptions.

As the quarter-deck required caulking, the carpenters were ordered upon that duty. Some of the natives from the shore visited the ship, bringing a scanty supply of refreshments, among which were very excellent musk and water-melons. The situation occupied in this bay was called Whyteete by the natives, and was as eligible as most of the anchoring places in these islands. The inhabitants were orderly and docile, and never presumed to come on board without permission; and when that could not be obtained, they quietly remained in their canoes along side.

Information was circulated, and generally believed at Owhyhee, that *Titeve* and *Tato*, with many other chiefs and warriors of this island, were on a hostile expedition at Morotoi and Mowee. This intelligence, in some degree, accounted for the small number of inhabitants who were seen there, by the wretched condition of their canoes, and the scanty supply of provisions which they brought to market. The villages on the shores were numerous, and in excellent condition; and the surrounding country exhibited a high degree of cultivation and fertility.

Though the natives of the Sandwich islands* have been represented, by former visitors, as daring and unmanageable, our navigators declare they are remarkable for their docility: perhaps

* These islands appear to have been first discovered by Captain *Cook*, and were so named by that great navigator in gratitude to the earl of Sandwich, a minister who had warmly promoted his labours. In Owhyhee, the largest of these islands, and of all that has been found in Polynesia, about two hundred and eighty miles in circumference; Captain Cook was unfortunately slain here by the natives, 14 February 1779.

The natives of Marquesa islands, classed next to the Sandwich Islands in the geography of Polynesia, have been thus recently described in the Missionary voyage, 1799, 4to. 145.—"Our first visitors from the shore came early; they were seven beautiful young women, swimming quite naked, except a few green leaves tied round their middle; they kept playing round the ship for three hours, calling Vaheine! (that is women) till several of the native men had got on board; one of whom, being the chief of the island, requested that his sister might be taken on board, which was complied with: she was of a fair complexion, inclining to a healthy yellow, with a tint of red in her cheek; was rather stout, but possessing such symmetry of features, as of all her companions, that, as models for the statuary and painter, their equals can seldom be found. Our Otaheitan girl, who was tolerably fair and had a comely person was notwithstanding greatly eclipsed by these women, and I believe felt her inferiority in no small degree; however she was superior in the amiableness of her manners, and possessed more of the softness and tender feeling of the sex; she was ashamed to see a woman upon the deck quite naked, and supplied her with a complete dress of Otaheitan cloth, which set her off to great advantage, and encouraged those in the water, whose numbers were now greatly increased, to improve for admission: and out of pity to them, as we saw they would not return, we took them on board; but they were in a measure disappointed, for they could not all succeed as well as the first in getting clothed; nor did our mischievous goats even suffer them to keep their green leaves, but as they turned to avoid them, they were attacked on each side alternately, and completely stripped naked.'.

It may be added that, "The natives are said to surpass all other nations in symmetry and shape, and regularity of features."—Also that, "Some of the women are nearly as fair as Europeans, and among them tatooing is not so universal.

After leaving Easter Island, the unfortunate La Perouse visited the Sandwich Islands, which he seems to suppose are the same with the Mesa of Spanish Charts; though from an error, in not observing the currents, they are placed sixteen or seventeen degrees more to the east, an usual fault in the Spanish charts, which thus bring many Polynesian islands too near the American shores: but the French navigator subjoins an honourable testimony in favour of Cook. "Full of respect and admiration for the memory of that great man, he will always appear to me the greatest of navigators." Still Caledonia, and what is called Sandwich Land in the antarctic ocean, seem acknowledged new discoveries, of our great navigator.

La Perouse visited the Isle of Mowee, to the north of Owhyhee, and observed the mountains, the woods, and the cascades. The habitations of the natives were so numerous, that a space of three or four leagues might be supposed a single village. La Perouse confirms the account of their mild and beneficent manners; and in general refers to the English narratives, the exactness of which he particularly applauds. *Pinkerton's Mod. Geo.* II. 501.

The Missionary Voyage gives the following *feeling* description of the females of the Marquesas. "It was not a little affecting to see our seamen repairing the rigging, attended by a group of the most beautiful females, who were employed to pass the ball, or carry the tar-bucket, &c.; and this they did with the greatest assiduity, often besmearing themselves with the tar in the execution of their office. No ship's company, without great restraints from God's Grace, could ever have resisted such temptations." *p.* 185.

their